

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## American Society for Psychical Research

Section "B" of the American Institute for Scientific Research

---

Volume X

---

American Society for Psychical Research  
44 East 23th Street  
New York  
1916



# The Doris Case of Multiple Personality

A BIOGRAPHY OF FIVE PERSONALITIES IN  
CONNECTION WITH ONE BODY AND A  
DAILY RECORD OF A THERAPEUTIC PRO-  
CESS ENDING IN THE RESTORATION OF  
THE PRIMARY MEMBER TO INTEGRITY  
AND CONTINUITY OF CONSCIOUSNESS

NU

By  
WALTER FRANKLIN PRINCE, PH. D.

WITH INTRODUCTION BY  
JAMES HERVEY HYSLOP, PH. D., LL. D.  
AND  
WALTER F. PRINCE, PH. D.

---

## PART II

---

YORK, PA.  
THE YORK PRINTING CO  
1916



UNIV. OF MICH.  
LIBRARY  
DEC 5 1916

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## American Society for Psychical Research

Section "B" of the American Institute for Scientific Research

Vol. X

*Complete in 11.*  
AUGUST, 1916

Part 2

### CONTENTS

#### THE DORIS CASE OF MULTIPLE PERSONALITY.

By Walter Franklin Prince, Ph. D.

Chapter X. Ninth Period. Triple Personality.....	934
Chapter XI. Tenth Period. Recovery of Normal Con- sciousness .....	1251
Chapter XII. Record of Automatic Writing.....	1269
Appendices .....	1330

Published by American Society for Psychical Research, James H. Hyslop, Secretary, 44 East 23rd St., New York, to which address all business correspondence should be sent.

Editorial correspondence should be addressed to Dr. James H. Hyslop, Editor, 44 East 23rd Street, New York.

Annual Membership, \$10.00. Foreign Membership, £2. 2s.

PRICE \$6.00



## NOTICE TO MEMBERS

**Data** — Members are desired to report as to facts and personal from experiences relating to psychology and psychical research or to contribute to critical discussions of material collected and published. These subjects include Apparitions, Telepathy, Clairvoyance, Premonitions, Mediumistic Phenomena, Visions of the Dying, Coincidences, Illusions, Hallucinations and all residual phenomena that tend to illustrate obscure mental processes.

¶ *All reports and narratives of personal and other experiences will be treated as private and confidential, unless express permission is given to use them and the names connected therewith.*

¶ All data and other editorial matter or correspondence should be addressed to Dr. James H. Hyslop, 44 East 23rd Street, New York.

**Publications.** Every person paying \$5 a year will receive the JOURNAL one year; every person paying \$10 a year will receive all the publications of the Society for that year, including the JOURNAL and the PROCEEDINGS.

¶ The JOURNAL is published monthly and keeps the reader informed as to what is transpiring in the scientific world relating to psychic research and, besides, gives some one important case in detail each month.

¶ The PROCEEDINGS are published as occasion demands—one part aggregating over 800 pages was issued in 1910—and describes the longest and most important cases in detail. The PROCEEDINGS are more technical than the JOURNAL and will be more important for those who wish to have detailed records.

¶ All memberships begin the First of January, at which time all annual fees are due. Any new member, joining in November or December, will receive the JOURNAL or PROCEEDINGS for those months free.

¶ Back numbers of either the JOURNAL or the PROCEEDINGS may be had at any time.

¶ All correspondence relating to membership, advertising, books, or business of any character, should be addressed to American Society for Psychical Research, 44 East 23rd St., New York, N. Y.



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
PREFACE, by Dr. Hyslop.....	9-21
CHAPTER I. Remarks by Dr. Hyslop.....	23-28, 60-61
Summary of whole case by Dr. Prince.....	28-60, 61-122
TABLE of Anæsthesias and Hyperæsthesias .....	123-126
GLOSSARY of quasi-technical terms.....	127-134
and current technical terms.....	134-136
BIOGRAPHY PREVIOUS TO DAILY RECORD.	
CHAPTER II. First Period: Undivided Personality—The Real Doris, together with family and personal characteristics (1889-1892).....	137
CHAPTER III. Second Period: Three Personalities—Real Doris, Mar- garet and Sleeping Margaret (1892—May 6, 1906).....	147
CHAPTER IV. Third Period: Four Personalities—Real Doris, Mar- garet, Sleeping Margaret, Sick Doris (May 6, 1906—Sept., 1907)....	210
CHAPTER V. Fourth Period: Five Personalities—Real Doris, Mar- garet, Sleeping Margaret, Sick Doris, Sleeping Real Doris. To the beginning of curative influences (Sept., 1907—Nov., 1909).....	246
CHAPTER VI. Fifth Period: Quintuple Personality. From the be- ginning of curative influences to the discovery of the fact of dis- sociation and the entrance upon a psycho-physiological campaign (Nov., 1909—Jan. 20, 1911).....	257
CHAPTER VII. Sixth Period; Quintuple Personality. From the dis- covery of the fact of dissociation and the entrance upon a psycho- physiological campaign to the removal from unfavorable environ- ment (Jan. 20, 1911—Mar. 2, 1911).....	286
THE DAILY RECORD.....	begins 288
CHAPTER VIII. Seventh Period: Quintuple Personality. From the re- moval from unfavorable environment to the disappearance of Sick Doris (Mar. 2, 1911—June 28, 1911).....	392
CHAPTER IX. Eighth Period: Quadruple Personality. From the dis- appearance of Sick Doris to that of Sleeping Real Doris (June 28, 1911—Apr. 15, 1912).....	627
CHAPTER X. Ninth Period: Triple Personality. From the disappear- ance of Sleeping Real Doris to that of Margaret (Apr. 15, 1912— Apr. 19, 1914).....	934
CHAPTER XI. Tenth Period: Normal Consciousness. Doris restored to continuous consciousness, with brief appearances of Sleeping Margaret as a co-consciousness (Apr. 19, 1914).....	1251
CHAPTER XII. Record of Automatic Writing.....	1269
APPENDIX A. Table of Alternations.....	1330
APPENDIX B. Alleged cerebral seats of the Personalities.....	1331



## PORTRAITS.

	Page
REAL DORIS.....	Frontispiece. Part I
MARGARET. At play.....	op. 37
MARGARET. At the age of five.....	op. 172
MARGARET. On Christmas morning.....	Frontispiece. Part II
MARGARET. Asleep, annoyed.....	op. 832
MARGARET. Asleep, further annoyed.....	op. 832
SICK DORIS. In her prime.....	op. 39
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Put it in".....	op. 534
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "One dear".....	op. 534
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. Loss of motor functions.....	op. 538
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Papa two".....	op. 538
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Papa make hit all better".....	op. 544
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Waz zat?".....	op. 544
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. Loss of motor functions.....	op. 551
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Do it again".....	op. 551
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Make it go".....	op. 560
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Make-it-go" all gone.....	op. 560
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Dears no go".....	op. 592
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Make it go and go-o-o".....	op. 592
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Papa all gone".....	op. 603
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Waz zat?". M. "watching".....	op. 603
SICK DORIS. Reduced to Infancy. "Dears go".....	op. 611
SLEEPING MARGARET. Habitual composed expression.....	op. 37
SLEEPING MARGARET. Sitting.....	op. 611
SLEEPING MARGARET. Smiling.....	Frontispiece. Part II

## DIAGRAMS.

Content of inter cognition.....	499
Subliminal states of Margaret.....	548
Reduced angle of Margaret's vision.....	752
Auditory anæsthesia.....	764
Intercognition, Real Doris "out".....	840
Intercognition, Sick Doris "out".....	841
Intercognition, Margaret "out".....	841
Psychical mechanics of inter cognition after Sick Doris's disappearance. Real Doris "out".....	844
Margaret's itinerary.....	977
Shrinkage of Margaret's visual field.....	978
Changes in passage of thoughts from Real Doris to Margaret.....	1160
Graphic Chart of the progress of Real Doris in conscious living.....	op. 1330









Sleeping Margaret smiling.



"This is your baby at Christmas with Jim Hyslop in my arms. Margaret and Dr. Walker is sitting back. You can see my new dress. Margaret. (The Imp nit.) I'm a wise baby now." See p. 831



PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
AMERICAN SOCIETY  
FOR  
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

---

---

DORIS FISCHER CASE—Continued.

In the evening M. said, "You must stop the R. D. from laughing the way she did once today. It is a nervous laugh and isn't good for her. (How do you know? Did you watch?) No, but I could *feel* that laugh." M. fell asleep and S. M. began to talk. M. was lying on her back—her favorite position in sleeping,—and I could not hear all that S. M. said, so the latter attempted to start M. to turn on her left side. M. in her sleep remonstratingly ejaculated, "Asa no!" S. M. tried it a number of times, and I believe felt irritated at M. for her stubbornness. At any rate, M. commenced to get uneasy, twitched this way and that as if on nettles, kicked out with her feet, and settled into a monotonous and querulous series of exclamations, "Papo! . . . O papo! . . . papo"—the last syllable uttered with a peculiar circumflexion—"O papo!", as though I were annoying her. After a while she woke and said, "Ah don't want to be naughty, papo. (Of course you don't; you're not naughty, go to sleep.)" She slept, and the movements and exclamations recommenced. Again she woke, and protested, "Something is making me naughty, papo. I don't want to be naughty, something is making me." I reassured her and she again slept, but with no change. S. M. would not admit having anything to do with the phenomenon. At my wits end I woke M. and told her she must stop or I would "smack" her. She piteously declared that she wasn't to blame, and as she fell asleep the acts and exclamations instantly renewed. I woke M. and administered two or three light slaps on the hand. M. was sorely grieved, sobbed and expostulated,



"Papo doesn't love his baby. I told you something made me do it. I didn't want to be naughty baby; I want to be good baby", and she murmured sentences to the same effect after asleep. But the twitches ceased, though by now I was convinced that M. was not voluntarily guilty of them. R. D. came at 10.20, but M. watched, and R. D.'s sleep was much broken. *Sept. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 7 m.; M., 4 h. 8 m.*

*Sept. 26.* In the morning M. lamented that I had "smacked" her. "(I didn't hurt you much.) You hurt me in my mind. I told you, papo, that it was something else. (Why do you think so?) Because I felt the way S. D. used to feel when I teased her. (But you stopped after I smacked you.) Yes, and the S. D. stopped after I had done something to her that I wanted to do. You smacked me, papo, when I told you it was something else. (I am sorry.) What good does it do to be sorry? You smacked me", etc., etc. S. M. admitted that she had felt rather cross with M. for refusing to turn over, but would not admit that she had punished M. [377] Probably on account of M.'s grief at her undeserved chastisement, R. D. was not free, *i. e.*, M. watched all day. I gave R. D. a brief piano-lesson, and at times she looked like patience in the toils of an unseen enemy. In the evening S. M. said, "You must not give her lessons when M. is watching. M. was underneath, greatly amused at R. D.'s attempts to play, making her fingers go wrong, and confusing her thoughts." M. was tired in the evening in consequence of watching all day, which she said she could not help doing. When she went to sleep there was again conflict of will about position. As she lay on her back there would come a sort of heave of the shoulders—S. M. trying to start M. to turning over on her side so that I could hear better, then the body would settle back, and "Asa no!" would be heard,—M. resisting the muscular pull, conquering and giving vocal evidence of discomposure. Fearing that S. M. would attempt again to punish M., when the latter woke I induced her to lie on her side.

---

377. Afterwards S. M. admitted that she was the guilty party, and said that she did not admit it at the time because she did not care to be scolded.



R. D. came at 9.35 p. m., and the energy with which the hands grasped my coat after she fell asleep showed that M. was not watching. She had a very good night. *Sept. 25-26: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 47 m.; M., 3 h. 28 m.*

*Sept. 27.* In the morning, as I was talking with S. M., who was lying on the left side, there came a movement as if to turn back, followed by a surprised or protesting exclamation in the tones of M. I asked what was the matter, and S. M. said, "She wanted to turn on her back, and I wouldn't let her." The episode was repeated several times. I asked S. M. some time afterwards, how she was able to prevent M. from turning over. She replied, "I cannot make her do anything that she doesn't want to in the way of movements. If she had been bound to turn over I could not have prevented it, but she felt me trying to keep her back and it acted as a hint. She was willing to stay."

R. D. commented on the contrast between her feeling of freedom today, and the feeling yesterday, as if someone were pulling against her, and as if someone were laughing at her, etc., and added, "I had been free so long that I suppose I notice it more now when I am not."

M., in the evening, seeing a bottle of pills in my hand, grabbed it and swallowed one. Later S. M. said, "You must keep all pills and tablets out of her reach; she has a mania for them. She has taken several of the mother's pills, and she took four of yours—took them all at once. She will take any kind of pill or tablet she sees, it makes no difference what. (I must clear out everything that is dangerous from the medicine closet.) O no, there is no danger from liquids, only tablets and pills."

R. D. came at 10.10, and M. watched, either from renewed trouble with constipation or because R. D. has been worrying about the health of Mrs. P. *Sept. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 19 m.; M., 3 h. 16 m.*

*Sept. 28.* R. D. practised on the piano 1½ hours, and it caused M. to watch and interfere. S. M. says that R. D. was disgusted with herself for being stupid, she had so much trouble with the scales. And the worry made M. watch all



the more and bother her thoughts worse than before. When R. D. attempted to play a little air set for her, M. made her play the nonsensical ditty, "Peter, pumpkin-eater", which M. knows but R. D. does not. And when R. D. counted time, she heard each count repeated as a sort of an echo, and finally felt a laugh which made her blush furiously.

In the evening M., while asleep, called out, "Mother, give me the spearmint candy that D. didn't eat." It was soft and sticky, and M. had an awful time with it, as anything that is sticky always excites her disgust. She sucked the candy, trying vainly to taste it, took it out because it stuck to her teeth, put it back because it stuck to her fingers, and when I gave her a handkerchief, gladly crammed the candy into it, then cleaned her fingers on my face and hair. S. M. was much amused, and bothered M., making her frown and look puzzled, by laughing. It is a never-ending wonder the way the expressions peculiar to M. and S. M. transmute into each other. When M. woke, she was astonished and disgusted to see shiny places on my face, and to find them sticky. "O papo!" she said, "you have a dirty face." R. D. came at 9.35. She did not feel well, and M. watched all night. *Sept. 27-28: 4 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 18 m.; M., 5 h. 7 m.*

*Sept. 29.* R. D. practised some today, with success because M. was not watching. Something occurred to embarrass R. D. when in town with Mrs. P. this afternoon, and after that M. watched.

M. has written two draughts of what she calls a will, giving her little possessions to R. D., Mrs. P., me and I don't know whom else. M. says that S. D. made such a will before she vanished, in the form of a letter to M. This statement S. M. corroborated, saying that S. D. wrote the letter just after she had begun decidedly to go, and a little before her last journey out-of-doors. M. made the startling statement that Dan. B., a school-boy friend, was a little girl before he was a boy, and that his mother decided that she wanted him to be a boy, so she put trousers on him. She was surprised that I did not know that this is what mothers do—decide whether they want the child to be a boy or a girl, and put



pantaloon or a dress on accordingly. S. M. says that M. has always believed this.

Since M.'s declension in tactile and deeper sensation, also in taste and smelling, other signs of recession have appeared, or grown to the point of being unmistakable.

**Late Changes in M., Marking her Recession.** (1) M. has ceased to desire to play. If I suggest her playing her drama she says, "We would have to play it all over, and I don't want to." She never calls for her doll, though she wants it to have good clothes, and to occupy a suitable spot. (2) Her liking for reading has notably diminished. Only a few weeks ago she would read dry articles because she had seen me read them; and earlier she would read a magazine through, advertisements and all. But I doubt if she has finished any article in two weeks. She looks at a few pictures, and says she is going to read something, but covers only a few lines before she throws the book down, says she is tired, and wants to be held or to go to bed. (3) Her pronunciation is getting more childish still. Often she says "scwatch" for *scratch*, "thith" for *thick*, "gweat" for *great*, etc. (4) She seems to have no desire to walk out, or even to go out on the porch, any more. (5) S. M. tells me that for several weeks M. has been afraid when alone in the house to venture outside of the study and bath-room until she goes to bed in her own room. She never when alone goes downstairs, or into any room besides those named. (6) Another late change seems superficially to be in the other direction. M., who like S. D., and in a measure R. D., was never sensitive to heat and cold, has of late become so. R. D. shares in the change. She never sweated so much before, and never knew such susceptibility to cold, she says. (7) According to S. M., M. has nearly ceased to "imagine", that is, to make up stories in her mind, and to imagine herself an actor therein.

R. D. came at 9.40 p. m., and M. watched for the third consecutive night. S. M. says it is not because M. wants to watch, for "she hates it." *Sept. 28-29: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 5 m.; M., 4 h.*

*Sept. 30.* This was an unstable day, partly on account of



the sick time being near. At 11.40 a. m. R. D. was banished, by the Ferris waist according to S. M. Returning in half an hour she was sent away again at 12.50 by the crash of something falling. Twice again she was sent away by constipation pains.

Once while M. was asleep S. M. remarked "She is making up a little romance. (What, now?) Yes, it is going through her mind. (Dreaming, isn't she?) No, she never dreams. She knows what she is doing. (Well, watch her.) It is about a little French girl. You are going to make a call at her house. . . . The little girl has an older sister. . . . The little girl's mother is sick. . . . The little girl meets you and takes you upstairs. . . . The older sister comes into the room. . . . O, the mother has a little baby." Here S. M. laughed, and M. woke, looking startled and asking, "What was it, papo? What made you shake me?"—the laugh of S. M. had shaken the body so that it woke M. Soon she slept again, and I shaped on her fingers, "Go on about the French girl." Her face looked scared, and she hid it against my shoulder, as she murmured, "Papo! papo! papo!" with her curiously varied inflections. When she a little later woke she said, "Papo, how did you know? Can you see right into our mind?" M. today demanded something that "would crunch", and asked me to go to the store and get some witch-biscuits, only she variously pronounced it wish-bickset, witch-bikket, wish-bikket, etc., and finally begged me to say the word. She listened intently, and managed to get it out correctly once or twice, but then having the same difficulty as before, took refuge, with evident relief, in the word "cwackers." It did not take more than five minutes to go and return, but as I neared the house her nose was flattened against the pane, and she welcomed me as though I had been gone a week.

R. D. came for the night at 8.55, and M. watched nearly all night. *Sept. 29-30: men. per. began; 12 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 27 m.; M., 3 h. 48 m. Average daily total of R. D. during September, 1911, 19 h. 34 m.*

*Oct. 1. Sunday.* The monthly period began last evening,



with little previous or accompanying pain. But she has been suffering from hemorrhoids for some days, and this morning Dr. L. prescribed capsules containing, with other ingredients, opium, and four were taken during the day, according to directions. On my return from church in the evening I found M. very sleepy, her sleep became heavier than usual, and an hour later her pulse was found to be but 60, and the palms of her hands were found to have no sensation. M. roused and said that she wanted to sleep in the study, as she saw Mr. F. in the back hall as she came in the dark, heard him shut the door, and was now confident that he was in there still. No doubt she saw the curtain blown by the wind, and heard the wind blow the door to. M. slept again, but I watched the pulse, and presently found that S. M. seemed hardly to be able to answer me. The latter manifested alarm, and said slowly and thickly, "I am afraid to have her sleep so; wake her up." Then began a siege, slapping the hands, blowing in the eyes, shaking her, etc. Many minutes elapsed before the eyes opened a slit, and showed the pupils unnaturally contracted. At an instant of relaxation the eyes closed again. After about ten minutes of keeping her awake I yielded to her pleading to be allowed to sleep, but only for a few moments. S. M.'s failing voice was heard warning, "Wake her, and keep her awake." Another siege, with administration of copious draughts of strong tea, got M. into condition to understand me, and I asked her if she had eaten anything. Nothing, she told me, but a big, black pill which she found in my desk drawer. I recognized the description of some pills, heavily charged with opium, which had been prescribed for me a year ago, to make me sleep, when I was ill and in great pain; it seems that one of them had been left in the drawer. M. added, "Our papo took those pills; I knew I could take what our papo took." She still wanted to sleep, but seemed to know what I was about, and attempted to co-operate, calling for a book of pictures to look at, so that she could the better keep awake. Her mental condition now seemed to be similar to that recorded just before she came here to live, and when she could not read and made queer comments of pict-



ures. [378] Neither could she read now, nor make out a picture unless the features stood out clearly, and then generally not more than one or two of the prominent human figures in it, and her answers to the question, "What is this?" were of the most infantile description, as "a man", "a baby", "two mans", etc. Where the picture showed no clear contrasts of light and shade she would pass on with the remark, "Us no like that picture." Her tongue began to trouble her, she kept running it out of the corner of her mouth, and presently asked, "What makes tongue come out?" I used suggestion to help her keep her tongue in, and M. added her commands, "Bad tongue, you stay in there. You behave yourself, BAD TONGUE." The tendency was gradually overcome, in the course of several hours. After keeping her awake for some time, I thought that perhaps she might sleep safely, but before long S. M. warned me that she again felt that she was losing grip on the system, so I woke M. with less difficulty than before, and resumed operation. M. pleaded to sleep, but was good and obedient, nevertheless. Not until 3 a. m. was she allowed to sleep more than a minute at a time, as it was found that her descent into stupor was very rapid. Another curious symptom was that I appeared to have only one eye, and when I asked her where that was she stabbed the air about two inches to the right of my face. Her skin was cool and clammy, her face flushed, her pulse was not permitted to get below 58. When I got her to realize that taking the black pill—in addition to what R. D. had taken during the day—had brought the trouble upon her, she was impressed to the degree which may prevent her ever taking stray pills again. Occasionally I returned to the subject of pills, and her protestations became more vehement that she would never meddle with any after this. "No, asa never will touch any bad pills again. Asa no! I will say, 'Go away, bad pill.' . . . If I see a pill I will say, 'O-o-oh, Bad Pill; I's 'fraid of you.' . . . If I see any pills coming I's going to say, 'Wicked Pill, hurt Mar-

---

378. See page 384, and Notes 181, 192.



garet, GO OFF!" By 3 a. m. I felt that the battle, which was for her very life, was victorious. She opened her eyes and seemed to be more like herself; S. M. also felt that a change had come, and as M. fell asleep, whispered that she was now safe. I now let M. sleep, but remained by her until morning, keeping watch on pulse and respiration. S. M. described her feelings, when she felt herself helplessly going, before I roused M. the first time, "It was a terrible feeling. I was very much frightened. I don't believe you ever could have wakened her if I had completely gone." [379] *Sept. 30-Oct. 1: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 15 m.; M., 4 h. 25 m.*

*Oct. 2.* The monthly period was accompanied by very little pain, a remarkable fact in view of the suppression for five years, relieved but four months ago. R. D. came at 7.55 a. m., was weary and languid, as was to be expected, her flesh was tinged and spotted with blue, and her pulse was but 60. Though she was physically disinclined I had her rise at 10 and go with me to see Dr. Walker. I saw him alone and told the story of last night. He prescribed epsom salts, to expel the poison from the system as soon as possible. R. D. then saw him a few minutes, and M. did not "pop out" as she had intended to do, for fear, she afterwards explained, that he would scold her about the pill. I bought a little doll that caught M.'s fancy the other day when R. D. was looking at it and M. watching. M. had repeatedly charged me to get it, saying that she did not want to play with, but only to hold it. Of course M. watched today, and on coming at noon she eagerly asked for the doll, and hugging it under her chin fell asleep.

After a very short day—and no wonder, R. D. came at 9.10 p. m., and M. watched all night. She is averaging about

---

379. The reader may wonder, if S. M. knew all that the others did, why she was not aware that M. took the pill. It was not the case with S. M. that she actually knew all that the others did and said and thought, but only that she potentially did, had the capacity of knowing. As a matter of fact she did not notice everything which the others did, etc., as she might be busy with her own thoughts, or engaged in observing something else. As S. M. said, "M. does so many little things, that I sometimes don't notice. Also see p. 716.



8 h. 30 m. of sleep at night. Oct. 1-2: 8 alt.: R. D., 5 h. 52 m.; M., 18 h. 23 m.

Oct. 3. Much suffering continues from the constipation, piles, and results of taking the salts. R. D. was mentally so much disturbed about her strange condition of health, and so apprehensive for the future, that I thought it might be best to show her that the occasion for the present disturbance is of exceptional character, not likely to recur, and told her that when she forgot she made a mistake and took the wrong kind of a pill. Instantly came the jerk of the head, and M. was here, expostulating, "I thought I was gone for all day, and here I am again! A-a-ah!" Then she turned on me. "What did you tell her for, papo? Now she will imagine all sorts of things about me. Didn't I tell you not to let her know anything about me?" When she was asleep, S. M. took up the tale, "You must make up your mind, papa, to tell the R. D. nothing about what M. does. (But I was afraid that she would imagine worse things for the future if I didn't. I told her it was a mistake, and we all make mistakes.) No, she won't imagine about the future. And if you don't tell her about what she does when she forgets, she will just put that aside. You have told her that you will some time tell her all the history of her case. Let that suffice; she will be content to wait. If she asks a question about what she does when she forgets, tell her you will let her know all about it later, and she will be content. I know that if R. D. knew all about M. she would worry, and would not get well, or not nearly so soon."

M. saw a portrait of Dr. Hyslop in the paper and knew it at once. Later I showed it to R. D. and she could not determine who it was. Soon after M. saw the picture, she asked me, "What you readin'?" As I was reading one of Tyndall's addresses I naturally answered, "Science." It will be remembered that when M. has asked me how I saw into her mind, I have told her that I do it by science, not wishing to give S. M. away. M.'s eyes now grew big and glistened, and she exclaimed, "I must read that, and find out about that science. (It is the 'Belfast Address'.) Well,



can't I write there? (What for?) Isn't that where she is? (Who?) Science. O, I know what I'll do; I'll write to that Jim Hyslop, and ask him to tell me about that science. (You may.)" Note in the above pretty illustration of M.'s mental processes that she understood "Belfast Address" to mean the post-office address of the mysterious Science. M. sat down at my desk and wrote her letter:

"Oct. 3, 1911.

Dear Jim Hyslop. Whenever I do anything when papa is away, then when he comes home he tells me what I did, when I ask him how he knows he say, Oh it is science. So I said I was going to write to you and find out what science is. Papa said I have to study German, and lots of other things. So please write me real quick and tell me what it is. I won't let papa see the letter if you don't want me to. Sorry I won't be here when you come again. Write real quick. Margaret.

Christened my baby doll, Jim Hyslop today, it is a new one. Saw your picture in the paper you sent, knew you right away. Will read your article later when I see papa read it will let him know what I think of it. Well I have to go to bed. Good night Jim Hyslop. Margaret.

Don't use to big of words please as I have not time to look them up in the Dic."

R. D. came for the night at 9.50, M., for the first time in several nights, not watching, as shown by the clutching of the hands when I started to leave. S. M. asserts that there is no longer rising and feeling out after I have left the room. R. D. had an excellent night. *Oct. 2-3: 12 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 41 m.; M., 4 h. 59 m.*

*Oct. 4.* M. evidently felt well this morning. She stretched repeatedly, always a favorable sign, and remarked, "I'm awful swetchy." I did not understand, and had her repeat this several times, when suddenly she seemed to rise to a higher plane of consciousness, her baby tones altered to child-like ones, and she said in a shamed-faced way, "Ah said ah was awful stretchy." She told me a story about a family near the old Row, the father a negro, the mother white, three



of the children black, three white with light though kinky hair. "The woman told D.", said M., "that she wished the other three weren't black. D. swallowed it, but ah laughed. Ah said to myself, if she didn't want a black baby, why didn't she tell the doctor to bring a white one? Couldn't fool me." She was lost in thought for a little, and added slowly, "But perhaps she couldn't go herself. Perhaps she had to telephone. Perhaps that was it." She laughed, and said with an air of discovery, "Funny! Ah *never* thought of that before. Praps the woman didn't lie after all." Again she considered. "Or maybe the woman told the doctor what she wanted three times, and the nigger told him what *he* wanted the other times. Ah guess *that* was it." She was delighted to find a theory that explained the facts so well.

M.'s belief about the origin of babies, *i. e.*, that when a woman wants a baby she pretends to be sick, and sends to the doctor to bring a baby of a specified description, which he selects from an assortment of them that he has gathered on the river-bank, where God sent them down, and which he brings to the woman in a satchel, can easily be accounted for. (1) *The doctor and the satchel.* Her mother answered the child's question where the baby came from by one of the customary subterfuges, "O, the doctor brought it in a satchel." The fact that the kids playing on the river-bank several times found old satchels which had been dumped there, seemed to support the already accepted statement. (2) *The river-bank.* When 8 years old, D. and two other children found a dead new-born baby on the river bank, and several more were found there, at the mouth of a sewer, during her childhood. She had been told that God sent babies down; then, as the doctors brought them it was obvious that God deposited them on the river-bank, and there they were collected by the doctors. (3) *The mother pretending illness.* She could not help observing at the Row that when a baby came, its mother appeared to be sick. I conjecture that her own mother, or some other, when at such a time the child asked, "Are you sick?" replied, "Just pretending to be." I find that R. D. when a child fully believed the above, as M. believes it no less today.



S. M. tells me a noteworthy example of M.'s present automatisms. While I have not, of course, witnessed it, it is so perfectly in line with what I have seen that I have no doubt of its truth. M. has a formula of undressing at night, to which she strictly adheres. Every article is taken off in a particular order and fashion and deposited in a particular place, the shoes, garters and stockings by a chair, the rest of the clothes in it. [380] If the garters do not happen to be attached, because she has been wearing a Ferris waist, she goes and gets them and puts them in the chair. Because she got used to taking off a gown in one piece, if she finds herself dressed in a skirt and waist she pins the waist to the skirt and then takes them off together. She wants a particular blue underskirt in the chair, and if she does not find it on goes to the closet and gets it. If it happens to be in the wash, she is disconcerted, and it takes a little time before she can get over the gap in the formula and proceed. Also, because R. D. used to leave the bed open to air all day, and M. would come and spread the covers, now, if she finds the bed made she has to take off the covers and spread them again.

A little past noon, while R. D. was pleasantly chatting and without outer occasion, she snuffed out, and M. came running to me and crying, "What am I out for? I wasn't even watching. I haven't watched all day. It is funny for me to be kicked out like that." I had M. sleep and in seven minutes R. D. was back, almost equally surprised at her sudden departure. After dinner R. D. started on foot to the nearest sub-post-office station, to get a package. On her return she undid and examined the article, then looked me in the face and vanished. M. then told me that she came out on the street, she did not know on what street, had gone on towards the river, and when she saw the river—"I was awful frightened. I didn't know where I was. I was going to sit down by the river and wait for my papo. You would have come for your baby, wouldn't you?" She slept, and S. M.

---

380. I had noticed the invariable way in which the clothes were afterward found placed.



named the street corner where M. came, and said that M. did not recognize the locality, though it was one formerly very familiar to her. "She thought when she saw the river that she would be stopped; it never occurred to her that she could turn. (Were you frightened?) Not much. I knew that R. D. would come soon; the very fright of M. helped to drive her away. And I knew that she had her library-card with her address on it. The R. D. was startled when she found herself. What sent her away just now was dreading to tell you, for fear that you would not let her go out alone any more." When R. D. came I told her that I knew what had happened, and she said, "O, I was so frightened!"

#### Watching by M. Wholly Ceases to be From Her Volition

R. D. came at 10.20 p. m., and M. watched all night. But by the testimony of both M. and S. M., M. no longer watches voluntarily, day or night. When M. shows knowledge of what has happened during the day, she will explain, "The R. D. was thinking about it just before I came, when I began to watch", or "I got the R. D.'s thoughts as I was coming near." M. seldom watches in the daytime until shortly before R. D. goes, that is until R. D. is tired, unless the latter is worried, frightened, or in great pain. And bodily pain is gradually ceasing to cause M. to watch. *Oct. 3-4: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 26 m.; M., 4 h. 4 m.*

*Oct. 5.* Today it was necessary to resume pills for constipation. I was about to give them to M., but her eyes grew wide from terror, and she stuttered, "Don't want bad pills. Pills hurt us. Bad pills!" and I had to wait and give them to R. D. When I was absent M. referred to herself as my baby. Mrs. P. asked if she was not *her* baby too, and M. said, "Yes, but I am the papo's *real* baby. (Why so?) Why it is papo who is getting us well. (But didn't I help get you better?) Yes, you helped get us better, but papo is making me go,—that's why he is my real papo." In her quaint way M. was expressing the fact of a psychical relationship.

M. has started to read Tyndall's "Belfast Address", and seeing my bookmark in it, urged, "Read faster, papo, so I



can go on reading." She cannot comprehend the article. This morning, in her sleep she broke out "Dem-mo-creet-us!" in tones of amusement, if not sarcasm. After a pause, she added, "Lu-ci-fer-creet-us! He liked Demmo-creetus." Both Democritus and Lucretius are mentioned in the Address.

Before M. goes for the night, she demands a kiss from Mrs. P. and another from me. Tonight Mrs. P. was out when R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. Coming a few minutes later, the three of us chatted for a half-hour, then Mrs. P. kissed R. D. and was leaving the room, when M. came back with a shout, "O mother! mother! don't go away without kissing me," and gave a series of plunges and kicks. Mrs. P. remarked, "I just kissed you, didn't I?", but M. retorted, "Not me, you didn't." The kiss received, M. was instantly asleep, and I woke her by blowing in her eyes, in order to bring R. D. In a moment the clutching began, showing that M. was not watching.

**R. D. Begins to Sleep more Soundly with M. not Watching.** But another change is here to be noted. Whereas, when M. first began to leave off watching at night, R. D.'s sleep would at such times be more uneasy than when M. watched, the contrary is now true. I suppose that the novelty of the situation, and the additional load, as it were, undertaken, caused the disturbance of sleep at first, but now that she has become used to the change the more normal sleep proves, as it should, more satisfying. *Oct. 4-5: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 20 m.; M., 5 h. 5 m.*

*Oct. 6.* R. D. was feeling so splendidly today that she was allowed to take a walk alone. She carries in M.'s compartment of her purse my card with address and telephone number, also a short note in an envelope instructing M. what to do if she comes and does not know where she is. [381] Shortly after her return M. came, and soon inquired to whom R. D. had been talking. "(Why do you think she has been talking to anyone in particular?) She feels as though she

---

381. These were carried for a long time, but when the time came that they might have been useful, M. was past the power of consulting them.



had been"—putting her hand to her cheeks. "She is hot; she feels as though she had got nervous talking with someone. Who did she talk to, papo? (Where has she been to talk to anyone?) How should I know? I haven't watched." Afterwards I consulted S. M. who said that she did not think that R. D. got nervous talking with anyone. "Let me see, it seems to me that she did talk to someone in the library, but I can't think who; I wasn't paying attention. I don't think she got nervous over it, or I would have watched sharper." After R. D. came she told me the adventures of the trip, and among them whom she saw and conversed with in the library. The next time I talked with S. M. I said, "(You did not notice the talk with Mrs. M.?) No. (Then it is possible for quite an incident to escape your notice?) O yes. Before her mother died I did not have to notice everything that she did or that happened to her. I observed her directly mostly when she got tired or nervous; the rest of the time I mainly saw her thoughts like a panorama running before me. After S. D. came I watched M. and S. D. all the time. But now I do as I did before the mother's death. I often do not feel it necessary to pay attention when R. D. is out and feeling easy."

How long R. D. stays in the evening is partly determined by her occupation. One which is very pleasant to her and keeps her from feelings of ennui prolongs her stay. M. said something today which showed that she knows the fact of her own suggestibility. I jokingly said, "When you come tomorrow noon," and M. flashed out, "*don't* say that; it will make me come." M. asked for some sweetened water with essence of wintergreen. I brought her simply sweetened water; she drank it with every appearance of satisfaction and said, "That was fine wintergreen." I looked at Mrs. P. and winked, and just then M. looked up. I thought the cat would be out of the bag, but no, she did not appear to have noticed. Later S. M. said, "I know that wasn't wintergreen. I knew it when I saw you wink at the mother. It is a wonder that M. did not notice it and yell out at getting fooled." R. D., coming at 10.15, had a good night. *Oct. 5-6: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*



Oct. 7. R. D. went to the door this morning and got the letters. She paused to look over the envelopes, and at the sight of one M. came with a yell, came bounding up the stairs, and with dancing eyes clamored for me to come and see the letter from Jim Hyslop answering her inquiry. It was of the nature of a humoring letter to an inquisitive child, and pleased her, even though it gave her little light on "science." After reading the letter she ran and concealed it in her drawer, and R. D. came considerably mystified by her departure.

R. D. and I worked for some time in the registrar's office. Later she spontaneously referred to the fact that as 5 p. m. approaches she frequently feels bored and uneasy. "It is because I used in the B. phase [382] to walk out then. I feel as though I *must* go, sometimes." Last night S. M. advised me to see that R. D. was engaged in some agreeable task when the hour of 5 approached. "You have got her over the habit of going at noon; now you must get her past the other danger-point." R. D. started mending something at 4.40, and went at 5.03; S. M. said that the task was not an agreeable one to her. M. woke and repeatedly said, "I don't like that Dr. Walker", without giving any reason. About an hour after R. D. returned she remarked, "I have taken a sudden dislike to Dr. Walker. (Why is that?) I don't know any reason, but I have. (He has been very kind to you.) I know he has. I don't know why I have such a feeling." Afterwards S. M. said, "R. D's feeling of dislike to Dr. Walker seems absurd to her. *She* has seen him so little and thought about him so little that she doesn't see why she should suddenly dislike him. M. has been thinking it so hard that it has somehow affected the mind of R. D." R. D. slept well from 10.27 p. m. Oct. 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 41 m.; M., 2 h. 31 m.

Oct. 8. *Sunday.* There was a special service in the church in the forenoon, it was long, the congregation large and the

---

382. The term used in conversation by R. D. in referring to Sick Doris, as "Phase A" was her term for Margaret. As she did not like to use the personal names and as it was perhaps best from the therapeutic point of view that she should not, I suggested the terms which she adopted.



singing loud. Consequently R. D. became weary, M. came in the midst of the sermon and a singular psychical phenomenon followed. The story had best be told in the order in which it was learned. After service, I noted that it was M. who passed me on the way out. When I reached home M. came flying to me and exclaiming, "Papo, there is another S. D.; there *must* be another S. D. (What do you mean?) There must be somebody else, because I was yanked in at church. (Yanked in?) Yes, somebody yanked me in, just the way I used to S. D., *Ah* know! you can't fool this chicken! There's somebody else." Nothing I could say disturbed M.'s conviction that there was "somebody else." I now had her sleep, and S. M. came out with the whole story. "I have had the most dreadful time. I was dreadfully worried in church. When M. came out and saw you, she was getting ready to sing out 'O you papo!', the way she does at home, and think of the commotion there would have been! You would have stopped, and wouldn't have smiled back, as she would expect, and the mother would have been mortified, and she would notice that, and then very likely she would have got to crying and yelling. It never could have been explained so that people would have understood. If R. D. had come in the midst of it, it would have been a great shock, and if she heard of it afterwards it would have been almost as bad. I saw what was coming, and I tried to stop it by pulling her in. I never did it before, and didn't know I could do it. It took an awful expenditure of energy, though over in a moment. And I didn't know how she would take it, for she might have been cross and have undertaken to fight back, and the people would have had a spectacle of her quarrelling with herself. When M. pulled the S. D. in, S. D. used to get mad and snap out, 'You stop that, I don't want to go in yet', when she was half in already. And if M. had done that! M. came again when R. D. was going out of the church. She went and stood in the middle of the car-track when a car was coming, and I didn't know what she was going to do. But then it came to me that she was going to board the car, and I made another awful effort, and pulled her in, and the R. D.



found herself in the middle of the track and stepped off and went home. M. came the third time after you entered the house." M. now woke and resumed the theme, insisting that she was yanked back when she had just seen me and was going to speak to me. "Don't I know how the S. D. felt when I used to yank her in. And didn't I feel just so? I guess I know." I asked her to describe the feeling, but she could not do so, except that she felt tugged by somebody behind. R. D. proved more unstable today than for a long time previous. S. M. explained that this was on account of the energy exhausted by the "pulling-in" feats. "I think I must have drawn on R. D.'s energy, at any rate it has tired her." And M. herself, remarking how often she herself was coming, adduced that fact as another proof that there is "someone else." "For I know that after I yanked S. D. in she and I would sometimes make up and try to get R. D. out, but we couldn't ever get her out for two days." M., with all her childishness, does show a shrewd reasoning power. But I found it impossible to show M. that there would have been any impropriety in calling out to me in church. "Can't I call out to my own papo? (Not in church.) But if you wasn't our papo in church I wouldn't want you for a papo at home. (But think how it would hurt R. D.) I would tell them that it was me. (But they don't know anything about you.) But I could tell them. (They wouldn't understand.) Well they needn't mind; I guess I can talk to my papo." S. M. afterwards said, "You can never make M. understand. She used to be afraid to let anyone know about her, and she was cautious for fear that they would. But now she thinks the whole world is in league to protect her. She thinks that she can do anything with her papa, and that no one else counts. Now that you know about her and are helping her she is afraid of nothing. And she is becoming more of a baby, anyway." M. found a little zest in coming out in church, for she asked to go in the evening. "(You would get tired.) Well, can't I lay my head in the mother's lap? (No, it would not look well in church.) Then I don't think much of your old church if I can't lay my head in my mother's lap."



M. made some curious statements in regard to the location of the personalities in the brain. According to her, whenever a personality is "out" it occupies the "front" or forepart of the brain. The locations when not out were as follows, R. D. in the right side of the brain, forward of the ear; S. D. was behind and under R. D. in the right lobe; M. has her seat in the left and farther back than R. D.; while the personality which M. declares yanked her in must be back of her. Pulling M. in let R. D. slip by and out. S. M. afterwards said, "I don't know anything about the right and left business; I guess it is one of her fancies. [383] But she is right about one thing, when M. is out I am back of her, just as S. D. was back of R. D." R. D. came for the night at 10. Oct. 7-8: 16 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 43 m.; M., 5 h. 50 m.

Oct. 9. While M. slept she uttered a queer cry in imitation of the parrot. I tried the experiment of shaping my vocal organs as if uttering the same sound, and emitting the smallest amount of breath possible in contact with her fingers. She at once began to laugh. Then I shaped the words, "Keep still", endeavoring not to emit any breath whatever; she said "Asa no!", and looked displeased. I then shaped the words, "Jim Hyslop"; she instantly woke, looked at the place where the doll so named sat, and began talking about it.

A well-meant letter from Ada was shown R. D., as it seemed necessary that she should for once answer her sister's letter. The only time that M. watched during the day was while R. D. was writing her reply. At 6.10 R. D. went, and S. M. commented, "No, it was not habit which sent her away, for you yesterday broke up the habit of going the latter part of the afternoon; it was the mental commotion caused by her sister's letter which caused it this time." And after R. D. came at 9.45 p. m., her dreams were full of echoes of the unpleasant experiences of five years; she was being threatened and beaten, and when she woke she seemed to see a figure bending over her, and to hear mysterious sounds. The night was full of dread—and yet M. did not watch! Oct. 8-9: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 17 m.; M., 3 h. 28 m.

---

383. See page 741 for explanation of this remark.



*Oct. 10.* Today R. D.'s hands twitched, as a result of the nervousness caused by her sister's letter and by the submergence into sad memories which the renewal of intercourse with a member of the family brought about.

Last night I talked with S. M. about the location of the personalities. Among other things she alleged that S. D. had been lower in the brain than R. D., and M. lower than S. D. She then stated that S. D. asked M. what part of the body belonged to her. M. answered from introspection of her feelings that R. D. belonged on the right side—"she did not use the word *brain*, but some expression meaning the part that ruled the body"—and S. D. on the same side but back of R. D. and lower down, that M. belonged on the left side, farther back than R. D. and lower than S. D. S. M. says that M. has always believed in her scheme of topography, and has never deviated from it. Now M. believes that there is "someone else", and because it pulled her back just as she used to pull back S. D. argues that it must be behind her.

M. asked for "wintergreen", and I fixed a nauseous drink of water, sugar and salt. She drank it with the appreciation that imagination lent, and pronounced it "good wintergreen." I asked if she was sure it was wintergreen, and she looked at me shrewdly and replied, "No, it was anise. I thought it didn't taste just like wintergreen." It is evident that she tasted nothing.

R. D. came at 10 p. m., and M. watched during the night, which was again troubled by dreams like those of the night before, from which she woke towards morning to feel as if there were someone in the room. She attempted to pull the string as I had instructed her to do if frightened, but M. came, and did so. R. D. was restored after a time, and a little later Mrs. P. thought she heard her speak and sent me in; the result was that she sat up in her sleep, apparently frightened, and M. came again. *Oct. 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h.*

*Oct. 11.* I had to leave M. before she got her sleep out this morning, and the result was that she got not exactly cross, but into the pale shadow of one of her old tantrums.



R. D. could not come, and M. insisted on going down-stairs which she had not done for weeks. Her feet clumped on the steps, and I watched to see that she did not fall, as her anæsthesia prevented her from telling where she was stepping except when she looked at her feet. Also, when M. attempts playfully to pat me on the cheek or ear she often delivers thwacks which are really painful. S. M. says that when M. is asleep she feels as though she were just a brain and hands floating at little distances from one another.

I investigated M.'s topographical scheme a little further. She says that the personality that is "out" (speaking as though S. D. were still here) occupies the whole "front." She pointed to a spot just above and a little in front of the ear as the seat of R. D. when she is not out, to a spot just back and a little below the upper rim of the right ear as that of S. D. But, she says, since S. D. went R. D. centers farther forward, and also owns all the space formerly occupied by both. She herself is on the left side, a little back of R. D. and a little lower than S. D. was, and she is gradually going back in the brain as she gets weaker, exactly as R. D. is going forward in location as she gets stronger. I again asked where the "new S. D.", whom M. conjectures as Leverrier conjectured the planet Neptune for similar reasons, is located. "Behind us [M.] (Above or below?) Below. . . No, I think she is above. For I would have known it if there was anyone below me." She could not explain how she would have known. [384]

M. watched until R. D.'s second coming in the daytime at a little past noon. Before this hour I several times saw the left eyelid flutter, a sign of M.'s watching. M. was the one to eat dinner, and after it was through her stomach pained her, though she ate little. After she had slept awhile she

---

384. On Nov. 30th, commenting on a diagram which I had tentatively made on the basis of this statement by M., S. M. said that I had located her wrongly in putting her back of M. Naturally, M., when out, she said, would think that S. M. must be back of her in order to "yank her in", and *then* she is. But when M. is *in*, or out and asleep, S. M. is in front and above her. When M. is out and awake S. M. is back of her, but neither above nor below.



woke and said, "Ah am unhurted, papo; ah am unhurted now." Seeing that I looked puzzled, she tried again, "I am uneated." When she next slept S. M. laughed and said, "She means that she doesn't feel any more pain." Often, in the morning, when I think that she should sleep more in order to insure a good coming for R. D., M. will say, "I have slept enough." Her speech is getting more like that of a child. In the evening S. M. remarked, "You have a sample of the work of each of the others; perhaps I can make something some night. (Can *you* make something?) Well, I suppose that it wouldn't be mine strictly; I would start the muscles, and M. would carry the movements on, but it would be I that directed the work. (Couldn't you write something in the same way?) I don't know how that would work. I could begin, and perhaps I could get a few words down, and M. would think that she was writing and put down some of her notions, then I would get down a few words, and so on. It would be a mixed-up mess. (It would be interesting anyway.) Well, I will try sometime."

M. heard Mrs. P. say that she had written to her sister, and said, "I must write to my sister, too. (What sister?) The same one as the mother wrote to. (Is that your sister?) Of course the mother's sister is my sister; she is all our sister." Here she reflected. "It is your mother, isn't it, papo?" I answered "yes", to see what she would say. "What is her name?—I can't think just now. You know, in Boston? (Aunt Louise?) Yes. That is who it is—Aunt Louise. [385]

R. D. came at 9.45, and had only one short period of waking fear, though she dreamed that her sister Ada took her out walking and then left her on the street, and that she could not find her way home—reminiscences of her sister's letter, and of M.'s coming on the street. *Oct. 10-11: 8 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 42 m.; M., 6 h. 3 m.*

---

385. My answer was suggested by the fact that she had already begun to amalgamate the images of my mother and my sister, whom she had seen on the eastern visit; my sister predominating in the composite picture, since M. saw her much the longer time. The amalgamation became complete later.



Oct. 12. R. D. was banished once by the click of her hairpins falling to the floor, and once by a rapping on the door. Raps, strong or light, and creaking sounds, affect her very disagreeably, probably because her father used to steal into the house, and even into her room, to threaten or strike her, while under the influence of liquor. Today she altered a dress which she made but two weeks ago. "My taste is changing", she explained, "I don't like that style any more. My taste is getting more as it used to be before mother's death." [386]

I asked S. M. how she explained the effect that turning M.'s head to the right or left sometimes used to have on her. [387] She replied, "She so strongly associated herself with the left side, that turning her head to the right actually sent her away, and turning it to the left brought her again. (Was I right in telling Dr. Hyslop that you are never 'out' or 'in' in the sense that the others were?) Yes, I am always *here*." S. M. wanted to see certain diagrams which I had made to put in a letter to Dr. Hyslop, and to effect this I had to wake M. The latter could not understand the diagrams, and she cannot read my writing, though S. M. as well as R. D. can. But she laughed so heartily at the funny pictures that R. D. came with an impetus which shot the head back. "I never came with such a bump before," said R. D. Later, S. M. commented on the "bump", and illustrated it, whereupon M.'s voice was heard, "Papo, I want you to quit that." Whenever she sneezes in her sleep she thinks that I have pushed her, and complains.

R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. At about 1.30 the signal sum-

---

386. After S. D. went, R. D. inherited her habits and tastes to a degree, along with her memories. The memories remained, but the habits and tastes, so far as they were different from those of R. D. originally, gradually wore off. When M. disappeared she left no such inheritance, since no memories were derived from her. There were occasional gleams of something Margaretesque in the expression and manner, for some time, but these were probably due to the persistence, subliminally, of a nucleus or vestige of the M. complex, after it had ceased to "come out", or actually alternate. This in turn slowly dissolved.

387. See pages 336-337. 342.



moned me, and I found R. D. trembling with fright. It seems that she had dreams of hearing steps come upstairs, and then of seeing someone in the room, while at the same time she heard children playing on the hill about 20 rods distant from the back of the house. The illusions persisted after I entered, aided perhaps by a blowing curtain. Then M. came, suffering transmitted fright. M. slept, and S. M. remarked that the frights were bad in themselves yet came as an incident of R. D.'s improved condition, being the working out of memories from S. D. M. woke, and now said scornfully, "That girl is afraid. Humph! I tell you what, that girl is afraid. Humph!" Then she said that she knew what caused the dream. Once S. D. and M. had got R. D. to come, and just after that Mr. F. slunk upstairs in an intoxicated state, came into the room and struck R. D. a blow, [388] whereupon she went so swiftly that she did not remember it. At the time there were children playing on the street just back of the house. "That is what made her think she heard children out on the hill." S. M. afterwards said that she did not remember the incident clearly, but had no doubt that M. was right, and reminded me that with R. D.'s present hyperæsthesia of hearing sounds apparently as loud as those of the former date would naturally be located farther off now. The bad dreams of the series started by Ada's letter always take place between 11 and 2 o'clock, says S. M.; after 2 R. D. goes to sleep peacefully for the rest of the night. S. M. advised me to stay with R. D. for a night or two, during these hours, in order to help break up the tendency. *Oct. 11-12: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 38 m.; M., 2 h. 52 m.*

*Oct. 13.* In the morning R. D. spoke wonderingly about how "very late the children played out on the hill."

R. D. found a ring of mine in M.'s drawer and put it on her finger. I told her that she should not have removed it, and her face took on the expression, half embarrassed, half annoyed, which it assumes when that drawer is mentioned. "It had no business there", she said. When M. next slept,

---

388. This chanced to be the only time that R. D. was on hand to be the one to receive a blow, during the five years.



one hand came into accidental contact with the ring on the other. "No!" she said, loudly and with irritation. Waking she said, "The greaser! What's she been in my drawer for?", and then with an exasperated cry, "Has she been readin' my Jim Hyslop letter? If she has I'll tear up her things; I'll tear up her old prayer-books, that's what I'll do." I allayed M.'s fears on this score, and told her that I would reprove R. D., adding that M. sometimes puts things in the drawer that R. D. needs, and asking if I might look for them. She assented, and I asked if there was anything of that nature in the drawer now. "Well, there is a pin-cushion that I swiped from the mother; I don't care for that. And I had your pocket-book, but the greaser took that out. And I have one of the mother's tea-spoons." S. M. tells me that in the drawer is a queer assortment. "Anything that she has seen you use and seems to be thrown away she puts in there. She takes nothing from your table. The spoon is one that she saw in your hands." It seems that nearly everything which she now puts in the drawer is associated with me. Even a book which she saw me read went in. I asked if she would like an old check-book of mine, and she eagerly assented.

Having explained to R. D. the necessity of being with her to help her ward off the frights I ensconced myself as comfortably as possible near her bed, after she came at 9.45, prepared for a vigil. R. D. went to sleep with M. watching, and a number of minutes elapsed, when a murmur began. "Don't go away. . . Stay. . . Don't go yet. . . Stay with me. . . She's gone", and then her body and hands began to move restlessly. Then the movements ceased, and soon she began again, "Don't go. . . Stay. . . Don't go yet. . . She's gone", and the restless tossing resumed. Afterwards S. M. informed me that this is nothing new, that R. D. always utters these plaintive appeals when M. goes during her sleep and my absence. I was absent, so far as her consciousness was concerned. The tossing kept on, with intervals of quiet. Then a voice was heard, [389] somewhat different in quality, hushed and awed.

389. This was "Sleeping Real Doris", the somnambulic personality of the



"This isn't my home. . . This isn't my room. . . My room has a carpet on the floor. . . That is my bureau . . . my bureau . . . my bureau." I surmised that here was a repetition of the soliloquy of R. D. when she first came out after the removal to the Colorado Avenue house in October, 1908, and afterwards S. M. told me that this was the case. [390] A spell of silence and the same sentences were repeated. [391] Then came "Sit there! *sit* there! sit

former marvelous "conversation-recital" displays. She will be discussed further on.

390. It may as well be repeated here that my method of ascertaining S. M.'s opinions *was not*, as many a wiseacre would imagine if it were not expressly stated, to give her an inkling of my own judgment or theory first, and then ask for hers. I never was able to detect a trace of suggestibility or tendency to be persuaded out of her views, on the part of S. M. Nevertheless, I almost invariably ascertained her opinion before hinting at my own. This continued my habit to the end, though, after I had studied the staunch mental independence of S. M. for a couple of years there may have been instances when the guard was dropped.

391. Answering casual inquiry, R. D., who had no notion of these night revealings, said that when she first came out at the Colorado Ave. house, she thought she was in someone's else house. Nothing was familiar in the room but the bureau. There was matting on the floor, while in her former room she had had a nice carpet. There was a bed, while formerly she had slept on the floor or in a Morris chair, since Phase A, in consequence of her disgust at the odor of tobacco imparted by someone who had slept in it for a while, had chopped up and burned the bed the group had originally owned. The room was apt to be littered, S. D. was kept so busy, earning money, so when R. D. came she generally found herself facing a chair in front of the desk, and on the chair would be a paper, bearing the inscription, variously underscored for emphasis, "Sit there! *Sit* there! *Sit there!*", the object of this insistence being to make her sit down at the desk and busy herself with the painting or whatever other work they had ready for her, that she might not turn and look at the disorder of the room and be sent away. S. M. says that R. D. would repeat the words she found on the paper, to impress them upon herself.

Six months later [Apr. 23, 1912] I again interrogated R. D. " (How did you feel that day soon after coming here to live, when you were out so long? [March 6, 1911] ) It thrilled me through and through. It was like heaven; I never was so happy in my life. (What did you wish for the most when you used to come out for a few moments in the old house?) One wish was that I could see the street. It had been so long since I had seen the street. And that I could stay out longer. And I used to wish that I could see a



*there!* . . . O I am so glad to be out! . . . Wish I could be out longer. . . Wonder how it would seem to be out all day. . . Wonder if I ever shall be. . . Perhaps I could if I could only pray." [392] There was a long pause, and then, "Wonder what it would be to be out on the street." [393] Long pause. "Who is that Mr. Prince? . . . Who is that Mr. Prince?" The mind seemed to be working gradually backward, chronologically. A long pause ensued. "Wonder if he can help me. . . Wish they had told me his name. . . O, I hope he can help me." [394] Long pause. "O I am so glad to be here. . . Wish I wouldn't go away before the sermon is through. . . Wonder who that girl is over there. . . I would like to know her." [395]

---

child. I could sometimes hear them playing, but I never saw them. Only once, when I came out at Ada's for just an instant, I barely caught sight of them before I was gone again. I used to wish that I could be out all day. (Did you expect the time to come when you would be?) As time went on I feared it never would. It seemed to me that I was coming out less and less. I don't know whether that was so or not. But I feared that I would stop coming altogether. (Did you know where you were when you first came after moving to the Colorado Avenue house?) No. At first I thought I must be in someone else's house. The bed and almost everything was different. But I caught sight of my mother's bureau and recognized that. Every time I came in that house I did not know, at first, even long after, where I was."

392. I learned from R. D. at another time that she used to wish that she could be out longer, and think that if she prayed she might perhaps be so, but if she attempted to do so she would get notes from M. saying that if she didn't quit she would not be allowed to come out at all. So she sadly desisted.

393. Save for a few times within six months of her mother's death, when she would come and, oblivious of the fact of that death would start home to tell the mother something, never getting far before one of the others came, R. D. was never out on the street during the five years.

394. I asked R. D. how *she* first learned my name, and she could not remember with certainty. But in the course of her talk she said that she received notes referring to me, before my name was mentioned. The notes said that there was a man who was going to help us, "and perhaps we shall go and live with him. That was months before anyone had said anything about you and the mother taking me, and I wondered who it could be, and why we should live with him. I did not know it was the one whom I had heard preach, and with whom I had talked once, about books."

395. See page 256.



She tossed and turned during the long pauses, and curiously, every time she turned over she first stood up and gathered her skirts carefully about her feet, though there was never disarrangement that required it. Then she would lie down on the other side. Afterwards I learned from S. M. that this standing and tossing, and this "babble", as she calls it, goes on every night, and constitutes R. D.'s "good sleep", of the present time. I asked S. M. why she had not told me about this nightly program. She said that she had not realized that it would interest me, and had never noticed it much herself, since she had regarded it as only babble. Later at night, says S. M., when R. D. sinks into deeper slumber, the talk goes back farther and farther towards the date of the mother's death, but always has to do with R. D.'s comings-out. [396]

It was a little before 11 that, following the sounds of footsteps in the adjoining house [according to S. M.] I was roused from semi-somnolence by R. D.'s half sitting, half crouching, and crying in agonized accents something about someone coming up the steps and into the room. She said, "I must pull the string!", but seemed unable to do so. I caught her and assured her that she was safe, that I only was there. But, "NO!" she cried, "there he is! Don't you see him? There he is! Right there!" I felt of her eyes and found them shut, woke her, and still the hallucination, and the cries continued. "Don't let him hurt me! Don't let him hurt me! Be careful, he will hurt you too!", and she pointed at the supposed figure. In three minutes M. came suffering from communicated fright, and also seeing the image, but the impression soon faded away, and M. said, solemnly, "She is a scared girl, papo; she is an awful scared girl." When M. slept S. M. declared that my being there had accomplished its purpose, since the fright was very short compared with what it had been on previous nights. She thought the danger was over for the night, but I dared not

---

396. Note that the "conversation-recitals" had ceased with the declension of S. D., and that now that S. D. was gone no soliloquy related to her. S. R. D. never, from first to last, reflected any of the thoughts or speeches of M.



leave her yet. Soon R. D. came, fell asleep peacefully, and the series, "Don't go. . . I don't want you to go yet!" etc., soon was heard again, showing that in spite of the fright, M. was not watching. I slept in my chair until, waking at about 1, I found R. D. awake, saw her asleep again and left. She had no further trouble. *Oct. 12-13: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 14 m.; M., 5 h. 16 m.*

*Oct. 14.* R. D. remarked how good a night she had, apart from the fright. "I slept so soundly; I don't think I moved." So she often remarks of late. Little she knows!

R. D. came for the night at 9 p. m. M. was watching, and there was neither parting babble nor reminiscence babble. At midnight S. M. said that she thought the danger must be over. I left the room, but, fearing that the signal-cord might be caught, came back at once, saying, "This is papa." But she sat up in bed with arms raised as if to ward off blows, and head dodging as if to evade them, and, working her way to the foot of the bed, stared at me with eyes that contained no recognition, and became rigid. Rubbing the neck brought her out of the catalepsy, and M. came crying. In perhaps half an hour R. D. came, and was left; about an hour later the cord was pulled, and I found that R. D. had been in a fright for a long time before she got power to give the signal. Again, before morning, a thunder-storm frightened her. [397] *Oct. 13-14: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 30 m.; M., 3 h. 45 m.*

*Oct. 15.* Sunday. A very unstable day. [398] S. M. advised another experiment to break up the series of frights which started last Monday night, and that is to let M. sleep until the hours of danger established by precedent are past.

---

397. Every recurrence of fright instantly brought on the tense abdominal swelling. As time went on, this became a less marked symptom accompanying all kinds of painful emotion, and indeed, all excitement. Only very rare traces of the symptom were left by the fall of 1913.

398. I had not yet learned to restrain her zeal in the matter of church attendance, one reason being that I was reluctant to thwart her eager desire. Probably it would have done more harm than good to have curbed her in this respect more than was actually done at this stage. It was necessary that she herself should learn the effects, in order that she might not repine at the necessity of remaining away until she gathered more strength.



This was done, and though R. D. doubtless came near, since she was not summoned by formula, M. remained and slept on. M. suffered no fright. Having myself overslept, I got R. D. back at nearly 3 a. m., and after I left, according to S. M., the "babbling" began again, the rising and the tossing. Not only did R. D. think next morning that she had never moved after coming at 3 a. m., but M. did not know that *she* was there to that hour, but said that after I left at 10, at which time she woke and went to sleep again, R. D. slept splendidly. When M. is sleeping soundly she will count the strokes of the clock, but this is only the automatic vestige of a former conscious habit, and she takes no intelligent note. Once while S. M. was talking she suddenly stopped and remained silent for a few moments, then said, "I could not answer you. because M. was counting the strokes of the clock." *Oct. 14-15: 14 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 57 m.; M., 11 h. 3 m.*

*Oct. 16.* R. D. spent an active day, several hours of it in the registrar's office. During the day she got grieved for some reason, and when M. came in the evening she divined by her feelings that R. D. had been worrying about something. Later she was querulous and nervously hilarious by turns. R. D. had for several days desired to return to the practice of sleeping in the study, on account of her frights in her own room, and one night announced her intention of going there, whereupon M. came and declared that she would not go. She has gotten used to that room, and hates any change in her routine. But tonight she suddenly went and got the pillows and covers and made up a bed in the study, with the air of a sulky surrender. Occasionally, after this, she would whimper, "Want my own bed." R. D. came at 10.45, glad to find herself in the study, but after I had retired Mrs. P. informed me that she had gone into her room. I went in, and found R. D. awake, and exclaiming, "Why am I here again?" She slept pretty well. Probably the fright series is broken up. *Oct. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 14 h. 50 m.; M., 4 h. 55 m.*

*Oct. 17.* An attempt to explain the matter that worried R. D. yesterday only made matters worse. A jerk, and she



was gone, and M. came and burst out crying. I was foolish enough to remark that this sort of thing was worrying me to death, and M. now cried hysterically. She was soon made cheerful, but said that she would not let R. D. come today, since she would cry if she came. She showed increased vigor, wanted to cut out paper dolls, asked to look at her big doll, which she had not seen for months, sang ditties, danced a little, etc. Unexpectedly she cried, "I am not going to eat dinner", and a little later added, "R. D. is near." She kept on laughing and singing, and suddenly R. D. flashed out, just as the clock struck the noon hour. She asked "What made me go so?" apparently remembering little about the morning talk. Probably M.'s final happy mood rescued R. D. from the effects of the morning, for she showed no signs of any.

In the evening, while I was away, R. D. busied herself making a surplice, a kind of sewing which she enjoys and which does not seem to hurt her, until my step was heard, when she vanished. [399] She came again at 9.55, and slept well, in her fashion, moving and "babbling" as usual. Owing to the means suggested by S. M., the frights are done away with. *Oct. 16-17: 8 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 7 m.; M., 6 h. 3 m.*

*Oct. 18.* This was a splendid day. In the evening I was again absent, and again R. D. worked on the surplice. M. came after my arrival, and as is generally the case when she comes with work in her hands, continued to sew for a few minutes. She carried out R. D.'s intention of having me try it on, then put it on herself, saying laughingly, "It isn't consecrated yet." I remarked that if R. D. had staid five minutes longer she would have completed 22 hours. "Immedi-

---

399. This was a common occurrence, and illustrates the workings of the psychic mechanism when the primary personality has been long out, and a change is impending. As a vessel of water of a temperature at freezing point may show no change for a time, but the slightest jarring of the vessel sends acicular crystals of ice shooting from side to side, so R. D., when her stock of energy was about exhausted, yet could continue for some time provided her mind was calm and occupied with interest, but the slightest shock, whether of surprise, fright, sensitiveness, or even of pleasure, brought about the alternation.



ately R. D. came, with the exclamation, "Hello, papa; here I am again," and with something of an air of surprise. She now had me try on the surplice. Just before the five minutes were up M. returned, saying, "I couldn't stay in any longer."

R. D. came at 10.00. Her hands still clutch, but less strenuously; she is getting used to M. not watching. *Oct. 17-18: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Oct. 19.* R. D. was sent away for a moment today by gladness when I spoke of plans for her future; and again by disgust on accidentally swallowing a worm that the milkman had kindly furnished with the milk. M. watched a bit after the second incident.

R. D. came at 9.25, and had an excellent night. She had a curious and significant dream which I set down nearly in her words, but condensed. "I and the mother and a little girl about 10 years old were getting ready for bed, and then the mother and I went to bed together in the front bedroom. [400] You went to the back bedroom, and the little girl slept on the couch in the study. While in bed I said to the mother, 'Doesn't that little girl out there look like me? She is just the image of me.' The mother replied, 'Well, that's Margaret.' I don't know how that explained, but I seemed satisfied in the dream, and said 'Oh!' Then I went to sleep, but was wakened by the little girl crying and yelling. I woke the mother, and she thought the noise was down-stairs, and ran down. I called out, 'It is the little girl that is crying', and I went and picked her up and took her into bed with me, and talked to her and comforted her. The mother went into the room where you were, and the little girl and I went to sleep. Then I was wakened by the kid screaming again. And I listened and heard a lot of little feet, as of children, coming upstairs. I called mother and they went down again. Then mother called up, 'Alma's children are down here', and the little girl got up and went down. Then I went in your room and complained about the children coming. You said, 'Well, they'll go away', then suddenly I said 'The little

---

400. R. D. herself had never slept with Mrs. P., though both S. D. and M. had done so.



girl Margaret is down there and she will tell everything she knows.' You told me to get her, and I went down and brought her up in my arms, and she lay on your arm and went to sleep. I growled about the children's waking me up so early, and you said, 'O well, never mind, they'll go away', and then I heard the mother chasing them out. That ended it." [401] She spoke of the dream as a "crazy" one, and apparently gave it no further thought. I made no comment further than to suggest that the fact that the mother had to send away some children who came in the evening before probably accounted for the children in the dream. *Oct. 18-19: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 52 m.; M., 1 h. 33 m.*

*Oct. 20.* A good day, except for some indigestion. R. D. came at 9.05 p. m., for the night. *Oct. 19-20: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 21.* R. D. once or twice showed something like irritation, a kind of erratic abruptness or mandatoriness, which is new in her. S. M. commented thus, "She will not be so when M. is gone; that was never her manner. [402] You must remember that for five years she never had any will of her own, but was utterly ruled by the others. Her will is trying to express itself—that is what it means." In regard to R. D.'s present vacillation in regard to food, now liking a dish and now refusing it, S. M. said, "When she declines something that is good for her to eat, give her just a little of it, and that will accustom her to taking it. [403] Referring to her late dislike for calisthenics, S. M. said "Use your authority; just calmly but firmly tell her to come and take her exercises." M. watched very little today, and R. D. came

---

401. Mrs. P. had been obliged to send away some children who called early in the evening, since their chatter, formerly so congenial to M., annoyed her. It is curious that R. D., although aware that Phase A called herself Margaret, did not seem to connect that fact with the Margaret of her dream. To the writing of this note, April, 1915, no memory of the behavior of M. has emerged in the consciousness of R. D. except in dreams, and then without sense of recognition.

402. The prediction was verified.

403. The direction was followed, and the desired result followed.



for the night at 10. Oct. 20-21: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 53 m.; M., 5 h. 2 m.

Oct. 22. Sunday. No matter if M. says, "I have slept enough", I must not leave her or stop holding her hand until she actually sits up. I forgot that fact this morning; in consequence M. became a little cranky, and watched all day. S. M. says that the beginning of the watching was voluntary, "in a way", but having begun the process M. could not stop it. In the afternoon M. remarked, "Asa don't like Sundays; I come too much." I happened to speak to S. M. about the letter which S. D. wrote to M., disposing of her possessions. I had supposed it was destroyed but inquired to make sure. S. M. responded, "Certainly M. has it; it is in one of the old envelopes in her drawer." When M. woke I asked if she would let me have the letter, but she demurred, ending, "After a while, papo. I like to read it. And she might come back; I don't know but she has been back. If she should come back I would want it." But later she asked if I would like her to read the letter to me, and when I assented gladly got it and read it aloud. The creases, marks of handling, and especially the verbal expressions characteristic of S. D. only, absolutely attested its genuineness. Here is the last letter, generally called "will" by M., which S. D. wrote, one sentence referring to a member of the family being omitted, on account of its personal character. It is undated, but must have been written the latter part of March or about the beginning of April. "Dear Margaret. You know that Dr. Prince is sending me away and I may go any time. I feel it somehow. When I am gone you must work hard for them, but don't call him papa. You can have my drawer and all there is in it also the book he gave me and that book of Devotions. Put Doris's lace shawl away for her also the cashmere one, for when she comes she will want them. \* \* \* As long as you are here do not let the Doris do anything that we made her do or she will not stay out. [404]

---

404. The reference is to the various devices by which they brought R. D. out—galvanized her into being, as it were. Evidently S. D. thought it best to let me be engineer henceforth.



You must work to get her well. Well I will write more if I can get a chance. D." After M. had put back the letter, she said that if I would make a copy of it and "write it plain" so that she could read it, I might have the original. In the afternoon I had offered her a quarter for it, so she added, "And put the quarter with it, right in the front of the drawer." M. says that she herself has made a will, and S. M. says that M. has made several draughts of it, destroying each as she makes a new one.

M., who insists that R. D. must not touch *her* compartment in the pocket book, often takes small coins from R. D.'s part and puts them in R. D.'s bank. This is a small affair furnished by the savings-bank, with grooves for different denominations of coins. M. loves to see them fill up, but R. D. sometimes grumbles at the disappearance of her loose cash.

I have found out the reason for M.'s dislike of Dr. Walker, which was recorded Oct. 7th, but began earlier. At last she has said, "I know he hates me; I am afraid of him. I heard what he said when you were with him, and the R. D. was talking with Mrs.\* \* in the other room. [405] He said you must neglect me and be cold to me. I listened hard to see what you would say, but you didn't say anything. It is lucky you didn't say you would, for if you had I would have come out, and you wouldn't have found *me* in the room. Don't you try it, papo, don't you try it;"—with half playful, half menacing finger—"You'll never do it but once. . . I won't let the R. D. go there any more. I'm afraid to have her go; that man wants to hurt me."

M. has twice said that it is two years since S. D. went away. When I demurred she answered, "Yes papo, it's 'most two years. It was Christmas when you gave me the doll, and it was a long time before that. (How long since you went to Boston?) 'Most six months." She has now only the vaguest notions of time-duration. She hardly ever spontaneously mentions any event of the last eight months prior to the proximate four days, though she often mentions inci-

---

405. On Sept. 25th. See pages 699-700.



dents of childhood, and of the five years. R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. Oct. 21-22: 12 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 44 m.; M., 3 h. 46 m.

Oct. 23. After working with me in the registrar's office in the city, R. D. went out to do some shopping. On her return she said: "I was hurrying to get out of the way of a car, and I stumbled and fell on the track. I must have forgotten and said something, for when I knew what was going on a policeman was saying 'I only picked you up.' I must have said something to him." I questioned M. later and she reported that what she said was, "You let me alone", but S. M. asserts that M. said more than that. "The policeman was very polite, and did just the right thing; picked her up and brushed a little dirt from her. But M. came and said, 'You greaser! you let me alone.' He was taken back, and when R. D. came he was saying 'I only picked you up', and then R. D. thanked him sweetly. The contrast between M.'s manner and R. D.'s and the suddenness of the change seemed to rattle him completely," and S. M. laughed heartily. R. D. went out a second time, and a lady met her, greeted her cordially and talked with her, but she did not know who it was. M., however, afterwards gave her name. It was a lady whom R. D. had not seen for six years, but whom S. D. had seen occasionally to within a year.

In the evening I read aloud a story by Mrs. Rinehart, and partly because she likes her stories, and partly perhaps because she knew the writer, she was stimulated to stay out to 10 p. m., the latest hour after a good day, I think, that she has ever attained.

M. declared that it was true that she went, without the body, to her former home, as recorded in a former note-book, [406] and professes to regard this as an easy task. She affirmed that when I sent her to Mr. S.'s house, [407] she made a mistake and entered the wrong house, but that the little girl whom she saw was really Marie; that she has seen her since and recognized her. Afterwards S. M. stoutly affirmed the same. "That was easy to do—to go among her

---

406. See page 376.

407. See page 377 seq.



own people. (How about Mr. S.'s?) No, she didn't go there; she went into the next house. (How did the mistake come about?) I don't know." Although S. M. makes light of some of M.'s notions, she never weakens as to the genuineness of her clairvoyance, though neither she nor M. ever make use of that term. The seeing of Adelaide on P. Avenue, [408] however, S. M. says, was not a case of going out to see her, but a vision which came to S. D. R. D. came at 10.55, and clutched but slightly. *Oct. 22-23: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 57 m.; M., 2 h. 28 m.*

*Oct. 24.* S. M. was pleased that R. D. stayed until 10 last night. "She runs in grooves. It is a good thing to make a change like that. I think she will stay out late oftener now." For a week or more R. D. has been increasing the period during which she lies awake before giving way to M. She is constantly improving. Sometimes something occurs which checks her progress for a little—M. calls it side-swiping her,—but she never loses ground.

Here is a statement by S. M., set down verbatim. "The lowest personality is the one that gets all the thoughts down deep in the mind, that the real person knows nothing of, so that when the lowest personality is out it is able to get the thoughts of others, that they think but don't really know they think; so that if others had lower personalities, the two would be able to converse on subjects which had happened to the real personalities a long time ago. When the other person has no other personality, the lower personality in one who is like us is able to get thoughts of which the person is not aware—that is, when it is developed." While this was being dictated M. was reaching up and stroking and spanking my cheek, making it hard to write. At this point she woke, asked what I was writing, and fell asleep again. S. M. began again to converse, but broke off to say, "The R. D. is coming now." According to the present formula, I woke M. by blowing gently in her eye, she woke, and gave me some stinging slaps, her anæsthesia preventing her from properly gauging her pats. I asked "(Who is coming?)" and she answered in the

408. See pages 335-337, note 156.



tripping, coy and happy way in which she makes this announcement, "The R. D."

In the forenoon I put a nickel in M.'s drawer. R. D. had no opportunity to see the act, and did not go to the drawer during the day, nor has she for some days past, being now apprised of the impolicy of doing so. Neither was the nickel mentioned to her or Mrs. P. When M. came in the evening I asked, "Have you looked into your drawer?", though I well knew that I had been with her every minute that she has been out since I put the coin there, and she could not have done so. It is certain that she did not watch today. She looked into my eyes with the curious, intent expression which I have learned to associate with feats such as the present one appeared to be, and then flashed out, "A nickel in my drawer." This certainly looks like telepathy, I cannot see any escape from that explanation, as the facts are precisely as I have stated them, and there seems to be no other. I asked, "(How did you know?) I saw it in your eyes." S. M. says, "She means that she read your thoughts. She thinks that she sees them in your eyes."

R. D. came at 9.30, and when she woke in the morning found herself standing by the wall of the room. S. M. says that she has risen and taken a turn around the room each of several nights past. *Oct. 23-24: 8 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 37 m.; M., 3 h. 58 m.*

*Oct. 25.* M. came suffering from a stiff neck and soreness in the tonsils, for though anæsthetic on the surface, she is not to pains in the muscles and internal organs.

I had arranged for the Rev. G. B. Richards, a clergyman of the city interested in psychology, to see the personalities. He arrived at 7.30. R. D. was reluctant to come in, so he did not see her. At 8 Mrs. P. came in and made a sign to signify that M. had come. I did not understand, and Mrs. P. remained with her until 9.05, before I learned of her arrival, M. getting more and more impatient at my absence. With difficulty I persuaded M. to come in, but soon she was talking in her characteristic fashion. I put her to sleep, and there was talk with S. M., experiments for demonstrating anæs-



thesia, etc. I shaped words on M.'s fingers and she answered with perfect relevance. But soon she began to resent having her hand lifted, and cried, "No! No!" I stroked her on the right side of her head so that the head rocked. She perceived the motion, and the direction from which the impulse came, and said, "A-a-ah. That's the R. D. A-a-ah!" When Mrs. P. laid her hand on hers, she laughed and said, "You mother." When Mr. Richards did the same she felt of his hand and said, "You stop that, Richards." Then she said, "You have two boys." As Mr. Richards is comparatively a new-comer, living in a part of the city more than two miles distant, as R. D. had never seen him but once and that while he was preaching, while M. had had no independent opportunities for learning about him, and as even I, who had met him a number of times, knew nothing about his family except that he has a son who six months ago was ill, I was surprised to hear this remark. When she woke, Mr. Richards asked her "(Have I any family?) You have two boys." He said, with an air of asserting a fact, "(They are both babies.) No, one is at school and one at home." I asked, "(What makes you think so?) Because he looks like it." Mr. Richards said that what M. asserted was true, one was at home because he was sick. While asleep M. signified her wish for water in her characteristic fashion, putting her fingers to my mouth, then to her own, and saying "Now papo." A half-glass of water was brought, and the visitor saw the wolfish way in which she drank it, almost biting the glass, sucking in the water noisily, acting as if trying to get her face in the glass, getting the water up her nose and choking, catching a convulsive breath, then dashing at the glass like a cub snatching at a piece of meat. She never drinks in any such way when awake. Then there was talk with S. M., largely about the technical aspects of the case, and the visitor left after 11 o'clock. R. D. came at 11.50, and to my surprise, M. did not watch. *Oct. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 23 m.; M., 4 h. 57 m.*

*Oct. 26.* In the morning S. M. spontaneously remarked, "M. occupies only a wee bit of space in the brain, and always did.



S. D. had a lot of space. (How do you know?) Well, don't you yourself know, from what you have seen and heard, that M. was out only a little compared with S. D.? (Yes. You reason from that fact, then?) No, I see it. (Do you mean that you see the brain?) No, I don't mean that. I see the working in the brain—it is hard to express. (Don't you mean that you *feel* it?) No, I *see* it. (Do you mean that you see the mental working, and where it takes place?) Yes, I think that is it. (Then you ought to know whether M. is right in her views regarding the locations of the personalities in the brain.) Yes, she is right. (But you professed not to know whether it was M.'s fancy or not.) That was because I did not like to admit it. I thought she told too much. (Haven't you changed your mind?) No, I always knew it. What she said is correct."

Testing R. D.'s eyes with a certain type of print, and using different pages so that memory should not be mistaken for vision, [409] I found that she could read it with both eyes together at 61 inches, with the left eye alone at 60 inches, and with the right eye alone at 28 inches. I would say that the vision of the right eye is about the normal average. But 61 and 60 inches emphatically indicate abnormal, that is to say hyperæsthetic, vision, and the tests locate the hyperæsthesia in the left eye. S. M. calls attention to the fact that "it is M.'s eye that sees farther." But M. would not submit to tests; she would only laugh and close her eyes. I asked if she would not let me get information which would help get R. D. well, and she shrewdly demanded to know how that would help get her well. I answered that she would not understand. Sometimes M. uses words which sound surprisingly erudite. S. M. says that she fits in words and phrases of this character not because she understands them but because she has heard them used in similar combinations. Her answer was, "Well, reduce it to my way of talking, so I can understand how it will help, and maybe I will do it", but I could not

---

409. A source of error when a single chart with print of various sizes is used by opticians in testing eyes for fitting spectacles, as I learned from experience.



satisfy the demand. S. M. doubts if M. will ever submit to the test, but believes that M. could see that print across the room.

Unless M. is in an upper stratum of sleep she remembers none of her sleeping speeches or acts when she wakes. [410] She may rumple my hair in her sleep and directly after wake and say reprovingly, "Your hair needs combing, papo", with no consciousness whatever of the cause of its disarrangement.

The pain in the tonsils, with constipation, caused an unstable day. R. D. came for the night at 9.25. Oct. 25-26: 14 alt.: R. D., 16 h. 15 m.; M., 5 h. 20 m.

Oct. 27. R. D. is somewhat better today. This morning she found a note, reading, "Please make our Margaret a suit of roompers you can get the pattern at Boggs. M." I asked what "roompers" meant, and R. D. said it must be a misspelling of "rompers", and added that she herself had seen the picture of a doll-suit at the store named.

It is rare that M. is on deck when Mrs. P. and I go out in the evening. When R. D. is the one left at home, after M. has come she is not frightened by sounds on the street, and always goes to her room and goes to bed. But M. was the one to be left this evening, and said that she was afraid to go to her room, but would lie on the lounge in the study. But on my return I found her asleep in a chair. S. M. said that M. became frightened by the noises soon after we left. M. woke and with big, round eyes said, "I heard a great big noise, papo. I was frightened." Mrs. P. was detained much later, and M. kept exclaiming, between naps, "Isn't the mother *ever* coming?" R. D. could not come, for, as S. M. said, "M. has got to go through her formula of kissing the mother goodnight. The R. D. has been near, but somehow she can't come until that has been attended to." [411]

---

410. In what I have called the lower strata of sleep M.'s ideas and expressions were distinctly more infantile.

411. This was observed many times afterwards. But as M. approached her end she cared less and less for kisses. A note dated Dec. 29, 1913, reads: "I do not think that M. has kissed either Mrs. P. or myself a half dozen



I questioned S. M. and she told me what *she* saw of the seats of the personalities in the brain. Her own position is, she affirmed, directly over the left ear, not more than half an inch above the rim, so far as she could judge. She occupies or controls but a very small portion of the brain. "(A thimbleful?) Not more than that." Her position never varies, and is now directly over that of M., when the latter is neither out nor watching. M. was formerly somewhat forward of where she now is, but she has retreated to a spot beneath S. M., and half above and half below the rim of the ear. She also controls but a very small portion of the brain. When she watches, M. moves forward a little, and when she is out, like the others she operates through the frontal part of the brain. The position of S. D. was in the right lobe, a little farther back than M.'s former seat, that is a little in front of the ear. "But M. can tell you more exactly than I can where S. D. was, for she moves about and can see better. R. D. was in the real brain, but M. and I are in the brain below. (The cerebellum?) I think that is the name of it. The R. D. studied about it in school, but I have nearly forgotten it. If you showed either of them a picture of the brain I could mark the places on it if I only had the power then to use her hands."

I have often noted how easy it is for M. to walk through a dark room and not stumble over things. This evening I put out the light, and asked her to put her finger on my nose, and various other parts of my face in turn. She did so almost unerringly, though it was pitch-dark. I afterwards asked S. M., "If she can see well in the dark how came it that sometimes she failed to touch the spot by a very slight margin?" I divined the reason, but wished to ascertain if S. M.'s "inside" knowledge would enable her to give the physiological reason. S. M. promptly answered, "If you could not feel at all in your hands and arms do you think you could make your finger always go just where you

---

times in the last two months." She liked to cuddle near me, and often held fast to my hand, as was natural, perhaps, to one who had become entirely blind, but her child-like demonstrativeness of affection decayed.



wanted it to? She has to look at your face and her finger too, and that is hard to do at the same time." R. D. came at 11.17. Oct. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 47 m.; M., 4 h. 5m.

Oct. 28. There was coffee at breakfast the first time in weeks. Just as it was poured into R. D.'s cup, M. came with an exultant exclamation about the coffee. She said that she had not watched, but that R. D.'s smelling the coffee brought her. When R. D. returned soon after I asked if she was fond of coffee. "Not very", she replied listlessly.

R. D. related a dream that she had last night. She dreamed that she and Mrs. P. went to a cemetery on the side of a hill and beside a road, in order to take up the bodies of her mother and sister, and remove them to another lot alongside. They took up the coffins and dug one grave. Mrs. P. said, "If we don't get home soon, my beans will burn; let's put one coffin on top of the other." They did so, and then the question came up where to put the tombstones. Mrs. P. said, "Put one at the head and the other at the foot," and this was done. While the dream was relating I was thinking that yesterday a committee of a historical society of which I am an officer was discussing a proposal to erect a memorial of Gen. Neville of the Revolutionary period in the Woodville cemetery. One of the members said that the cemetery was around an old chapel, and that it was pretty full, particularly near the road which bordered it. While the old cemetery has been neglected, the bodies of county poor have been taken there and buried, one coffin on another. I asked if some of the bodies in front could not be removed to the rear, leaving room for the memorial. It was also suggested that the memorial be placed in the chapel instead. It was decided that the Committee should go out next Saturday and inspect the ground. I had never reported one word of this at home. I am positive and certain of this, and Mrs. P. corroborates me to the extent of declaring that she had heard nothing about it. The following coincidences are traceable:

(1) The visit to the cemetery corresponds with the proposed one of the committee to the cemetery at Woodville.



(2) The road by the cemetery tallies with the road by the W. cemetery.

(3) The coffins piled on each other correspond with the facts at W.

(4) Taking up the bodies agrees with my proposal to the committee.

(5) The question about the placing of the tombstones tallies with the question about the placing of the memorial stone or tablet.

Unfortunately I remarked to R. D. after she told the dream that it was somewhat like a talk the committee of the Historical Society had about the cemetery in Woodville, where it would be necessary to have some bodies buried on top of each other removed, to make room for a memorial stone. This is, however, all I said about it. When S. M. was next in a situation to speak, she said, "The R. D. got the dream from M. That is, what she got from M. started it. You were sitting by the fire last evening, and M. was watching you. I wish that you could have been looking out of the corners of your eyes and seen her expression. She was watching you intently, seeing what was going through your mind. M. often reads your mind. If you would take what she tells you in a more matter-of-fact way, and not try to get her to do more, so that she thinks you are testing her—she hates that—she would tell you more. (How can I get her to tell me about this?) Ask her if she would like to go to the cemetery with you. I think she will tell you." When M. woke I followed directions. Instantly her face took on a knowing and triumphant look, and she said, "I saw what you were thinking of last night. You can't fool your baby"—shaking her finger, and cocking her head on one side wisely. "I saw a p'rade going through your mind. (I didn't know that I was giving myself away. What did you see?) A graveyard—an old graveyard and lots of stones. Some people buried right on top of other people. And some of them are going to be taken up. (What for?) To move them out nearer the road. (Then there was a road?) Yes, a road by the graveyard. And there was an old church in the grave-



yard. (Have I seen the graveyard?) No, but you are going to see it with a lot of men. You weren't really thinkin' about it, papo. It was just goin' through your mind like a p'rade. (Are we going to do anything else beside taking up the folks that are buried on each other?) " She put on a far-away look. "I think—you were going to mark something—I don't know.

There was one error, but it might easily have been one of memory, that must in fairness be admitted. The proposal was to remove the bodies *back*, in order that the memorial might be near the road. Otherwise all was correct, and the following coincidences are involved. (1) A graveyard. (2) The graveyard is an *old* one. (3) Bodies buried on each other. (4) Road by the cemetery. (5) Church in the cemetery. (6) The church is an *old* one [it is disused, and is perhaps the oldest in the diocese]. (7) Bodies to be moved. (8) The graveyard has never been seen by me. (9) But I am to visit it. (10) A lot of men [a common enough term for several, with M.] will accompany me. (11) Something is to be marked. [412]

R. D. came at 10.45, and M. did not watch, but since the monthly period began in the afternoon, and pains occurred in the night, M. began to watch at about 2 a. m., according to S. M. *Oct. 27-28: men. per. began; 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 19 m.; M., 3 h. 9 m.*

*Oct. 29. Sunday.* R. D. reluctantly consented to remain at home today. On return from Sunday school I found M. sitting idly on the lounge. "(When did you come?) Asa no. [413] (Have you been here five minutes or half an hour?) Asa no." S. M. says that M. had been there about half an hour, and had never stirred. Several times, by experimenting carefully, since she "hates to be tested", I secured more evidence of M.'s abnormal faculty of reading the movements

412. The only particulars which it might otherwise be thought that M. obtained from R. D.'s knowledge of what I had told her—though M. did not watch in the interval—seem to be protected by their appearance in R. D.'s previous dream.

413. "Asa no" here means, "I don't know." But on page 748 it means simply "No." See page 657.



of the lips while asleep. I read aloud, and repeatedly, as she tossed her hands about, her fingers came momentarily in contact with my lips, and each time she repeated the word or two which I uttered while her fingers were in contact, and never any others. At dinner-time M. was out, and she insisted on going down-stairs. In going down-stairs she slides her foot down to the next step until she feels the jolt and hears the sound, then sets her heel and proceeds with the other in like fashion. Going upstairs is a more difficult operation, as she is liable to catch her foot, and unless assisted she is liable to fall. Going in either direction her feet clump like blocks of wood. In the evening Mrs. P. staid with M., and I had hardly more than left the house before M. asked her to see if it was not almost 9 o'clock, the hour when she was told I would return.

R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. Although R. D. had some pain, M. had watched but little during the day, and did not at all during the night. *Oct. 28-29: 12 alt.: R. D., 16 h. 35 m.; M., 6 h. 20 m.*

*Oct. 30.* We went to the office of Dr. Walker, who had been informed of the reason for M.'s dislike of him. The doctor was looking at R. D.'s throat when, with the usual jerk, M. came. In an instant she had an arm over my shoulder, a hand grasping mine, and her face hid against my chest, as for protection. The doctor asked why she disliked him. "I am afraid of you", she answered in muffled tones, owing to her buried face. "But why?", he persisted. After some urging she peeped out and explained, "I was out there, and I heard you tell my papo to neglect me. And I knew you wanted to make me go. You can't *make* me go." He continued, "(Why does the R. D. dislike me?) Because I made her. (How?) I thought and thought and thought, and kept on thinking, and the R. D. got it." Dr. W. asked if she did not want the R. D. there all the time, and she said that she did, she would like to go tomorrow. "(Then we are all working for the same thing. Have I ever hurt you?) No. (Well, I never shall.)" M. had been hiding her face after every reply, but was evidently being reassured, and when



I asked if she was still afraid answered, "Asa no." In a few moments, while M.'s hands were still in mine, there was another jerk, and R. D. was back. She at once took her hands away, but the doctor did not happen to observe the change, and was going on, "Tell the R. D., etc." From the moment that R. D. returned her dislike of Dr. W. vanished. In the afternoon I asked M., " (Did you hear his voice and come out?) Asa no. I was not watching. The R. D. got scared and went in, so I came."

There was considerable headache today, with internal pains. M. came in the evening weary and slept uneasily until 9 p. m. Then she woke in a stratum of consciousness which she occupies when awake only at times of sickness or following great strain of excitement, and which appears to be the same or nearly the same as the frequent lower sleeping stratum in which she talks in infantile fashion and of which she retains no memory, providing she wakes her more usual self. "Want to go to bed. Baby wants to go to bed", she whimpered. "(Get ready, then.) Now! Baby wants to go to bed now—now! (Put on your nighty, then.) I didn't say anything about nighty—I said bed, b-e-d, *bed*, BED! (But you must get ready for bed, first.) Bed! Now! BED!" This sort of thing continued for some time, and she fell asleep, continuing the ejaculations, and woke again and again, keeping up the plaintive appeal. I asked S. M. what could be done, and at first she could not tell, but later said, "Wait awhile; she'll get over it." Sure enough, after sufficient sleep she woke in a higher stratum of consciousness, and went to her room and prepared for the night. But just before this, when her sleep had become more normal, she heard the shouts of children on the street and cowered in fright. I woke her and explained what the noises were, and she said impressively several times, "Bad children!" I asked if she did not know she was safe with papa, and she seized on the suggestion with avidity. "No, nothing can get at me when I am with papo. I'm not afraid with papo." I tried to push the advantage further. "(And even when papa isn't here you are safe in papa's house, because it is papa's.



Don't you see?) No, not unless you are here. (Yes, even when I am not here.) No, because I have seen things here. (What things?) Things. (No, you only thought so, but nothing naughty can come in here even when I am away.) No, *papo*. I would like to believe that, but I can't quite believe that theory. I would like to believe that theory, but I can't." She seemed quite pleased at the big word, theory, [414] and mouthed it over and over. "(Well, *papa* will always protect you.)" She looked frightened and asked apprehensively, "What's that you say, neglect me? (No, protect you.) What's that mean? (Take care of you.)" She settled back with a sigh of relief.

S. M. said to me, in substance "You must not measure R. D.'s progress solely by the time she is out. Even if she were out no more in a day than just after the vacation, that would not show that she was not gaining ground. You know that M. is all the time losing. That throws more responsibility on the R. D.—demands more effort. You are apt to worry when any little thing occurs to side-track her. You should not be, for she is gaining all the time. I know it, I can feel it. If she doesn't gain at one end she does at the other." I told S. M. that Dr. Walker said I should not encourage M. to do what she considers mind-reading, since that would tend to redevelop her, and added that I didn't, that what M. did in that line was spontaneous. She replied, "You couldn't encourage her. You know that she never does anything of the kind when she is asked to. And she can't be redeveloped now, unless you kept her out more and more. So long as she is out little and sleeps most of the time, she is bound to go. She has gotten to the stage that she can't help going." She added, "I wonder that you managed things so well. If you had let the S. D. do what she wanted to when she first came over, while her body was getting nourished better, she would have become still more the dominating personality. And if you hadn't taken the course you took with M. she

---

414. Dr. Hyslop had used the word "theory" in his letter to M. (See page 717.) M. asked me the meaning of the word. This incident probably explains her use of it, or she may have picked it up from some phrase of mine.



wouldn't have come to love you, and you couldn't have done anything with her. It is a wonder to me that you made so few mistakes; you might so easily have taken a course which would have delayed matters. It seems as if you must have been inspired. Dr. Walker is wrong about M. It would never do to neglect or appear cold to her; she would run away or turn against the R. D. M. is going fast, don't try any dangerous experiments. You know how it works if she gets a notion for a minute that you are cross with her. I don't suppose that Dr. Walker ever had a case like this, did he? (None developed like this, they are so very rare. Many cases in germ—in their beginning.) You can't learn everything from books. I don't suppose that any two cases are exactly alike."

**Particulars in which M. has declined since July.** I will set down a list, not exhaustive but such as I can at this moment recollect, of the particulars in which M. has shown evidence of losing ground since July.

(1) Her time out is slowly, irregularly, decreasing.

(2) Her watching when R. D. is awake has decreased until it usually amounts to only a few minutes in a day. At the time of our return from the journey she usually watched for an hour or two before R. D. went for the last time in the day, besides much more than now at intervals during the day—sometimes all day.

(3) She began to cease watching during R. D.'s sleep, and this tendency has increased until she now usually watches none at all to the very moment when R. D. goes in the morning, except in case of sickness, worry or undue excitement of any kind.

(4) Tactile anæsthesia while awake has become complete.

(5) Tactile anæsthesia while asleep has become total, except on the backs, and especially the palms of her hands. In August she felt also on the lips, and, S. M. says, the nipples.

(6) Gustatory and olfactory anæsthesia have progressed until the former seems complete, the latter less so.

(7) She sees objects clearly only when directly in front



of her. I do not think that this can be, as Dr. Walker suggests, due solely to her small stock of attention being absorbed by objects in front, so that other objects are unregarded. For when she turns her eyes for the express purpose of concentrating her gaze upon an object to one side, it is still blurred and obscure. The object to be seen distinctly must be directly in front of her face. Of course, the farther off the objects are the more she can see clearly.

(8) Amnesia is increasing. She remembers incidents of long ago seemingly as well as ever, though she refers to them less frequently. But incidents of the last months, up to the proximate three or four days, are forgotten or curiously confused and blended. She does not remember my first name,—I am “papo”, and she knows that I am called Dr. Prince, that is all. She thinks that the visit was in Boston, which is in New York. She lives on Pittsfield street, in Pittsfield.

(9) Her interest in the time of day, formerly very keen, has almost gone. She pays scarcely any attention to whistles, and seldom looks at her watch except when in a whimsical mood, for counting her pulse.

(10) Her sense of elapsed time, never good, has diminished until it is very vague.

(11) She has ceased to play her “drama”, or even with her dolls, though the latter are kept in plain sight on the top of a book-case.

(12) She no longer cares to go out for a walk. Sometimes she suggests going to the store for candy, but this seems to be merely an echo of former desires.

(13) The range of subjects in which she feels an interest has notably diminished.

(14) Lethargic spells while awake are more frequent and pronounced.

(15) Apparent clairvoyance has ceased.

(16) Her modes of speech, when ill, sleepy or asleep, have become more childish.

(17) She reads much less than at the time of our return from the East.

(18) She becomes increasingly dependent upon me, in many respects.



It is a not uncommon trick of M., while asleep, suddenly to cry out, "O, I am sleeping too sound!", then to fumble for my watch, and having secured it to appear to count her pulse, while her closed eyes are turned towards the watch. "Sixty-six", she always concludes, "We're not sleeping too sound", then she replaces the watch, and relapses into quiet slumber. It may be that there is conscious humor in this, but more likely it is a humorless automatism. In either case, it is an echo from the night when she suffered the effects of the opium, and when I expressed my relief on getting her to the point where the pulse did not sink below 66.

R. D. came at 9.10 p. m., and M. watched for a short time after she went to sleep, and also for a short time towards morning. *Oct. 29-30: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 5 m.; M., 4 h. 25 m.*

*Oct. 31. M.'s Field of Vision Narrowing.* A mood of M. today made possible tests of her present peculiarities of vision. By causing her to think that compliance would help to get R. D. well she was induced to try and hold her head still with face square in front, but with eyes roving to the side in order to catch sight of my face, moving laterally from the side to her front at about one foot distance. Generally when I asked, "Do you see my face now?" she would say, "No", but jerking her head sideways would add delightedly, "But I can now." When she finally succeeded in keeping her head still it was found that not until my face was almost directly in front of hers could she see it. I asked how it looked to her in the direction whence my voice sounded, and she answered "Black." The angle within which she can see is about this:



The diagram does not pretend to be mathematically ex-



act, but approximates to the fact. Owing to the difficulty of experimenting with M. absolute accuracy was not possible.

Today M. resumed her tendency to fall asleep immediately on coming, which had been in abeyance for several weeks. [415] Twice before I could reach her, her head dropped forward on her lap and she was asleep. In the evening she was uneasy, and began annoying movements, such as kicking at a pair of Arab pistols hung low over the foot of the couch, nor would she stop on persuasion or command. This is an illustration of the fact that when she once gets into a series of monotonous movements, it becomes an automatism which no entreaty, assumed sadness, sternness of manner or threats of punishment, unless these are actually carried out, can banish. She loves her "papo", but that does not make any difference. It seems as though for the time being she actually gloats over the fact that she annoys or displeases me, though I do not think that this is a true statement. The movements are a sign of weariness and nervousness, though it may be that there is a slight recrudescence of the old emotional coloring which accompanied the acts of annoying S. D. after the latter had exhausted her by "making her work." Finally I threatened to spank her, drawing her hand away rather brusquely. The act rather than the words, probably, seemed to frighten her; she cowered and sobbed a little, and then, her energy exhausted, fell asleep. Even in her sleep she withdrew her hand from my touch. When she woke she looked at me, with big fascinated eyes, and would not, or could not speak. Another nap mostly dissipated the fright, but she hid her hands, and said, "Hands all gone—all gone. B-a-d papo! make hands all gone."

R. D. came at 10.20, and went to sleep with M. not watching. The detailed record of alternations for the day was lost. *Oct. 30-31: 1 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 45 m.; M., 4 h. 25 m. Average daily total of R. D. during October, 1911, 19 h. 15 m.*

*Nov. 1.* I have had a bad cold for several days. Yester-

---

415. Either illness or any notable advance of R. D., each of these very different conditions causing a drain of energy, would react upon M. in the form of weariness and somnolence.



day, and again today, R. D. complained of a sore throat, and today of headache. S. M. says, "I believe that your cold affects her by suggestion." [416]

Last evening M. knew that the church was to be consecrated tonight, and proposed that *she* go and R. D. come out in the service. But tonight she had forgotten so completely that she inquired, on seeing me dressed in my best clothes, whether Hyslop or Richards was coming, and then where I was going. Mrs. P. and I were worried lest M. would come out during the service, but R. D. would have been very much grieved not to be present at so interesting an affair, and it had to be risked. And M. did come out for about three minutes, but fortunately when I was seated and partly hidden among persons seated in the chancel. M. herself shall tell the story. "I was out just a *little* while. Where *was* you? I looked and looked for you but I couldn't see you. I was goin' to say, 'O you papo!' But I was yanked in. (How did you get yanked in?) Asa don't know." S. M. will now take the floor. "She must never go to church until M. is gone, special services or not. I pulled her in this time, but I won't try to do it again. It is too hard, it itkes too much energy—I don't know whose. M. looked for you; she saw the Bishop, when you were quite near him. I saved the situation a few times by making her see things. (How did you do that?) I don't know—I just did it. (What did you make her see?) Things that weren't there, to get her interested in them. And once she would have seen you, and I made her see blackness. You must not let her go again." M. watched most of the time during the service, and could tell much which took place. It is the more remarkable that she did not see me, but S. M.'s account furnishes an explanation.

---

416. The word "suggestion" used in this sense was, I think, derived by S. M. from me. Though few persons are more reasonably tenacious of their *opinions* than S. M., yet it was inevitable in the course of our conversations that she should employ a few of my terms, even as for convenience I used a few of hers. Her own term, which continued to be more frequently employed by her, was "reflection". See page 599 seq.



After R. D. came at 11.10 and fell asleep, M. did not watch, to my surprise. Once in the night R. D. was frightened away by the flapping of a curtain, and after her return M. watched for a short time. *Oct. 31-Nov. 1: 16 alt.: R. D. 21 h. 46 m.; M., 3 h. 4 m.*

*Nov. 2.* R. D. complained of a pain in her chest. S. M. says, "I don't think she really has any trouble there. It is a reflection of your sickness. I believe that she reflects all your moods, and even your health and sickness. If you should get sick abed I don't know what would happen. R. D. is worrying lest you develop pneumonia. [417] Her worry affects M. "This morning I noticed that every time I coughed she would wince, and she explained that the cough gave her a pain in the chest. In a lower degree R. D. reflects the moods and apparent feelings of others, but especially of Mrs. P., quickly becoming warm when Mrs. P. complains of heat, and developing a habit, new to her, of sneezing several times in succession, because Mrs. P. does. S. M. asked me if I noticed that R. D., who has tended to stoop a little, came into the room where I was walking very erectly, and squared her own shoulders at once. "She did that unconsciously in imitation of you," said S. M.

M. had been disturbed about my cough in the morning, and in the evening was still more so. Whether awake or asleep, every time I coughed she would wince as if from a pain. At intervals during the day she had told me to go to a doctor, or to "pretend to go to a doctor, and that he has given you some medicine." [418] Now she reproached me for not having pretended to go to a doctor, and a new symptom of the wearing effect of listening to my cough developed, a twitching of the left shoulder. Mrs. P. had me drink a glass of egg-nog, containing about a table-spoonful of whis-

417. Her mother's last very brief illness first manifested itself by a cough, so far as R. D. was informed, and was then diagnosed as pneumonia. "Ever since then", says R. D., "if anybody I like has a cough I can't help being worried."

418. In effect, she was recommending auto-suggestion, which she no doubt had often practised with effect, so far at least as her sensations were concerned.



key. M.'s sense of smell is not by any means entirely gone, and she is more sensitive to the smell of alcohol than to any other whose effects I have tried on her, and dislikes it terribly. Her horror of alcoholic liquids is caused by their association with Mr. F., and also by an experience of her own. S. D. discovered that M., on a few occasions, drank small sips of whiskey that she found in the house, and, fearing that she would acquire a taste, not only lectured her about it but once put a quantity of it in something that M. was fond of, hoping to make her sick of it. Herein she admirably succeeded, for it made M. ill, and gave her a horror of it in her own case. I rinsed my mouth with water, but M. now declared, "You are drunk", and repeated the asseveration so many times, and with such increasing energy, that I felt obliged to say I would have to "smack" her. She loudly and defiantly repeated the statement and I gave her a couple of insignificant slaps, whereupon she recoiled in fear and horror and—went to sleep. On waking she smiled feebly, and talked more pleasantly, but when she again slept S. M. said, "She thinks that you smacked her because you were drunk, and that she must humor you." Again she woke, and could not be induced to go to bed, but showed a passive obstinacy. At last S. M. said "I think that you will have to *make* her go to bed. This can't be kept up. The R. D. can't come. Punish her if she doesn't obey." M., waking again, still refused to go to bed. One small slap produced no effect, but when I administered two more, which made quite a sound, on her anæsthetic hand, she looked as frightened and horrified as if a highwayman had attacked her. She silently went to her room and to bed, and after an interval I entered and found her asleep. I sat down beside her, but, pursuant of S. M.'s warning, did not take her hand according to custom. But after some twelve minutes, she began to talk in her sleep in a manner that made S. M. say, between the sentences, "She's all right now." I took her hand, and she began, with deep intensity of feeling: "Where *was* you, papo? You musn't leave your baby. While you was gone a drunken man came in, and he smacked us—smacked your baby—awful loud smacks. . . You



mustn't leave your baby. . . They think they can smack me because I am not anybody. But I have feelings, and I was smacked—by somebody that was drunk." In the meantime I was comforting her, for she was in that state of slumber, by this time very rare, which permitted her to hear my part of the conversation, without touching my lips. "(I won't leave you.) You mustn't papo. I wish you could catch that drunken man. Is he hiding in the house?" By all means she must not be permitted to think this, so I said "(No, he went away.) Then you can't get him. I don't know who he was", etc. When she woke, she began the story at the beginning, and added, "I am not a person, but I don't like to get smacked because I am not a person. Dr. Walker doesn't like me, because he wants the R. D. to get well. Don't I want the R. D. to get well? If I hadn't wanted her to get well I wouldn't have come here, would I? And I was smacked tonight by somebody who was drunk, because I keep the R. D. back. Asa can't help it." It was pitiful. I continued to console her, and while she was sleeping S. M. announced, "The R. D. is here." As usual, I blew in M.'s eyes to waken her, and in a moment R. D. was there, all unconscious of the little drama that had been enacted. She was concerned about my cough, but otherwise calm. In accordance with the advice of S. M. I had R. D. stuff her ears with cotton, which deadened the sound of my violent coughing during the night. R. D. came at 10.20 and M. watched all night. *Nov. 1-2: 12 alt.: R. D., 16 h. 9 m.; M., 7 h. 1 m.* [419]

*Nov. 3.* She still has a headache, and a growing cold.

---

419. While the number of alternations and the time "out" of R. D., as S. M. repeatedly told me, were not the sure measures of her progress, since any sudden increase of mastery over the whole "machine" on her part would create a demand for frequent rest, secured by the comings of M., yet, on the other hand, any disaster would produce the same result of increasing the number of alternations and decreasing R. D.'s time out, for at least a day or two. Thus the excitement of the meeting on Sunday night, and especially the "yanking in", reduced R. D.'s time for the following day to about 16 hours. Of course both classes of cases reduce to one, such as unduly consume the energy, whether by helpful or injurious effort.



After supper R. D. read a story aloud. About three minutes before the story ended I made some remark which she answered, and then she added, irrelevantly to what I had said, and in a tone which had something peculiar about it, "I want to finish this chapter." The moment that the story was done M. came. She said, "I was watching for a little while. The R. D. knew it—that's why she said, 'I want to finish this chapter.' She was talking to *me*, not you."

R. D.'s ears were plugged for the night in this fashion. I asked S. M. where the roll of cotton was. She replied that the plugs of last night were under the pillow. She started the movement towards them, M. took charge of it and brought the plugs out; S. M. started them towards the ears, M. completed the plugging operation. The transitions from the calm, leisurely movements of S. M. to the quick, jerky, nervous ones of M. are interesting to observe. A curious discovery was now made. S. M. remarked that R. D. did not hear half so well with her ears plugged, but added, in a casual way, "They make no difference to me or to M.; we hear just as well. (What! you hear as well with the ears stuffed?) Yes: We don't hear by the ears but by instinct, I guess." Thereupon I tested S. M.'s capacity to hear with the ears tightly stopped. I lowered my voice by stages until it was a whisper, and finally to a whisper so soft that I myself (who am, to be sure, sub-normal, yet not notably deficient, in hearing) could not detect even the rustle of it, and S. M. heard perfectly every time! [420]

R. D. came at 10.45. R. D. is getting used to M.'s ceasing to watch. Only one hand clutched at all, and that but lightly, falling away at a slight pressure of my finger. She slept well, considering her cold and headache. *Nov. 2-3: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 8 m.; M., 3 h. 17 m.*

*Nov. 4.* S. M. remarked this morning regarding R. D.'s

---

420. Of course there was a point at which S. M. failed to hear. And it was the hyperæsthesia of M. that enabled S. M. to hear. M. being asleep did not herself pay attention, but S. M. utilized M.'s marvelous power of hearing. Nor do I think that S. M.'s remark about hearing by instinct was meant seriously.



cold, that she thought it in part was real and in part a "reflection" from my cold. R. D. says that she does not remember ever having a cough in her life, and she has none now. R. D. herself spontaneously came to the conclusion that the pain in her chest was a "reflection" from my cold—using the same term that S. M. had employed. She said that she noticed that the pain would come just after I coughed. Since that discovery she has had no sharp pains, though S. M. says that "vibrations that hurt" still follow my coughing.

I asked R. D. how the ear-plugs worked. "Fine", she responded, "I heard very little during the night. *I can hear better in this ear*"—touching her *left* ear.

R. D. and I talked about the arrangement of some pictures on the mantel, and I went to take one off. In an instant I heard M.'s voice raised in protest, "Don't take that down! I don't want that down!" It seems that M. had been watching all the morning, and from the remnant of the feeling she had about preserving the positions of the articles representing features of her drama, came out to remonstrate. In the afternoon, having ascertained that R. D. felt free, I stepped to the mantel, and was in the act of removing a picture when M. came out with a cry, slapped her own face in anger, and protested against my interfering with articles on the shelf. "(I thought you weren't watching.) I wasn't. But when she saw you and thought about it that brought me. I would have come if I had been in Halifax."

Dr. Jane Nye Gilliford, having been entrusted with the secret of the case, was allowed to see the various phenomena of multiple personality. She saw and talked with R. D. in the afternoon, and with M. and S. M. in the evening. Among other tests, I held a pencil erect and moved it laterally from one side to a position fronting M.'s face, with the result of confirming the substantial correctness of the diagram already presented. As soon as the pencil entered the angle of vision, the head would jerk to face it, and the pupils would fix their gaze upon it. Experiments demonstrated anew the anæsthesia, and yet M. could always distinguish whether it was I



or the doctor who touched her. Dr. G. was positive at times that she did not audibly move, and yet S. M. would insist that M. heard her, declaring that not only does M. hear the rustle of clothing, the squeaking of the chair as one bends forward, both of which ordinary persons could not perceive, but that the motion of a hand towards her produces "minute vibrations of air which M. hears." One can hardly believe in her anæsthesia when he sees her acuteness in detecting and discriminating between touches at times when her attention is active. But let him sit close beside her in a firm chair and bring his hand up very slowly, and then proceed to pinch or prick her flesh and he will be convinced.

R. D. came at 10 p. m., and she went to sleep at once, with just a vestige of the clutching left. *Nov. 3-4: 10 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 37 m.; M., 5 h. 38 m.*

*Nov. 5. Sunday.* I was confined to the house by my cold. Yet R. D. at Sunday school had no trouble, from M.'s either coming or watching. R. D. would express it, "I didn't forget, and I was free."

Yesterday R. D. tacked a colored picture from a magazine to the wall in her room. I was interested, because some days before M. had said that *she* was going to frame it. S. M. told me that the night before, when M. went to her room to get ready for the night, she wrote a note to R. D., asking her to frame that picture, then "ducked under" and let R. D. read it, then came back and put the note in her drawer. M. was delighted with the picture on the wall, and did not seem to mind that her directions had not been perfectly carried out. But R. D. has not said anything about her reasons for putting the picture up. S. M. says that R. D. thinks it "foolishness", and "hates it." R. D. drank coffee at supper and it did not bring M. But R. D. was conscious of the danger for she remarked that she did not forget this time.

R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. and slept poorly. S. M. says that the babbling, turning and rising continue night after night. *Nov. 4-5: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 57 m.; M., 3 h. 33 m.*

*Nov. 6.* Having learned from S. M. that frequently, in consequence of the turnings and risings of the night, the cov-



ers become disarranged so as to endanger the taking of colds, I asked R. D. to be careful and keep well covered during the night. She declared that she was, that she pulled the covers up over her shoulders and slept quietly. She has no notion how far from quietly she sleeps. I told her that I was afraid that sometimes the covers slipped off, and she, supposing that this was exceptional, said that it must be when she forgot. [421]

Just after breakfast R. D. misconstrued a remark that was made, was grieved and went. M. came in mood not cross but perturbed, sat down on the lowest step of the stairs and demanded a cup of postum. Careful tests had shown that certain symptoms of indigestion in the girl's case were connected with drinking this, and its use had been discontinued some time before. But M. reiterated her demand for it as though she were a talking machine charged with that one record, alternately whimpering and cajoling, and more than once striking herself in the face. Then she became sullen, and repeatedly told me to "shut up." I told her I would have to spank her if she said that, she promptly repeated it, and I slapped her hand twice. "Go away, bad papo!", she vehemently ejaculated. I put her to sleep by suggestion as she sat on the stairs, but when she woke the demands continued. I now said that if she didn't get out of the draft soon I was afraid she would become a little angel. This tickled her, she laughed heartily, the obstinate mood rolled away, and she willingly went upstairs. She now called for hot wintergreen water, which I gladly gave her.

As M. slept I continued the reading of the early records, which had been interrupted for some months, to S. M., noting her comments, and carefully refraining from expressing any opinion of mine until hers had been given.

421. To a certain degree R. D. was right, though her reference was to M. It was S. R. D. who "babbled" and turned and rose. When S. R. D. was on the surface R. D. "forgot", though she was not so far below as when M. was out, or S. D. in former days, but only just below the surface, or *limen*, if that term be preferred,—when equally serviceable the terms used by S. M. and other characters of this case are often employed in the present record.



R. D. had a seemingly worse cold today, with some cough. Coming for the night at 9.50, the string was pulled at about 4 a. m., and I found M. sitting up, saying "Your baby is sick." The cold seemed worse, though S. M. thought there was not much difference. Medical help was given and in three-quarters of an hour R. D. was back, but M. watched thereafter. *Nov. 5-6, 12 alt.; R. D., 19 h. 50 m.; M., 4 h. 30 m.*

*Nov. 7.* M. found that we were going to the office of Dr. Walker, and said, "He blames me for taking the pill." He never had said a word to her about it. "Tell him that M. is a good girl. Tell him that M. is good most *all* the time." I delivered the message, informing him that though M. had lost that fear of him which resulted from what she overheard him say, she still feared his displeasure on account of taking the opium pill. He prescribed for my cold, and said that D. might take the same, more for the sake of suggestion on her than anything else.

We visited a store, and there a lady shopper greeted R. D. warmly by name, and conversed with her, without R. D.'s having any notion who she was. It proved by S. M.'s testimony to be a wealthy physician's wife, for whom S. D. had done sewing. R. D. has back the memory of working for her, but not of her looks. [422]

Supper was late, and M. came just as it was finishing. She asked me to take up a piece of cake and a glass of butter-milk for her, and then I guided her stumbling and clattering feet upstairs. She ate the cake while reading, and then looked for it, and demanded to know what had become of it. She could hardly be persuaded that she had eaten it, and suggested, it is hard to say if seriously or not, that R. D. had come and eaten it. Such a boyish, chesty laugh she has! The R. D. never has been heard to laugh in that manner, and

---

422. It was the rule, so far as known without exception, that the recovery from S. D. of memories of conversations and events connected with persons known to S. D. but not to R. D., did not bring recollection of the figures and faces of those persons. Even some whom R. D. herself knew prior to her mother's death, but not during the five years following, including certain relatives, were unrecognized by her when she came into possession of her new life.



would be shocked if she knew that such a laugh ever proceeded from her lips. M. was told that R. D. had bought cloth for a suit of pajamas to wear at night, since the covers sometimes slip down. She said, "I'll bet it is pretty if our papo picked it out", but declared that *she* would never wear the pajamas. "I'm not a boy. I won't wear pants. If the R. D. is fool enough to want to turn into a boy at her time of life, she can."

R. D. came at 9.30 and slept at once. At about 4 a. m. she dreamed that she fell over a cliff, and woke to find herself on the floor. M. came at once, climbed back into bed and pulled the string summoning me. R. D. was soon back and still M. did not watch. R. D. did a thing, hitherto characteristic of M., after falling asleep both at 9.30 p. m. and 4.20 a. m. She felt my features with her hand as if to assure herself that it was I, and then, as if reassured, let the hand drop and slept quietly. [423] *Nov. 6-7: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 5 m.; 3 h. 35 m.*

*Nov. 8.* As an illustration of the by-play of M. while asleep, an incident of the day is here set down. About her first act after going to sleep was to take from a bag in her apron-pocket a large soft piece of candy. First she held it up for me to take a bite, then took one herself, and wrinkled up her face as though it were unpleasant, as she usually does when she eats candy during sleep. S. M. says she imagines it is sour, being unable to taste it at all. Then she crammed the entire remainder into my mouth, but later tried to get it out again, and said, "Bad papo!", when she found it irretrievable. She found one more piece in the bag, popped it into her mouth, then cleaned her sticky fingers on my face, incidentally getting chocolate over her own face and clothes. When she woke she was greatly disgusted at finding the chocolate sticking to her, and accused me of plastering it on. As she again slept, I continued reading the record to S. M., and writing down her comments. Whenever the sound of our voices ceased M. became uneasy. The sound of conversation, once begun, lulls her. Several times, in flinging

---

423. I am inclined to think that this was S. R. D.



her hand about, it came into momentary contact with my lips, and every time she spoke aloud the word or words uttered during the contact. Once S. M. spoke a sentence which ended with the word "talk", and M. repeated this word with delighted laughter, "talk—talk—talk." It is the only time I ever knew her to catch a word from S. M. [424] Dinner was waiting and Mrs. P. called up to know if we were ready to come down. S. M. replied, "R. D. is here." An instant later the very different voice of M. was heard, "We are coming, Father Abraham!", I blew in her eyes, she woke, and a moment after, with the usual jerk, R. D. came.

Careful tests of R. D.'s hearing were made today. I had her close her left and right ears alternately, and listen to detect the ticking of a watch as it was brought gradually nearer, her other ear directed to the source of the sound. With the right ear alone she heard the ticking when the watch was brought to 10½ or 11 inches. With the left alone she heard it from corner to corner of the room, about 20 feet and probably could have heard a little farther. With the face fronting the watch she detected the ticking with her right ear at 9½ or 10 inches, with her left ear at about 12 feet. [425]

424. And the last time, except that on several occasions M. woke just as S. M. was concluding or was in the middle of a sentence, and caught the last word or two. Almost certainly, in this instance, M.'s fingers came into unobserved contact with her own lips. It would have been dangerous to experiment along this line, as it might have taught M. to intercept messages and thus fully discover S. M.

425. See page 768 for account of the tests on M. The results of the tests are shown graphically as follows. M. got tired of the "game" before the tests for hearing with ear at right angles with the source of sound could be made.

R. D. Heard Ticking of Watch (Nov. 8, 1911)

—	Abt. 11 in.	{ Right ear, fronting source of sound.
—	Abt. 20 ft.	{ Left ear, " " " "
—	Abt. 10 in.	{ Right ear, right angle with source of sound.
—	Abt. 12 ft.	{ Left ear, " " " " " "

M. Heard Ticking of Watch (Nov. 11, 1911)

—	Abt. 4 ft., 2 in.	{ Right ear, fronting source of sound.
—	Abt. 31 ft.	{ Left ear, " " " "



After M. went to bed in the evening she heard the canary down-stairs making odd little sounds, and made me bring it into her room. R. D. is fond of the bird, but not so much so as M. If it died R. D. would grieve, but M. would howl and lament and R. D. would get the shock of it. So I was as worried as M. was over the symptoms of the pet. R. D. came at 10, and there was another season of anxiety about the bird. To my surprise M. did not watch during the sleep following. I was called at about 3.30 and found M. still alarmed. S. M. presently told me that R. D. had slept little, and had sat up, holding the canary in her hand. Unwisely I bemoaned in rather strong terms that R. D. should be so careless as to let herself get chilled and endanger a renewal of her cold. Thereupon S. M. ceased to speak, and though I addressed questions to her and earnestly requested her to answer, she continued to maintain calm silence. Undoubtedly she had taken offense at my too severe blame of R. D. In more than a hundred instances has M. in the past been pettish, sullen or even angry with me, and yet S. M. maintained her equanimity, being good-natured and even humorous, or only anxious over the situation, or if offended, at M., even to the extent of giving her a "jolt." But here was S. M. offended at me in behalf of R. D. and maintaining a resolute silence, while M. was entirely unaffected. Both in her demeanor and her speech, asleep and awake, the latter was perfectly amiable, and as communicative as usual. She manifested absolutely no suspicion that I had said anything amiss. The unusual silence attracted her attention in her sleep, since it is in contrast with the conversation which is customary between S. M., Mrs. P. and myself, and which S. M. says soothes M., though she does not understand what is said; and M. spoke out, "Sporty isn't making a noise now. You needn't keep quiet, papo." *Nov. 7-8: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 43 m.; M., 4 h. 47 m.*

*Nov. 9.* While M. was sleeping in the morning, she blurted out something which was amusing, and S. M. laughed. I asked if she had found her voice, and said that if she had I would read from the record. She replied, "You may read, and I will talk about that, but about nothing else." I asked what the matter was and she said, "I got mad at something



you said." Finally it was learned that the offensive remark was to the effect that I felt as though I were pulling at one end of a rope, and R. D., by unintentional carelessness, were pulling against me. S. M. felt that she had supplied the data which caused me to blame R. D. Nor has she gotten over her resentment at a remark made by Dr. Walker, "The R. D. is getting to think too much about her symptoms." S. M. says, "You know perfectly well that R. D. almost never tells you about her symptoms,—that you have to drag them from her. It is I that tell you, and I am not going to tell you any more." [426]

R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. S. M. had remarked that M. came three nights running at about 4 a. m., and she feared that she might do so again, from a habit established. Fortunately she did not. *Nov. 8-9: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 4 m.; M., 4 h. 1 m.*

*Nov. 10.* In the evening R. D. donned her new pajamas. When M. came she immediately gave a yell of indignation and disgust, and hid her face in her hands. S. M. says that M. was ashamed to be dressed like a boy. I told M. that the pajamas were girl's garments, a statement which she derided. After a while she got partly over her embarrassment, did some steps of a dance, and then fell asleep. In her sleep she often felt of the pajamas and made some odd remark. S. M. would be conversing calmly with me, and suddenly down the hands would go, there would be some outburst about the "cweases in my twousers", followed by M.'s tomboy laugh, and then by the more silvery laugh of S. M., and some comment by the latter, uttered much as an indulgent aunt would comment on the antics of a prankish niece. When M. decided to go to her bed she went to her room, stripped off the pajamas and arrayed herself as usual.

When M. comes and remains awake for a considerable time, her feet get very cold. S. M. has asserted that when she goes to sleep promptly, the feet do not get so cold. As M. went to sleep very soon after finding herself in pajamas, I had a chance to test this statement, and found that indeed her

426. Fortunately, S. M. did not adhere to her resolution.



feet did not get nearly so cold as when she stays awake for fifteen minutes or more.

From the first of the study of the case I have been very careful not to ask leading questions in eliciting the opinions of any of the personalities, and in general to conceal my views until theirs were learned. Of course I could not carry precautions based on scientific curiosity so far as to refuse to utter therapeutic suggestions, but on the contrary have steadily endeavored to implant and nourish hopefulness, courage, confidence, cheerfulness, and the like. But I have sought to leave what might be called the science and philosophy of M. and S. M., severally, untouched. Of course, however, it was not possible to become the replica of a clam when R. D. or the others asked questions for information, but I first learned the opinions of the questioner, in order to be able to trace any change, and estimate the reason for it. For that matter, R. D. and M. also have been hearing other people's opinions all their lives, yet M. has carried the naïve notions of her childhood over to the present time. And while my influence, seeing I am so *en rapport* with the personalities, is probably stronger than any previously encountered except that of her own mother, yet I cannot see that any notion strongly inwoven with the fabric of M.'s thought has since been removed. S. M. is susceptible to reason, as any sensible person would be, but is tenacious of her opinions, and not at all suggestible. I had been long assured of this latter fact, when I within the last few days ventured upon a test, reversing for the nonce my usual policy. I deliberately attempted to foist upon S. M. the suggestion that she is a spirit, or that spirits are involved in the case, as one visitor had insisted was the case. If not well assured that the suggestion would not take root I should have been unwilling to do this. The results of the experiments were nil. "(Where were you before you came to R. D.?) I don't know anything about that. (You say that you came in a moment, and understood at the first moment?) Yes. I know that. (Then probably you are a spirit. That would account for it.) No I am not. (How do you know that you are not? If you came full-



grown as it were, you must have been.) No I wasn't. (Then where did you come from?) I don't know anything about that. I know that I came, that is all. But I am no spirit. (What are you then?) I don't know anything about it. I suppose I am a part of the brain. (Well, there may be a spirit behind you at work.) No there isn't; if there were I would know it." But she insisted, nevertheless, that she was always mature, knowing many things when she first came, and aware of the meaning of many matters coming up thereafter, before hearing any explanation. [427] R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. put on her pajamas, and went to sleep. *Nov. 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 25 m.; M., 3 h. 20 m.*

*Nov. 11.* Curiously R. D. came at 9.50 last night, went at 7.50 this morning, came again at 8.50, and went at 11.50.

With right ear alone, directed to the source of sound, M. heard the ticking of a watch at 4 feet, 2 inches.

With left ear alone, directed to the source of sound, she heard the ticking 31 feet.

R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. Before midnight the telephone bell rang loudly, and after that M. watched. In the morning at breakfast I asked R. D. how she slept, and she replied, "Not very well. I dreamed a good deal, and once I found myself standing in the room—I don't know what for." I was able to extract one of the dreams, by questioning. I am confident that she saw no significance in it, but it is evident that in some mysterious fashion M. is referred to in the dream. She dreamed that she saw a little girl, crying and yelling under the fender of a car. The little girl, she has a vague idea, looked like her when she was little; her hair was down and tumbled as hers used to be. She was about 10 or 12 years old. After rescuing the child, R. D. pulled her through a crowd, growling and occasionally giving a yell

---

427. Since she afterward did claim to be a spirit (see intimations, pages 1060-1061, 1063, etc.; positive claims, page 1264) it may be thought that my suggestion bore fruit, after all. But too long an interval separated the suggestions from the final declaration for it to be likely that there was any causal relation between them, and besides, S. M. came to know in the meantime that I was not partial to the spirit theory, though puzzled by the anomalies presented by S. M., regarded as a mere personality.



which R. D. imitated in her rehearsal. The little girl was afraid of people. [428] *Nov. 10-11: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 42 m.; M., 4 h. 8 m.*

*Nov. 12. Sunday.* R. D. went to Sunday school, and started for home after it, in a storm accompanied by violent wind. From her subsequent story pieced out from the stories of R. D. and S. M. I learned what then took place. As soon as R. D. emerged from the door, the wind blew her down. M. came and went back to find me. Failing to do this she went out, and asked a man where Aldrich street was. He pointed and said, "The first street down there." She started and was overtaken by one of R. D.'s classmates. As she was about to pass Aldrich street the classmate happened to say, "There's your street—I wish I didn't have to go any farther", so M. turned into the street. She stopped at the first house—her home is the second and much resembles it,—went upon the front porch and looked through the glass panels of the door, then went round to the back of the house to see if she could discover the parrot. As she could not find the parrot she crossed the lawn to the right house and beat on the door, whereupon the parrot called out, so she knew that she had reached home. She managed to get in, but the wind was so loud that she became frightened and went into a closet, where nearly an hour later, R. D. found herself, as she expressed it, about to get into a bandbox. M. watched the rest of the day.

R. D. came at 10.30 for the night. S. M. congratulates me on the success of my scheme of the pajamas. The night was very cold, there being a drop of 54 degrees in ten hours, and R. D. would almost certainly have taken more cold from exposure following her nocturnal gymnastics, but for the new garments, which kept her comfortable through the night. But her sleep was not good, for the headache which has persisted almost incessantly for a number of days distressed her. But S. M. bids me not to get blue. She does not under-

---

428. The dream represents M.'s growing timidity of strangers and of outdoors. M. probably had indulged in a day-dream of what might happen if she went into the street,



stand what causes the obstinate headache, but says, "I know that she is making progress all the time. Now the body gets ahead and the mind has to catch up, and then the mind gets ahead and the body has to catch up. She has to keep balancing them, you see. That makes her go, because it tires her and she has to rest. But M. is losing all the time; I can feel it." But S. M. has revised her former conjecture that M. will get considerably younger in her mentality, stopping however before she reaches infancy. She now says, "I don't think that she will get any younger. She will probably go by coming for shorter times and less frequently." [429] Then she exclaimed, "Pretty soon I want to write down some directions for you to follow after we are gone. You will have to be very careful of R. D. for a long time afterwards. Don't let her join any church societies for a full year after M. is entirely gone. She may study and learn to play on the piano, but keep her out of church work where she has to be with people, for a full year. She will want to join, but don't let her. Probably after M. seems to be gone she will return, perhaps for several times at growing intervals. You must expect that. The unfortunate thing is that it will make the R. D. worry. I will write the directions soon. I never did write, but think I can. M. may butt in, but I can tell you what isn't my writing afterwards. (How do you know what should be done?) I can tell. I have been studying it out. I can feel what is necessary." *Nov. 11-12: 12 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 43 m.; M., 7 h. 7 m.*

*Nov. 13.* While R. D. shopped [430] I saw Dr. Walker and told him about the headache, which still continues with almost no intermission. He gave excellent advice about diet, sleep, etc., which is already being carried out. At 6.30 p. m.

---

429. S. M. did not profess to *know* to what point M. would decline or to be an infallible prophet of the future on any subject. As the facts turned out, M. became younger than she was at the time of S. M.'s later conjecture, but never so young as was first conjectured, stopping in a stage of mentality representing perhaps five years of age.

430. In the original record the most of her drives and walks are set down. Most of these are omitted in the printed record for lack of room. Let it be understood that, so far as possible, she drove or walked every day.



R. D. happened to break a rather valuable dish, and M. came, showing the result of the shock, and resisted efforts to put her to sleep. I wanted to see how far she could see a certain type of print, but she said, "I don't want to be *tested*." Directly she began to test me. "Shut your eyes", she ordered, and I complied. She stroked my face here and there, demanding, "Do you feel that?", seemed surprised that I answered correctly, and accused me of "peeping." She even said that she could *see* me peeping. [431] After a time she pronounced, "You're 'sthetic." I presume all this was an echo of the experiments I used to try on S. D. after her tactile sensation had nearly and quite gone, M. watching during the process. I never told S. D. that she was anæsthetic, but doubtless remarked it to others in M.'s hearing. After M. went to sleep S. M. gave expression to her amusement at M.'s grave scientific experiments. "(She was playing, wasn't she?) No, she was in earnest. She was surprised that you could feel it every time she touched you."

Every night M. goes to bed in her nightgown, R. D. comes and puts on her pajamas, and when M. comes in the morning

---

431. This was amusingly parallel with a suspicion entertained by Dr. Walker at the first visits which he made to see the case, and when M. asleep showed marvelous knowledge of happenings around her, mainly, at least, through her auditory hyperæsthesia. He watched her eyes and was inclined to think at first that there was peeping through the lashes. I should have thought the same if I had not seen and studied her sleep so many times. But I was familiar with the tremulous motion of the lids, incessant when M. was not sleeping soundly but was mentally active, and I knew that it went on while the eyeballs were rolling from side to side under the lids, but not directed downward, as they would have been had she been peeping. And I had many times known her to be fully as well aware of matters out of range of any possible vision, and noiseless except to abnormal hearing such as she possessed. Furthermore, it is a certain fact that any entrance of light into the eye at once woke M. up. And when M. was awake S. M. was powerless to speak, whereas when Dr. Walker was watching her, M. and S. M. were both talking, alternately. Finally, if S. M. had ever talked while M. peeped and was therefore awake, M. would have known with certainty that there is another "back of" her, and have been filled with excitement and interest. The reader should bear in mind, when any general statement like the above is made in the course of the record, that it is almost invariably based, not on a few but on hundreds or even thousands of separate observations.



she effects another change and goes to bed again. For two evenings I have talked little with S. M., who indeed, showed no particular disposition to converse. I propose to try the experiment of keeping up this practice for at least several days. R. D. came at 9.03, and slept pretty well, M. not watching, though on every waking the head was throbbing, *Nov. 12-13: 6 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h. 58 m.*

*Nov. 14.* After breakfast it struck me that R. D. had an indescribable look as if inner peace and hope were shining forth from her features. I asked if her headache was better, and she said that the coffee that she had drank seemed to have dulled it, and added, "I have been thinking that perhaps it is because I am changing that I have so much headache lately. (You feel that you are changing?) Yes, I never felt it as I have yesterday and today. The feeling came yesterday forenoon and kept up all day, and I have it now. (What is the feeling like?) I can't describe it. But it is a feeling that my mind and body are changing. I knew before that my tastes are changing, but I never had *this* feeling before." Today she was making a dress for Mrs. P. She never seems happier than when she is doing something of that nature, and ordinary sewing does her no harm whatever, if she does not keep it up for hours without intermission. She staid out from 8.30 a. m., to 8.48 p. m.

M. no longer takes any interest in the time of day. It was formerly one of her ruling passions to keep track of the many whistles, wind up and consult her watch, listen to the strokes of the clock down-stairs, etc. But now she lets the whistles go unnoticed, never winds up or handles her watch, seldom asks the hour, and though she may sometimes count the strokes of the clock, it appears to be purely an automatic proceeding.

I talked with S. M. in the evening very little. I asked and answered two or three questions and she did the same. It did not seem to matter to her, and later, when I addressed questions to her I got no response.

R. D. came at 10.20, and did not put on the pajamas, as it was warmer than usual. A small gas fire was left in the ad-



joining study, and its light was reflected slightly into her room. Probably it was suggestion due to this that she was uncomfortably warm all night, so that she threw covers off and tossed without sleep for hours, and then dreamed of a building burning down. But also, she has been troubled for some days with incessant itching of the back, and last night the itching affected the whole body, according to S. M. *Nov. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 3 h. 7 m.*

*Nov. 15.* I asked S. M. this morning why she kept silence after my later questions last night. She replied, "You didn't want to talk, and then I didn't. I wasn't cross—I simply didn't feel like talking."

There is no headache today—it stopped with the drinking of the coffee yesterday. R. D. staid from morning to evening again; to be exact, from 8.25 a. m. to 8.50 p. m. She showed me a Christmas present that she had bought me, saying, "I might as well have the pleasure of showing it to you, otherwise I know I shall show it when I forget." When M. came three hours later, she informed Mrs. P. what present she would like her mother to give her, then asked me what I was going to give her. "(What would you like?) O, something nice. You tell me what you are going to spend and I can tell better. The S. D. used to say when I wanted anything, 'We have only so much money; you must choose something you can get with that.')" I said at random, "O, perhaps a dollar.) That's all right. I want to get something that will be useful to R. D. after I am gone. She needs a good coat. Could she get that with a dollar?" Mrs. P. informed her that the coat would cost ten dollars, and she said, gravely, "Well, you can't get that." M. related some incidents of her tearing up things belonging to S. D., then added, "But I haven't torn anything up since we have lived here, have I?" I judged it best to fib. "(I don't think so.) I have been a good girl; haven't I? An excellent little girl." This was said with perfect gravity.

R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. and slept splendidly until 6 a. m. *Nov. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Nov. 16.* The itching proves to be of no consequence,



merely the result of lately putting on new woolen undergarments. Perhaps the first notion that she had, that the itching was due to some skin malady, aggravated the symptoms. At 10.47 I heard a yodle and stepped to the head of the stairs, to see M. at the foot, looking up with the expression of one wishing to cross a stream but afraid of getting wet. As I helped her upstairs, I paid particular attention to her feet, which were carried as though they were wooden blocks fastened to her extremities, and which groped, clattered and oscillated as they successively mounted the steps. She had hardly closed her eyes in sleep, and I refound my place of reading, when S. M. said, "The R. D. is coming." I blew in M.'s eyes to wake her, according to the formula, and in another moment R. D. was back. She had been gone but 3 minutes. In the evening, while Mrs. P. and I were out, R. D. did copying for me in her neat, plain hand. We returned at about 9.15, and she was still on deck, copying, from which it may be rightly inferred that this is to her a pleasurable occupation. It is, if I am right, the second time that she has maintained herself until my return and actual entrance after an evening entertainment. She remarked, "I will finish this paragraph and then quit." The moment she stopped at 9.22, M.'s expression appeared, and M.'s laugh was heard. She said, "I have been watching since 9 o'clock." [432]

432. This is one of many incidents which might, superficially considered, seem inconsistent with dicta which the compiler has made. I have said that M. had by this time lost nearly all interest in the time of day, so that she seldom looked at the watch or intelligently counted the strokes of the clock. And yet we find her here reporting that she came at 9 o'clock. It is not often that space can be taken to clear up little ambiguities like this, and it is believed that if the psychological student takes careful note of the material of this case as it develops, he will generally be able to find the explanation of such apparent difficulties for himself, and to perceive that the initially puzzling incidents are not in derogation of, but expressly result from the intricate workings of the principles in operation. Let us analyze the process by which M. was able to report that she came at 9 o'clock. R. D. hears the clock strike, thinks "that is late for me and I will soon forget"; M. is "stirred up"—as it came afterward to be called—by that thought and begins to watch while the thought is in continuance, or she may have been already watching; M. having been watching, or now beginning to watch, gets from R. D.'s thoughts that it is 9 o'clock, and reports it as a mere act of memory.



The canary has been ailing for a day or two, and last night M. intimated that if R. D. did not take the bird to a certain expert and have it examined she would punish her. This morning I told her that she had better take the canary to the man, but at dinner she exclaimed "I don't believe that I need to take Sporty to F.'s." Then, as I did not answer, her voice took on a peculiar and familiar timbre as she said, "Did you hear that, papo?" I probably showed surprise at hearing R. D. address me by M.'s title for me, and rather apologetically she explained "I always used to say papo when I was little and forgot. I wouldn't say 'papa' if the word came in my reading lesson at school. And when I came to the word 'mother', I would call it 'mamma'. They couldn't make me say 'mother'; I wouldn't have done it if they had whipped me." In the evening I asked M., " (Did you make R. D. say 'papo'?) M-hm. How did you know it was me? (I thought it looked like you.) Can you tell me by my looks? How did you do it papo? (What made you watch at dinner-time?) Asa don't know. (How much have you watched today, before 9 this evening?) Only a little while at dinner." Then she said with determination, "That bird is sick. If Sporty dies before the D. takes him over to F.'s, I'll tear everything up that she's got, her Bible and prayer-book and everything." No remonstrance was of use; she was in deadly earnest. Afterwards S. M. warned me, "It would be an awful thing if anything should happen to the bird before R. D. takes it to F.'s. M. would tear up everything she has got, and you couldn't stop her. She means it. (Couldn't I do anything to turn her mind?) You might threaten her. She wouldn't be offended. It might possibly do good."

Last night M. told Mrs. P. that she wanted to come out in a store, so that she could select a present for herself, something that would be useful to R. D. after she had gone. Mrs. P. felt doubtful and referred the matter to me, and I consented that M. should do it. Tonight her thoughts recurred to the subject of presents, and she remarked, "I have twenty dollars; would that be enough for a coat? (How did you get it?) I swiped it." Afterwards she seemed to have



doubts about the amount and said, "I have five paper moneys. How much would that be? (That would depend on what kind of paper money they are. I don't think that you have twenty dollars.) A-ah; I have five twos and fives. Yes, that is \$20." When she slept S. M. said that M. had no \$20, but had several dollars that she had taken from R. D.'s drawer, besides a dollar or two that S. D. left her.

R. D. came at 10.08 p. m., and in the morning I learned that for the first time R. D. slept without once standing up in bed. "Usually", said S. M., "she stands up about eight times, four times before 4 in the morning, then at about 4 she rises in her sleep for a necessary purpose, and stands up two or three times after that. But last night, with the exception of at 4 o'clock, she lay still all night. It is the first time." But the "babbling" went on as usual. *Nov. 15-16: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 59 m.; M., 1 h. 59 m.*

*Nov. 17.* R. D. feels splendidly, despite her very long day out yesterday. She had one type of the "universal dreams" last night, that of going about without clothing. Inquiry disclosed the fact that, the night being mild, she discarded bed-clothing last night, the pajamas being sufficient. Probably it was the absence of the weight of the covers which caused the dream.

It is greatly in the favor of the case that R. D. is of so hopeful and cheerful a temperament, disposed to make the best of things and to be as happy as she can. She is sensitive, but not disposed to dwell on her grievances; indeed she has carried the virtue of hiding her troubles out of sight, not mentioning them but packing them away in dark corners of her mind, to a fault. But on the whole she co-operates marvelously by temperament and by conscious effort with the means taken for her cure. But I have learned the paramount importance of those nearest her keeping a guard upon themselves, not only as to what they say and do which may act as suggestion or depressant on her impressionable nature, but also upon their very moods. In the highest degree this is true of myself, for she reflects my moods like a mirror. I could at any time plunge her into gloom within five minutes



by giving way to a fit of "blues", or by a single careless sharp phrase I could at any time send her away in a moment, and bring a grieved or querulous M. It has been a discipline for patience, serenity and all modes of self-control such as I never began to have before. And so we have, as in a primer with large print, set forth truths regarding the influence and reciprocal benefits of the saner and kindlier manifestations of human nature, valid in all human relations in one or another degree.

R. D. went to F.'s store today, taking the canary. So *that* worry is ended. In a department store M. came out and selected a string of beads as Mrs. P.'s, and a dress as my gift to her, both such as would be suitable to R. D. Then came a jerk, and R. D. was there, looking a little surprised. She caught a glimpse of the beads as they were being wrapped up, and probably conjectured the meaning of the incident.

When M. came in the evening she commanded me to rub her cold feet, as she has done for one or two evenings past. [433] R. D. came at 10, and again she did not stand up in bed all night, though the soliloquizing and twisting went on. *Nov. 16-17: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 33 m.; M., 2 h. 19 m.*

*Nov. 18.* R. D. copied for me a considerable part of the afternoon and evening, and it seemed to agree with her. M. watched none until an hour before R. D. departed. There is reason to believe that M. comes near the surface for a moment or a number of moments several times a day, enough to be vaguely conscious of what is going on, but this does not constitute watching, in the technical sense in which M. and S. M. use the term. About half an hour before she went at 9.37 p. m., R. D. observed, "I wonder if I couldn't sleep here to-night", meaning on the narrow couch in the study, where

---

433. This practice began with my finding the feet, one evening after M. had come, icy cold, and rubbing some warmth into them, fearing that she would have a renewal of her cold. M. retained and even had increased temperature sensation, and the result of the rubbing was agreeable to her, and the next night, as the cold feet were a chronic condition with M., she asked me to rub them again. Thus a habit was started, for M. was a creature of routine. But as the rubbing could be done while I talked or read, and seemed to be a sensible thing to do, I was willing to accede to it.



she slept before the vacation. The wind, which is very noisy tonight, is heard less in this room than hers, and besides she is nearer her foster-parents and feels safer. I replied, "(I wish that you could, but it all depends on whether you let yourself sleep here.)" She smiled, understanding the allusion. I had no idea that M. would consent, remembering her opposition in the past, and was astonished to hear her say, soon after coming, "I think we had better sleep here, papo, it is so windy. We are afraid of the wind." I don't know whether it was her fear, or the fact that I did not consent to R. D.'s pleas without consulting her first which made her so complaisant. I do know that deference to M.'s prerogatives makes her more inclined to grant a request. S. M. was pleased that M. had consented, and thought it would be well to try the experiment of making my answers to R. D., in case of requests which involve M., conditional. R. D. came at 10.25, and had a still quieter night. *Nov. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 2 m.; M., 2 h. 23 m.*

*Nov. 19. Sunday.* R. D. felt well today, and went to Sunday school. While alone in the house in the forenoon she was looking at a piece of cloth, planning what to do with it, when she "forgot for a minute", and came to herself to find the cloth gone. She found it in "her drawer", unwisely took it out, "forgot again for a minute", and came back to learn that the cloth had disappeared. She copied again part of the afternoon, and while alone in the evening, and again maintained herself until we had returned. M. came, with manner, facial expression, pronunciation of many words, and subject matter of speech, very different from those of R. D. I mention this to signify that the indicia of her individuality have not diminished. [434] She said, to explain a hole in her stocking, "I tore that." To insure R. D.'s sleeping in the study again, I told M. that it would probably be windy again tonight. She manifestly wanted to go back to her

---

434. On the contrary they were becoming more pronounced. And of course the enumeration of the species of indicia in the text is by no means complete, as M. had her characteristic physical and mental tastes, conceptions, memories, and peculiarities of æsthesia.



room, but the fear of a windy night made her consent. "Ain't I a good girl?", she inquired; "ain't you going to give me another Christmas present for that?"

R. D. came at 10.15, and for the first time, did not even touch my hand or coat in the way of "clutching", though the hand for a moment lifted as though about to do this. Getting used to M.'s not watching, coupled with the greater sense of security in the study, probably account for this. She slept wonderfully well, and S. M. tells me that she slept for the first time with her arms covered all night. But on the other hand, instead of ceasing to "babble" at about midnight, which has been a growing tendency of late, she kept it up nearly all night, at intervals. [435] Most nights the talk goes back gradually only to the date of R. D.'s coming out and hearing the sermon, the first time S. D. happened to enter an Episcopal church, but sometimes it goes back farther, even to the first time that R. D. came out after the three months' absence following her mother's death.

**Marks of Progress During Last Week.** (1) R. D. has had the best consecutive six days' record for the time that she has been out and in command that she has ever had—an average of 21 h. 55 m.

(2) For several consecutive nights there has been no standing up in bed.

(3) Last night, for the first time, she did not clutch at all.

(4) Last night, for the first time, she kept her arms covered all night.

(5) M. watches less than ever.

Two principles stand out prominently in the process of slowly banishing the M. personality. (1) While endeavoring to impoverish M.'s life, by weaning her from her pleasures and by narrowing the range of her occupations; not to do this so hastily or inflexibly as to make her morose, or to rouse her jealousy of R. D., or her will in opposition to mine. For

---

435. It was not until later that it was discovered that there was a Sleeping Real Doris, and that she was the one who had formerly conducted the "conversation-recitals", was later heard to "babble" or soliloquize, and still later developed reactions to outer stimuli yet to be described.



to carry the campaign to that extreme tends to make R. D. come sad or languid, and to cause M. to watch; tends to make M. come more frequently, not because she desires to do so, but because it rouses her nature to activity; and also endangers R. D. to acts of retaliation of the part of M. (2) To keep M. asleep all that is possible, and to encourage her activity during sleep, in the form of acts and ejaculations, as little as possible. *Nov. 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 48 m.; M., 2 h. 2 m.*

*Nov. 20.* In the morning S. M. was talking to me, and speaking of someone's pointing his finger pointed her own. Immediately the finger began poking out in a persistent and purposeful fashion. S. M. laughed softly and said, "That is M.; she wonders why she is pointing her finger." I asked S. M. to make a circular movement with the finger. She did so, and the finger again seemed as if seized from within and made to repeat the movement in more rapid and vigorous fashion. In both cases I had to take the finger gently and stop it. When M. woke she humorously complained that I had made her finger go and then, when she made it go in the same way, I wouldn't let her.

M. had wished to come out in a store in order to select a manicure set for R. D. We visited a certain store, and I took R. D., in the course of our wandering about, face to face with such sets, and she even handled them, but without particular show of interest, and without the appearing of M. At home I asked M. why she did not come out in the store. She asked "Were you at B. and B.'s? (No, we were at K.'s.) I didn't know that. I meant for you to go to B. and B.'s. Did you see a manicure set?" [436] Later, when M. was asleep, she asked, "Did you get any candy?" I formed on her fingers the word "Yes", and she inquired, "Where is it?" I formed, "In the closet", and she laughed. Then M. pawed at my lips, as she does when she wants a drink, and presently said, "I want soda-water." I after-

---

436. If we had gone to B. and B.'s as M. expected that we would, doubtless being in that anticipated spot would have stimulated the center where, as S. M. said, "M.'s expectation was registered in the brain", and she would have come out, after the manner of post-hypnotic suggestion.



wards learned that R. D. had craved soda-water while in the city, and had forgotten to speak of it. The repressed longing had come out in M.

R. D. went earlier than usual in the evening, 8.03, and S. M. explained, "She was worried because the mother looks sick." R. D. had put on her pajamas, and M. did not at first notice how she was dressed, but when she did she cried out with shame and indignation, and kept her face covered for a while. She then delivered an ultimatum, "If the R. D. puts these on to sleep in *any time* I won't let her sleep in the study, and I'll come out and stay out all night." The offending garments had to be discarded. But if R. D. continues to sleep in that room and to sleep quietly without throwing off the covers, it will not make much difference.

R. D. came for the night at 9.25, and for the second time did not clutch at all, nor did she fail to keep her arms covered, and this for the second time. The standing up has ceased, at least for the present—it has not occurred for four nights. But the babbling went on until after midnight. *Nov. 19-20: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 34 m.; M., 2 h. 36 m.*

*Nov. 21.* In the morning M. asked me to tell R. D. to buy a ten cent doll, like the one of two dolls which R. D. is dressing for a missionary society,—“the one that has blue ribbons.” I gave the direction, and R. D. asked, “Like the light one? (The one with blue ribbons.) That is the one I meant. (How did you know?) Well, she swiped both the dolls and put them into her drawer, and I liked the light one better, so I thought likely it was that.” In the afternoon she shopped alone, being gone three hours, and returned with the doll, and a funny little cap for it. “I couldn't seem to get away from that cap until I bought it”, she explained. Yet she felt free, and when M. came she said nothing about having watched.

**M. Ceases to Watch, by Day or Night.** And in the evening S. M. asserted that M. watches no more, day or night, and gave out her opinion that M. will not recover the power to watch, if all goes well. But, S. M. adds, this does not prevent that M. sometimes comes near the surface, and becomes obscurely aware of what is happening. Thus, though M.



did not watch at all today, and did not know where R. D. shopped, yet, by her testimony and S. M.'s, she was "thinking" today about the doll's suit which was shown in the stores. In the morning, when she asked for the doll, she also mysteriously directed me to give R. D. 40 cents. To-day R. D. said that she had seen some dressed dolls that cost 40 cents. Hence it would appear that while M. did not ask for one of the dressed dolls, she was wishing for one, that her thinking of them somehow made R. D. re-examine them, and that she finally compromised by buying a cap. M. was satisfied with the substitution, but referred to the dressed dolls and asked that R. D. should dress this.

R. D. came at 10.22. The clutching seems to have ceased. Constipation for several days. *Nov. 20-21: 4 alt.: [437] R. D., 22 h. 47 m.; M., 2 h. 47 m.*

*Nov. 22.* Today and yesterday constitute the first time that R. D. has had two days in succession of more than twenty-two hours each.

R. D. copied in the evening, and staid until 9.55 p. m. I told Mrs. P. in M.'s hearing that M. no longer watches day or night. M. looked up wonderingly, and asked, "Who told you that? But it isn't our fault." I added to Mrs. P., "She *can't* watch any more." M. repeated, "How do you know? Who told you that? (O, I studied it out.)" I asked her,

---

437. She was now well entered into a four-alternations-a-day period, which was to continue for some days to come. But she was making such a spurt of improvement that it was bound to bring a reaction in the form of weariness and a demand for rest in the way of more alternations. Note that four alternations a day means that R. D. is out all night, and the most of the day until some hour in the evening, the breaks in such case always coming in the morning and in the evening. Never once had R. D. failed to go in the morning after the sleep of the night. One might think that sleeping well would have enabled her to continue for a portion of the day, but *the long sleep itself tired her* because it was *her* sleep, and she had never slept in her own personality for 19 years previous to March, 1911. Sleep itself involves mental activity in the form of dreaming, to say nothing of the soliloquizing, twisting, etc., of S. R. D., who rose fog-like over the personality of R. D. at intervals during the night.

Nov. 20-21 is a representative day of this short period. R. D. was out at night, 9.25 p. m. to 7.20 a. m., and during the day from 8.10 a. m. to 9.02 p. m.



"(But sometimes you still know what R. D. has done; how do you do it?) Through her thoughts." S. M. still insists that M. is past watching, but says that she yet thinks, down below the thoughts of R. D. My intimate acquaintance with the case has made me cognizant of frequent signs of the M. consciousness stirring below the consciousness of R. D. A number of times during the day a slight but peculiar change comes into R. D.'s expression, like a dissolving view, denoting that M. underneath is pleased or amused or irritated by something that has been said or done; [438] or it may be that the left eyelid twitches or some tone or uttered phrase subtly reveals the same fact. R. D. herself is dimly conscious of that stirring below, mainly it would seem as a disturbing factor in her own consciousness. Thus she asks me to paste a paper on the back of a photograph of mine which M. claims as hers, in order to keep out the dust. I probably looked my surprise that she did not do it herself, for she explained, "I am not allowed to. (How not allowed?) Well, every time I touch that picture an uneasy feeling comes, and I have to let it alone. It came just a little while ago." I judge from what I can learn from R. D.—she seldom tells an incident of the kind unless it becomes necessary by way of explanation—and by the exterior signs, that these feelings come most powerfully when R. D. handles objects in which M. is peculiarly interested.

The separate individuality of S. M. is accentuated by a host of details too minute for mention. But I here set down some of the larger marks.

(1) *Psychic maturity.* The matter and manner of speaking, the deliberative and philosophizing tendency, the caution and

---

438. "Watching" was an active process, as it were M. came up near to the surface and observed R. D.'s thoughts; in the last stage of her doing this it was not done voluntarily, but was none the less an active process, as the slave's toil is active, though he is compelled by the lash to perform it. After M. was "past watching" the process which followed was rather a streaming down of certain thoughts of R. D., probably mostly pictorial, into the passive consciousness of M., which then underwent more or less of a mental and emotional reaction, as one asleep experiences following the imagery of a dream.



foresight of S. M. stamp her mentality as not only different from that of R. D., the primary personality, but also as more mature. The reason in part appears to be that she has the benefit of the experiences of all the personalities. But there appears to be a different psychical quality back of all this.

(2) *Differences of tone and manner.* Her voice is markedly different from that of M., less but indescribably different from R. D.'s, less silvery, and somewhat deeper. Her laugh, less frequent than that of R. D., is generally more restrained, less ringing, more of the chuckle variety except when she laughs heartily. Nor does her laugh resemble that of M. Her manner is calmer, more phlegmatic, than that of either of the others. She never grieves like R. D., she never has a tantrum like M., but shows her resentment when she has any by maintaining silence.

(3) *Psychic detachedness.* [439] S. M. praises and criticises R. D. by turns, deplors that she is not more careful, is more sensitive to what she considers unwarranted criticism of R. D. than to criticism of herself, is amused by M.'s antics and laughs and talks of them exactly as a grown person would relate and laugh about the tricks of a dear but troublesome child, and in all respects manifests as much detachedness as, for example, an average person shows in respect to her friends. She remarks concerning S. D. as she was in her last stage, "I thought she was real cute sometimes. How she used to draw out the 'all' in 'Papa make hit a-a-a-a-all better' into a tiny squeak, when she felt well. The better she felt the longer she would draw it out. But when she was in pain and was asking you to help her, she would say, 'Papa make hit all better'"—imitating S. D.'s dry, lifeless way of uttering the words at such times. "M. said something so babyish last night—I wonder if you noticed it. I intended to remember it, but I can't think what it was." But all through this record are speeches of S. M. illustrating her psychical detachedness. In knowledge and judgment she is certainly more advanced than R. D. The latter wanted much to go to church last Sunday and could not see wherein

439. A feature of S. D. and M. also, but preeminently one of S. M.



it was inadvisable for her to do so. But S. M. saw very clearly, and warned me most impressively not to allow her to go. R. D. did not understand why it troubled her so to study, and wanted to persevere. But S. M. understood, and advised that the studies cease until M. is gone. And there are hosts of instances of S. M. directing a course opposed to the opinions and wishes of R. D., not from any selfish preferences of her own, as is often the case with personalities, but from regard solely for the interests of R. D.

(4) *Independent voluntary movements.* Many instances have been given. S. M. can initiate and carry a movement on if M.'s interprets it in accordance with S. M.'s intention, and has no objection, though even then it is generally M. who finishes it. If M. consents but misinterprets the movement, it ends in a manner different from what S. M. intended. If S. M. carries the movement out from its initiation to its close it means that M. is very soundly asleep. Otherwise, as already remarked, M. takes up the movement, and she betrays the exact moment when she does so by a sudden acceleration and fitful energy which contrasts with S. M.'s calm smoothness of movement. If M. is opposed to the movement of the hand, for example, it is arrested in its progress and brought back, in which case she is convinced that I am somehow responsible, and may exclaim in her sleep, "No papo, asa no!", or if she wakes immediately after may accuse me of having moved her hand. An instance was when S. M. pointed with the index finger while describing such a gesture performed by another, and M. continued to make poking movements until I held her hand, whereupon, waking soon after, she said, "You made my finger point, and then when I wanted to point it you wouldn't let me."

(5) *Consciousness or unconsciousness of M.'s movements.* Sometimes S. M. knows what M. is doing in her sleep and sometimes she does not, or guesses only partly right. When she knows, it is either, according to her testimony, (1) because M. is thinking of what she is doing, for S. M. discerns M.'s thoughts, "when paying attention", or (2) because the movement is extensive or violent enough to cause con-



siderable oscillation of the entire body or of a limb. Since writing the foregoing I have questioned S. M. further, and at the moment stroked M.'s hand, without telling S. M. what I was doing, whereupon M. began to feel of my fingers. S. M. then said, "She is feeling of her fingers now. She is wondering what they were doing that to her hand for." This instance is illustrative of the first method, and shows that M., as is often the case, was thinking, the error aided by her anæsthesia, that she was feeling her own fingers. Asked how she could detect M.'s movements by the second method, S. M. said, "By instinct,—I can't explain how." I gather that S. M. can detect movements of M. that the latter is not thinking of provided they are sufficiently *slow* or *extensive*. If M. makes a series of swift movements without the accompaniment of active thought, S. M. cannot follow them, at least not throughout the series. A sweeping or extensive movement seems always to be observed, unless S. M.'s attention is taken up by something else, in which case it may escape her as it might any ordinary person. Speaking of the "instinct", as S. M. calls it, she said, "I suppose I get it [knowledge of the movement] from M. You know that every movement is registered in the brain. [440] I can see it registered—no, I can't explain it. If I were a scholar and could find words, what a lot I could tell you of the way that things look from the inside!"

(6) *SLEEPING Margaret*. And of course there is the peculiarity that S. M. can manifest herself only when M. is asleep, though this is a peculiarity not so much of her nature as of her situation or relation. Even when manifesting herself, she is never safe from interruption and inhibition. That is, she is related to M. in a different manner from that in which she is related to R. D., more immediate, allowing her a channel, though not an unobstructed one, for expression. S. M. is in some respects subordinated to M., though the latter does not know anything certain of her existence, and is

---

440. This expression "registered in the brain" was not derived from me, nor is it one which R. D. would have been capable of using. It was S. M.'s own.



far inferior mentally—it is purely a subordination of position or mechanical relation. On the other hand, S. M. can, by an effort of will and expenditure of energy, momentarily transcend her limitations and exercises resistless authority over M., by producing the impression of a blow upon her, or by “pulling her in.” There seems to be some kind of a psychic explosion in these cases, with corresponding exhaustion, the effects upon the primary personality being very observable following the “pulling-in” process.

R. D. dreams, S. D. used to dream, but neither M. nor S. M. ever dreams.

I asked S. M. how M. used to be able to make S. D. come out, during her last and infantile stage. “She did it by slipping back to her own place. Someone always has to be out in the reasoning part, you know. (What part?) I call it the reasoning part—well, the forehead. She just slipped back.” Of course M. used to do this when S. D. was in her prime also, but I was observer of her doing it many times in the last period. And I have related how M. has done it in reference to R. D. also, causing her to return for a few minutes in the evening.

S. M. said, “If I don’t get a chance to write those directions I must dictate them to you, for you must know what you are to do when I am gone. You have got to guard the R. D. even more carefully after you think M. is gone, for any kind of a shock and M. will come back, and she will come more obstreperous. (Why will that be?) Because she will hate to find herself back.

**S. R. D.’s “Babbling” Ceases for the First Time.** R. D. came at 11. S. M. reported in the morning that there was no “babbling” at all last night, for the first time. *Nov. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 38 m.*

*Nov. 23.* R. D. felt very well today and was very active. She was left alone in the evening, and spent a part in the pleasurable occupation of copying. At a little before 9.30 she went down-stairs for a glass of buttermilk, and M. came, the first time that she has been down-stairs alone for many weeks. The rest of the story I get from S. M., with some



points from M. M. went to the foot of the stairs, glass in hand, and shouted up, "Papo! papo!" Getting no reply she went out on the porch in her woolen nightgown, and looked up and down the street. A man came out of the house adjacent and stood on the porch looking at her—her gown resembled a kimono—and she was about to ask him which way the church is, thinking that she would go there in search of me (though S. M. doubts if she would have dared to do so), but the man went into the house. Then M. went upstairs, very cold, with teeth chattering. The fire in the grate was turned low. She attempted to turn it up, but being anæsthetic she pressed too hard, and the flames leaped out and scorched her robe, as was to be seen afterwards. Instantly she turned the damper the other way, and the fire went out altogether. Thereupon, being, as S. M. says, under the influence of the fear of fire, and having forgotten anyway how to light a fire, she sat down in a rocker beside the desk. A note was placed conspicuously on the desk, for her to read if she should come, as she has done before, but she paid it no attention. There she sat, not saying at intervals, as formerly, "Where is that papo?", not saying anything, not reading, not looking at anything in particular, and, says S. M., "I could not see that she was even thinking." She was just shivering and waiting, and so remained until we entered at 9.12. She was glad to see us, but in an apathetic way. Later, as she warmed up, she became livelier, and told us her adventures in her naïve fashion. I asked why she did not wrap a quilt about her. "Asa never thought of that. (Why didn't you go to bed?) Asa didn't think of going to bed. It was too early to go to bed. Didn't want to go to bed till our papo came."

I asked S. M. how it comes that M. asleep, though anæsthetic, pushes back a quilt or blanket when it touches her face. I wanted, as usual, to get her statement before uttering an explanatory word of my own. She answered, "She knows when the clothes brush her face, but not because she feels anything. I suppose they scratch her, but she does not feel it." So there is recognition by M. of touches which



she does not consciously feel, exactly as such recognition has been demonstrated in cases of hypnotic and hysteric anæsthesia, and as in cases of hysteria symptomized by a restricted visual area, there has been found cognition of the presence of objects outside of that visual field. [441] R. D. came at 11.30 p. m. There was babbling at intervals through the night. [442] *Nov. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 3 h.*

*Nov. 24.* R. D. tells two dreams that she had last night, which illustrate the occasional working up from below the threshold into the consciousness of R. D., of events and thoughts experienced by M. with strong emotional accompaniment, without the emergence in the mind of R. D., however, of recognition or any feeling of familiarity. (1) She was standing by an unaccustomed kind of a grate, her dress caught fire, and she was burned on the arm and leg. She ran, and a man caught her and extinguished the fire by throwing his coat around her. "(How were you dressed?) "I didn't notice—in a loose dress." The origin of the grate, the catching fire of the dress, the man, and the looseness of the dress, in the dream, are obvious, though the dreaming subliminal has added dramatic touches. (2) She dreamed that she was walking in the city street without shoes or stockings on, otherwise fully dressed. She was looking for me. The people kept gazing at her feet, and she was troubled about it "The people looking at me made me think that you wouldn't like it for me to be in my bare feet." S. M. says

441. See Binet's "Alterations of Personalities," page 135.

442. Bearing in mind that unless I was able to observe the very instant that an alternation came it is put down at the nearest decimal or semi-decimal figure, therefore never more than two minutes out of the way, it is of interest to note the series for the two days, Nov. 22-23 and 23-24. It runs thus: R. D. came at 11 p. m., M. at 7 a. m., R. D. at 8 p. m., M. at 9.30 p. m., R. D. at 11.30 p. m., M. at 8 a. m., R. D. at 8.35 a. m. and M. at 9.32 p. m. If I had not looked at the watch at the very moment that M. came this last time, the figures set down would have been 9.30 p. m. Not often can there be found a series as long as this and with only one interruption, of coincidences with the hour and half hour, but they are sufficiently plentiful through the record to show that the old habit of listening to and watching the clock still exercised a certain influence in timing the alternations.



that after I told M. that she should not have been out on the porch in her nightgown she worried about it, and this was why R. D. had this dream. The thick gown made M. feel dressed, all except her feet, which had no shoes on them. M. was looking for me, and this particular also appeared in R. D.'s dream. The man on the porch who looked at M. was transmuted in R. D.'s dream to people in the street. M.'s finding that I disapproved of her going out on the porch emerged in the dream in a shape to fit in with its imagery.

I attempted to induce M. to read aloud, but all she would read was one headline, and a few words of my writing which happened to be written very legibly. S. M. thinks that M. both cares little for reading now, and has difficulty, so that she picks words out. I asked S. M. if she herself read any more of my manuscript while M. was deciphering the few words, and she recited it to me in substance.

R. D. came at 10.37. Immediately following sinking to sleep the hands still occasionally lift or flutter, but clutch no more. S. M. says that there was a little babbling. She asserts that R. D. can be dreaming, rise in her sleep and go to the bathroom and return without interruption of her dream, also that while the babbling or soliloquizing "This is not my room—my room has a carpet on the floor", etc., is going on, R. D. sometimes is uninterruptedly dreaming on an entirely different subject. [443] *Nov. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 27 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

---

443. Here is one of the chief reasons for believing that there was another partly liberated personality, whose appearance only when D. was asleep, and the fact that she never reproduced any of the previous conversation of M. or showed any affinity to her, warrants calling her "Sleeping Real Doris". At the same time that the "babbling" (by S. R. D.) was going on, R. D. ("underneath") was having dreams of a totally different character. R. D. never throughout the study of the case had any memory, nor the slightest glimmering of memory of any of the utterances in the "conversation-recitals" or the "soliloquies", nor of the risings, twistings and turnings which have been described, believing herself to have slept without moving on nights when the latter were going on at every hour. Motor responses to sensory stimuli appeared later which had peculiar characteristics and were accompanied with facial expressions never observed under other circum-



*Nov. 25.* S. M. told me in the morning that R. D. had another dream about a little girl Margaret. "I doubt if she will be able to remember it enough to tell much. I only remember a bit." But on asking R. D. casually if she dreamed anything, she proved able to give a fuller account than S. M. had supposed she could do. She dreamed that she was coming out of the public library with a basket full of money, and she encountered "the same little girl I have dreamed of before, you know,—the one that looked like me when I was little", and the child snatched the basket away. R. D. ran after to get the money back; the little girl got on a passing ice-wagon [I find that D. used to ride on passing ice-wagons when a small child], was pulled off, and while both had hold of the basket of money the little girl refused to give it up, until R. D. knelt on her body and pummeled her awhile. [444] When the child yielded the money she was let go. The main interpretative fact is that of M.'s practice, very annoying to R. D., of "swiping" the latter's money. To be sure, M. puts the money in R. D.'s bank, but often R. D. has need of it and does not want it put beyond her reach. But perhaps the direct connection is to be sought in the besetting desire in the M. consciousness of getting money from the pocket-book of R. D. to put in the bank. This thought and desire rising bubble-wise into the dreaming consciousness of R. D., [445] rouses opposition to losing her money, and the opposition of the two wills is pictured most naturally in the dream dramatization.

M. became in the morning somehow aware that we were

---

stances, which also left no impression on the consciousness of R. D., though she woke a moment after them. All these are believed to have inhered in S. R. D., a somnambule personality which never got beyond the first stages of development.

444. The coarse and indiscriminate interpretation which Freud puts upon incidents of this description would lead him far astray in this instance. This is an absolute and certain fact, as determined on psychological and other grounds.

445. Recognized therein as an intruder, as belonging to that consciousness which she knows is out when she "forgets", and which she knows is child-like, and to that extent like herself "when she was little".



going to B. and B.'s store today, and asked me to buy the gingham dress that is to be my present to her, as distinguished from R. D. We entered the store, R. D. bought various articles, and was making her way out of the place, her business done, with manner unchanged. But we came in sight of the gingham counter on our way out, and there came an expression in her face and eyes which told that M. was close beneath, ready to come out, which she did a moment later. Instantly, without another look at me, M. stepped to the counter, and with a manner still pretty well counterfeiting that of R. D., gave her order. Then she said to me "You give him the address." R. D. always gives the address to which parcels are to be sent when I am with her in a store, unless I intercept her very quickly, but M. has forgotten it. As we turned away from the counter, there came the familiar jerk, and R. D. said, softly "I forgot for a little while."

Several times last evening M. pushed her bare toes almost up to the gas-jets in the grate, not mischievously but because she could not feel the heat. I drew her back each time. Today R. D. complained of sore toes, and little blisters have appeared on them. She woke in bed, she said, and the toes felt as though they had been burned. So, while M. distinguishes between heat and cold in a room, and even seems to suffer in the cold, it is evident that she is sub-normal in her reaction to the heat of solid objects.

I asked R. D. today, "Do you ever feel troubled or confused in your thoughts as you did awhile ago?) No, don't you see that I don't? (I certainly see it in your face. But I wanted your own testimony. Describe the feeling you used to have.) I would feel disagreeable, out of sorts with the world, as though nothing suited me, and my thoughts would be mixed up. (And what about that feeling that you sometimes have now?) I feel as though someone were acting badly inside me—was displeased. (Do any words shape themselves in your mind?) No."

**S. M. Begins to have Limited Government of Bodily Movements, while M. is Awake.** In the evening while M.



was out she made a movement of which she seemed to be unconscious, and that fact together particularly with something indefinable about the movement, which had not M's jerky impulsiveness, made me suspect that S. M. directed it, although I had not learned that she could do this when M. is awake. But afterwards, without being led directly to the point, S. M. admitted that she was responsible for the act, and said, "Yes, I can make movements when M. is awake, but not so easily because she more readily observes it. I can move the foot more easily than I can her hand." S. M. never says "my hand", or "my foot";—she does not regard herself as the possessor of the body, only as occupying a portion of the brain. I asked S. M. how she supposed that M., not watching, knew when we neared the gingham counter. "Well, you know what I told you about thoughts being registered on the brain. Well, M. had determined to come out at the gingham counter. M. did not watch, that is, she did not see things through R. D.'s eyes, but she was thinking *below*, and she saw the reflection of what R. D. saw in R. D.'s thoughts. I am glad the gingham dress is bought, you can go to B. and B.'s now without danger of M.'s coming out." I further inquired, "(Doesn't R. D. suspect what the little girl Margaret in her dreams means?) No. It seems so peculiar! I know in a minute, but it has never occurred to her. She is quick enough to notice some things, but in others she appears really stupid. Why! that dream is symbolical [446] of M.'s going. R. D. dreamed that she was beating the girl, and that is just what she is doing, getting her under, by getting stronger herself. (What did the money in the dream refer to?) To M.'s getting money away from R. D." R. D. came at 10.45 p. m. and slept splendidly. Nov. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 3 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.

Nov. 26. Sunday. R. D. went to Sunday school. The monthly period began in the forenoon. I found M. sitting on the lounge, doing nothing whatever. She no longer plays,

---

446. This term "symbolical" arrested my attention when S. M. uttered it, by its fitness. I had never applied it before to this class of dreams, but now adopted it.



does not even hold her dolls, but sometimes looks up at them on the bookcase and says, "Look at them, papo; ain't they cute?" She never refers to the drama. Apparently her reading days are nearly over, though she still occasionally looks at pictures. For about eight days, in the evening, she has wanted me to rub her cold feet. It was an unstable day, as was to be expected. Coming again in the afternoon M. wanted a lunch. "Get me a slice of bread—a *big* slice, and spread lots of butter on it, and put smearcase on top, a *lot* of smearcase, put it on like puddin'." I did so to her approval, and after eating it and sleeping awhile she woke and said, "Get us another smearcase piece and we will take *one* bite and let the R. D. have the rest. (Won't it be bad for her?) No, you know she is Dutch, and the Dutch eat between meals. She doesn't eat much at meals." And in truth, she took one bite, R. D. came, and ate the remainder.

In the evening R. D. was left alone copying. We returned at 9, and R. D. said, "I forgot for about ten minutes, and got a note." The note read as follows: "If you don't take a bath before Mama and papa comes home I will take one in cold water too. I will let you come again and give you a chance to take one don't take to long to think about it Margaret

You can look at the dress papa bought me for Christmas when it comes tomorrow." In explanation I will say that not only is M. scrupulously clean but S. D. was also, taking baths at least three times a week and often daily, in spite of the primitive arrangements in her former home. In her unsettled and changing state R. D. has not been as punctilious as formerly. The other day M. complained indignantly about it, and again last evening, when M. came and found that R. D. had forgotten. R. D. was going to attend to it after Sunday school, but when the hour came it seemed impracticable for obvious reasons. But to M. the bath was paramount, and she worded her threat in a manner which she knew from R. D.'s mind would be most effective. R. D. had to obey. S. M. said that if she had not M. would have bathed in cold water, or perhaps have scalded herself in hot water.



"(Did M. watch during the bath?) No, she cannot watch any more, but she saw the reflection of R. D.'s thoughts and knew what she was doing. (Does she see R. D.'s thoughts continuously?) O no, only once in a while, for a few minutes, just as she used to watch in the last months." R. D. came at 10.38 and slept well. *Nov. 25-26: men. per. began; 12 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 38 m.; M., 3 h. 15 m.* [447]

*Nov. 27.* I woke very early, and as both doors were open sufficiently for me to see R. D. in her couch, I studied the manner of her sleeping. She lay perfectly quiet for about 15 minutes, then turned over and drew the clothing up to her chin, lay quietly for some 12 minutes and repeated the operation, and so continued to do until M. came at 7.55 and called.

M. has contracted a habit recently of patting me on cheek, back of my head or elsewhere, all the while saying, with squeaky, rising inflections, "Go to sleep! Go to sleep!" Yesterday Mrs. P. witnessed several spells of the kind, and there were several this morning, the voice more undulating and squeaky than ever. S. M. was much amused and laughed so that M. was choked off—a rare event—and then expressed her displeasure, and I think from the tone her perplexity, by ejaculating sharply, "No." Since the patting always accompanies the "cricket-chirp" I experimented by withdrawing the hand gradually, and as gradually the utterances ceased; when the hand was withdrawn quickly, the words were cut off precisely at that point, even to the severing of a syllable. "You see", said S. M., "one must go with the other." A curious projection of this automatism soon occurred; when R. D. came I kissed her as usual in the morning, and she smiled and patted my cheek. As she did so there burst from her lips the beginning of M.'s phrase, "Go to—", in exactly M.'s tones, [448] then R. D. choked off the

---

447. These were the alternations for Nov. 25-26, the day when the period began: R. D. came at 10.45, M. at 7.35 a. m., R. D. at 8.05 a. m., M. at 12.25 p. m., R. D. at 1 p. m., M. at 4.23 p. m., R. D. at 4.42 p. m., M. at 5.57 p. m., R. D. at 6.10 p. m., M. at about 8.30 p. m., R. D. at about 8.40 p. m., M. at 9.10 p. m.

448. The patting movement subliminally stimulated or "stirred up"—as



sound and with an expression in which embarrassment, amazement and amusement were mingled, cried "What does that mean? What did I say that for?", then, after a moment, "Where did I want you to go to?" I deemed it best to make a brief but truthful explanation.

R. D. said to me, "I wish you would see if you can find a belt in that drawer", so I fumbled over the contents of M.'s drawer, which she allows me only to do. Once R. D. essayed to help, but took her hand away as if stung, though she said nothing. I failed to find the belt, and R. D. said, "I wish you would ask me when I forget what I did with it." M. afterwards produced it from behind the drawer, and at a still later appearance I asked what she did with it. "I threw it at the R. D." It appears that she threw it over her shoulder, and R. D. came and found it there.

In the forenoon I attempted an experiment, to see if I could put R. D. asleep and have her wake herself, without mentioning my purpose beforehand. I had R. D. comfortably propped in a sitting position, and put her to sleep by suggestion. Soon I heard the words, twice uttered, "I guess I won't do it *now*." I whispered "Is it your bureau?" A brief interval and the soliloquizing or "babbling" resumed. Slowly, in hushed and wondering accents, the words came. "This isn't my room. . . This isn't my room. . . My room has a carpet. . . This isn't my room. . . (Is it your bed?) This isn't my bed. . . This isn't my room. . . (Your bureau?) That's my bureau. . . Where am I?" [449] Here R. D. woke and said, "I did go to sleep, didn't I? (Did you dream anything?) No." She had slept about three minutes. [450] Only one sentence in the soliloquy

S. M. would say—M., who dreamily broke forth from R. D.'s lips with her automatism, but ceased the moment that R. D.'s will was exerted upon the vocal machinery.

449. The present utterances, compared with what they had been—see pages 726 seq., etc.—indicate, in their repeated return to what had been the initial sentence of the series, "This isn't my room", the decay of the "babble", and confirm S. M.'s statements that it was dying out.

450. Here but a moment separated the utterances from the waking of R. D., yet the latter had no shadow of recollection of dreaming imagery or thoughts, since they were not hers but those of S. R. D. emerging in sleep.



was unfamiliar to me, "I guess I won't do it *now*." S. M. explains that R. D. used to say this sometimes on first coming out and finding a task set for her which she wished to defer for a little.

While M. was reading or seeming to do so I said, "Write me a story." She took a pencil and wrote rapidly, but in a hand which looks years younger than her usual one:

"Once there was two three chickens mother and father and baby chicken the baby chicken always wanted to go up the hill to the road the mama and papa hens said you mustn't go alone but the baby said yes I will go so she kept running off and finally one day a great big thing came up the road and she got so skeared and tryed to run accross the road to her home but the big thing came too fast and ran over her. The Mother and father cried but said Well we told her not to go up there." I asked M. where she got her story from. "I saw the hens over there", she replied. I looked where she pointed, and saw on the distant side of a *hill* beside a *road*, some *hens* just discernible. M. said that just before she began to write an *automobile* came *up the road*, and the *hens ran*." So these were the elements out of which her imagination so swiftly built up the little domestic tragedy. S. M. says that M. did not name the "great big thing" because she could not spell the word automobile. [451]

At 5.45 M. demanded to go to bed, and then approached the grate and lifted her foot almost in contact with the blaze. I withdrew her foot and she began to explain that she did not intend to get it too near the fire, but in explaining pushed the foot forward to its former dangerous position, and I pulled the foot back. "But let me tell you," she said again, and again, but could not explain without the accompanying action. I now turned the fire out, and she took umbrage, exclaiming with wide eyes and dark looks, "Go away from me! Go away! Go away from me!" over and over. I retired from

---

451. Noting M.'s mis-spellings, "skeared", "tryed" and "accross", together with her inability to spell "automobile", I casually asked R. D., several days afterward, to write those four words. She wrote them unhesitatingly, and all correctly.



the room until she was abed and came in to hear the same ejaculations. I now went to the mantel and looked at a picture as though it fascinated me. Her childish curiosity got the better of her mood, and she asked "Who is that? (My niece.) Your *knees*? O papo, how can it be your knees?" She was the one to eat supper, and afterwards she asked if she might write to Dr. Hyslop and I consented. She laughed and bounced with delight. She wrote as follows:

"Nov. 27, 1119 (a)  
Pittsfield St. (b) [452]

Dear Jim Hyslop:

I am writing to you again. Doris is sick today so I am out more. I have never found a picture of our (c) doll we called after you and papa (d) has promised to take it not the doll but the pict. (e) himself so I will have to wait until then (f). Papa bought me a dress for Christmas and mother

---

452. The following notes on the letter are explanatory: (a) After writing the year-date she asked, "Is that right?" and I naughtily replied in the affirmative. She still looked at the figures doubtfully, and on reading the letter afterwards, again paused at them and appeared in doubt. Later she found on a letter of mine the figures arranged differently and said that she would change hers, but her mind was diverted and she forgot to do so.

(b) I asked if she wasn't going to put down the place, and she answered, "O he'll know the place." The name of the street was wrong. My recollection is that "Pittsfield", which name M. hereafter occasionally employed, was started by my happening to speak of Pittsfield, a town in Maine with which I was familiar in boyhood. Its resemblance to "Pittsburgh" may have helped it to take root.

(c) Sometimes in this letter she uses the first person in referring to herself, and sometimes relapses into the old plural form, out of which she had been partly educated.

(d) She still wrote "papa", but always pronounced the word "papo".

(e) She added the words "not the doll but the pict." above the line, and said, "He'll know what pict. is, won't he?"

(f) She had looked in vain for an advertisement picture of the doll.

(g) Here she remarked, "I don't want him to think that I am *asking* for a Christmas gift, but I *am*."

(h) The trouble was not in the pen, but in her anæsthesia, which made it impossible to regulate the pressure properly.

(i) S. M. tried to induce me not to send the letter, with its "Dear Jim" and request for a present. "Such things aren't nice", she said.



bought us beads you know I shant use them but I will leave them to Doris when I go. What are you going to send me for a Christmas gift you needn't send me anything unless you want to (g). Doris is copying that article that papa is writing for your paper. I read your article in the paper and thought it was bully. We can't watch any more but can tell some things that are happening by watching Doris mind I am writing this in bed and papo is holding the ink! It is a bum pen for it catches on the paper (h) I have mad my will and have left you a picture of Me if papa will take one. Stuck my feet in the fire and burned D.'s toes. Well Good by Margaret. Good By—Good-By (i) ”

She was eager for the letter to start that evening but I told her that there was no mail until morning. In the morning, at the sound of letters dropping into the box she said, “There, you didn't send that letter!” It was true that I had forgotten, though I had not given any intimation of the fact.

Once in the afternoon I looked at M. and she was gazing into my eyes with that concentrated, interested and amused gaze which she always has before she states what I have been thinking. But when I asked her what she was doing she laughed significantly, but would not tell me. Later in the day Mrs. P. was talking about a projected cantata, and M. said, “We could have three parts in a play, couldn't we? (Three? You mean two.) Now you needn't talk that way, papo; I know that there are three. You can't fool your baby, I know there are three, and you know it. I saw what you were thinking of the other day. You thought her name. (What is it?) I will spell it. Spee—that's not right—Sleeping Sleeping Margaret. Didn't you think that? (Yes, I have thought the words, but sleeping Margaret is you asleep.)” M. declared that she didn't believe that, but S. M. says that M. is not half sure that S. M. is really the name of the third one. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Nov. 26-27: 12 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 12 m.; M., 5 h. 30 m.*

*Nov. 28.* This morning I induced M., by the promise of another Christmas present, to tell me what she saw in my



mind yesterday. "You weren't *thinking* of it," she said, "it was underneath. [453] You thought about what someone told you at church. (What?) About his daughter. She was sick and he was afraid that she was going to die. And you thought that you were glad it wasn't your daughter that was going to die." The facts are that on Sunday evening a week ago, in the rector's room of the church, the organist, after asking me about the health of my daughter, said to me, "I am afraid I am going to lose mine", and went on to describe her illness. I do not remember whether I thought

---

453. I believe that in no instance did M. tell me what was consciously in my thoughts at the moment when she seemed to make the discovery. In every single case that she claimed to see something in my mind she made a bull's-eye hit, only that she rehearsed thoughts that had been consciously in my mind from a few minutes to several hours previously. There may be thought to be one exception, the time when she told me what I had been reading in the book (See p. 508 seq.). But she told me prominent features of what I had been hastily skimming over in the last half hour, and I very much doubt that any particular which she stated was consciously recalled to my mind before she rehearsed it. In not a single case where M. told my thoughts did there appear any normal means by which she could have acquired them, though I was accustomed to study each instance in order to discover, if possible, some loop-hole of information. Take the name "Sleeping Margaret", for example. It would not be possible to convince the inveterate skeptic that M., with her admitted abnormal hearing, did not overhear Mrs. P. and me uttering the term in conversation with each other. That is not credible to me, since we so fully understood the necessity of concealing many things from R. D. and some from M. that we made it a rule not to refer to any of these things unless at a very safe distance, and even then the rule was adopted to say "S. M." instead of speaking the full title of "the third one". But why cavil about this particular case, when there were so many others wherein the facts leading to the thoughts which M. announced had not been told even to Mrs. P.?

But the point that must not be missed is that M. at least read only my subliminal thoughts, as not only shown by my own consciousness and recollection, but as claimed by herself in her own naive language over and over ("You weren't *thinking* of it—it was underneath", "You wasn't really thinkin' of it, it was goin' through your mind like a p'rade", etc.), and by S. M. as corroborating witness. Where did M. get such terms, if she was not simply describing what she learned by some mysterious telepathic process? Not from me; I had supposed that telepathy, if it were a fact, always was of conscious states, and if I had supposed and ever expressed myself otherwise M. could not have comprehended such notions from the statements of another.



that I was glad my daughter was not going to die, but when the prospects of the two girls had just been directly contrasted in conversation, it would hardly have been possible for some such thought not to have crossed my mind. This last particular could have been inferred, providing that the previous conversation were known. But the organist and I were alone, and I had forgotten to mention what I had heard in my own home, except to S. M. Mrs. P. had not heard of the illness of the girl to this date. Earlier on the very day that M. professed to have read my mind, S. M. asked me how the young lady was getting along. This may have served to revive the subject, subliminally, in my mind, later. But might not the facts have filtered through from S. M. to M.? Then it is the first instance in my study of the case where a chain of thoughts has passed from S. M. to M., [454] besides being opposed to the testimony of S. M. herself regarding such possibilities. Afterwards, to learn if by any chance R. D. knew of the sickness of the girl, I casually said to her, "(It is sad about Mr. X.'s daughter, isn't it?) His daughter? I didn't know that he had a daughter. What is the matter with her?" No one who saw and heard her could doubt the perfect candor of her reply, nor can anyone who knows her doubt her candor at all times. I will add that the organist lives in a distant part of the city.

Not from R. D., not until long after did she appreciate the meaning of such terms and theories. Had M. herself become acquainted with the doctrine of the subliminal mind?—the question is laughable when one considers what M. was, that she supposed that babies were gathered by doctors on river-banks, and did not know that the milk that the milkman brought came from cows. M. knew as much as the ordinary child of eight does about philosophy and psychology, that is nothing at all, and would have given no intelligent heed if these subjects had been talked over in her hearing. She could describe in her own terms anything that she experienced, but would have been as incapable of understanding the theory of the subliminal if it had been expounded to her in the absence of such experience as she would have been incapable of comprehending Kepler's laws. M.'s simple descriptive language amounts to a strong endorsement of the doctrine of the subliminal mind. However, M. never appeared to read my stored-away memories, but only my thoughts actually, though subliminally, going on "like a p'rade".

454. Nor was there afterwards ever the slightest evidence of such transmission.



The incident, perhaps inconclusive by itself, must be taken together with the others of the kind in this record. And it must be considered that M. shows marked aversion to anything like "showing off" her seemingly supernormal powers. She never exhibits them save in the most childlike and casual fashion, and any appearance of unusual interest on the part of her hearers tends to shut her up like an oyster. Now there have of course been plenty of cases wherein M. could have told something, professedly gleaned from my mind, which I should have remembered speaking about, or which would have suggested to my inspection some means by which she could have otherwise learned or surmised the facts. Never once has this been so. Let it be assumed that I have forgotten in every single one of the numerous instances. How was M., assuming her to be a calculating impostor, instead of the merry child that she is, able to select only such groups of facts as I had forgotten reporting? *If she is able to tell what I forget, that is telepathy!* And in all cases where it is herein set down that nothing had been previously told, the fact is as certain as any other fact of my testimony could be. Then again, I have a number of times caught her in the act of, as she at least believes, reading my mind. No one could become acquainted with that expression and doubt that it covered a genuine belief and a vivid psychical experience of some kind. The expression may perhaps be likened to that of a sensitive person looking at a very interesting and slightly amusing scene in a play—absorbed, entertained, eyes riveted, lips parted and somewhat smiling.

Again today I put R. D. to sleep in a comfortable posture, by whispering only twice, "Sleep!", and this though she was a little reluctant. Very soon I whispered "Is it your room?", and R. D. woke. Again sleep was induced and I waited somewhat longer before saying "your room." Now there came from her lips tonelessly, "This isn't my room. . . It is my bureau." R. D. woke in a couple of minutes. [455] Soon after her face took on a troubled expression,

455. Note that the first time I spoke sufficient time had not been allowed for the fog-like S. R. D. to exhale and come to the surface, consequently my voice roused R. D.



and at length she said, "I feel discontented. I feel as if I wanted to go. . . . I feel awfully lazy today." This mood and facial expression remained throughout the day. Both S. M. and M. tried to account for these, without much success. M. said, "I think she was more like S. D. today than ever before." Certainly I had been reminded of S. D.

I do not always have to wake M. before R. D. comes; sometimes she wakes of herself, perfectly conscious that R. D. is near. In either case she often defers R. D.'s arrival, as she has power to do for a short time only, in order to joke and play. Even in her sleep she will cry "We are coming, Father Abraham,—have scrambled eggs, mother", or "The REAL DORIS is coming," or the like, and yet does not usually wake until I have blown into her eyes.

In the evening M. picked up a paper and read a paragraph aloud, then said triumphantly "Did you hear that, papo? *I can read!*", and went on reading glibly. I was surprised, for she had not been able to more than pick out words for days, although able to write and to read what she wrote. I asked "(Why can you read tonight?) Because the R. D. doesn't feel so well today." It would seem that when the psychical tide is low in R. D. it swells in M.

R. D. came for the night at 10.10. Whether it was allied to the psychic disturbance of R. D. today, like the reading of M., or not, there was a little renewal of the clutching, in a new form, that of taking my hand between hers and holding it as if intending to retain it permanently. But for many nights there has been a tendency to a laugh, which seems to come automatically at the sound of my steps near by. [456] *Nov. 27-28: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 32 m.; M., 3 h. 18 m.*

*Nov. 29.* It was windy last night and R. D. did not sleep well. She appeared cheerful today, but it was by effect of will, for towards evening she said, "I have felt like crying all day." She could not tell why. Later I found S. M. in rather a disgruntled condition, it seemed to me, and finally I learned that Mrs. P. had dropped a well-meant remark about my not

456. This was the beginning of observed responses of S. R. D. to sensory stimuli.



sleeping well, and that S. M. feared that my cares in relation to D. are the cause. S. M. would not admit that R. D. is worrying about this, though I suspect that it is so.

In the evening M. sat a few minutes near me by the fire. R. D. will not sit near an open fire, because of the fear that she has derived from S. D., the latter having undergone many perils from fire, both by M.'s instrumentality and by falling when asleep. I looked up to find M.'s eyes fixed on mine with that intent and interested scrutiny which I now know so well. "(What is it?) You wrote to a man named Prince today—to Dr. Prince. You wrote about Doris", and she laughed delightedly, as if it were a little game. "(That is right, what else?) You asked him how someone was getting on." Now the fact is that in the afternoon, without having said anything to a soul about my intention, I wrote a letter to Dr. Morton Prince. R. D. was in the room, but I was careful that she had no opportunity to see what I was writing, as I did not want her to suspect that I was writing about her, nor did she have any opportunity to see the envelope. When M. came, she had no opportunity to see either, for they were put where no one could find them. Nor did I say a word to Mrs. P. or anyone else subsequently about the writing. I was particularly careful, for it crossed my mind, in consequence of an unrecorded allusion of M. to the contents of an unseen letter, that it would be a good test if M. should chance to say anything about this one. But I was not consciously thinking of the letter at the moment when I detected that M. was scrutinizing me. Here, owing to the precautions taken, there seems to be no escape from the conclusion that M. learned several facts by telepathy. (1) That I wrote to a man named Prince. (2) That he was *Doctor* Prince. (3) That the letter was written today. (4) That I wrote about R. D. All these were literally correct. Then M. affirmed that I (5) asked Dr. Prince how someone was getting on. This, while not literally correct, is the strongest point, evidentially, of all, for while I did not actually write such an inquiry I distinctly and positively meditated asking if the heroine of his famous case, "Miss Beau-



champ", had continued well, but decided not to do so. Thus, in this particular M. told what had never been anywhere but in my mind, had neither been set down on paper nor mentioned to anyone. I may add that I had never written to Dr. Morton Prince before, and there was no possible reason for anyone to infer that I would do so. R. D. came at 11.33 and had only a passably good night. *Nov. 28-29: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 7 m.; M., 3 h. 16 m.*

*Nov. 30.* While M. was out at noon she burned a finger of her left hand badly enough to bring a large blister, but M. did not feel, and showed no uneasiness from the burn. In about half an hour R. D. came, and though repeatedly asked if she felt any pain, did not, until the moment when I pointed out the spot by putting vaseline on, when she became keenly conscious of the smart. M. has no feeling of muscular movement, yet a strong pressure upon the muscles she can feel.

While looking into my eyes M. said, "I look bigger in one of your eyes. In this (my left) I am small, in this (my right) I 'most fill the black." She let me make some brief tests of her vision. I found that with her right eye closed the other cannot read the print directly in front of it, but only the page or part of the page to the left appears plainly to her; while of course the reverse is true of the left eye. Print seen with the left eye alone looks much larger than the same seen through the right eye alone. Later I found that to R. D. also, with both eyes open, her image in my right eye is much larger than the image in my left.

The following is very near to the language of S. M. "I think that the R. D. is now passing through her most critical stage—I don't mean dangerous, but unsettled, difficult. M. is going so fast—almost too fast—that it keeps R. D. at sea, readjusting herself. Think of it! she has always been used to M.'s watching, looking out for her, helping her in a way for nineteen years, and now M. is going away from her, and she has to learn to think and act for herself. She forgets and does odd things, they make me laugh sometimes, and she speaks in odd ways sometimes. But it won't always be so. You remember how at first when R. D. would come



she would straighten up, more than she does now. She won't stoop or sit slouchy when M. is gone. I noticed the other day when she was sitting slouched over as she sewed. Suddenly she remembered, and straightened up, but the effort of thinking to sit right bothered her about her work; she could hardly do anything. She can't think of two things at one time now. You must let those little things go for awhile—of course you can drop a word now and then, but in general let her drift, do what she wants to, pass from one thing to another and get her bearings. If she had had to work constantly at one thing while M. was going it might have wrecked her mind. But when M. has gone and she has become strong, she will be very different,—you haven't seen her yet as she really is. [457] Now she is bashful, she hardly speaks when any other girl talks to her, and if any fellow speaks, she is dumb. They no doubt think her strange—I have seen them look at her queerly. But all that is different than it used to be, she used to talk too much, and was not bashful at all. I think that she feels embarrassment at always being under the eye of you or the mother. Yesterday, when Mrs. \*\*\* and Mrs. \*\*\* came she ushered them in and talked to them quite well until the mother came in, but then she shut up like an oyster. I would let Ella come to see her. She is a good girl. Suppose you invite her to come up next Sunday night, and tell her not to talk of D.'s relatives or the life in the old home, and that she should not stay long after you get home. I think it would do her good. It would get her used to talking with people." In this last advice S. M. was endorsing a suggestion of M., who today made up her mind that R. D.'s uneasiness of the last few days was mostly due to the fact that R. D. used always to spend Thanksgiving with her mother, but suddenly added, "I'll tell you! Maybe she's lonesome for someone of her own age. I'd let her see Ella. I think that would do her good." R. D. came at 11 p. m. and had a fine night. *Nov. 29-30: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 26 m.; M., 4 h. 1 m. Average daily total of R. D. during November, 1911, 20 h. 32 m.*

*Dec. 1.* At the instigation of S. M. I suggested to R. D., while we were on the way to the city, that she dress a little

---

457. The prediction was justified by the event. R. D. gradually became more self-reliant before M.'s departure, markedly so after it, and is now normal in this respect.



better in the afternoon of each day. She seemed to take it well, and in the afternoon changed her suit for another pretty one. But later I learned that she had on a corset. M. would not take it off, but every time she slept she pulled so at the tight places that she had to be restrained to prevent the tearing of her dress. When M. woke I told her that I knew the corset hurt her because she pulled at it while asleep. "Asa won't do it again" she stoutly affirmed, but as soon as asleep the movements began anew. When R. D. came she explained that she did not have any pretty dress which could be worn without a corset for skirt-attachments. I told her that it would be better to wear the old garments than to be uncomfortable. To my amazement she began to weep, and M. coming continued to do so, looking at me accusingly and saying, "Bad papo, to make the R. D. cry so." I told her that I did not know that I had said anything to make R. D. cry. "You must have", she replied, evidently ignorant of what had taken place. When R. D. came again she quite unnecessarily lamented that she had gone about looking slack, and would not remove the article which was torturing her. Her head was now aching badly. At M.'s next arrival I got her into a mood during which she removed the offending garment.

Once today R. D. was sent away for half a minute when a spark fell on my wrist and I jumped.

In the evening I sat by the fire with M., who was warming her bare feet. I determined to make an experiment arranged with S. M. last night. As she had said that she could sometimes cause movements while M. was out awake, and that it was easier to move the foot without attracting M.'s attention than to move the hand, I had asked her if she thought she would be able, if I said "right foot" at a time when M.'s attention was absorbed, to thrust that foot forward, and when I said "left foot", to do the same with the other. She thought that she could. But instead of saying "right foot", I pronounced the initials "R. F.", while M. was in the midst of talk. This was a change from the cue arranged for that might well have puzzled anyone, and there



was no movement to correspond. At a repetition, M. asked "What are you saying R. F. for?" I avoided looking at her feet save out of the corner of my eye, and found opportunity to say "R. F." again. The right foot shifted forwards, and the toes wriggled. "L. F." was pronounced, and the left foot did the same. M. was now looking at a paper, but she paused and asked "What is L. F.?" (I was thinking of a girl named Lois Foster), I prevaricated, and she was satisfied. The signals each time brought the proper responses. At last I directed M.'s attention to the still wriggling toes, and asked "(What are you doing that for?) *Asa* not doing that. You did that, *papo*." I shook my head. "Honestly, it isn't me that's doing that. They just wiggle themselves." I called away M.'s attention by inducing her to try reading aloud, she read slowly and with difficulty, hesitating at every long word, and bringing it out slowly and blunderingly. By this test R. D. must have gained today. While this was going on, and M.'s attention was absorbed,—as she cannot bestow it upon two processes at the same time—I began the signals again, and the results followed unerringly. M. is so anæsthetic that the movements are not felt by her, and she did not even hear my signals, so absorbed was she in her attempts to read. Here is a very pretty phenomenon of double consciousness. After M. fell asleep, S. M. spoke first, "I didn't understand what you meant at first. . . . I found it hard to tell which was right and which left, as I can't see and M. can't feel. I moved my feet so long because I could not tell whether you noticed or not."

R. D. came at 10.30, "babbled" a little in the night, and slept well for her. *Nov. 30-Dec. 1: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 10 m.; M., 3 h. 20 m.*

*Dec. 2.* R. D. came in with the letters, among them one bearing the address of Dr. Hyslop in the corner. She observed this, and it stirred up M., who came out, heard her letter read, popped it into her drawer and was gone, all in three minutes. I had M. make a diagram of the house where she lived in her earliest years, and after R. D. came, as the valves do not open in her direction, I had R. D. do the same.



The two plans are very similar, but each contains features which the other omits.

R. D. spontaneously spoke of her difficulties of the nature discussed by S. M. the other evening. "I don't know what is the matter with me lately. I act so queer, I intend to do something and forget to do it, or I start to do it and think I have it done, when I have forgotten an important part. It is very unpleasant. What makes me act that way?" I omitted to set down that on Wednesday, at dinner, R. D.'s right cheek was very pink and her left pale. This continued for several hours, and the temperature of the right cheek, hand, arm, and presumably whole right side was unmistakably higher than the corresponding parts on the left.

In the evening, without having given S. M. notice that the experiments were to be repeated, I got M. to attempt to read aloud, and in the midst of her absorbed and halting efforts, said quietly, "L. F." The left foot and toes wriggled. "R. F.", and the right foot did the same. The correct movement followed each signal, though S. M. told me afterwards that the hard thinking she [S. M.] had to do in order not to make errors, disturbed M. and made her hesitate in her reading, though I had not noticed this. Then I said "left hand", but no movement followed. S. M. says that M. held the book firmly with her left hand so that it was impossible for her [S. M.] to move it.

I asked S. M. if she was sure that talking with her had not developed her to some extent. She laughed at the notion. I mentioned the "jolting" that she used to give M. after she got to talking with me as a possible evidence. She laughed again, and said, "I used to jolt her harder than that before I knew you." Surprised, I asked "(Why did you not tell me that before?) I didn't want you to know. I didn't mean to let it out then. Your speaking about developing me made me. (Why didn't you want me to know?) I didn't like for you to know that I did such things. (Did you do it before her mother died?) Yes indeed, lots of times. (As hard as I have known you to?) Harder. I used to jolt her sometimes so that she felt almost stunned.



(How did it feel to her?) Like a blow. (Where?) On the left side of the head. It had to be, because that is where I am. Why did she sometimes feel it in the forehead since I knew you?) I don't know, unless because she was lying with the left side of her head against you. [458] (What did you jolt her for in the old days?) She would be doing something I didn't like, such as plaguing the R. D. too much. I can't do it now, I think; I tried to not long ago, and she didn't feel it. (Is it because you are getting weaker?) No, I think it is because she is getting numb."

S. M. does not, like R. D., always tell the strict truth. So far as I can see, her aberrations from veracity are (a) to cover up something which she fears will worry me, (b) to conceal something for which she thinks that she herself may be blamed, or (c) to shelter R. D. from what she regards as unjust censure. There have been few suspected instances under any of these heads. [459] In most matters she appears to be entirely trustworthy, as shown by thousands of tests. And I do not know that she ever fibs voluntarily. It is when I persist in asking a question which she does not see fit to answer, that, driven into a corner, she takes a short cut out by an equivocal reply. Even then her manner, now that I know it, betrays her, for her face becomes immobile and sphinx-like, her voice lifeless, her utterances laconic if not monosyllabic. With a few exceptions, under the heads and with the accompanying signs noted, I believe that S. M. is subjectively truthful. R. D. came at 11 p. m. and slept well. *Dec. 1-2: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 27 m.; M., 3 h. 3 m.*

---

458. When M. lay with her head in my lap it was usually with the left side of her head next to me.

459. A fourth class was discovered later, (d) matters that she thought were eminently not my business. Thus, after she came to claim that she was a spirit, she explained her earlier denial by saying that at first she did not consider it my affair what she was. In fact the first three classes of cases may simmer down to the fourth. Sometimes she said, when I deemed it necessary to know details about R. D., "It is not fair to her that someone should tell everything about her, even her thoughts. How would *you* like it?" Her very manner, in her rare prevarications, indicated, "Why do you pry into what is not your business?"



*Dec. 3. Sunday.* S. M. says that she hates Sunday, because she worries all through Sunday-school for fear M. will come out. M. came at home once today in consequence of a mouse running across R. D.'s hand while she was in the pantry.

Once I said "R. F." and "L. F." when M. was standing, and of course there could be no resultant movement. When I said, looking into M.'s eyes, "L. E.", both eyes winked and the same when I said "R. E.",—this test not having been pre-announced to S. M. Of course the eyes tend to wink together, or, as S. M. put it, "I winked one eye, and M. the other."

Then M. slept and performed many stunts in her sleep, tying a ribbon to my ears, afterwards making it into a fillet for my hair. S. M. got disgusted, and took advantage of a moment's inaction on the part of M. to throw the ribbon on the floor. M. felt around with a puzzled expression, and then began to exclaim indignantly, "Hey! hey!", and it was some time before she could be quieted. In the evening R. D.'s friend Ella, who had been invited, came. The visitor was under some feeling of restraint, because she had been asked not to talk of certain things, but when I returned at 9 p. m. it was evident that R. D. had been pleasantly exhilarated. At 9.30 I took the caller to the car, and talked some about the nervous condition of D. requiring certain precautions as to topics of conversation with her, etc. S. M. was pleased with the effect of the call on R. D., saying, "She needs someone of her age, and Ella and she were always friends. Her people are all nice, too." When R. D. came, at 11.15 p. m., she exclaimed ecstatically, "O, I have had a splendid evening."

**M. Ceases to See R. D.'s Dreams:** M. sees R. D.'s dreams no more. [460] *Dec. 2-3: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 11 m.; M., 2 h. 4 m.*

*Dec. 4.* I was to let M. 'phone to Dr. Walker at 11 a. m. M. asked how she would know it was 11. "(I will tell the R. D.) You will have to make her think of it", she said.

460. At this period, M. could relate a dream of R. D.'s only in case the latter thought it over just before M. came.



But I forgot and was out until nearly 1. Then I said, "It is past 11." R. D. looked surprised at such an inane remark, and responded, "Why it is long past 12." I continued, "I wish it were 11." At this M. came, indignant that I had forgotten my promise, I dashed to the 'phone, but the doctor had left the office. M. now declared that she would never 'phone him, never wanted to see him again, would not let R. D. go to his office, did not want him or the Fish doctor [461] ever to come here. When I said I was sorry she retorted, "But that doesn't help me." She told me that I didn't keep my promise, ordered me to shut up, and grew worse rather than better. From slapping me in the face she turned to threats to run away and to scratch the R. D., and really did scratch herself slightly before I could arrest her hands. In perplexity what to do, I told her I would have to "smack" her, a thing that has not been done for weeks, and finally gave her two slaps on the hand that could not possibly have hurt her. But the psychical effect was immediate and disastrous. She declared, "I'll run away; I'll take the R. D. away; I'll take her to the river and make her jump in, I'll scratch her good and proper." Then she fell asleep from exhaustion. S. M. told me not to fear the threats, which would be forgotten as soon as the mood changed. Fortunately it did not last long. M. woke and regarded me with a chilly face, except that once or twice a smile lurked around the corners of her mouth, as though she found my melancholy appearance amusing. Unexpectedly as lightning from the clear sky she burst into laughter, threw her arms around my neck, and crowed, "Did you think your baby was gone? (Yes, I thought so.) She isn't. She was right here *all the time*." And again and again she repeated the question, and cooed and laughed. A short sleep and R. D.'s arrival was announced.

In the evening M.'s toes—she has a habit of warming her feet bare, and of having me rub them—wriggled without signal. I called M.'s attention to them and they ceased moving. Again I had M. look at them when the toes were flexed,

---

461. This was M.'s name for a Dr. Schmeltz whom Dr. Walker took to see the case.



and they remained flexed as long as M. looked at them. M. said, as she looked at the flexed toes, "Asa no", which may mean "I am not doing it", or "I don't know what makes them do that." S. M. says that after M. looked at her feet the movement was stopped because M. did not let it go on. R. D. came at 11.05 and had a fine night. *Dec. 3-4: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.*

*Dec. 5.* In the evening I was experimenting by way of communicating with S. M. while M. was out, and M. asked, "What do you mean by R. F.? (O, that's a girl I know, Rosie Fuller.) O papo! You said R. F., and then looked at my feet." Presently I tapped the right foot while M. was looking and the toes wriggled. M. stared in astonishment, then broke into boisterous laughter. "Do it again", she ordered, and I tapped the other foot with similar result. M. stared with still more hilarious laughter, and repeated "Do it again", seeming to think that the toes moved through some magical power of mine. Suddenly the toes stopped their motion, though M. continued to cry, "Do it again." S. M. explains that M. was getting too hysterically noisy.

M. certainly has some sense of smell now. S. M. says that the almost entire failure of this sense at one time, did not last long. R. D. came at 10.05 for a splendid night. *Dec. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Dec. 6.* M. came at 10.58 a. m., a most unusual time, when D. is not ill. Yesterday I proposed her 'phoning today, and she refused, and also said she would never 'phone to Dr. W. But as M. at almost exactly 11 said, "Can I 'phone to Dr. Walker?", it looks as though she came from auto-suggestion. All she asked the doctor was when he and the Fish doctor were coming. It was arranged that they should come on Thursday evening.

I remarked to S. M. that perhaps I would better not try experiments with her, like those in relation to the feet, lest I "build her up." She laughed and said, "All the scientists in the world cannot build me up. Whether I shall ever entirely go I don't know. And you will never know that I am gone. But you may be very sure of one thing,—I shall never



be developed so long as M. keeps on going. But if you had taken a course which would have developed M., I think—I don't know, but I think that I could have gotten my eyes open, [462] and probably would have become the hardest one to deal with. For I am the oldest, you know." Early in the afternoon R. D. laughed and said, "A funny thought is running through my head, off and on, ever since I forgot." For some time she would not tell it, but occasionally chuckled and presently said, "I shall have entertainment all the afternoon if this keeps on." Finally I persuaded her to tell me. "The thought is, 'Tomorrow when that Fish doctor comes we are going to wear our new dress.' Who is coming?" And I had to tell her. Later M. came in consequence of R. D.'s working too hard, contrary to advice.

In the evening, while M.'s icy feet were being chafed, I had her attempt to read aloud. The line which she attacked read, "On Sunday, by discreet inquiries, John learned that", etc. She read thus: "O-O-On ....Sund...d-a-y..Sunday ..b-by ....dis...creet....by d-i-s-c-r-e-e-t .....in...qu...queers.....inqueers"—here she gave up, saying, "This is hard reading, papo."

R. D. came at 10.12 and in the night had another "symbolic" dream. S. M. told me in the morning, and when I told some of my dreams after R. D. had come, she related it. She dreamed that she was on a certain street, and when she was tired I carried her up the steps to Colorado Ave. [463]

---

462. By this time S. M. knew about the "Beauchamp case", and it is likely that this thought was suggested by hearing that "Sally" got her eyes open.

463. Notes on the dream. (a) M. at times felt so like a baby that she could not understand why I did not take her up and carry her. (b) Here her mother and sister are buried. (c) I have to guard M. going up or downstairs, to keep her from falling. (d) Probably a reminiscence of the narrow alley which leads from Colorado Avenue to the back yard of her old home. (e) Of course M. was very noisy at times, as R. D. knew of old. The fear of what she might do or say when she "forgot" even now oppressed R. D. at times. (f) As the shaking was symbolical of the fact that R. D. felt that M. was a nuisance in her life which she desired to vanquish, so the picturing of the little girl walking behind her was symbolical of the fact known to her that M. was getting in the descendent. (g) There was some ignorant talk



(a) This did not seem incongruous in the dream. Then she found herself returning from the cemetery on the hill (b), and now a little girl was with her—the one who looked like herself when she was little. To keep the little girl from falling (c) she put her arm around her as they went down the hill. They then passed through a narrow alley to Colorado Ave. (d), and turned towards home. Here the little girl began to make a noise, and R. D. shook her severely, and the child was quiet for a time (e), and after that walked behind her (f). R. D. met several of the neighbors, but none of them would speak to her (g), and after failure of theirs to speak the little girl would yell and laugh tantalizingly (h). Here the dream stopped. *Dec. 5-6: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 14 m.; M., 2 h. 53 m.*

*Dec. 7.* After a good day R. D. got ready for the expected visit from the doctors, but they did not come, and at 9 o'clock we decided that they would not. R. D. did not mind, in fact appeared relieved, but out bounced M., in a very different mood. She demanded that I 'phone Dr. Walker at once. I had to do so, and found that he was under the impression, perhaps having misunderstood M.'s curious pronunciation, "Sursday", that the visit had been arranged for Friday. From the moment that he said this it was difficult to hear anything over the 'phone, for M. was jouncing in her chair, almost yelling, "Tell him to come *tonight*. I want him to come *tonight*." Finally I made out that he would not be able to come until next week. Now ensued a pitiful scene. M. stamped her feet with disappointment and indignation, repeating, "I said Sursday night, and he said he would come Sursday night. He *didn't* say Friday. The greaser! I'll *never* see him. I don't want him *ever* to come. If I see him I'll scwatch his face, that's what I'll do! I'll scwatch him!" Then she sat still, with down-cast face, and tears falling rap-

---

among the old neighbors to the effect that D. did wrong in leaving her poor old father. This was known to R. D. (h) R. D. had incidents in her own experience to draw upon in order to supply the dramatic touch of the little girl's tantalizing conduct, besides others partly recovered from the memories of S. D.



idly. She would not answer me save by "No! No! Shut up!" I persuaded her to lie down with her head in my lap, and still she sobbed and cried, breaking out into expressions of disappointment. The sobs, tears and ejaculations continued after she was asleep, and her hand began to claw,—the first time for many weeks. S. M., as soon as she was able, laughed and commented calmly on the situation, occasionally broken in upon by M.'s lamentation. After M. woke, at about 10, Mrs. P. brought in the necklace which is intended for a present to M. M. had already seen it, but the sight of it worked to a charm. She sat up, took the necklace, turned it over and over, and began with the voice and manner of a very small child, "Ain't they *booful* beads! . . . I do think they are *lovely beads*! They are just *lovely beads*! . . . They are booful!", etc. She wanted to know when Christmas would be. "(The 25th of December.) What is it now? (The 7th.) And how long will it be before Cwistmas? (About three weeks.) Isn't that a long time?", etc. R. D. came at 11.05, saying that her head ached and she was tired. Dec. 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 13 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.

Dec. 8. In the morning S. M. said little, explaining that though *she* herself never felt weariness, when M. was very tired it made her, S. M., disinclined to talk. [464] When R. D. came she said "I had a bad night. I kept waking,—I don't see why that was. I didn't work too hard yesterday, I don't see why I should have been too nervous to sleep."

While I was out Dr. Walker rang up and Mrs. P. went to the 'phone, but as soon as M. recognized his voice she insisted on taking her place. She told Dr. Walker how she had "cwied" and how he had made R. D. have a bad night and go away twice already in the morning. He tried to bring R. D. by suggestion, but M. said, "We'll have to wait for my papo." This word bothered the doctor some, and she told him she would have to "scwatch" him. He was still more perplexed now, and asked how she did it. "With your

---

464. Because she had to employ M.'s tired organism in order to talk. It does not weary the pianist to play an instrument whose keys stick, but it annoys him, and he is likely to give it up.



hands, of course," she replied with disgust, and he, catching the idea, answered, "O, I see." She told him that she expected a "Cwistmas gift" from him, and that the reason she wanted him to come last night was so she could know what he was going to "bwing" her. "O, that's the reason", said the doctor, laughing, and she said, "Yes, of course", in the most matter-of-fact way. It must have been hard to understand her, as she was dancing on one foot and fairly shouting in excitement.

With some misgiving I saw R. D. start out for a near-by store. When M. next came, she asked, "Where was I when I came out before? . . . I came out in a mud-puddle and just waited for my papo to come." S. M. says that M. came on R. Ave., fortunately where there were no houses, and just stood, looking at nothing in particular, but waiting for me, for some three minutes, until R. D. returned.

The effect of M.'s emotional storm was manifested in R. D. by (a) headache, (b) nervousness, (c) insomnia, (d) back-ache, (e) instability. In M. herself it was seen in (a) nervousness, (b) reaction in the shape of excessive gaiety. Seldom has she been more lively and bewitching. But R. D. was not affected by this mood in the least.

Yesterday I arranged cues with S. M., to be used when the doctors come, "Dr. Roberts" to mean the right foot, "Dr. Lewis" the left foot. Tonight I referred in conversation with Mrs. P. to the mythical Dr. Lewis, and the toes of the right foot became flexed. M. observed the toes, and began to laugh hysterically, whereupon the movement suddenly ceased, showing that a consciousness was taking precautions to prevent M. from becoming too excited. After M.'s attention was absorbed in something else I said, "I guess Dr. Lewis made a mistake", whereupon the left foot moved. S. M. explains that she was not paying careful attention the first time. R. D. came at 9.45 and had a good night. *Dec. 7-8: 16 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 22 m.; M., 4 h. 18 m.*



*Dec. 9.* R. D. was in excellent spirits this morning. But at noon it appears that I, being overburdened with work, answered her in a voice unintentionally sharp, and in a moment M. was looking at me, with grieved eyes and chin that quivered. I got her to sleep and S. M. confirmed my suspicion as to why R. D. went. Another illustration of the extreme importance of governing one's moods in the presence of a hysteric over whom one has a strong influence, of guarding her from emotional disturbance. Soon M. woke and appeared to see something through the open door. She slept again, woke and insisted that I must be able to see something that looked like a man. "Look, can't you see it? Look, right there. O papo, you see it, right by the door!" She slept again, and S. M. said she could not imagine what was meant. "I see nothing. I see whatever there is, and I can see it just as M. sees it, but I can't see what isn't there. . . . Did you know that objects look twice as large to M. sometimes as they do at others? (No, when do they look larger?) When M. is weak. Generally when R. D. is feeling real well. . . . I don't think that M. sees anything of distinct shape. I think it must be a dark mass. R. D. was darning stockings just as she went, perhaps it was the dark hole that she was looking at which is in M.'s eyes." Ah! I said to myself, an after-image. I found that she had been using a black stocking-ball with a black stem attached. When M. woke I asked her if what she saw was the shape which I indicated with my hand. One shape after another was described, until at an oval one she answered, "Yes." I asked if it grew smaller below and she said, "Yes, that is his legs." I held up the stocking-ball and she cried out with fright, hid her face and fell asleep. Soon she woke, and craned her neck as if hearing a sound in the hall. "Is it coming this way?" I asked. The suggestion acted, she thought it was, and cowered in terror. I asked if she saw it in the direction of the door, and she replied, "Yes, there it is, it has gone over there." An after-image would of course go where the eyes turned. Here R. D. returned. S. M. says that today things look large and hazy to M.; also that she herself can see things as they look to M., or as they really are, at will. R. D.



came at 10.12 and slept well. *Dec. 8-9: 8 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 2 h. 27 m.*

*Dec. 10. Sunday.* She went to Sunday school. Ella came to see her again in the evening. After she went R. D. on the way up-stairs called, "I have locked up, mother", and a moment later M. burst into the room with a whoop and said "Here I am." Mrs. P. said, "I heard you say 'I have locked up' and then you said 'Here I am.'"

M. shook her head, "Asa didn't say 'I have locked up.'"

I found that M. knew absolutely nothing about Ella's visit, though she caught from R. D.'s thoughts just before the latter went that Ella would very likely not be able to come next Sunday. Presently M. said regretfully, "When I sleep, I don't know where I am any more. I might be somewhere else and never know it (You are always *here* now, right where you go to sleep). But I used to know where I was; I liked to know where I was. (But then you used to wake and find yourself somewhere else; but now you stay just where you go to sleep.) Is that it?" All this was serious. R. D. came for the night at 11.05. *Dec. 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 6 m.; M., 2 h. 47 m.*

*Dec. 11.* M. asleep was in the midst of the double automatism of patting my cheek and saying "Go to sleep", when S. M. obscured the words by laughing, and an instant later I drew the hand away. The head then lifted and turned from side to side in an odd fashion, as if searching for something. S. M. laughed again and said, "I wish you could see her thoughts. My laughing and your taking her hand puzzles her." I put the hand back where it had been and it resumed patting, and the words "Go to sleep" recommenced, but suddenly broke off, and her face looked expectant. "She is wondering if what happened before will happen again," said S. M.

A funny automatism started about a week ago. M. happened to say, "Papo, you never kiss your baby any more unless your baby asks you." I had probably grown careless about attending to this function, as I am anxious to get her to sleep as soon as possible. Since that day, when I do kiss her she invariably repeats those sentences, and when re-



minded that she has just been kissed, replies, "Not until I asked you", nor can she be convinced that she errs.

In the afternoon R. D. asked me, "Did you want me to give something to Dr. Walker? (Yes. Why?) Because something has been coming to my mind, that I must. (How was it worded?) Get Dr. Walker a present, you greaser." Several days ago Mrs. P. and I talked of R. D.'s making Dr. W. a cushion or something else, and M. heard and approved. It seems that M. was today subliminally thinking of the present, though not trying to make the thought come to R. D.

In the evening S. M. remarked, "We are a funny bunch. R. D. is so forgetful, and M. is such a crazy person. (And you are another?) No, I am the most sensible one of the bunch. I don't do anything absurd." I asked how the "babbling" is getting on. "There is very little left. And she doesn't complete her sentences now. She will say 'This isn't my—' 'this isn't my—', 'this isn't my—', and then be silent quite a while; then 'My room has—', 'my room has—'; then after a while, 'sit!! . . . sit! . . . sit!'"

R. D. is wholly anæsthetic in the bladder, so that she cannot tell from sensation when it is necessary to evacuate. M. is not. R. D. came at 10.38 and slept well. *Dec. 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 43 m.*

*Dec. 12.* While I was in Dr. Walker's office a short time, R. D. shopped in one of the large department stores. She lost her umbrella, worried, and M. came out. When R. D. returned a floor superintendent was saying "What do you want?" She replied "Nothing", and went away. A few persons were standing about looking amused. She supposed that she must have been saying something "smart." S. M. informs me that when M. came she simply stood where she was, touching nothing, but waiting for papo. Several sa'es-girls asked her what she would like, and she answered, "Nuttin'", and once or twice, "I am waitin' for my papo." A floor-walker asked her what she wanted and she said that she wanted to go to a drug-store. [465] He asked why

---

465. A reminiscence from my earlier directions to her that if she came, on the street, she was to go to a drug-store and ask the man to telephone to me at the address which I had her carry in her pocket-book.



she didn't go, and she said, "Are you a drug-store?" He thought she was joking, as she may have been, said "no", and asked again what she wanted. Here R. D. came.

R. D. forgot my counsel not to read accounts of tragedies, and read an article about the martyrdom of Anne Askew. Coming for the night at 10.38 she dreamed horrors, woke and thought horrors, and when the wind blew some papers was startled and went, at 3.15 a. m. M. called and I put her to sleep at once, and R. D. returned at 3.50. *Dec. 12-13: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 57 m.; M., 2 h. 3 m.*

*Dec. 13.* When M. came in the evening, 9.30, she evinced no knowledge of what had happened during the day, but caught R. D.'s final thoughts before departure. It is as if they passed each other at the threshold, and M., the coming one, gets a surreptitious glimpse of what the departing one is thinking at the time.

Night and morning M. asks whether Christmas is almost come, whether it will be this week, next week, etc. She also speaks about Dr. Walker's coming, but her anxiety seems entirely on the score of getting a present from him. In the meantime R. D. is embroidering a handsome chair cushion for him. R. D. arrived at 10.45 for the night. *Dec. 12-13: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 52 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Dec. 14.* M.'s manner of giving way to R. D. this morning was representative enough, but will bear description. She was asleep. Suddenly she gave a startling bounce, opened her eyes, began to plunge and kick on her couch in a manner which is intended to represent a moving train, and shouted in the drollest manner, "The R. D. is coming on the fast express. Come along, come along, come along! We are coming Father Abraham! Choo! choo! Here she is!", and R. D. came in the midst of M.'s laughter, and continued to laugh softly herself, inquiring, "What am I laughing for?" Perhaps it was the rain, perhaps the fact that the rain compelled her to give up her plan to go to the city, perhaps she had embroidered too much, but all the afternoon she felt unsettled, like walking, running, pitching into hard work. She added that when she worked hard



about the house for half a day she felt an inclination to continue such work all day. This is no doubt a vestige from S. D.'s habit of doing work with a spasm of energy, getting into the frenzy of it deeper and deeper. Unusual distention was also observable today.

Considerable of the time that I sit by M. I am reading to myself. M. often has the appearance of reading intently also, but S. M. says that it is mostly imitation of me. S. M. approves of my custom of silently reading much of M.'s time out, saying that it tends to keep M. from doing and saying things that would rouse her up. She says that when M. is "reading" her mind is almost vacant.

**M.'s Sense of Time Entirely Lapses.** S. M. remarks, "M. has no sense of time any longer. Night is the same as day to her, and if you say that a thing will be tomorrow or next week it is all one to her." I have no doubt that this is true. When I answer M.'s query as to the date of Christmas she asks, "Is that soon?" Sometimes she goes through the memory-form of counting her pulse, but she does not really count, and always ends "sixty-six."

S. M. said that she was ready to dictate the directions for the care of R. D. after M. is gone. She dictated the following, never hesitating for or altering a phrase:

"For one year after you are sure that M. is gone (for she may go for a long time and come back) you must be careful that she is not worried. She must never go out very much by herself to meet strangers and the like. Keep her from meeting strangers as much as you can so that she will not be flustered; in fact have her live as quietly as she can under the circumstances, while she is getting her tone up. She must not do any outside work such as church work, for this would cause her to worry. She should live about as she is living now, except going to church. She should not do *any* outside work, such as embroidery for other people, etc. If you are very careful the first year it will pay in the end."

Mrs. P. was out late in the evening, and M. waited for her kiss. At 10.20 I asked "(Couldn't R. D. come now?)" M. answered, "It would give her more time out if she should be here until the mother comes, wouldn't it?" I assented. Instantly R. D. was there, and calmly went on eating the



apple that M. had begun, and, turning to the beginning of the article that M. had before her, read it through. Mrs. P. came in presently and kissed R. D. good-night, saying, "It will be you who will get the kiss tonight." Every moment I expected M. to come and claim her kiss, as she certainly had expected to, but to my astonishment she did not, and R. D. went to sleep at about 11.30, and slept well through the night. *Dec. 13-14: 4 alt: R. D., 20 h. 53 m.; M., 2 h. 42 m.*

*Dec. 15.* R. D. was out all day, feeling very well. In the evening I got M. to mark the location of herself, S. D. and R. D. when "in", on profiles of a head already prepared. But she said that she could not be so certain of the places as in pointing them out on her own head. Afterwards S. M. said that M. had not marked the locations quite correctly, and said I must ask her to do it again, and she, S. M., would try to guide her hand. [466] While M. was busy on a paper I made a remark, without previous intimation to S. M. that I would do so, about "old Dr. Lewis," and the toes of the left foot twiddled. M. heard, looked up and asked who Dr. Lewis was. I told her that he was a doctor whom the mother and I used to know. "We knew him and Dr. Roberts." The same toes began a movement, which was quickly transferred to the right foot, showing that a momentary mistake had been made. M. had returned to her paper, unobservant and uninterested. There is absolutely no doubt in my mind that M. has nothing to do with the movements of the feet.

(1) The foot never moves in this purposeful way save after signal from me. The signals were explained only to S. M., and there is no passage of thoughts from S. M. to M.

(2) When M. hears references to the mysterious "Dr. Roberts", "Dr. Lewis", "R. F.", or "L. F.", she asks what I mean, with the childish curiosity which is characteristic of her.

(3) M.'s attention is often so absorbed in an occupation that she is oblivious to all else. Yet when her attention is absorbed in looking at pictures or talking with Mrs. P., I can quietly give the cue, and the movement follows.

---

466. I forgot to try the experiment, but doubt if it would have succeeded.



(4) M. is anæsthetic. Yet a slight touch on the foot without notice, and when a paper shuts off M.'s view, is followed by the movement.

(5) If I allow M. to see me tap the toes, and the movement follows, she thinks that I have somehow caused it, and cries, "Do it again."

(6) When asked why she twiddled her toes, she always denies having done so, saying "Asa no."

(7) If M. sees the toes move, she becomes excited, and laughs boisterously, with excitement which increases to the point of hysteria.

(8) The first time that M. got so excited, suddenly the toes stopped moving, and would not obey any subsequent signal so long as M. was looking. Afterwards S. M. explained that she thought it best to stop as M. was getting too excited. Since then the toes have seemed to watch, to hesitate when M. is looking, and to refuse to move when M. shows evidence of excitement. R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Dec. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Dec. 16.* The other evening the blanket touched M.'s chin and she pushed it away and said "I don't like that; it feels like spiders! (You can feel it?) No, I don't feel it. That is why it feels like spiders." R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Dec. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 57 m.; M., 2 h. 3 m.*

*Dec. 17. Sunday.* R. D. went to Sunday school. She suffered much today from canker-sores on the mouth and lips, and was unstable in consequence.

Knowing that M. has destroyed the last draught of her "will", I asked if she was not going to make another. "Yes, but I must go over the sings in my drawer and make an incendiary [inventory?]" She keeps asking if "Cwistmas" is most here. "When is it? (Soon.) How soon, tomorrow? (No, a little after tomorrow.) This week? Yes, the end of this week." It is really the beginning of next week. "How long is that, papo, (Soon.) Can't we pwetend it's tomorrow—huh—papo? (I'm afraid the R. D. would not like that.) O dear! it's so long to Cwistmas! It's the longest waiting for Cwistmas I ever did see." Soon she wanted



to know when something else would be. "(Tomorrow.) How long is tomorrow? (After R. D. has her next long sleep.) When does the Weal Doris have her next long sleep? (Don't you know?)" She shakes her head slowly, looks puzzled, and says, "Asa no." M. has lost nearly all her sense of duration, never strong. Also I find that she does not distinguish between day and night, unless she looks out of the window and sees the bright sunshine, or something is said to inform her. If it is a dark day, and the light is turned on, she is at a loss to say whether it is day or night.

My custom is to kiss R. D. goodnight, but sometimes she falls asleep so quickly that I omit it. Several times, after falling asleep, her fingers have plucked at my lips, and sometimes followed this up by touching her own. A few nights ago the explanation flashed on me. I stooped and kissed her, and the hand sank at once, and the head rolled to one side—the ceremony had been attended to. Tonight there came a curious proof that after going to sleep R. D. at least at times passes into a plane of consciousness in which she forgets what has been immediately before in her mind. Just before she went to sleep she presented her cheek to be kissed, because of the canker on her lips. Here was a distinct judgment on her part that she should not be kissed on the lips tonight. And yet, within 15 seconds, having fallen asleep, the plucking movement began, and continued until I left the room. [467] It was 11 p. m. when R. D. came for a night much distressed by pain. *Dec. 16-17: 10 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 18 m.; M., 3 h. 2 m.*

*Dec. 18.* An active day, shopping, etc., though R. D. has considerable pain in the mouth, which pain M. shares to a degree. I suspect that the trouble comes from drinking for several days past buttermilk chemically prepared. Several times during the last three days M. has rehearsed the presents she is going to have at Christmas, for it was necessary to let her know beforehand every article. She follows pretty exactly the description she made me give. "Let's say over what I'm

---

467. At this point in the record, there begins to be an inkling of the fact that there was a Sleeping Real Doris.



going to have for Cwistmas. A Cwistmas plate, [468] so big"—outlining a space about as big as a bushel basket—"O-o-o! With an owange and apple and lots of candy and pop-corn. O-o! a gwand Cwistmas plate! And another kind of a doll-baby! And a dwess, with wed and white and blue stwipes, just a boo'ful dwess! And a yard of wed wib-bon, silk and *wide!* And—and—and—what else, papo? (Beads?) O yes, beads. Cost a dollar. O-o-o! And Dr. Walker—what is Dr. Walker going to give me? (Maybe some blue beads.) O-o-o! nice blue beads. Get 'em at the five and ten cent store. And that Jim Hyslop is going to give me something if he isn't too busy"—I had said that he might be busy and forget—"O-o-o! I think I'm going to have the most gwand Cwistmas!" During the recital she is the most perfect picture of innocent childish enthusiasm. Then she asked what I bought her today. "(A bottle of violet extract.) O! some perfoon! some perfoon! And what else? (Nothing else.) Yes, there was something else. (No, I don't think so.) Yes, there was something else. Oh! candy! Yes you bought some candy." True enough, I had forgotten buying candy for the Christmas plate. "(How did you know?) I saw it in your eyes." If this incident stood alone I would of course say that M. got it from the last thoughts of R. D. But again and again, when I have reported to M. in the evening that there is only a half glass of buttermilk she has told me that there is another bottle unopened, and been right. It seems unlikely that R. D. would have been thinking about that other bottle several evenings just as she was going. And once R. D. hunted and made up her mind that a new bottle had not been brought, yet M., who had not for many days been downstairs, as soon as she came stated that there was another

---

468. M. was more anxious for this than for anything else connected with Christmas. Several of the Rubberneck Row families had one every Christmas, but there never was one where D. lived. But as M., she would put orange peelings, an apple if she could get it, and any dirty pieces of candy that she could pick up into a plate, and keep it for awhile in state. She would not eat any of it, but would zealously imagine that it was a magnificent "Christmas plate".



bottle and was right. If telepathy, it was from Mrs. P. And I certainly do not press these incidents as evidential for telepathy. It may be that R. D. subconsciously saw the bottle, and M. in some mysterious way yet unascertained stumbled upon the fact.

In the afternoon R. D. proposed arranging things in M.'s drawer with me looking on for safety's sake, but I saw no safety in that. In the evening I proposed to M. that *she* arrange the drawer, and she did so, taking advantage of the opportunity to state to whom the different articles were to go, and have me set the facts down. From these data M. will make her will.

We determined on M.'s account to have our Christmas on Saturday, two days early. M. was glad, but asked, "How long is two days?" In the evening M. proposed to go over the list of her presents again, but made me say the most of the items. S. M. says that M. did not forget, but her asking me to name the presents was a device for increasing her enjoyment, to allow time to elapse to work up her emotions. Still I think that a degree of amnesia mixes in, and that M. can gloat to better advantage if she has not the task of remembering. Once the words "Colorado Avenue" came to her lips in the appropriate place in a sentence. She had not previously uttered them for a long time. Her face now took on an expression of delighted discovery. "Colorado Avenue", she repeated, "*that's* where our old house was. *That's* the street where we lived." Then she looked perplexed, and as if interiorly groping. She knitted her brows and asked, anxiously, "What was the name of the street, *papo*? What was it? (Connecticut Avenue?) No. What was it? (Michigan Avenue?) No. *What* was it? What was it?" Her anxiety to recall the name was intense. "(Colorado Avenue.) *That's* it, Colorado Avenue", she said with relief. But immediately the trouble came on again. "What—what was it? Tell me again what it was. (Colorado Avenue.) Yes. . . . *Papo*! I've forgotten it again. Tell me what it was. O, I've forgotten!" She was now almost crying, and I quickly drew her attention to her presents, and



she was again full of pleased anticipation. This incident illustrates her waxing amnesia.

Since her anæsthesia set in so profoundly M. gets many of her pains and pleasures from her remaining memories and her imagination. Happening to bump her elbow against the wall, she wailed as in great pain. I quietly said, "(No, that didn't hurt you much.)" She looked at me. "Didn't it hurt me, papo? (No, only a very little.)" Her face cleared up, and she sighed "I fought it hurt me. It made a big noise." R. D. came at 10.45, and had another uneasy night from pain. *Dec. 17-18: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 1 m.; M., 3 h. 44 m.*

*Dec. 19.* Today R. D. announced her intention of trying an experiment to see if she could not maintain herself in the morning. She would not tell what it was, but S. M. gave the secret away, saying that R. D. remembered that when she wakes in the morning, she thinks "Now I will soon forget", and that the experiment is to say to herself "I am not going to forget", and directly to rise, dress and busy herself. It is a good idea, yet I doubt if it can succeed, at least until the excitement of the Christmas season is over.

In the evening M. called for buttermilk. I said that I did not know if any was left, but M. insisted that there was. I went down-stairs, and, not wishing her to drink much of the stuff, poured most of it out with the bottle mouth held close to the sink, so that it did not seem possible that the most acute hearing could detect the sound, especially as the kitchen is not below the room where M. was. But ten minutes after I had returned with a small quantity M. accused me of pouring out the buttermilk, and S. M. says that M. heard me doing so. Perhaps she heard my movements near the sink and divined the rest. When M. had gone to sleep S. M. asked me how my lame back was, and I answered, as she afterwards said, sharply, "I'm all right." S. M. was displeased and relapsed into silence, broken at intervals by exclamations of M., "Sporty isn't sleeping, papo; you needn't be afraid of waking him." R. D. came at 9.53 and slept a little better. *Dec. 18-19: R. D., 19 h. 37 m.; M., 3 h. 31 m.*

*Dec. 20.* Before I went to Dr. Walker's office M. said she



wished to send a present to him, and gravely made out a check, dating it "Christmas, 1911", filling it out "Ten \$ to buy a Christmas gift", [469] and signing it "Margaret Prince."

It was arranged that Dr. Walker should come this evening, and at about 7.40 he arrived accompanied by two strange young physicians. R. D. remained until 8.25, answering Dr. Walker's questions about herself and exhibiting good control, though evidently nervous. At length I saw the signs of weariness which long familiarity have made known, and wrote on a slip of paper which I handed the young doctors, "Watch carefully, 'Margaret' will probably come soon." R. D. was talking with Dr. W., her face turned in another direction. Within a minute the face transformed and M. shouted, "Hey, you papo!", and then, seeing the visitors, covered her face with her hands. One of the strangers afterwards remarked that the change was dramatic, and indeed it always is, from R. D. with her quiet demeanor and her shy reserve, to the boisterous M., with her slang, childish pronunciations and *enfant terrible* frankness. Three-fourths of an hour of R. D., half an hour of M. awake, then S. M. and M. during sleep, then M. awake again, gave the visitors a good exhibit of the three. I got M. rehearsing her prospective gifts, and she forgot all about her guests and went through it in her inimitable fashion. She named "a bottle of vi'yet perfoony" among the rest, then asked Dr. W. what present he had brought her. He handed her a roll of red ribbon, and she promptly demanded how much it cost. The poor doctor had to say "thirty-five cents"—he had quailed at following her instructions to go to the five and ten cent store, though her delight would have been just as great with the cheaper gift. On some pretext I inveigled her to go down-stairs, that the effects of her anæsthesia might be noted. While her attention was absorbed, experiments with the aid of the mythical "Dr. Roberts" and "Dr. Lewis" were performed in the way of communication with S. M. Then I

---

469. The figures were set down in imitation of my style of making out a check.



directed M.'s attention to her feet. With bulging eyes she shouted, "My toes are movin'! My toes are movin'! O, they've got snakes in them." She was getting hilarious, and the movements suddenly ceased, S. M. fearing to excite her too much. While M. slept S. M. answered questions readily, expounding features of the case. Occasionally M. would break out with exclamations which the strangers would naturally have attributed to S. M., had she and I not set them right. I called their attention to the difference in the voices, which probably assisted them thereafter. After M. woke, Dr. W. asked if *she* was going to sleep tonight. Supposing that he was in earnest M. fired back, "I don't sleep nights any more, you greaser! Don't you know that?" She named her visitors "the tall doctor", "the short doctor" and "the skinny doctor", the last title being disrespectfully applied to Dr. W. Throughout the evening she paid no attention to the stranger physicians except when they spoke to her, and afterwards told me that "the doctors laughed too much. I didn't like that very well." [470] But how could they help it? At times M. was excruciatingly funny. The "tall doctor", after we had gone down-stairs, said to me, "This is the most wonderful evening I have ever spent."

M.'s excitement died out swiftly after the guests had gone, much more swiftly than it used on such occasions, and R. D.

---

470. The two young physicians were both connected with a hospital where many cases of psychopathological character were received. Among the cases specially in charge of the "tall doctor" was a young woman afflicted with peculiar alternating attacks of a nature which Dr. Walker, on visiting her, discovered was dissociation at a primary stage. The "tall doctor", with abundant respect for his senior, yet was somewhat inclined to think that the patient was shamming. Without intending that it should be so, no doubt his manner toward the young woman was tinged by this suspicion. At any rate what he saw this evening so convinced him of the genuineness of the phenomena of dissociation that his manner toward his own patient must have changed. For she had been having the "spells" about once in 3 hours. But from the morning that her doctor entered, with his new understanding of such cases, she began to amend, and in the sunshine of intelligent sympathy did not have another alternation for about 36 hours. She afterwards recovered, and the "tall doctor" himself is now a successful practitioner in accordance with the later revelations of abnormal psychology.



came at 11.20, and slept sweetly until 8.15 a. m. *Dec. 19-20: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 42 m.; M., 4 h. 45 m.*

*Dec. 21.* R. D. was in excellent spirits, although her mouth is still painful. She departed at 2.30, the reason being this. She noticed a piece of candy in danger of falling from the Christmas plate, and took it off to place it more safely. Somehow the handling of anything which M. prizes is almost sure to rouse her from the depths, especially if R. D. is the guilty party. I heard indignant ejaculations, and M. rushed in to complain that R. D. had eaten a piece of candy from her plate. She angrily declared, "I grabbed those curtains, and was goin' to tear 'em off, but I got pricked." She referred to the curtains which R. D. has stretched on a frame in her room. I saw the place where the skin was torn by one of the sharp pins of the frame. I soothed M. to sleep, and S. M. told me the facts. M. had come out with a hazy notion of what had occurred, but knew it concerned the candy, and jumped to a false conclusion. "But", said S. M., "the R. D. must not touch it. M. knows where every piece is. There couldn't even a kernel of pop-corn be moved but M. would know it." Extravagant as this seems, I believe it. When her drawer was in the utmost confusion, if I went to it and moved a rag, she afterwards accused me of it.

I remarked that R. D. had a short day. S. M. returned, "I keep telling you that you think too much about the time that R. D. is out. That isn't so important as you think. The point is that M. is losing all the time and R. D. is gaining. . . . Do you notice how pink her cheeks are lately? That is a sign of improvement. In the time of S. D. you remember how ashy gray her face was, and sort of shiny. . . . She worked pretty hard today. (I am afraid too hard!) No, I don't think so. She must make a break and try her strength. It will do no harm in the end."

Again M. demanded "How long is it to Cwistmas? (Two days.) How long's two days! (Forty-eight hours.) How long's forty-eight hours? (After R. D. sleeps twice.) When does she sleep twice? (At night.) When is night?" And I always have to end by saying "soon." She can tell stories



from the long past, and report the time relations connected therewith more or less correctly, as a matter of memory, but she has practically no sense of time now remaining, nor has she any correct notion of the period elapsed since she came here to live. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Dec. 20-21: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 33 m.; M., 2 h. 22 m.*

*Dec. 22.* This morning R. D. and I went to Dr. Walker's office, she taking to him the beautiful embroidered cushion that she had made for him.

In the evening after R. D. had come at 9.35, she assisted in laying out M.'s presents, wrapped up. It was her own suggestion, and carried out as nonchalantly as if done for an entirely distinct person. I was a little afraid that it would bring M., but R. D. said, "I can feel that she isn't watching." *Dec. 21-22: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Dec. 23.* I entered at about 7.15 and lit the fire, then laid M.'s presents on her couch. She came asleep, murmured "papo" and was silent. S. M. laughed and said, "She is asleep. She has forgotten about Christmas." But when M. woke she asked the familiar question, "When is Cwistmas? (It is Christmas now.)" Her eyes fell on the packages, and she quickly sat up and began to unwrap them with little cries of delight. I took flash-light pictures of her, and she barely noticed, so absorbed was her attention, except to ask after each flash, "What was that?", without alarm, and to question several times, "Is something burning?" This is all the effect that the quantity of smoke caused by the flash had upon her. In a quarter of an hour she said, "Baby is tired", instructed me to put all the presents in her drawer except the dress and beads, which she will "lend" to R. D. on condition that the latter does not call them hers, fell asleep, uttered several cries of ecstasy, and in a few minutes R. D. was there, looking at *her* presents. She also had been somewhat excited, for so poor had the mother been, that R. D. had never in her life had more than a few trifles at Christmas. M. had commissioned me to buy something for her to give R. D. I bought a Japanese air-plant, but when





Margaret (asleep) annoyed at being teased, saying "Papo!" See p. 574 for similar incident.



Margaret (asleep), further annoyed because her nose was touched. Note that she is "holding on." See pp. 131, 561.







M. saw it, she said "I don't want to give that to her. I like that; I want it myself." And so the matter stood. But later she said, "The R. D. can have that perfoonery if she likes it. (You will give it to her?) No, I won't *give* it to her, but she can use the perfoonery if she will give me the bottle back."

In the course of the day R. D. announced her intention of trying to stay tomorrow morning. She came at 9.53 for the night. *Dec. 22-23: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 13 m.*

*Dec. 24. Sunday.* R. D. woke at 7 and remained awake until 7.40, then forgot. I came at M.'s call, and heard S. M. say, "She is asleep", went out of the room for a moment, returned and lit the fire, and looked up to see R. D. gazing at me. She had not been gone more than *three minutes*. If her experiment did not quite succeed, it so nearly did so as to be a triumph and to give her confidence.

She went to Sunday school as usual. M. came in the afternoon and in her sleep did all sorts of queer things. Her head being in such a position that a cord in the neck was stiff, she felt of it and got alarmed, crying, "Take it out, papo." S. M. said, "Put her head forward." I did so, the cord became loose, M. felt again, and said with satisfaction, "I knew you could take it out, papo. That wasn't nice to have in one's neck." She felt of my eye, and demanded, "Give me your eye." S. M. says that M.-asleep really does not see why I cannot take my eye out. [471] She peeled an orange with her nails and threw the pieces of peel at Mrs. P. and all over the room. Such conduct is common, and it is amusing to hear R. D.'s complaints at having to clear up after herself when she "forgets."

D.'s friend Ella did not come until 9 p. m., then only to bring a present, but R. D. made her come in and stay a short time. M. came at 9.50, exceedingly tired, and almost yelling

---

471. That state of M. asleep which I have usually hyphenated in references to it had infantile notions some of which resembled those of S. D. in her last and baby stage. S. D. catching sight of my teeth, would clutch at them and cry "Give us that."



for her bed, to which she seemed to think I could have her magically transported. "Let me go to my bed . . . O my dear little bed! . . . My bed is calling me!" She fell asleep in the midst of her lamentations, and after a short rest became more cheerful, and even jolly. "O my soul and body!", she exclaimed apropos of the dreaded task of getting up and preparing for bed. But then she reflected, and continued, "But I haven't any soul! . . . I told the S. D. that she hadn't any soul. The greaser thought she had. I said it was the R. D.'s soul. I told her you couldn't break a soul in two and give her half. She asked if it wasn't her soul when the R. D. was gone and she had the body." Reverting to her being tired she said, "O if I had that Dr. Walker here I'd break his neck." In some obscure fashion she held Dr. W. blamable for her being tired, just as she generally holds me responsible for her woes. But after a time she was rested sufficiently to go to her room.

R. D. came for the night at 11.10. At nearly 3.30 the barking of dogs brought M. She complained, "O those dogs! . . . Papo, make those dogs stop. O if I had that Dr. Walker here I'd wring his neck. (Dr. Walker hasn't anything to do with it.) No. But if he was here he *might* have something to do with it. I can't afford to take any chances." After a while the dogs became silent and R. D. returned.

I omitted to relate how in the afternoon M. got me into a verbal trap. She was trying to understand what part of the day it was. "Have you had dinner? (Yes.) Have you had breakfast? (Yes.) Have you had supper? (No.) Have had dinner and breakfast, haven't had supper,"—ponderingly. "(That's it, it is afternoon.) When is afternoon? (After dinner. There is afternoon every day.) Every day? (Yes. This is afternoon, and there will be an afternoon tomorrow.) How do you know? (Because there always is.) But you don't know. Perhaps you won't have dinner tomorrow. Then there won't be any afternoon, if you don't have dinner." *Dec. 23-24: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 59 m.; M., 2 h. 18 m.*



Dec. 25. A little pain in the morning, but the easiest period yet.

M. heard Mrs. P. call me by my first name, and it attracted her attention. She said, with the air of having made a discovery, "Your name is Walter. I thought it was papo, just papo. How many names you got?"

R. D. came for the night at 10.55, and slept nicely, free from pain. Dec. 24-25: 8 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 42 m.; M., 5 h. 3 m.

Dec. 26. R. D. deviated from directions by sweeping a room, and brought on pains, but an hour or two of rest banished them. During this period M. tends to fall asleep the instant she comes. Once I caught her when she came standing and was about to collapse on the floor. Also—and this is new—as soon as she is asleep her head rolls and jerks from a perfectly limp neck. [472]

R. D. came at 10 p. m. At about midnight the wind became strong, and increased by 2 a. m. to a gale. R. D.'s dreams began to concern themselves with her being struck and otherwise hurt. At 2.35 M. came with a direful cry, very much alarmed by the wind. But R. D. was back in 12 minutes, and staid until morning. Dec. 25-26: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.

Dec. 27. At 8.12 a. m. M. came, called "papo!", went instantly to sleep, I exchanged a few remarks with S. M., and with a jerk R. D. was back, within *one minute of her departure*. Her experiment is working results, even if it does not bring complete conquest of the morning interlude. R. D. was with me at the Registrar's office several hours today. A headache began, and after her return, at 4.42, M. came, and as she went to sleep her head rolled over limply. Presently she murmured, "Choos hurt baby." The shoes being removed, she murmured with satisfaction, "Choos no hurt baby." Scarcely ever is she quite so infantile when awake as

---

472. The loss of motor functions in the neck was a temporary symptom, but the instantaneous falling asleep reappeared at various stages, being related to sudden bursts of improvement in R. D. or other cases of rapid consumption of energy.



she is sometimes asleep. Waking she said, "Everying seems topsy-turvy in this house—even the people." The meaning of this, I learned from S. M., is that Mrs. P. is tired and nervous today, and R. D. has worried about her health, and "reflected" her nervousness by her own headache. M. coming, feels that there is something, she knows not what, wrong with the "people" in the house. The headache has to be very severe for it to affect M. In the evening M. pleaded, "Fix our head, papo. . You can do anysing, if you only fink. Fink, papo! Fix our head!" So I fought hard, with the result that I gave her wintergreen water to drink, and bathed her head with a "pain balm." Soon she slept, and S. M. deplored that the mother will do too much church work despite her condition of health. She says that R. D. has been worrying also because she told the mother, of her own accord, that she meant to get up and get the breakfast every morning, but had not been able to do so on account of sleeping late. "She must have her sleep out", said S. M., "it is the most important thing. If she forces herself to go down-stairs before her sleep is out she will have to go back to M.'s coming longer in the morning, there will be no way out of that. If she is patient and lets things take their course, M. will probably hardly ever appear in the morning again except perhaps for a moment—and we must expect her to come at the time of menstruation." When M. woke she said, "There. I told you you could do it. Our headache is all better. I told you you could if you would only fink. And you *did* fink, and you *did* it. Our papo can do most anysing, can't he?"

R. D. came at 10.35 p. m., and was troubled by the wind, which blew violently most of the night. In the morning her hands were stiff with gripping the bed in her sleep. *Dec. 26-27: 5 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 9 m.; M., 3 h. 26 m.*

*Dec. 28.* A little before 8 a. m. I entered and lit the fire. At 8.03 M. came, barely opened her eyes, and murmured "papo", groping with her hands. Then S. M. said, satirically, "O, the R. D. isn't afraid of the wind. She gripped the bed all night." Another instant, and a jerk announced the



return of R. D. asleep, and S. M. was hushed. R. D. had been gone but about half a minute. Some minutes later she sat up in bed, still asleep but rubbing her eyes as if to get them open, this probably being the reflex of a determination which she had formed to get up earlier this morning and get breakfast.

R. D.'s heart was set on going to the Christmas festival in the evening. Consent was given with misgiving, but I insisted that she should lie down and sleep at 6.30, especially since M. had not come during the day. She was willing to comply with the condition, but just before she lay down M. came with a discontented "No!", at finding herself on deck. M. slept half an hour, and S. M. said that R. D. was near all the time, ready to come on signal. The festival was late in beginning, and her arm was already beginning to twitch, as the hall was crowded, and the conversation incessant. I sent her home for something as a relief from the strain. But as the festival began and proceeded the signs of nervous strain increased. She held her hands tightly to prevent them from twitching, and the jerks in the arms became more pronounced. She was reluctant to leave before the exercises were through, since she dreads attracting attention by going out. No sooner was she out on the street than M. came, with an "I don't want to! I don't want to walk!" It is long since M. has walked on the street, and she was dismayed at the task before her. I told her we should soon be at home, but she began to cry "Let!", which I had learned from former impracticable demands couched in the same strange dialect means "Carry me." "Let! why don't you let?" she kept up at intervals, becoming more querulous and indignant as the journey proceeded. She stumbled on a car-rail, looked down and asked "What's that?" [473] It was very difficult, with a grip on her arm, to get her along. When she was at last safely upstairs she continued her complaint at having had to walk. When asleep she twitched and jerked. S. M. said that she was worried during the entertainment lest M. should come out and commence shouting

---

473. It probably lay outside of her restricted angle of vision.



at me and perhaps talking to the children. In consequence of her concern she also felt tired, and would not talk much. [474]

It has become necessary to assist M. each night in getting her clothing ready for removal. If the back hooks and buttons are unfastened she can get along pretty well, unless she finds a string in an unhandy place, or some new garment is to come off in a way not familiar to her. If any difficulties appear, she will not, and never would, take pains, but will yank, rip, tear, burst the obstruction away. Poor R. D. has much mending to do.

R. D. came at 11 and fell asleep without a word. A bad nervous headache brought M. at midnight, but R. D. returned in 25 minutes with headache somewhat relieved, and passed the rest of the night uneasily. *Dec. 27-28: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 11 m.; M., 2 h. 14 m.*

*Dec. 29.* The M.-interval this morning could not have been more than 10 seconds in duration. But the alternations increased to ten today, in consequence of the festival. She went to the library and also shopping, and returned with another headache.

Today I again had S. M. recite the relations of the original group of personalities in the transmission of thought. The matter had not been referred to for some time. There was no substantial divergence from her previous testimony, though her wording varied. "S. D. watched when R. D. was out. There would be three of us watching her, each with thoughts of her own. S. D. watched R. D.'s mind, M. watched S. D.'s thoughts of R. D., and I watched all three. Sometimes we had a disagreement. Sometimes a jealous thought would flit through S. D.'s mind—she would think for a moment that if R. D. would not come out any more M. might like her [S. D.] as well as R. D. She never tried

---

474. This sounds like a contradiction of her earlier affirmation that she was never wearied (see page 816). But she then probably meant that she never felt vicarious psychical effects of bodily exhaustion on the part of the others, as they did. In this case S. M. had herself undergone the direct psychical strain of worry.



to hinder R. D.'s coming though; but always to help, and only a slight thought of the kind would flit through her mind. But M. would see it and get cross with S. D. Then I would feel cross with M. for being cross with S. D., and so the disturbance inside would make R. D. go in. Often the anxiety of the bunch to have R. D. stay out longer would prevent it." Then S. M. went on to a more formal statement of the psychical mechanism of transmission, which I took down in almost precisely her own words. "When R. D. was out (she had not thoughts when she was in) S. D. saw her thoughts directly. M. saw them through S. D.—by through I mean as reflected from S. D. (there was scarcely any difference in the time of S. D.'s and M.'s getting them),—and besides, M. saw S. D.'s own thoughts directly. This was generally the case with M. but there were times when S. D. was so far in that M. got R. D.'s thoughts directly. This was seldom. I don't know why it was. As for me, I saw R. D.'s thoughts as they were reflected by S. D. to M., and by M. to me, also S. D.'s thoughts as reflected by M., and besides I saw M.'s own thoughts directly. This was the case before S. D. went, but after she went I saw, as I do now, R. D.'s thoughts directly. S. D. was a barrier that prevented me from seeing them that way so long as she lasted, but now the barrier is removed." [475]

---

475. The accompanying diagram rudely represents the insight that each of the personalities had into the thoughts of the others, when R. D. was out. The positions assigned are purely arbitrary and schematic, and have no relevance to the positions which they were alleged to occupy in the brain. The diagram is probably self-explanatory. When R. D. was out only she looked out on the external world and had direct knowledge of it. S. D., from her subliminal position, was able to possess herself of R. D.'s thoughts. Still farther down, M. was mistress not only of R. D.'s impressions and thoughts, but also of whatever subliminal thoughts were peculiar to S. D. And S. M. knew the thoughts of all three, her own unknown to all the rest. But this diagram does not at all represent the mechanism of the transmission of thought from one to another, that will be attempted a little farther on. For the present confining ourselves to the bare fact of the knowledge possessed by the several personalities of the thoughts of other members of the group, the next diagram represents the situation when S. D. was out. The symbolical eyes are not repeated in this diagram, but after inspecting the



S. M. informed me, and R. D. confirmed it the next day (both in answer to queries, for neither had remembered to speak of it spontaneously) that R. D.'s hyperæsthesia of hearing has subsided, apparently from the time that M. began to

former one the reader can hardly be at a loss to understand it. Here S. D. had the only direct inspection of the external world, and indulged in her own

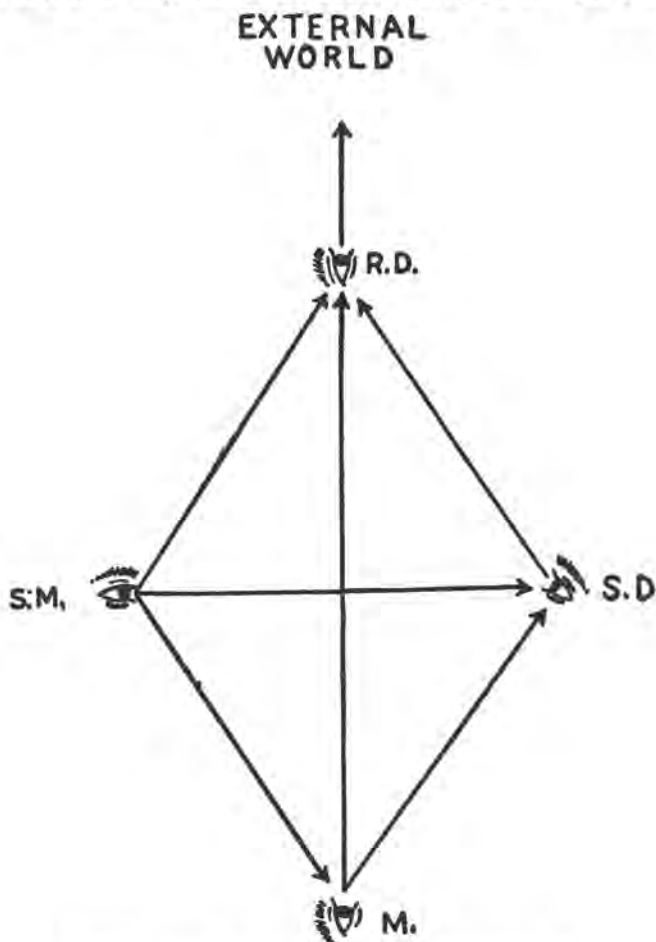


Diagram of Intercognition, R. D. being "out."

thoughts. Both the images of external things and S. D.'s thoughts were perceived by M. when she was subliminally watching. S. M. in like manner



cease watching. S. M. thinks that the hearing cannot be much above normal now.

M., who adores babies, proposed today that I adopt one. "Some doctor could bring one. Couldn't you find one? You're a doctor. (Not that kind.) O no, you're a bum doctor. Is Jim Hyslop a bum doctor too? (Yes.) Well, Dr. Walker isn't. Let's get him to bring one. (Where does a doctor keep his babies?) O, I suppose he has a patch

possessed herself of the imagery and thoughts of S. D. and also of the thoughts of M. In the meantime R. D. was cut off from the system, and if she had any consciousness it was not known to any of the others.

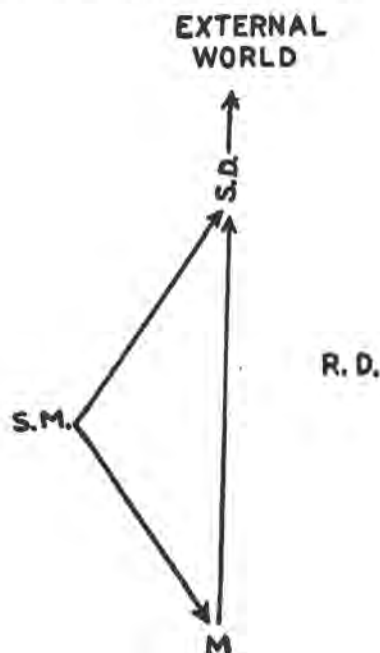


Diagram of Intercognition  
with S. D. "out."

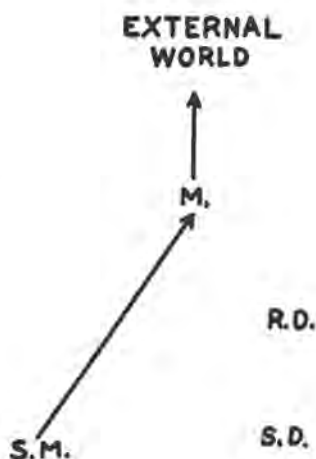


Diagram of Intercognition  
with M. "out."

The third diagram represents the situation when M. was out. Now she, in her turn, saw the external world directly. S. M. saw in her mind what M. saw, and also her thoughts. R. D. and S. D. were isolated, and so far as is known mentally inactive.

And now it remains to attempt a graphic representation of what may be



where he raises 'em. (What doctor brought you?) We weren't brought by any doctor. I heard our mother say that she never had a doctor when she had a baby, and I asked her where she got us, and she told us. She got us out in the garden among the cabbages. But she brought us in and pretended to be sick, like the other mothers. That's how we come. Yes, usually babies cost \$25, but we cost only \$10. (How do you know that?) Our mother told us. It was

called the psychic mechanics involved, according to the statements of S. M. on page 499 seq., and more technically and precisely on page 599 seq., and in other places casually. These passages should be consulted in connection with the diagram, wherein, as suggested by the metaphorical expression repeatedly used by S. M., "reflected", the four personalities are supposed to be represented by mirrors. Or rather, the four dark, narrow oblongs stand

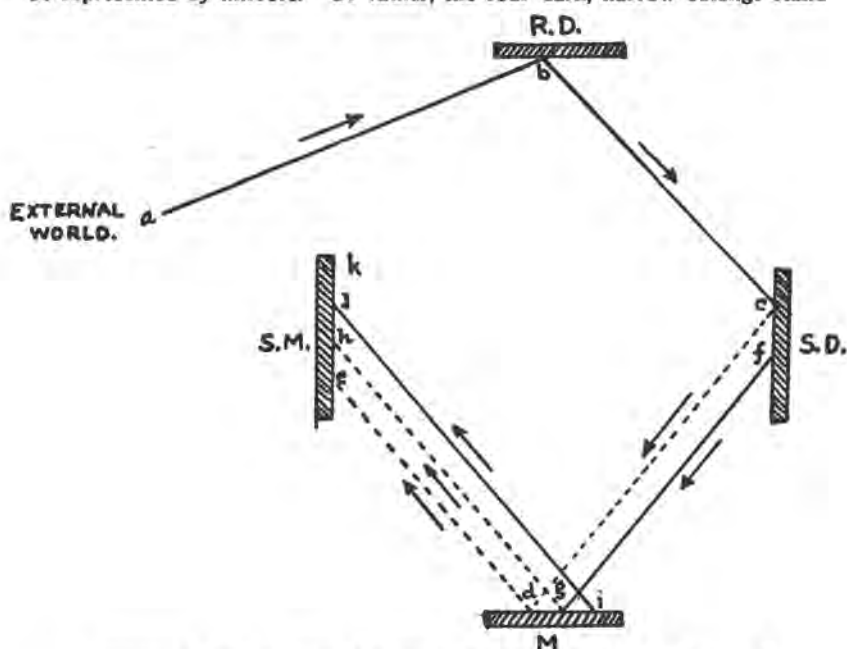


Diagram of the Psychic Mechanics of Intercognition, R. D. "out."

for four consciousnesses, acting in certain respects like mirrors, in that, so to speak, they "reflect" thoughts; but, being actually consciousnesses and not mirrors, each has the power to originate thoughts of its own. The passages referred to, together with the explanatory key, should make the diagram plain.



because we had green eyes. Babies with blue or brown eyes cost \$25." S. M. says that these notions were started by the evasive and nonsensical replies that the mother made to the queries of M. The replies were not always consistent, consequently the confusion in M.'s observations about babies.

S. M. stoutly asserts that she always, from her first coming, had self-consciousness, independently of M.; that she was separate from M. as a personality, from the first. What she has termed their being separated simply means that formerly when she, S. M., talked, M.-asleep heard the words and thought it was herself talking, but that soon after the cure of the case began M. ceased to hear her. Last night I was talking with S. M. about R. D.'s request to be allowed to go and swim in the Natatorium. S. M. approved of the project, saying that the swimming would be good for R. D. I remarked lugubriously that I would want to be in the building, so that if she were drowned I could take the body home. S. M. has a decided sense of humor, and laughed more heartily than I had ever heard her do, so that it actually

---

KEY. R. D., S. D., M. and S. M., the four consciousnesses represented as mirrors. a. An object of the external world. a-b. Image of the object entering the R. D. consciousness. b-c. Image of object (or any thought of R. D.) going to S. D. consciousness, being seen by S. D. directly. c-d. Same reflected from S. D.'s to M.'s consciousness. d-e. Same re-reflected to S. M.'s consciousness. f. Thought originating in consciousness of S. D. f-g. Same transmitted direct to M. g-h. Same reflected from M.'s consciousness to S. M.'s. i. Thought originating in consciousness of M. i-h. Same seen directly by S. M. in M.'s mind. k. Thought originating in consciousness of S. M.

It should be borne in mind that the above diagram is of only one relative situation of the group, *i. e.*, when R. D. was the one "out"; and when M. was in her active subliminal state, known as "watching". (See diagram on page 548 and explanation on pages 606, 693, 699. For M. was part of the time in a state wherein she either had no thoughts, or they reduced to a minimum. This was the state called "sleeping"; a subliminal condition not to be confounded with her sleeping state when she was herself out. To show this, changes would be necessary in the diagram. Furthermore it appears from the statements of S. M., and from casual remarks of M., that the lower personalities did not always appropriate all the several currents of thoughts, so to speak, that they were potentially capable of. For example, S. D. might be so occupied with thoughts of her own as not to notice the image in R. D.'s consciousness of what the latter was



woke M. M. continued to laugh, and when I asked what made her laugh replied, "Looking at you"; but soon she seemed to wonder in the midst of her laughter, and stopped to inquire, "What *am* I laughing at, papo? When M. slept

looking at. Or M. might be so interested in the reflected image of what R. D. saw as not to take note of the thoughts of S. D. regarding it. Or S. M., for one reason or another, might not pay attention to d-e, or g-h, or i-j, or d-e plus g-h, or d-e plus i-j, or g-h plus i-j, or d-e plus g-h plus i-j, as the case might be. That is, all the possibilities of concentration or distribution of attention which lie in the ordinary person inhered in the personalities.

But, according to S. M., when S. D., who somehow acted as a "barrier" between her and R. D., disappeared, she was able again, as she was before S. D. came into being, to view R. D.'s thoughts directly. So after that disappearance the intercognitive situation was as represented by the next diagram. But S. M. still had the alternative of seeing R. D.'s mental picture of the external world, and her thoughts, reflected in the mirror of M.'s consciousness.

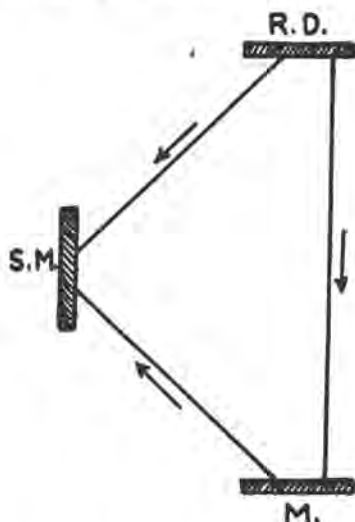


Diagram of Psychical Mechanics of Intercognition after disappearance of S. D. R. D. "out."

It will be remembered that by the time at which we have now arrived in the record, the transmission of thoughts from R. D. to M. was getting clogged and irregular. But it never ceased sufficiently to justify removing the perpendicular line from the last diagram. However, the manner and periodicity of that transmission was yet to undergo curious alterations, which will be described and diagrammed in their place.



again, S. M. renewed her laughter, but under restraint, so as not to wake M. This incident was parallel to the frequent incident of R. D. coming while M. is laughing, continuing the laugh, then wondering, "What am I laughing for?" R. D. came at 11 p. m. and had troubled dreams, with headache towards morning. *Dec. 28-29: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 2 m.; M., 3 h. 58 m.*

*Dec. 30.* The morning M.-interval was but 10 seconds long. The effects of the festival of the 28th were still traceable today. R. D. came for the night at 10.05, and slept fairly well. *Dec. 29-30: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h.; M., 3 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 31. Sunday.* The M.-interval in the morning was of about a quarter of a minute duration. R. D. went to Sunday school as usual. She is conscious that Sunday school makes her more nervous of late, and wonders what the reason can be. She has been told little of the late changes in what she calls the "A Phase", and their effects upon her. Yet she was in good spirits and maintained herself all day. Fearing that M. might come alone in the evening with limp muscles, I brought in a Morris chair for her to sit in, telling her that I wanted her to be seated comfortably when she forgot. But she showed a curious repugnance to the chair, though promising that she would seat herself in it at 8.30. S. M. says that memories have come to her of S. D. sitting curled up in that chair, and that it gives her a feeling that she is uncomfortable in it, though she really is not, physically. On our return at about 9, M. said that she must have come "'most two hours" before. S. M. reports that M. came at about 8.45, and that her head sank limply on the arm of the chair, but that after sleep she sat upright, and shivered at the sound of the wind. When M. went to the bath-room a little later, she asked me to stand by the stairs which she has to pass, saying, "They call to me, papo. They say 'Come here, Margaret.' They want me to tumble down,—those bad stairs. Ain't they bad stairs, papo, to call your baby?" She hurried past the stairs as if fearing the allurements of a siren. Several days ago S. M. told me that M. was getting afraid of the stairs, that they seemed to draw her, she felt



like going to them, so that there is getting to be some danger of her falling down the stairs unless she is watched.

R. D. came at 10.55 p. m. Since this is New Year's eve, and there is a fiendish custom in this city of celebrating it by blowing the whistles of all the shops and of the boats on the river, I asked Mrs. P. to wake me at the first sound, as I am a heavy sleeper. I hoped that my presence might preserve the personality of R. D., but it did not, at almost the first screech she fled. Then came a whole half-hour when it seemed as if all the devils were loose and every one yelling and shrieking. How many invalids were brought nearer the pearly gates or hurried through them, how many hysterics and other invalids writhed in agony, no statistics will tell, but my hands were full with poor M., who moaned, tossed, lamented and almost cried, begged me to have the whistles stopped, ordered them to "shut up", murmured how tired poor baby was, didn't they know about poor tired M., and why didn't they wait until morning before they blew the whistles. At last the din ceased, M. laughed and R. D. came. *Dec. 30-31: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m. Average daily total of R. D. during December, 1911, 21 h. 4 m.*

*Jan. 1. 1912.* R. D. slept until 9.45 a. m., then M. was on deck nearly 50 minutes, doubtless because of the disturbances of the night, and ate her breakfast in bed. As she went into the bath-room I stood in the study door to watch her return. Her course through the hall described a curve, with its convexity towards the stairs. Her manner indicated that she was resisting a temptation to go down the stairs headlong. She fairly ran to my arms as a haven of safety, crying, "What do you suppose *makes* those stairs call me so? I think they want me to fall." S. M. spontaneously observes, "She is afraid of the stairs and thinks of them, and that is why they call to her." [476]

I was able to make some tests of M.'s visual powers:

476. M.'s "auto-suggestion" was not different from that of the amateur bicyclist, who, fearing to run over a stone in the road, and endeavoring to avoid it, is impelled to direct his wheel precisely upon the obstruction. There is, I suppose, a liberation of subliminal energy which militates against the conscious efforts.



This is difficult, since M. must be in a suitable mood, the tests must appear casual or as it were a sort of game, and any direct or indirect reminder that her powers are failing is apt to make her sensitive and reticent. To my amazement a column of reading matter  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches wide had to be held at the distance of  $28\frac{1}{2}$  inches from her eyes for the full width of the column to be visible to her. These figures were accurately ascertained. [477] S. M. says that when M. holds a book at the normal distance for reading she sees only a word or two at a time. This accords with the fact that when she reads, in her fashion, a narrow newspaper column, her head turns slightly from side to side. Again, S. M. testifies that M. sees only within a circle, and that outside of this circle "it appears black", or "it is all space", which are probably two not equally correct expressions for the same thing. The former has the preference, for S. M., being questioned more closely, said that outside the circle it appears "just like night." Referring to the fact that S. M. sees me tap the foot while M. is occupied with pictures or print, I asked S. M. if she saw outside of M.'s angle of vision, or if M. was simply not paying attention to what she herself saw. "I see outside of her angle of vision. (Then you see independently?) I don't know about that. It is M.'s eyes that see. When she saw everything I saw just what she saw, but now that she sees less and less I see just what she formerly would have seen but cannot now." Of course the images are impressed upon M.'s retina; they simply stop short of reaching her consciousness, but do reach that of S. M. The latter continues, "M. gets very little enjoyment in looking at things, she sees so little." M. sees, as it were, through a narrow funnel.

I asked S. M. if she felt, when R. D. or M. walks, "as if she were being carried" (as "B", in Dr. Morton Prince's "A

477. The opportunities for repeated and careful tests were so difficult to obtain in the case of M., that it is hard to say whether the visual angle narrowed and opened somewhat with sporadic revivals of energy in M. and quick relapses therefrom. It is likely, however, that this was the case. See page 879 for a brief period when it probably widened. But it is certain that in the long run, the angle was slowly becoming more acute.



B C" case did). Her answer was an emphatic, "No, and M. never did when R. D. walked, either." I asked S. M., whether she was able, in the S. D. days, to see the three sets of thoughts, of R. D., S. D. and M., simultaneously, or did not rather view them as one does three rings in a circus, by transferring her attention rapidly from one to another. She averred that she saw all at the same time. "I remember that when S. D. was out, she would hear quarrelling in the street, and have her thoughts in reference to it, which I would see, also M.'s thoughts, which differed from S. D.'s and I also had my own thoughts, all at the same time. Of course there were only two others in this case, but it was the same when R. D. was out and there were three. R. D. had no thoughts when she was in, as the others had. Perhaps it looks hard to you to observe the different trains of thought at once, but it seems simple to me." I asked S. M., "Why, since M. always knew R. D.'s thoughts, did she not get to know as much as R. D.?" S. M. thought I was asking for information, and was a little disgusted, I think, at my stupidity. "Why, the answer is very simple", and she proceeded to give it much as it is already set down, [478] even to the comparing of M. with ordinary children who fail to assimilate much of what they hear because it is beyond their range of interest and comprehension. She also independently said, as I have done, that M. would put her own interpretation on thoughts which she saw in R. D.'s mind, so that they conveyed a very different sense to her, and added, "Often M. would disagree with a thought she saw in R. D.'s mind, or misunderstand it. And she was pig-headed. Once get an opinion of her own and nothing could change it, not though R. D. thought and spoke very contrary to M.'s notion. Yet M. would often take her cue from R. D., too. For example, if R. D. got an idea that she would not like a certain new dish, M. made up her mind that it could not be good, and even if R. D. changed her mind and came to like it, M. never would. She was that obstinate in her opinions. In the same manner, though S. D. had considerable contempt for M., yet she thought that M.

---

478. See it fully developed in note 26.



knew some things, as about eating, better than herself, and if M. went, leaving something on her plate, although for no reason, S. D. would not touch it, thinking there must be something wrong about it."

In the afternoon R. D. attempted in vain to find some mislaid articles, and became what she called "exasperated." The mood quickly brought M., who felt that something was wrong, and seemed inclined to hold me responsible. She was both irritated with and afraid of me, though I had not been remotely connected with the reason of her coming. [479]

I tested R. D.'s hearing with the same watch and in the same manner as I had previously done [480], and got proof of S. M.'s statement that the auditory hyperæsthesia of the former has much diminished. She could hear the tick of the watch with the right ear alone at 5 feet and 5 inches, with the left ear alone at 13 feet and 6 inches.

As M. sat by the fire in the evening, the toes of the left foot began to scratch the right foot. M.'s attention was attracted, and she looked at her feet fixedly and began to laugh in a hysterical manner. The scratching instantly ceased. I asked M. why she did that, and she denied having done it. S. M. afterwards said that she did it because M.'s right foot itched. While M. had her eyes cast down on a book at an angle which would have made it doubtful if a normal person could have seen the feet, and utterly impossible for her, I laid my finger on the right foot, and instantly the toes of that foot flexed. When M. was looking nearly in the direction of the feet I did this again, and she asked, "What you doing, papo?" She saw her toes wriggling and said, "There's snakes in that foot." I told her that I made her foot act thus. She looked me in the eyes and said, "Don't you tell lies. Because you can't lie well." I suggested to S. M., while M. was sleeping, a means by which I might be

---

479. R. D.'s feeling of irritation at the object was much the same as she would have felt because of a troublesome person. M. came and recognized the feeling, and there being no one but myself present, she naturally thought that I had somehow irritated R. D.

480. See page 764.



able to get the advice of the former while M. was *awake*. This was simply to let a movement of the right foot signify the affirmative, and a movement of the left foot signify the negative. So in the evening, knowing that R. D. was anxious to go to the Bishop's reception, and being very dubious about the advisability of it, I remarked, "I wonder if D. should go to the reception." The matter had not been broached before M. The left foot instantly became agitated, and after M. fell asleep S. M. advised emphatically against it. R. D. came for the night at 10.45 and slept well. *Dec. 31-Jan. 1: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 6 m.; M., 3 h. 44 m.*

*Jan. 2. R. D. First Succeeds in "Staying" in the Morning.* At about 8.25 R. D. opened her eyes—and staid. For the first time, M. did not come in the morning for a single instant. [481]

R. D. spent part of the day at the Registrar's office at work, and shopping. M. came at 4.15, and toppled over asleep. She does not come quite so limp during the last few days. Sleep gradually restores her motor energies. She ate an orange and pronounced it sour, but that is no sign that it is so. Several times of late she has said that her throat was sore, and it has been found that she was simply thirsty. She will assert with convincing impressiveness that R. D. needs pills, and as soon as she is asleep S. M. will contradict her, saying, "That is just one of M.'s notions." [482] R. D. was back at 4.40, and went at 9.15. At the latter hour I could see that a change was impending, and like a shot it came. M. laughed, threw up her hands over her face, a trick that she has adopted lately, and her head fell heavily backwards. I sprang and caught her as she fell—sound asleep.

481. Thus another milestone was passed. It should be noted how swiftly the triumph followed the "experiment" of R. D. Only the excitement of the holidays prevented it coming sooner. Without the summoning of hope and resolution on the part of R. D. this stage might not have been reached for weeks or months.

482. A note dated Oct., 1912, says, "M. has been reliable about pills for months now." M. would undergo a loss in her powers and prerogatives and be at sea about judging certain matters. But later she might learn to make use of slight clues so that her opinions on those matters would again have value.



In only two or three minutes she woke, able to hold herself upright. R. D. came at 10. *Jan 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 3.* Forgetting a former incident of the same kind, I closed the door of my room before entering D.'s, in order that it might get warm. Instantly M. came, and cried out. She said to me, "Mustn't shut your door. (Is that why you came?) Yes, I think that you are going away and I shall never see you again. Don't shut it. (I won't.) You must never leave your baby. And you mustn't leave Doris. Your baby would die and D. would die." She slept, and S. M. said "I knew when I heard the door shut that there would be trouble. I could see M. fussing. (See her? How?) I mean see her thoughts fussing. She was thinking, 'O dear! he will never come again.'" R. D. came in her sleep and her hand came in contact with a garter which I had dropped on the couch as I sprang to M.'s relief. She felt it over, and a half-puzzled, half-amused expression came over her face. [483] I took the garter and the face became placid.

Mrs. P. was suffering more than usual from the insomnia to which she has long been more or less subject, and was looking white and worn. R. D. began to worry, strove to repress the feeling, and S. M. thought she continued to "worry underneath." A headache and abdominal distention set in, and there were a number of alternations during the day. Curiously, M. showed no effect from the subliminal worrying, but came uniformly smiling, gentle and amiable. R. D. went to a near-by store, a man running around the corner collided with her, and M. came out in the street, and stood still, S. M. thought, 3 minutes, but in the absence of clocks S. M.'s judgment of time is faulty, and it may have been not more than a minute. Later M. asked, "Why am I here so often to-day?", entirely unsuspecting of the cause, since she no longer watches. R. D. came at 9.40 and slept well. *Jan. 2-3: 12 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 37 m.; M., 5 h. 3 m.*

*Jan. 4.* For the second time, M. did not appear in the

---

483. It was really a twisted, quizzical expression which I afterward believed denoted the presence of S. R. D.



morning, but R. D. continued her reign of the night into the day.

Mrs. P. and I left her alone and went into the city, where R. D. was to meet her at 2 p. m. It indicates how far the science of Dorisology has advanced that while under the conditions of yesterday I did not dare to leave her for an hour, I had little misgiving today about leaving her completely alone for several hours, and being away myself from 10 a. m. to 5 p. m. One little mishap did occur but entirely through R. D.'s rashness. She suddenly had a whimsical yearning for pop-corn, and tried, while passing the Christmas plate, "to swipe one kernel without getting caught." Vain hope! when she next knew anything, her hair (she was dressed to go to the city) was down, the hair-pins scattered about the floor and the "rat" thrown across the room. There are few things which will stir up M. now, besides the touching of interdicted articles. R. D. was back within perhaps two minutes.

When M. came at 8.32 p. m., she fell asleep in her chair instantly, but woke in a few minutes able to hold herself upright. Still M.'s feet seem drawn to the stairs as by a magnet as she rushes past. To the original auto-suggestion is now added the external suggestion of my standing at the door to preserve her from danger, but there is no help for that. R. D. came at 10.30. *Jan. 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Jan. 5.* At 8.38 M.'s voice was heard. She said, "Do you know why I came, papo? The R. D. was saying to herself, 'How I hate to get up!', and I came because she dreaded to get up." M. was still obsessed by the fear of yesterday morning, that I was going to leave her, and, crying "Don't leave your baby", she wound her arms around my neck so tightly that I felt as if in the folds of a boa-constrictor, then, falling asleep began to pat my shoulder, with the result that the "cricket-chirp" of "Go to sleep. . . Go to sleep", repeated over and over, followed. I let my head droop on her shoulder—this brought up the image of the doll being hugged, and she began the old chant, "There, there! don't cry, baby. Your mudder will love you. Your mudder will take care of you. Put your head on your mudder's shoulder."



At this point her hand came into contact with my rough cheek, and without pause, but with an entire alteration of tone from the tender, caressing, maternal one to a tone of the most matter-of-fact quality she added, "You need a shave, papo." The transition was so sudden and ludicrous, that S. M. laughed heartily.

Several times today there has come into R. D.'s face an expression which vividly reminded me of S. D. Is it that her work on a coat for herself brings back the S. D. dress-making days, and revives the feelings and consequent expression that she would have then? I have noted repeatedly that when R. D. puts on a hat purchased about two months ago—a hat that looks heavy and is not becoming—her face assumes an expression reminding me of the expression that S. D. used to have when she wore a certain big hat. I remarked this to S. M. and she said delightedly, "There! I have waited a month to see if you would say that. [484] I have not spoken of it because I wanted to see if you would notice it. (I have noticed it for a long while.) So have I. She knows that the hat is unbecoming to her. And that brings up associations, as you say, of the other hat, when she used to look furtively about to see if anyone was noticing her, which made people notice."

In the evening I read aloud, against my better judgment, some detective and crime stories, since R. D. was sure that they would not affect her. But, coming about 10.30, she dreamed distorted incidents of what had been read, which troubled her much, and probably prevented her from maintaining herself the next morning. *Jan. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 17 m.; M., 1 h. 43 m.*

*Jan. 6.* M. came at about 6.15, with a scream. I found her much terrified, fearing both that she was to be sent away and that someone was coming to hurt her. She slept and woke with new tremors repeatedly. As her nervousness ebbed away she said, in most childish accents, "Don't you think I'se pretty baby? (O, yes.) Yes. Boo'ful baby."

---

484. We had both forgotten that the matter had been broached about two months before. See note 195.



I'se booful baby. I thinks I is boo'ful baby, don't you papo?" [485] Again she said, after I had approved of some suggestion of hers, "Ain't I a wise baby?"

S. M. remarked, "If any very bad accident should happen to the R. D. at this stage, M. would probably be dominant for quite a while, and it would not be the capable M. but the present one." Again she said, "If the R. D., after she is cured, should have a terrible shock, it wouldn't bring back the same old S. D., but would bring a new S. D."

In the afternoon R. D. remarked, "I had one dream that seemed as though it really had happened to me. It was about when I was little. It seems as though it had been, but it couldn't have. (What was it about?) O, it was too horrible to tell!" After vainly urging her to tell, I asked, "Was it about an accident to you?" Yes. (A fall?) Yes." Yet she still would not tell the dream. When next S. M. could speak I found that my suspicion was correct, there came to R. D. last night a "moving-picture" of that night when she was a baby of three, and her father quarrelled with her mother, and finally dashed the baby on the floor, and the mother carried it upstairs and laid it on the bed. S. M. would not go into further details of the dream, but said, "Ask R. D. sometime when she is alone; you can get her to tell it." [486] R. D., coming at 10.10, slept splendidly. *Jan. 5-6: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 14 m.; M., 3 h. 26 m.*

*Jan. 7. Sunday.* M. did not come this morning. R. D. went to Sunday school, under instructions to return early. S. M. thinks that she should cease going for a time, since attendance has made her increasingly nervous the last few Sundays. "It is because M. is going so rapidly", says S. M. But she knows that R. D. will be reluctant to give up going, especially as she supposes people will wonder and talk, about her going to the city, etc., and yet not being able to go to Sunday school and church. I expected to take her home

485. This sounds like a reflection of personal vanity, but R. D. had none of this weakness, and I cannot remember that M. ever made any similar remark.

486. My days were crowded with work, so that I forgot to inquire further of R. D., and she never mentioned the dream again.



from the school, but she came out by another door, and I missed her. S. M. tells me the adventure which followed. R. D. took a short cut across a corner, and there M. came, on the rough, rutted ground. The latter stumbled on, but fell into a ditch, bruising her hand badly on the frozen ground. There she sat, and a gentlemanly young man, on the way to the Roman Catholic church, came to her and asked if she was hurt. She laughed and answered, "No", but the blood on her finger told a different story. He asked if she could get up, and she replied to the effect that she would wait for her papo. He insisted on helping her up, and fortunately she was in a mood not to resent it. Then he said, "You are Dr. Prince's daughter, and you live on Aldrich St.?" She murmured, "No, Pittsfield St.", but S. M. thinks it a doubt if the young man understood. Several of his sentences she repeated. He asked again, "You live on Aldrich St.?", and she then said, "I live on Aldrich St." [487] He took her home, tried the door and asked if she had a key. She said, "No", but mechanically held out the key. He unlocked the door, gave her the key, shut the door, and hurried away. Largely because of this adventure, no doubt, the day was unstable, though Sunday is the most trying day of the week to her.

S. M. declares that it is less interesting to her than it used to be. Then there was a great deal to watch in the relations of M. and S. D., and in M.'s "antics." "But it is not very interesting to watch R. D., and M. is going, and I get bored." S. M. also says that M. is living more and more in the imagination. "I don't know if it is a good thing", she adds, doubtfully. But I presume that it is, that the more M. loses touch with the real world the more she sinks into the depths whence she came. But R. D. should, I believe, disaccustom herself to imaginative habits, and busy her mind more and more with the actual world. But she still tends to reverie

---

487. Thus, as late as Jan., 1914, when it was necessary to call in a physician unacquainted with the case to see her for an illness, and M. was out, she, still realizing the necessity of concealment, used the physician's own words and copied his pronunciations, in answering several questions. See page 1229.



and tours of imagination. S. M. says, "When you see her foot swinging, that is a sign that she is in the mood for imagining." The trouble is that her foot must hang freely to swing. While R. D. is reading, she may be at the same time weaving between the lines, S. M. reports, a thread of imagination, shaping the fortunes of the characters otherwise than they are shaped in print. Sometimes when she is so engaged in reading, and her foot begins to oscillate, I gently grasp and hold it. It makes one or two more efforts and then ceases for the time. Generally she fails to notice, though several times she has shown an uneasy consciousness that something has happened. Once she asked, "What was it? (What?) What happened?" Another time she looked up and said, "What is it? (What?) I thought you spoke to me." Before I came home from church M. came again. I asked S. M. what caused this, and she replied. "I don't know. The parrot was out, and I suspect it flew at her. Something startled her. I was thinking of M.'s adventures this morning, and didn't notice. I do know that when M. came she took Polly up by the scruff of the neck and put her in the cage. Polly was astonished, I guess. There hasn't been a sound out of her since." M. told me that the parrot flew at R. D., and of her feat, which I would not dare to venture. "I took her right up by the back of the neck, just the way I do the guinea-pigs. I guess she was surprised—she drew her feet up, and opened her mouth and said 'Awk! awk!' And there she is, laughing now. She isn't very *repentable*, is she?"

When M. came again in the afternoon, a shade of anxiety or regret must have appeared in my countenance, for she looked at me with eyes of apprehension, shrank a little, and murmured, "We didn't want to come." I comforted her and she fell asleep. S. M. laughed and said, "She used to get cross when she thought you blamed her for coming, now she only gets a little afraid of you. She knows she can't help it, but fears that you blame her. She never comes purposely now, nor has she power any longer to bring R. D."

Taking the cue from me, M. undertook to test *my* sight today. She had me roll my eyes about and tell what I could



see. When I named an object out of her visual field her curiosity would get the better of her, and she would inquire eagerly, "Where? where is it?" She was now in a mood to be tested herself, and I ascertained that at a distance of 10 inches directly forward from her eyes, she sees within a circle of about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

M., referring to the morning adventure, said, "You wouldn't want to lose your baby. (I certainly wouldn't.) Because your baby don't know where she is when she comes outside. I didn't know the house, papo, till the man put me in. . . . The S. D. used to say that I must be careful, or a policeman might take me." I undertook to teach her what to do if she came away from home. "(If you come in a store, just walk around, until R. D. comes. Don't touch anything.) Can't I take anything if I want it in a 'tore? (No. that is what would make a policeman take you.) But I can charge it to papo. (I wouldn't; I would just wait until R. D. comes.) Well, I guess I won't need anything so bad that I can't wait. (And if you come on the street don't cross any bridges.)" This direction was to keep her from going to the neighborhood where she might meet a relative. "What's bridges? (Where you can look 'way down and see houses beneath you.) You mean a hill, don't you, papo? Yes, that's a hill." I continued endeavoring to explain, and she said, "You mean what goes over a river." I had to leave it at that. She remembered the big river bridges, but not the bridges which span the deep "runs" in the city. S. M. says that it is of no use to teach M. what to do, as she would not be able to remember it.

S. M. lately heard me use the terms "alternating personality" and "subconscious personality", which latter I used meaning a secondary personality which does not "come out" and banish the primary consciousness, but remains a subliminal co-consciousness. Tonight she asked me what I meant by the two terms, and when I told her, said, "What am I?" I said that in some respects she appeared to be an alternating personality, but in others not; as she is able to express herself by speech and by movement, yet on the other hand only when M. is out, and even then M. is able to inhibit



her. She went on, "I wish someone could tell me what I am." [488] Several times of late S. M. has "gone away", for periods varying from 5 to 12 minutes, during which M. lies absolutely still, save perhaps for very slight movements of the hands now and then. Then there comes a jerk, and S. M. is speaking. The return appears to be hastened if I call sharply, or anything else occurs to disturb M. [489] She says that she does not go in an instant, but can feel herself going, and that it is a most delightful sensation. She is not aware, however, that she has any particular sensation on her return. R. D. came at 10.45 and slept well. *Jan. 6-7: 12 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 25 m.; M., 4 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 8.* No M. this morning, not until 5.30 p. m., when for half an hour I had been noticing signs of weariness, the facial expression, light twitching of the features and the oscillating foot. On the return of R. D. at 5.58 these indications were not seen. She herself says that when she goes feeling nervous, she does not so feel on her coming again. She has rested.

I had kept the gift that Dr. Hyslop sent M., to see if she would discover by telepathy that it had been sent. But never once has she detected thoughts that I had charged my mind with in order that she might read them. [490] Tonight I showed her the present, a beautiful handmade glove and handkerchief receiver. M. was delighted and sat down and wrote a letter to Dr. Hyslop as follows:

Christmas, 1911.

Dear Jim Hyslop

My golly but that was a pretty present gee but I thought

488. Was S. M. in doubt at that time as to what she was, or were these questions feelers to ascertain my views regarding her? She afterward claimed that she never at any time regarded herself as a personality, in the sense that S. D. and M. were.

489. The effect of such disturbance in bringing S. M. back had the appearance of being intermediate through its effect upon M.

490. Unless we except the case of the letter. (See page 804.) In that case, after taking precautions to guard the letter, it passed from my conscious thoughts. But my mind often recurred to the present which I was holding in reserve.



it was lovely. I don't come any more in the morning, did you like that picture I sent of me and Jim. You must write me a letter I am tired now. Margaret

*Thank* you. I think that was a swell present. Papo says you are very busy but you stop just a minute and write me a letter poor me won't be here long. Margaret (the Imp) This is the way Sick Doris signed "me."

She tires very easily now from the effort of writing. The present being put in her drawer I asked if I might show it to R. D. "Yes", she said, rather doubtfully, "but don't let her touch it. She would get it dirty. *You* show it to her." R. D. came at 10.45. The howling wind completely disordered her sleep. *Jan. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 7 m.; M., 2 h. 53 m.*

*Jan. 9.* M. did not appear in the morning. At about 9 I showed R. D. the present, warning her not to touch it. She admired it, commented on its exquisite quality, forgot and touched it. No sooner had the forefinger come into contact than M. was out, stamping her foot and snarling vociferously, "I said she mustn't touch it! I don't *want* her to touch it." R. D. was back in about a minute.

She was in the city part of the day, and after supper had a headache which continued into the night. She came for sleep at 9.30. Except for one minute, R. D. was out continuously from 10.45 p. m. last night to 7.05 p. m. today. *Jan. 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 19 m.; M., 3 h. 41 m.*

*Jan. 10.* I entered and lit the fire. Soon she sat up in bed and began to dig her left shoulder, then leaned over and took from a chair a dish of cold cream which she uses for her lips, which suffer from being dry and cracked, but did nothing with it. I rubbed some of the cream on the shoulder and she lay down as though all were right. I straightened the covers up to her chin, and in so doing remedied the difficulty, for S. M. afterwards informed me that the shoulder was cold. When asleep and doing such odd things she has an expression different from that of R. D. awake, or asleep and not so acting,—more like that of M., and yet not hers, either. I cannot help thinking that there is what might be called a



"SLEEPING REAL DORIS", a quasi-personality, only partially formed. [491]

The headache brought M. this morning, and she ate breakfast in bed. As the headache still continued, with consequent alternations, I got a little blue over the situation. S. M. raked me over the coals for this. "What will you do", she demanded, "just before M. disappears? The last week she is here she will, I think, be coming and going all the time. (How can you tell that?) I can see how things work inside. I observe and put two and two together. I see that after M. has a day when she comes a good deal she is weaker. It wasn't so formerly, of course, but it is so now. Of course I don't know *certainly* just how it will be when M. is finally disappearing, [492] but I think that is the way it will be. She appears about as lively as ever when she is out, but the same amount of effort or emotion tires her sooner than a few weeks ago. Being out does not strengthen her now, so long as you humor her. Perhaps it is different with personalities in other cases, but with her it is rousing her will that strengthens her, at this stage. If you should oppose her having what she wants, such as when she asks for pickle, she would not be openly rebellious, but she would have rebellious thoughts down deep. . . . I think that R. D. should stop going to Sunday school. She won't like it, she wants to keep her record up, but she ought to. It is making her nervous now, and the effect lasts all day. . . . [493] M. is reading Pilgrim's Progress,—she has got to the 120th page.

---

491. This is the first distinct mention of the hypothesis of S. R. D. that occurs in the record. But it had occurred to my mind previously.

492. It turned out that M. did not have such a final week. But it should be noted that not only did S. M. make no claims to be an infallible prophet, but also that she expressly said that she was not sure in this particular case. There are many instances of correct previsions of the future course of the case in the favor of S. M. Of course the most of these pre-estimates were contingent in part upon circumstances. For instance there might have occurred some new shock from external accidental causes which would have annulled many of them at a blow.

493. M. also, on the preceding night, remarked that Sunday school was making R. D. nervous of late. "That's why I came out. I am near all through Sunday school."



Do you know how she reads it? She looks at every word, but she doesn't get an idea from a single sentence. But I am reading it as she looks at the words. It is the first time I ever undertook reading a book. I used to read a little, but I mostly got my knowledge of books from watching their thoughts. Then there were other interesting things, their own thoughts and doings, to watch, so I would pay attention to the reading only part of the time. But I can't get any of M.'s reading from her thoughts, and she hasn't any thoughts in particular of her own when she reads, so there is nothing for me to do but to read out of her eyes. I am interested in *Pilgrim's Progress*."

M. is a creature of routine, and will usually refuse to make any change, like drawing the narrow couch on which she reclines nearer the fire in this bitterly cold weather, when it is first suggested. But after a day or two, if the suggestion is mildly repeated from time to time, she may at length make it herself, evidently believing it her own proposal.

Sometimes M. pokes the side of my face and asks what it is. The limitations of her vision make it look strange,—she says, "Your face looks crooked." Sometimes when asleep she tousles my hair, and it is like being tousled by a policeman's club. She has partly learned, in spite of anæsthesia, to modify the vigor of her movements when awake, having observed that she hurts me. R. D. came at 10.25 finally. *Jan. 9-10: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 15 m.; M., 4 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 11.* No M. this morning. [494] We went to Dr. Walker's office in the forenoon. In the evening R. D. came at 10.17. She slept well save for two frights, owing to the position of her couch being changed, and the consequently altered appearance of objects in the darkness. *Jan. 10-11: 4 alt.: 20 h. 53 m.; M., 2 h. 59 m.*

*Jan. 12.* Soon after I came into the room at 8 a. m., she sat up, still sleeping, and reached down as if searching for

---

494. It will be seen that M.'s not appearing in the morning did not, for some time, cause R. D.'s average time out during the day to be greater. But it meant breaking up a particular piece of routine, and encouraging R. D. to plan new inroads into the enemy's territory.



something on the floor. I raised the day couch-cover to her hand, and she felt it over with a singular quizzical expression which is characteristic of what I am getting to believe is an incipient Sleeping Real Doris, then rejected it and lay down again. It is nothing new, it is the same that formerly rose in bed, went to the bath-room, talked about the old home, etc. It is not developing, it is dying, it no longer says, "This is not my room", etc. [495] Perhaps it, or she, has imagery of the things that she formerly rehearsed, and mixes memories of the old house with sensory impressions in this, to her puzzlement, as evinced by the features. But if she has thoughts, S. M. does not know it. The latter asserts that when the sentences, "This isn't my room," etc., were being uttered, no thoughts accompanied them. Possibly this is not strictly the fact, but the thoughts were too vague to be perceived by S. M. But, to be just to S. M., when she says that a personality is not thinking, she means, and has asserted that she means, that there are no *active* thoughts. There may be hazy notions, for all that. Almost as soon as R. D. woke she told me that during the night she reached down to get a blanket, and as she did so all the covers fell off. She told it as an amusing incident, but here we have the source of the auto-

---

495. So far as she came under my observation, S. R. D.'s mental activities from the fall of 1910 to April 15, 1912, the date of her disappearance, passed through three stages. 1. That of the marvelous "conversation-recitals". All of these which I heard belonged either to (a) R. D.'s experiences before her mother's death or (b) to late experiences of R. D. or S. D. 2. The period of the soliloquies and rising and tossing. All her utterances which I heard were repetitions of utterances of R. D. at her brief appearances during the five-year period following the mother's death. 3. The period wherein the chief characteristic was motor response to sensory stimulus. My opportunities for night observation were not sufficient to determine to what extent these periods overlapped or the features of one sporadically appeared in another. But no conversation-recital was ever heard after the discovery of the soliloquies, or for some time before, and no soliloquy was heard after the twisted, quizzical smile had been observed in the morning. The facial expression in the first period corresponded with the age at which the conversation recalled took place and with the nature of the incident. The facial expressions which I have called quizzical were in response to sensory stimuli only.



matic movement, which may have been repeated more than once before I saw it.

R. D. cooked some kidneys, and looked forward with pleasure to eating them, but when they came to the table could not do so. S. M. says that it was S. D. who was fond of kidneys, and that R. D. was deceived by getting back her memories. And a remark that I made about their odor helped to disgust her; she had not observed it before, but when her attention was called to it, they smelt badly to her also.

Twice M. came in consequence of R. D. having "a stitch in her side." At a third coming M. earnestly asked, "What did D. call me today for? I heard her call me and I almost came." Mrs. P. remembered that R. D., engaged in writing a list of names, stepped to the stairway and called down to her, asking the first name of a certain girl. Mrs. P. gave the name, "Margaret", and R. D. shouted down-stairs, interrogatively, "Margaret?", to make sure that she heard rightly. That is what M. heard. M. said, "I thought that she wanted me and I almost came." S. M. says that M. thought that R. D. was in some trouble and needed her help. This curious incident shows that not only the handling of interdicted objects, but also the calling out loudly of her name, can stir up M.

R. D. came at 10.45 and slept poorly, being disturbed by snoring in the adjoining room. *Jan. 11-12: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 34 m.; M., 1 h. 54 m.*

*Jan. 13.* M. said that R. D. last night hunted for something on the floor, [496] pointing to the side of the couch where the reaching for the covers took place on the preceding night, and added, "I wonder what she was looking for. I think she was hunting for money." [497] But then she said something that indicated that this was an R. D. asleep that was a little different from the true R. D. I questioned her, avoiding leading questions absolutely. She said that

496. Evidently the movement was pronounced enough to reach the subliminal consciousness of M. and cause her to wonder.

497. Here is an instance of M.'s naïve interpretations. She judged after herself, for she had often hunted on the floor for money.



"there is a little crack in R. D." [498] causing "a *sleeping Real Doris*." I was startled by hearing this name, the one that I already had put on record, and asked M. how she got my name for that R. D. She answered, "I called her that a long time ago. (Why didn't you tell me about her?) Because I thought you knew everything. I told S. D. about her. She came right after S. D. did, and before R. D. came back at all. [499] At first she used to talk about her mother. She came from just a little crack in R. D." S. M. backs M. up, saying however that she herself knew less about those matters than M. because M. saw them directly, while but little was reflected from S. R. D. by M. to her. "I never took much stock in it. I didn't know whether it was so or not, though I knew that M. believed it."

M. was here from 8.12 to 11.55 at a stretch, the longest time out that she has had for many weeks. She was afraid that I did not want her, and piteously protested that she could not help coming, and could not bring R. D. She finally grew very tired and impatient for R. D.'s return. Of late, after M. has slept about all that she feels like doing, though I can put her to sleep she soon wakes again, and S. M. advises letting her stay awake under these conditions. M. had another intimation that there is a Sleeping Margaret and that she is the "science" that I learned things from. [500] Then she began to joke about her impending departure. "I'm like a cake of ice on a hot day. Don't you know that the last cake is the hardest to melt? (But I thought you said there was another one.) Yes, but Sleeping Margaret has got to go when I do, for she is hitched onto me. She

---

498. This was not an utterly spontaneous expression; M. had heard the term "mental fissure", and the like.

499. But see pages 247-8. M. was wrong here, if she means before R. D. was back after the two months' submergence following her mother's death.

500. The record is defective here, but I think that she again claimed to see the words "Sleeping Margaret" in my mind.



must be or she wouldn't act the way she does. [501] Then she sang

"When our cracks are all mended  
Then we'll be nice and well."

R. D. was told today that she had better not go to Sunday school, but she begged to be allowed to go and stay until the lesson is through, saying that it is the latter part of the session that makes her nervous. S. M. approves of the compromise, and it will be tried.

As M. and I were sitting by the fire in the evening I thoughtlessly lit a piece of paper to light my cigar with. In a moment I realized what a tactical blunder this had been, since M. so readily imitates me. I told her that I did wrong and she roundly scolded me. I dwelt upon the heinousness of my sin, and she added interest. I said, "M. would never do that", and she replied with energy, "No, never!" Afterwards S. M. remarked that it was fortunate that I cancelled the effect of my act on the suggestible M. R. D. came at 10.10 and went to sleep with cotton in her ears, to keep out the sound of snoring. It worked well. *Jan. 12-13: 6 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 53 m.; M., 5 h. 32 m.*

*Jan 14. Sunday.* In the night, S. M. informs me, S. R. D. leaned over and searched for covers as though they had dropped again, took the cotton wads out of her ears and put them back several times, and towards morning put them under her pillow. When I entered in the morning I pushed back the hair from her ear to see if the plug was still there. S. R. D. sat up and searched under her pillow until she found the cotton, and handed it to me with her characteristic twisted smile.

M. did not come, and R. D. went to Sunday school, leaving before the latter exercises. She was not nervous during the day. She went for 12 minutes at 4, and M. expressed her wish for water by a formula which is common of late, "My throat's sore."

On returning in the evening, we found M. sitting on the

---

501. An illusion to the "yanking", probably.



lowest step of the front stairs. She was delighted at our return, but I could not get her to mount the stairs,—she shrieked and almost sobbed at the thought, and I had to get her up the back stairs. What had happened was learned from the concurrent testimony of S. M. and M. M. had come and at once felt the necessity of going to the bath-room—a necessity not recognized by R. D. because of the anæsthesia of the bladder in which M. does not share—and had gone. On her return, “the stairs called her” so insistently that she put her foot out over the landing, tottered, fell on her face, turned a complete somersault, and then bumped on her back down the whole length of the stairs, hitting and wrenching the neck, bruising both legs, and producing severe contusions on the back. It was a narrow escape from worse injuries or even from death. M. cried for a minute after reaching the bottom, then pounded the stairs with her fists, kicked them, threw books at them and finally attempted to fire in their direction a lighted oil stove that was in the hall, but found it hot, and abandoned that method of attack. She stormed at the stairs and abused them soundly, then sat down and waited, listening attentively for our footsteps. M. was cheerful after this, and S. M. said that she did not think that R. D. would suffer serious effects.

R. D. came at 10.45. In the night came pains in the ovarian region, and M. came from about 2.50 to 3.20 a. m. Previously, at about 2.15, according to S. M., *S. R. D. went down-stairs and put out a gasoline fire which gave out a bad odor.* So I placed a chair before the stairs. On R. D.’s return, I fetched R. D. wads of cotton for her ears, as those which had been in them were gone. Soon after she was asleep S. R. D. took out the wads and handed them to me, with her odd expression. *Jan. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 23 m.; M., 2 h. 12 m.*

*Jan. 15.* The effects of the fall were marked. R. D. did not come from 8.15 to 11.05 a. m., in five minutes departed while stooping, and did not return until 2.50. M. had breakfast and dinner, and was at times merry and at times weary and disgusted at being out so much. When M. had to go to the bath-room she advanced slowly, cautiously, whimpering, clinging close to my hand, until past the stairs, then



flew through the bath-room door. As soon as she emerged I gave her my hand and the process was repeated. Then she sprang for the couch, shaking all over, and exclaiming, "I seen 'em—I seen the stairs—the bad stairs. I seen 'em. (You mean 'I *saw* them.') Did *you* saw them, papo?" She fell asleep from excitement and her hands twitched.

In the evening M. glanced up at her dolls, and spoke of the doll Margaret as her oldest child. [502] Then she said, "My other children have all left me. Rebecca [503] was put into your room, and I guess she froze to death. And Clarence was stuffed too full and he is dead too. And that other one—the window-seat—I've forgot his name—so many sings was put on him that he was suffocated. And Gladys—she was put in my room, and she froze to death. Louise is left, but she is a bad girl, and I don't want her any more." M. is still "reading" Pilgrim's Progress, and S. M. is much interested in it. She says that she cannot read ahead of M., because the latter rivets her gaze too closely; she misses a word now and then, because M. passes over too quickly. M. sometimes understands when she reads a short bit, but not when she undertakes a lengthy job of reading. R. D. came at 10.15 after the shortest day for many weeks and slept well. *Jan. 14-15: 10 alt.: R. D., 13 h. 37 m.; M., 9 h. 53 m.*

*Jan. 16.* M. did not come this morning. I was absent most of the day in the city. I called on Dr. Walker and gave him a note from M. and two pictures of her which I took on Christmas. [504] The note read,

---

502. Note that this slight revival, on M.'s part, of interest in her dolls, occurred on a day after she had been out much *longer* than her wont.

503. Rebecca was represented by a Morris chair, Clarence by a drawer, Gladys by a stool, and Louise by a chair. See note 330.

504. One of these pictures was of M. sitting up in bed, entirely absorbed in her presents. The other showed her sitting in a chair, her head on one side and her mouth open oddly in the act of speaking, while her arms are full of the dolls whom she names on the back. After taking the second picture I put M. to sleep by suggestion in her chair, and took a picture of S. M. I was forgetting the dolls, when S. M. reminded me, "I don't want to be taken with dolls. I most strenuously object."



"Dear Dr. Walker. These are my pictures I am sending you, Margaret.

I fell down-stairs. I am going to get even with them stairs. I see them this morning Margaret (The Imp Nit) "

On the back of one picture she wrote, "This is me with Jim Hyslop, Margaret my oldest child Dr. Walker and Doris. Margaret." On the back of the other she wrote, "This is me on Christmas. I am holding Jim Hyslop and Margaret and Dr. Walker are sitting back. Margaret (The Imp.) I am not an imp now I'm a wise baby now." She directed the note to "Dr. W. K. Walker, M. D." Both S. M. and R. D. spoke of the blunder of setting down both "Dr." and "M. D." For R. D. caught sight of the note, asked if she had been writing to Dr. Walker, and then remarked with an air of disgust that "she" needn't have made a blunder. M. put on the upper left-hand corner what R. D. did not see, "Margaret Prince, Pittsfield St., Boston, Pa.", which really is her present notion of her habitation. On my return M. eagerly inquired if Dr. W. was "prised."

In the evening R. D. was left alone. As it drew near 8.30, she heard fire engines near, and a lot of shouting in a neighboring house, tried to get a sight from the windows but could not, dared not go down-stairs for fear that she would forget, and yet maintained herself, though M. came near enough so that she understood what was going on. R. D. staid until about 9.37 and we returned ten minutes later. M. was unable, of course, to tell when she came, but she pointed to the minute hand and said, "It was between those two," indicating the figures 7 and 8. Afterwards, when her attention was engaged, I said quietly, "Twenty minutes of ten?" The right foot moved vigorously. "Twenty minutes of nine?" The left foot negatived my query. M. looked up and asked, "What, papo? What you saying? (I was reading aloud.)" R. D. came at 10.55, and slept well, except for dreams of persecution. *Jan. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 17 m.; M., 1 h. 23 m.*

*Jan. 17.* Yesterday morning, and again this morning, her eyes opened as I was lighting the fire, stared stupidly and



uncomprehendingly for a moment, and then closed again. S. M. said last night that this was not good for her, that I ought either to wake her fully or to put her deeper to sleep. This morning I took the latter course. Both mornings the real waking, with no recollection of the false waking, followed within five minutes. The "false waking" looks to me as though it might be S. R. D. opening her eyes. [505] M. did not come in the morning, nor until 9 p. m. This establishes a new record.

S. M. says that last night, some time after I left the room, S. R. D. took out the ear-plugs and held them up as for me to take them, then let them fall. "But", she said, "R. D. did not hear any snoring. I think that before she had the plugs she listened for sounds, and that she goes to sleep now believing that she will not hear, so that she actually doesn't when the plugs are removed." R. D. came at 10.30 and slept well. *Jan. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 18.* When I came in, S. R. D. turned over so as to face me, sat up, and went through the movements of taking out the ear-plugs and handing them to me, though none were in the ears. She then, as usual, plucked my lips, I kissed her and she lay down and was quiet. In a few minutes R. D. woke, and after a few words of conversation went to sleep again. Mrs. P. entered and finding R. D. asleep did not kiss her. Soon the hands went up and the operation of plucking a kiss was repeated. I kissed her again and she settled down with a little gurgle. Once the eyes opened and turned towards me, but with no appearance of comprehension. I closed them and made one or two passes over the lids, and they remained closed. In about two minutes R. D. woke. [506]

---

505. This does not seem certain, as R. D. sometimes had similar "false wakings" as late as 1913, after S. R. D. had long disappeared. Yet there is the testimony of S. M. on the other hand, on page 908. But S. M. did not have the immediate insight into S. R. D. that she had in the cases of the others, and may not, even at this point, have been able infallibly to distinguish between S. R. D. and R. D. sleeping and without active thought for the moment.

506. S. R. D. seems not to have had memory of her own previous states



At breakfast I remarked that I was trying to think of something that I was to do this morning—something in reference to her. The fact was that M. told me last night that R. D. had an ingrowing toe-nail which was paining her and which I ought to fix, as I did another awhile ago, while M. was out. R. D. had afterwards learned what I had done the first time, but had not told me that another was troubling her. Some time after breakfast R. D. came to the head of the stairs and said, "I know what it was; it was to fix my toe-nail. (What makes you think so?) It began to hurt me awfully after I came up here. (Were you trying to imagine what it was that I wanted to do?) No. (Well, that was it.) Was it really? I was joking; I didn't really think that was it. But I felt the nail hurting me awfully." A minute or two later, before I had begun the chiropodist operation, she remarked, "It doesn't hurt me now." She was still walking about when she said this.

R. D. worked about the house pretty steadily in the forenoon, and in the afternoon called on a couple of cripple sisters whom she knew in another part of the city, and also on an invalid, whom she found in a neglected and repulsive state. On her return the car was delayed for some time by a carriage in the way. [507] A bad headache set in. The following were named as possible causes.

"I went all the afternoon without taking a little lunch."  
R. D.

"She should not work all the forenoon and go calling the same day." S. M.

"I think that she thought a good deal about that horrible

---

of consciousness. For, after receiving her kiss, and settling down satisfied, there comes the interruption of R. D. waking, and then, not five minutes afterward, S. R. D. acts as though I had just come in, and the ceremony had not been performed. For *one* kiss is all that S. R. D. ever expects, night or morning. Of course this is somehow related to the fact that it had been my habit of giving R. D. one good-night salute and one like morning greeting.

507. This should read "carriages", but the original form is allowed to stand. The fact was that a funeral procession delayed the car, and this is particularly stated because the fact proved to have importance.



case which she saw. She has so much imagination that she could still see it." S. M.

"The delay on the car helped to make her nervous." S. M. [508]

"The D. must have done something bad for her. (What was it?) Asa no." M.

When M. came at 7.45 p. m. I asked her what happened to R. D. just after breakfast. She replied, with eyes twinkling, "I made her toe sting. (Then you were watching.) Asa *no!* Asa *no!* (How did you know?) The R. D. was thinking hard what you could have forgotten about *her*. [509] She thought it was something that you were going to give her. And so *I* got it, and I made her toe sting. (How did you do it?) Just made it sting. (But how could you make it sting?) Went down there and bit it." Her expression was droll at this last remark, and she evidently did not expect me to believe it. Finally she seemed to be trying to say that she just thought about it stinging.

Mrs. P. was away until past 10, and M. got tired waiting for her. She began to bounce and kick and all my efforts to dissuade her were in vain. I told her that I would have to sit on the other side of the room. A scream recalled me, but

---

508. It transpired that this remark more nearly than the others pointed to the true cause. The reason why the causes of this headache were canvassed was that Dorisology had become so nearly an exact science by this time that any failure readily to divine the cause of a headache or other ailment caused curiosity if not alarm, not that there was any suspicion that this headache would last longer than usual—it was practically continuous for more than five weeks—or that it would prove most interesting from a psychological standpoint.

509. This sounds like a contradiction of what R. D. had affirmed. But R. D. may have forgotten, or she may have only half-consciously, or quite subconsciously have done the thinking. When one remembers how often honest witnesses verbally contradict each other in a minor way, simply because of the slight alteration of the face of the facts owing to difference in the point of view, or because the witnesses do not employ the same term in the same sense, he will wonder that there were not more frequent verbal contradictions in the statements of the personalities. For there were really very few, yet differences in point of view were as pronounced as in the case of utterly different persons, and there were not wanting differences in the definitions of terms.



the harrassing acts continued. Finally I got her to sleep, but occasionally she still kicked, and her hands clutched. As the latter movement tended to increase, I very slightly patted a hand. She thought she was hurt, shrank and shivered, and woke afraid of me. I could not by any device remove her obsession of fear, she would only answer "Yes", and "No", in the tone with which a captive might attempt to propitiate a tyrant. Then she said hastily, "The R. D. is here. . . . The R. D. is *here*." I could not change her mood, R. D. came, but was very serious, and even mournful of countenance. R. D. came at 11.10. *Jan. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 19.* The monthly period began this morning, with more than usual pain, probably on account of the fall, marks of which are still visible. M. herself said that this is what was the matter with herself last night, though she characteristically insisted that she had not been a "bad baby" but that I had been a "bad papo." R. D. came for the night at 10.40. While alone, S. R. D. repeated what she did the previous night,—took out the ear-plugs, held them out, and then, as they were not taken, put them back. *Jan. 18-19: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 32 m.; M., 4 h. 58 m.*

*Jan. 20.* In the afternoon I gave R. D. a tiny gold medal, and she took it to her room. About three minutes later I heard "*I want that! I want that!*" over and over, and M. came out, snarling the same phrase, half laughing and wholly in earnest. I had to give her the medal and put it into her drawer, and when R. D. came, asking "What did I go for?", had to tell her that she must give up the medal for a while. She felt a little grieved, even a little rebellious at first, and said, "I think that is mean; I wanted that", but patiently acquiesced.

**M. Begins to Get Thoughts of R. D. only after the Latter has Departed and is "Going Down."** In response to queries S. M. said that after M. ceased to watch by day or by night, she would come slowly to the surface, as it were, shortly before R. D. went in the evening, so that she got R. D.'s thoughts of her last few minutes. "But now she can't do



that any more. She now gets R. D.'s thoughts of the day—the important ones, not insignificant details—in the last few minutes *after* R. D. goes. It seems as if R. D. paused for awhile partway down, and the thoughts of the day passed through her mind. You have no idea how short a time it takes, not over five minutes. Then R. D. goes down deeper, and M. gets no more of her thoughts after that. Another thing, after M. ceased to watch either while R. D. was awake or asleep, there was a time during which some of R. D.'s thoughts, while she was asleep, would get down to M. But that is over too. All the time that M. can get R. D.'s thoughts is just after R. D. goes. The changes take place so fast in M. that you will have to keep questioning me to keep up with them. . . . It used to be the case that I [S. M.] could see the most of M.'s thoughts when she was asleep. But now I can see her thoughts while she is asleep very seldom. Her thoughts are now too narrow, too limited. (It makes things duller for you?) O, I don't care." M. today, alluding to some garment, asked me why I didn't "wa-um." I could not make out what she meant, and she accused me of not understanding English. Then she referred to my "ga-lack", and finally, as I vainly puzzled, put her finger on my back. "(Do you mean my back?) Yes. Can't you understand plain English?" At the same time she looked somewhat dashed. S. M. says that M. forgot the word "back" and unconsciously made up the other.

From S. M. I learn that there has been a very sore spot in the region of the bladder, supposed to be due to over-distention of that organ, since anæsthesia silences the "call of nature." The soreness shows that the anæsthesia cannot completely extend to all parts of the bladder. Both S. M. and M. warned against R. D. going to Sunday school tomorrow. R. D. came at 10.18. S. R. D. took out and extended to me the ear-plugs, and when I would not take them, let them fall. *Jan. 19-20: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 6 m.; M., 3 h. 32 m.*

*Jan. 21. Sunday.* This morning M. again declared that R. D. ought not to go to Sunday School, and when I experi-



mentally remonstrated in behalf of R. D. her manner changed from that of serious counsel, to the smiling, feline complacency which spells danger. "Yes, you can let her go. Let her go, papo. I love to go to Sunday school. Let's see, where do you sit? By the piano? It will be just fun for me to come out." When R. D. was told that she must not go, she was dismayed, did not want "to break her record", etc., but regretfully acquiesced.

On my return in the evening R. D. told me about an auditory hallucination that she had at about 8.15. "I heard grandmother speaking tonight. (What grandmother?) Why, your mother. (What do you mean?) I did; I heard her voice plainly. I recognized it at once as grandmother. (What did it say?) I didn't catch the words, but the voice I heard plainly. It sounded in the direction of the back hall, but farther off, as if at some distance. But yet it sounded just like a voice and grandmother's voice. (How long did it speak?) Only about a sentence. I was very much frightened, and almost went. I was not thinking of grandmother and had not been thinking of her this evening." I remember one casual reference to the grandmother as having taken place during the day, but it was of trivial character. [510] R. D. came at 10.45. *Jan. 20-21: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 56 m.; M., 3 h. 31 m.*

*Jan. 22.* In the morning, while she was still asleep, for experiment I bent over and kissed her. There was a faint smile, that was all. [511] When I say that the sleep is fairly good, explanation is needed. There is still, says S. M., a great deal of turning and twisting during the night. Headache all day. [512] I was away most of the day, and she sewed considerably, both in the daytime and the evening, yet remained nearly 12 hours. When M. came in the evening she renewed a question that she has asked for some unknown reason, several times during the last two days, this time more insistently, "Hasn't Dr. Walker got a place where girls

510. This incident is recorded simply as a part of the history of the case, and not because it is supposed to have any extraneous significance.

511. This was R. D. Her smile was very different from that of S. R. D.

512. It had not left her since her visit to the invalids.



sick like us can go until they are better? Can't I ask him if he hasn't?" [513] S. M. says that M. when asking these questions, imagines herself away off somewhere playing. "Once she imagined R. D. sitting beside a walk, and herself trying to get her to get up and play with her. Then she imagined that her oldest child Margaret had left her and how sorry she was. You can interpret her imaginings as well as I can."

Tonight S. M. told me that she has a few times within the last weeks caused R. D. to do things that ought to be done. She had never done so previously, for there was no need, M. was able to attend to this. One night the covers fell off, and S. M. made R. D. pull them up. "(How did you do it?) Kept saying 'Pull up the covers! Pull up the covers! Pull up the covers!'" She also said "They used the term 'Real Doris' first in talking with you. Before, between themselves, they called her 'The Doris.'" It is easy to see how, when S. D. and M. got to the point that they were willing to inform me that there was another, the *real* one, they fell into using this term. [514] R. D. came at 10.40, the headache and soreness continuing, so that she slept none too well. *Jan. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 23.* M. came, still troubled for fear that she was not wanted, which S. M. says is a bad thing, affecting the spirits of R. D. unfavorably. I did my best to cheer her, but the smiles would die out, and she would ask if she couldn't write to Dr. Walker and find if there wasn't a place to which R. D. can go until she is well. Once she asked if I would get her a picture-book when I go to town today, and I gladly consented.

Just before R. D. came the 'phone rang, and M. said,

---

513. The probable cause was that R. D. had been worrying for fear that Mrs. P.'s illness was due to her. The foundations of it, except for a constitutional tendency to insomnia, had indeed been laid by caring for S. D. After the removal the following summer to the dry climate of Southern California, the insomnia was gradually relieved, and the other symptoms disappeared.

514. In the same manner, after I learned who was the Real Doris, M. began to distinguish "the other Doris", as she sometimes called her, as "the Sick Doris".



"There's the 'phone, papo." It happened that just after R. D. came the 'phone rang again, and I heard, in M.'s voice and intonation, the same words, "There's the 'phone, papo." I turned to see R. D.'s face expressing bewilderment at first, and then embarrassed amusement. She said, "I didn't say that, papa. It was just as if I was sitting by and heard someone else say it." S. M. says, "It wasn't M.; she wasn't near. It was purely automatic." I was gone a large part of the day, and again in the evening. As Mrs. P. and I entered, M. came and asked if I had bought her anything. I gave her a picture-book intended for children of five or six years. She was pleased and many times said, "I think that is a *nice* book. That is a boo'ful book." Last night I arranged with S. M. that when I should say "Yankee Doodle" she should slowly flex the right foot twice then the left foot quickly three times, after the fashion of the bass-drum beat to that tune. But instead, this evening I hummed a bit of the tune, and the movements were made as agreed upon, M. noticing nothing. As thoughts do not pass from S. M. to M., here was a proof of co-consciousness a little more striking, though no more convincing, than those which I see scores of times each week.

R. D. came at 10.55, and slept uneasily. The headache has never intermitted. It is observable that S. R. D. also is affected by M.'s moods. When M. was sad, S. R. D. was ir-responsive. The picture-book made M. feel better, and to-night, when I kissed S. R. D. she laughed, and when R. D. woke in the morning she found a plug of cotton in one nostril, another in the corner of her eye, two pushed back of her ear, another in her hair, and none in her ears. A small quantity of cotton is kept under the pillow for R. D.'s use, and evidently S. R. D. had gotten that and used it up. *Jan. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 24.* This morning, following her pleasant mood of last night, M. did not come. On the return of Mrs. P. and myself from an evening engagement, at 11.10 p. m. we found M., and she said that when she came "the little hand was where it is now", and "the other hand was here", pointing



to the figure 11. R. D. had been out continuously exactly 24 hours, from 10.55 last evening to the same this evening. This is the longest continuous period that she has had for 20 years. R. D. came at 12.25, the headache still continuing. *Jan. 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 25.* M. did not come in the morning, but was here nearly half an hour in the afternoon. Mrs. P. and I were gone a large part of the day, and in the evening I attended a banquet, returning at midnight. When I entered a shocking condition of things was found. There was Mrs. P., look-sad and worn, and there at a little distance sat M. in a chair, her face disfigured with weeping, her skirt half torn away and hundreds of little pieces scattered about the floor. As I approached she put her hands to her face and sobbed, "I want to go away from here." This phrase, and others like it, she repeated unnumbered times during the next 20 minutes. "I don't want to stay here. I want to go away from this place. I'm going to take the D. away. I'll take her away and kill her." I finally learned the story from Mrs. P. and S. M. M. had come at 8.30, and was tired and nervous from the start, R. D. having been up late the two previous evenings, and having had an unexampled period out the day before. She began to answer every remark of "the mother" with "Shut up!" Mrs. P. tried to induce her to go to bed, but she refused, and attempts to amuse her were unsuccessful. Mrs. P., who is not well, showed symptoms of increasing nervousness, and M. began to tear her own dress a little. Mrs. P. attempted gently to restrain her, and M. became refractory and tore it the more. It is almost superhuman not to show some irritation when M. gets into a "tantrum." I have repeatedly given utterance to a remark at such times which has made matters worse, and at this point Mrs. P. let out an exclamation of despair. Then M. began to scream and "take on" generally. This condition of things had continued for nearly two and a half hours. In some respects it was the worst tantrum that M. has had in the presence of either of us. At length, exhausted, M. went to sleep in her chair, only to wake time after time and sob out her intentions of going away.



At 12.35 I got her to bed. Her pulse was now but 56, for violent emotion has the effect in M. of sending the pulse down. Once in bed she sank into slumber so deep that *she* was bereft of the power of movement. Such movements as were made, were those of S. M., who remarked, "M. is unconscious." S. M. said that M. would wake soon, and we planned what to do in order to turn her mind away from her woes. She advised that I put Dr. Hyslop's present on a chair ready to show her, and this was done. M. woke and began to sob and exclaim, "I want to go away" and I hastily held up the glove-receiver and said, "Isn't this a lovely present which you got!" Her interest was caught, her manner changed as by magic, and for an instant, as she cried, "That is a boo'ful—", but she relapsed to "I want to go—", I quickly held up the present and made another admiring remark about it, she responded in kind, and without a pause returned to her lamentation. The facial expression would abruptly change with the words, and each fresh outbreak of sorrow was shorter than the last, until she fell asleep. Later there was another like period, but shorter. I told her of a present that I was going to get her, and that interested her. Now and then I slept in my chair, until perhaps 4 a. m., when I yielded to the solicitations of both M. and S. M., and went to bed, realizing that it was hopeless to expect R. D. back that night. M. slept most of the time thereafter. *Jan. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 38 m.; M., 4 h. 22 m.*

*Jan. 26.* M.'s emotional storm prevented the return of R. D. today, but she herself showed less effects than I had expected. There were sporadic revivals of the mood of last night with its accompanying exclamations, but by use of devices for diverting her attention and interesting her they were checked, and became less frequent. But she seems not to remember anything about the unpleasant events of last night, all that survives is the recurring mood and the exclamations. As it approached noon, to my delight M. proposed telephoning Mrs. P., who had gone to Dr. Walker's office, asking her to buy her a string of beads at a five and ten cent store. Mrs. P. responded that she had intended to buy



something, and would buy this, and M. clapped her hands with delight. M. was pleased with the present, and talked gaily with "the mother." Nearly all the day she was in surprisingly good humor, though ever and again dropping into the mood wherein she would jingle nickels and coppers and ask if that was enough to take her away and how far it would take her. In the evening she told Mrs. P. that she owed her [M.] a nice new dime. Now the dime was promised last night conditioned on M.'s going to bed. She remembered the offer of the dime but nothing about the circumstances attending it. All the day I was careful not to suggest by word or look that I was sorry that M. was here so long, as I fear that I may have grieved M. hitherto in this way to the detriment of the case. M. is more sensitive in this regard than formerly, on the ground that she has lost the power to come or go voluntarily, and erroneously fears that she is unjustly blamed. After supper M. proposed that I read aloud to the mother, and said that she would go to sleep, which she did, the moment that I began to read. But in her sleep she was very active, and acutely conscious of various happenings outside, felt of my book to see if I was reading in the particular one which she had prescribed, listened to every sound, picked two of my pockets, counted the money in one pocket and announced the sum—20 cents—correctly, separated a penny from the money in the other pocket and announced that it was for the missionaries, pretended to lose the coins and to feel great anxiety, then played finding them again, hugging them with coos and shakes of the head as if defying anyone to take them from her—going through a kaleidoscope-play all the while asleep. Both awake and asleep she showed a revival of individual energy consequent upon the exercise of will in the tantrum. S. M. was agreeably surprised that M. got through the day so well, but had no idea when R. D. would return. At 10.30, however, she reported that M. had sunk into such a state of sleep that R. D. would not be able to return this night. I woke M. by blowing gently in her eye, and asked her to call me if she lay awake or could feel R. D. near, and to remember



that I was at hand. She said, "Yes, if I see cats there",—pointing to a corner, "I will call you. I see cats sometimes, waiting to catch Sporty." When I had gone to my room M.'s voice was heard, "I'm asleep", and then the very different voice of S. M., "She is really asleep." M. slept soundly through the night, and much quieter, physically, than R. D. does. *Jan. 25-26: o alt.: M., 24 h, arbitrarily set off.*

*Jan. 27.* M. woke at about 8.20 in good humor, ate breakfast in bed, read aloud rather well, and appeared much more mature than she has for months. Her pronunciation is less infantile, her understanding is clearer, she can tell time, she can count, and in general appears more like a girl of 10 than one of 6 or 8. Presently she said that R. D. was near, and lay down with her head and shoulders on my knees, and slept. S. M. assured me that what M. had so quickly gained in psychic powers was only a "spurt" and would as quickly vanish. There has been no mention of going away this morning, but M. must be carefully guarded for a day or two, until this new "fixed idea" is utterly banished. Before going to sleep M. suggested that I conceal from R. D. that she has lost a day. She said that if I kept the dinner-program out of sight R. D. would probably think that the dinner which I attended was last night. "She often gets mixed up about the days, and it seems to her as if she had lost a day, when she knows that she hasn't. She will think so this time." S. M. agreed that this was a good idea. At just 10 a. m. S. M. announced that R. D. was at hand. "I woke M., and she exultantly shouted, 'The R. D. is here!' and bounced with delight. R. D. came, at once looked at the clock, and said 'What! ten o'clock? And I was gone last night! (Yes, you had been up late nights, and got so tired that it made you nervous.) When did you get home? (I came away before the banquet was through, but did not get here until midnight.)'" She was entirely unsuspecting of the facts, and appeared sprightly and well. In the afternoon she remarked, "It is queer how I get mixed up about the days. I did not know it was Saturday. Every once in a while it seems to me as though I had lost a day." Again



she remarked that she could always tell by the way she came whether the A phase had been merry or angry or sad.

Late in the afternoon R. D. showed signs of weariness, and I put her to sleep by suggestion. Then S. R. D. appeared and clawed at my lips, although it was far from the time of the evening ceremony, and extracted imaginary ear-plugs from her ear and from behind it, [515] handed them to me and then subsided. R. D. woke in 3 or 4 minutes.

In the evening I chanced to speak to M. of fairies when we were alone for the moment, and she said to me in the manner of one who imparts a secret, "I know there are fairies. Some of the kids at the Row said they didn't believe in 'em, but I know there are fairies." I put on an interested look, "(Do you?) Yes, because I have talked with a fairy." As I still showed respectful interest, she went on, "There was a sunflower in our backyard, and there was a fairy in it. I asked her if she had eyes and nose and mouth and she said 'Yes, but you can't see them.' And then I wanted to be a sunflower, and I asked her if I couldn't be, and she said, 'No, you must be satisfied to be a girl and be good.' I never told anybody that before. The kids at school said, 'Ow! there's no such things as fairies.' And I never let on." By this time M. was a picture,—her eyes luminous, her finger uplifted, her manner so secret and confidential. "And I used to try and talk to the pansies, but they never said a word. I sink they were afraid, the kids were so noisy. There was a cat that used to curl up under that sunflower. And I sink the fairy thought it was me, and said sings, because once in a while that cat would look up. And once I curled up like the cat under the flower, but mother called me away." S. M. comments, "The cat looked up and M. thought it looked up because a fairy in the sunflower spoke, but it really looked up at the birds flying over. And M. did curl around the sunflower, and tried to make her head and feet meet."

M. was reading a list of names of people. She came to

---

515. Here her memory, or some equivalent link, reaches back to the night of Jan. 23-24, when she put one of the plugs behind her ear.



Beer and then to Bliss, and said, "Beer and Bliss go well together." She also remarked, contemplatively, "Poor S. D.! How I want her back. . . I don't want her *back*, but all of her."

It appears that M. watched all day, while R. D. was out, another evidence of the temporary revival of her energies, due to the emotional storm. As M. was turning over the leaves of a magazine, I said, "You won't watch for many days, will you?" M. replied in the negative, and at the same time the right foot moved in the affirmative. The repetition of the question brought the same double response. After S. M. was able to speak she asserted her opinion that M. would probably watch for several days. [516] R. D. came at 10, and slept fairly well considering that the headache and other trouble still persist. *Jan. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 11 h. 5 m.; M., 10 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 28. Sunday.* M. of course came in the morning, but only for 20 minutes. R. D. went to Sunday school, leaving before the end. When M. came again at 4.27 I found to my surprise and pleasure that M. had not watched today nor did she last night. R. D., back again 5.15 to 9.05, came finally at 9.50, and slept fairly well, though she twisted and turned as usual, according to S. M. *Jan. 27-28: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 17 m.; M., 2 h. 33 m.*

*Jan. 29.* M. was the one to eat what she calls "breket." Last of all she was drinking a cup of coffee. "I must hurry", she said, "or I will lose my coffee; R. D. is comin' fast." She gulped down the coffee, but it was not quite

---

516. But M. did not watch after that day. Note that while there was never any ring of uncertainty in S. M.'s affirmations about what had come under her view in the past, and while she described and redescribed the internal relations and processes with perfect confidence and consistency, yet she did not claim to predict the future of the case beyond the possibility of error. From her observations of the way that things worked in the past she made up her estimates for the future, as anyone would. But she had so much better an opportunity to base her judgments, from her long connection with the case and her immediate insight, that she was able to predict the outcome of situations and experiments far better than the most skillful psychiatrist could have done.



finished when R. D. came with the usual jerk. She complained that she must have had her nose in the coffee.

She felt well except for the headache, which has now lasted for 11 days, and the pain in the bladder, which has lasted about as long. S. M. says, "I saw R. D. do something today that I *never* knew her to do before. She took up a bottle in the medicine closet and tasted of what was in it. I don't know what possessed her to do it. I was surprised at it." And her voice indeed expressed astonishment.

It is curious to observe M. when she sneezes. Awake or asleep she orders me, "Now you quit that." When awake and I deny responsibility, I cannot convince her. She roundly declares that I make her head jerk, how she does not know, but of the fact she is sure. S. M. says that M.'s attention is so taken up by the jerk that she does not notice the noise, and thinks that I have some way of making her head bob. Both say that this interesting information first came from S. D. All the five years before coming to live here S. D. never sneezed, but one day she heard me sneeze and sneezed after me. On their return home, M. asked S. D. what it was that she did, [517] and S. D. replied that she did not know but that Dr. P. somehow made her do it. M. says that *she* never sneezed before coming here. R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. Jan. 28-29: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 32 m.; M., 1 h. 43 m.

Jan. 30. R. D. came at 8.40, and felt well all day save for the troubles before mentioned. She spent part of the day in the city, and was out to 9.15 p. m. except for an interval of about a minute. Mrs. P. has felt pretty well for the last three days, and for about that time M. made no more allusions to a desire to go away. But at about 6 p. m. Mrs. P. began to feel ill, and I could see that R. D. was worrying.

R. D. has begun to practise typewriting, taking it up of her own initiative. The effects upon her were carefully watched, for I did not suppose it would be good for her, but she likes it, and no bad effects are perceptible. She is

---

517. M. being underneath and "away" (see pages 547-8, 551, 606, etc.) obscurely heard and felt the commotion of the sneeze.



troubled about her spelling, which is not so bad, yet could be improved, as no doubt it will be. M. says, "I can spell better than the R. D." S. M. says that this was a fact, but is so no longer, which is very evident. M. is probably reverting to her spelling at the age of, say eight years. R. D. came at 10.20 and did not sleep so well as usual, the worry about Mrs. P. probably being the cause. *Jan. 29-30: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 19 m.; M., 1 h. 56 m.*

*Jan. 31.* Mrs. P. continued to look ill, and M.'s talk about going away began again. So it is pretty evident that it is the reverberation of R. D.'s worry. R. D. came at 9.40, looking distressed. At 11 she remarked that she had a terrible headache, and 20 minutes later M. came, looking at me fearfully as though she thought I would blame her. After a short sleep M. continued to gaze to one side in an abstracted fashion, and S. M. explains that she was pretending that she was playing among the flowers, and had found a kitten. M. over and over asked if she might call up Dr. Walker and ask if he had a place where she might go? When she slept S. M. was opposed to allowing M. to do this, but M. grew so insistent and near crying that at last I called up the doctor and let her speak. She told him that the mother was sick and she wanted to go away, etc. He of course told her that she must not go, and she came back and burst into tears and sobs. Fortunately Mrs. P. began to feel and look better, with happy effect, and presently M. was laughing and talking cheerily. In the evening Mrs. P. and I were out, and a former girl friend of R. D.'s called on her by invitation. The young lady was wearing a waist which S. D. had elaborately embroidered and given her, together with the most of her wardrobe, when she had come to the conclusion that she was going to die. R. D. asked her where she got the waist, and the girl promptly lied, probably because R. D. has told her that she has forgotten much that happened in her nervous illness and the young woman naturally feels a little awkward about having accepted so many articles in the circumstances. Not only did R. D. think that she recognized the waist from the recovered memories of S. D., but both M. and S. M. positively asserted that she was right.



R. D. came at 10.55. Last night S. R. D. uttered some words unintelligibly which S. M. thought were words uttered by M. about going away. Tonight she spoke several words directly after R. D. went to sleep, in a hoarse voice, very unlike that of R. D., and with obscure articulation, like that of a deaf mute who has been taught to talk. S. M. afterwards said that she thought they were the words last uttered by R. D. before going to sleep. The headache and pain still continue. *Jan. 30-31: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 59 m.; M., 4 h. 36 m. Daily average time out of R. D. during January, 1912, 19 h. 53 m.*

*Feb. 1.* M. has not retreated to where she was before Jan. 25th. Though she does not watch, she reads fluently and uses only part of her babyish words. Her manner, too, is older than it was before the disaster. S. M. says that M. has disliked Dr. Walker since she 'phoned him, and that the feeling has somewhat affected R. D.

At 10.18 p. m. R. D. came, and I gave her the goodnight kiss before she fell asleep. S. R. D. then dug at my lip until it bled, I kissed her and she laughed and commenced extracting non-existent plugs from her ears and handing them to me. Soon after I had retired to my room Mrs. P. heard M.'s word "papo." To my astonishment I found, on entering, that it was not M. but S. R. D. who had uttered the word. After I had returned to my room she began to repeat "papo", first at long intervals but finally settling down to about 12 or 15 times a minute, generally in a curious sing-song manner, "pa-po-ho-ho", with occasional brief periods when the word would be uttered in a shorter and more insistent way. The voice was deep and hollow, from the chest, utterly unlike that of R. D., M. or S. M. For 30 or 40 repetitions it would gradually swell, and then as gradually sink. Suddenly she began to cough, and kept coughing as though something were in her throat. I was still more alarmed, went in and turned on the light, and found that her fingers were thrust into her mouth, almost into her throat. She moved her head under the stimulus of the light, and her features writhed in the odd, twisted smile. In vain I said, "Sleep! sleep!", which always has the effect of sending R. D., when it is



plainly she who is predominant, into deeper slumber. Then I said sharply, "Wake!", and R. D. woke, wondering why I had wakened her, and remarking, "I was in a sound sleep." I explained that she was coughing, and she asked for some water. I put her to sleep and went to my room, but as I turned away, S. R. D. clutched, pulled imaginary plugs and sat up. Again the "pa-po-ho-ho's" began, interspersed with coughing. S. M. says that through both series S. R. D. was feeling in her mouth as though she were pulling the words out. My interpretation is that feeling the motion of the vocal organs, and hearing the sounds issue, she was puzzled, and was investigating the phenomenon. During the old conversation-recitals and soliloquies her mind was presumably absorbed by memory-imagery. Suddenly the sounds ceased, and soon after R. D., as it proved, went to the bath-room. Not long after she lay down again the voice of M. was heard, I went to her and she inquired if it was "time for breket." Being told that it was long before breakfast time, she exclaimed "What am I here for now?" and went to sleep. [518] S. M. now discussed with me the new development, and said: "It got on my nerves. Then I woke the R. D. up, and when she came back from the bath-room she could not sleep so I made M. come. (How did you do it?) By making a commotion in the brain. I suppose I became agitated and that made M. agitated. I thought that she would wake feeling cross, but she didn't. (How did you make R. D. come before that?) The same way. (The same way?) The first time I directed my mind to R. D., the second to M. . . . (What do you think that this new business means?) I don't think there is any danger of S. R. D.'s developing. But I think that it is this headache which has lasted so long and which is wearing on R. D. which has caused it. The S. R. D. used to walk around and talk all night and stand up in bed and all that, you know. (Yes, but her talk then was all reminiscences from the past. I don't like her to pick up new

518. On Feb. 2d M. spontaneously wrote, "Last night I woke up and I thought it must be morning I called to my papo and he came and what do you think I thought it was bretet time and I got stung for it was night."



things.) I know, but I don't think that you need to worry about this. It is only temporary, probably. If you can get R. D. into deeper sleep the sounds will cease." When a little later, the nearness of R. D. was announced, I blew into M.'s eyes and woke her, then called R. D. She was surprised to find me there again, and asked, "What is it?" I told her a little fib about having tripped over something and disturbed her. She slept, and I then reiterated such expressions as "Sleep deep! Sleep well! Sleep!" There followed no sound or movement from S. R. D. after this. *Jan. 31 Feb. 1: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 37 m.; M., 2 h. 46 m.*

*Feb. 2.* S. M. says that R. D. has forgotten the gray skirt which M. tore to pieces. "I thought she would, because I remembered that she forgot another garment that disappeared. She has once or twice had a confused feeling of there having been another skirt, that is all. It is because she is changing so that her memory acts strangely. The mother spoke of her visit to the doctor"—which took place on the "lost day",—"and R. D. tried to think what she did the day that the mother went, but she couldn't and finally gave it up and put the matter aside."

R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. I resolved not to kiss her goodnight, nor to even touch her hand, on the theory that the last tactual impressions, as illustrated also by the putting cotton in her ears, rouses a motor reaction in S. R. D. R. D. was so sleepy that she probably did not notice the omission, and I saw that her hands were under the covers. Not a sound from S. R. D. The hands moved under the covers but directly subsided. *Feb. 1-2: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 44 m.; M., 4 h. 38 m.*

*Feb. 3.* S. M. says that in consequence of the headache and pain, still continuing, R. D. makes no progress now, but does not regress. On the other hand, M. about holds her own, but does not advance. When the headache ceases, R. D. will probably resume progress. This condition of things, S. M. thinks, makes S. R. D. more capable of development, but with the present procedure there is nothing to fear. R. D. came at 10.05 for the night, and I followed the precautions of last night. There was no plucking, no pulling of non-existent



ear-plugs, only one little chuckle from S. R. D. and that was all. *Feb. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Feb. 4. Sunday.* R. D. went to Sunday school and returned before it was ended. In the afternoon, while M. was out, S. M. "went away" for half an hour, the longest time that I have known this strange state to last. M. slept with hardly a movement, and directly after the jerk which announces S. M.'s return, woke. In the evening R. D. went the moment that Mrs. P. and I touched the front door on our return.

R. D. came for the night at 10.05, and, following the same precautions as on the last two nights, S. R. D. was not in evidence, except that she took her hand from beneath the cover, extracted one imaginary plug and handed it to me. R. D. slept uneasily. S. M. thinks that as soon as M. resumes her retreat it will be necessary to keep R. D. from Sunday school, because M. will be nearer and R. D. will be nervous. *Feb. 3-4: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Feb. 5.* R. D. accompanied me to the Registrar's office and did some work there, then shopped while I called on Dr. Walker. He suggests that the headache may be due to some anniversary memory. I entirely agree that the headache is not of organic origin, and his theory is excellent, only inquiries reveal no important event of which the date when the headache began was the anniversary or near-anniversary. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. and precautions observed. S. R. D. made no sound, and no movement except a slight one of the hands under the covers. *Feb. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 45 m.*

*Feb. 6.* M. has been the one to eat breakfast, ever since the emotional storm of Jan. 23, always taking it in bed. After a busy day on the part of R. D. at home and in the city, M. came in the evening so tired that she went to bed without having her feet rubbed, saying, "Baby is sleepy." S. M. is strenuously opposed to the anniversary theory of the origin of the headache.

R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. and as an experiment I kissed her goodnight as she came, not when she went to sleep but some two minutes earlier, in order to see if the impression



would be carried over the interval, during which I got matters in the room arranged for the night. Apparently it was, for S. R. D. endeavored more than she has done to get her hands from beneath the covers, and once said "papo." M. reported in the morning that R. D. slept so poorly, tossing about, "that I thought I was going to come." She did not watch, but the unusual movements got down to her consciousness and she thought about them. *Feb. 5-6: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 29 m.; M., 3 h. 19 m.*

*Feb. 7.* R. D. appeared gloomy when she came at 9.17 a. m., and her head ached still worse in the afternoon. M. began to show signs of nervousness, though still apparently jolly. She commenced a series of taps, which were, due to her anæsthesia, oftener blows, on my face, head, anywhere, at the same time asking, "Does that hurt you?" Although my own head was aching and the acts were very annoying, I should have preserved an expression of placidity, for it is jumping from the frying pan into the fire to look annoyed under such circumstances, as I suppose I at length did. This always, by a sort of psychical chemistry, puts M. into a state wherein she seems helpless to discontinue the objectionable movements. Now her face took on a sort of hypnotized look, and the blows beat harder than before. Then I committed a blunder which was utterly inexcusable considering my acquaintance with the case; for a second I allowed anger to appear in my face, and gripped her wrists, certainly not sufficiently to hurt her even if her sensation had been normal, but only to restrain her. The effect was electrical and startling. She folded her hands over her breast, her face froze with horror, and her eyes seemed to see through and beyond me, as she answered not a word and shrunk at all my efforts to soothe her. When at last she slept S. M. read me a calm and philosophical lecture, reproving me for the impolitic course of allowing irritation to show in my face. Successive naps wore off M.'s mood only partly before R. D. came at 9.50. It was interesting to see the stony looks of M. dissolve into the calm expression of R. D., though no doubt the latter's bad sleep was partly caused by the incident. S. R. D. moved her hands and uttered M.'s last words, "I don't want



to be here", in the hoarse, thick way which characterizes her few deliverances. S. R. D. appears to be a vague, inchoate scrap of "personality", which only briefly emerges from R. D. when the latter is sleeping, and hovers, as a patch of fog might emerge and hover over a pond. *Feb. 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h. 50 m.*

*Feb. 8.* I was away much of the day. In accordance with my request, R. D. 'phoned Dr. Walker. He asked how she was and she answered, "About the same." He undoubtedly misunderstood her, for he replied, "I am glad that you are so much better", but she thought he was humoring her, and was disgusted, remarking, "He must think that I am a fool." She was not in good spirits in the early evening, but M. came at 8.10, not other than usual. Mrs. P. was absent until 10.05, and M. slept most of the time until 9.50, then staid awake and became gloomy in her turn, frequently asking, "When *will* the mother come back?" When Mrs. P. got in M.'s good spirits came back, and R. D. was here in seven minutes. M. had to see and kiss the mother first. S. R. D. moved her hands under the covers, and after I left got them out and held them up, then became still. *Feb. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 7 m.; M., 3 h. 20 m.*

*Feb. 9.* In the morning M. asked who it was who walked about just after R. D. went to sleep last night. I told her that it was the mother. Had M. been out at the time, waking or sleeping she would have known who it was by the step. But she was only near, as appears by her testimony. "(Then you were watching?) No I wasn't. If I had been watching, it would have been the R. D. who heard, but she was too sound asleep to hear her, I heard her myself, for I was near." M. had not entirely forgotten Wednesday evening, for she said, "You gripped my wrists just like Mr. Fischer used to do, and you looked in your eyes the way he did."

R. D. was feeling better psychically today, probably because M. is jolly again. S. M. tells me that the pain in the region of the bladder is mostly gone, but the headache keeps on. In the evening R. D. was in a mood for reminiscencing, which I encouraged, because the interest keeps her out



longer. Not until 10.22 did M. come, and immediately she ordered an apple, in stentorian tones. It was so late that I had expected her to come tired, and perhaps to fall over asleep, though she has not done this since the disastrous night which checked her retreat. But she was vigorous and lively. S. M. says that M.'s coming in the morning is responsible for her being so strong at later appearances in the day, but still insists that she is not redeveloping any.

R. D. came at 11.30 and at once slept. I attempted to put her into sound slumber and to dictate dreams about woods and flowers. S. R. D. made slight movements of the hands only. But R. D., though she slept better than of late, did not have the suggested dreams. *Feb. 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h. 18 m.*

*Feb. 10.* R. D. now has three canaries, and S. M. reports that the psychic effects of her pleasure in them are favorable. R. D. came for the night at 9.40, and slept fairly well. S. R. D. only made slight manual movements. Tonight, and for many nights, [519] R. D. has had the old dream of seeing her mother and explaining to her "Mother I thought you were dead. I would never have gone up there if I had known that you were living", etc. She has not told me this, but S. M. informed me. *Feb. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Feb. 11. Sunday.* R. D. attended the first part of her class. In the evening her friend Ella called on her, and I was at home, not being well. R. D. had entered the bath-room just before, and something fell on her and made her go. At almost the same instant that M. came the door-bell rang, and R. D. returned. The friend, who had been expected, stayed until 9.40, and I was on tenter-hooks towards the last, since R. D. had been out 23 hours in the last 24, and was plainly weary. But she maintained herself until the caller had gone and she had gotten nearly upstairs. M. stumbled and nearly fell on the landing, but I was there to catch her. M. asked me, "What happened in the bath-room? Something hap-

---

519. The renewed series began with the night following the visit to the invalids, and the starting of the long headache.



pened." R. D. had come so suddenly and gone so soon that M. had not been able to get from her thought the cause, which I learned from R. D. the next day. M. also said, "The R. D. came and pushed me back." That is, M. did not go in of herself, she no longer has power voluntarily to go in or come out, but R. D. subliminally heard the door-bell and realized that it was her friend arriving, and had power to assert herself. The rôles are reversing in this respect. M. cannot any more even retard or hasten the coming of R. D. by pure volition, but she can, as it were, brace herself against certain formulæ, and accomplish this. If Mrs. P. is out M. generally cannot be induced to take the final sleep which will bring R. D., but stays awake to get her kiss from the mother, and this delays the alternation. So of late, she feels that she must have breakfast, or at least a cup of coffee before she goes, and can hold on for a time through the auto-suggestion, the not so much desire as obsessing notion. And still, if R. D. should meddle with M.'s drawer, the latter would be stirred up, as by an act of aggression. R. D. came at 10.30 and slept fairly well. *Feb. 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Feb. 12.* Little to record. R. D. came at night at 10.10, and her sleep was again pretty good. *Feb. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 43 m.; M., 1 h. 57 m.*

*Feb. 13.* M. continues in good humor; never says anything more about going away, except to assert that she would not do such a thing. R. D. came at 10.37 and slept as usual of late. *Feb. 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 17 m.*

*Feb. 14.* In the evening R. D. pointed out some beautiful embroidery on an article as that of S. D., and remarked that she herself could not do such good work. As she was speaking, M. came and immediately said, "I did that, the S. D. made me. (Could you have done it if she hadn't made you?) No, and S. D. couldn't herself." In other words the most exquisite work which is called that of S. D. was really a joint product of S. D. and M., done in that rapt state during which S. D. saw nothing but her fingers and her needle. M. also said, "I almost came when Sporty [a canary] was standing on the candy in our Christmas plate." I was present when



this occurred and was afraid it would bring M. Afterwards I asked S. M. "When the bird perched on the candy how did M. know it. Was she roused enough to see through R. D.'s eyes?) No, she only saw the reflection of her thoughts. (Yet she does not watch?) No. But the R. D. thought when the bird lit there, just as she thinks of anything else of M.'s, that that was a forbidden object. She didn't know that she thought it, but that thought moved underneath, and that roused M. and she got to know what was going on."

R. D. came at 10.20, and I forgot and resumed the old practice of kissing her goodnight, and did it at once, as she is likely to go to sleep in an instant. She did not, so I got things ready in the room, turned out the fire, raised the curtain as she wants it, put an extra cover within reach, etc., occupying perhaps two minutes. The effect was that S. R. D. got her hands from under the covers, held her hands out to me, and sat up in bed. My saying "sleep! sleep!" has no effect upon *her*. I left the room, but presently approached the door and looked in, and at that instant S. R. D. laughed in a chuckling fashion. I hastily retreated. S. M. tells me, "She listened for you, and was so pleased when you came to the door." *Feb. 13-14: alt.: R. D., 21 h. 46 m.; M., 1 h. 57 m.*

*Feb. 15.* M. informed me at her "breket" that "The R. D. had her dream about my running away again. (Did' she? How many times has she had it?) 'Bout four or five. (Did she run after you?) How *could* she?" M. spoke with a kind of reproachful scorn. I judge from the feelers I put out that M. knows nothing about the dreams of being herself with a little girl who looks like her when she was little, but only of the R. D. dreams of running away "when she forgets." M. continued, "I know why she dreamed it. I was thinkin' in the evening that it would be nice to run away. I didn't mean to do it—I won't do it—I only thought about it. (Did R. D. see herself running away?) Yes." M. asked me to remove her family of dolls from their present location, since R. D. nearly knocked one down, and put them in a safer place. "(You won't come when I move them?) Not if *you* move them. But don't let R. D. touch them."



R. D. came for the night at 10.35. *Feb. 14-15: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 18 m.; M., 2 h. 57 m.*

*Feb. 16.* No record save of alternations. R. D. here to 8.05 a. m., then from 9.35 a. m. to 7.15 p. m., coming for the night at 10.20. *Feb. 15-16: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 10 m.; M., 4 h. 35 m.*

*Feb. 17.* She has a cold together with the period, little pain in the abdominal region, but soreness of the chest and very frequent and severe pains like stabs, seeming to begin in the upper part of the back and to terminate in the chest in front. Probably it is in some way psychic in origin, but is none the less distressing. [520] *Feb. 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 30 m.; M., 6 h. 50 m.*

*Feb. 18. Sunday.* She staid at home today. The headache still continues, but the pain in the bladder seems to have disappeared.

Owing to pressure of work, no record was made except of alternations until Feb. 22, and none systematically until the 26th.

*Feb. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Feb. 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 33 m.*

*Feb. 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 53 m.; M., 2 h. 44 m.*

*Feb. 21-22: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m.*

*Feb. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 8 m.; M., 2 h. 27 m.*

*Feb. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

---

520. It was not until occupied with the task of compiling the records, more than two years later, that I observed the probable significance of the entry of Feb. 17th, constituting another indication of the psychic origin of the physical sensations of this period. "Soreness of the chest and very frequent and severe pains, like stabs, seeming to begin in the upper part of the back and to terminate in the chest in front." This is the only entry specifying such particulars in connection with any menstrual period. Remembering that at another time my coughing produced pains in her chest, which S. M. explained as due to her fears that I might contract pneumonia, which the attending physician had pronounced the malady from which her mother died, it is to be conjectured that thoughts of her mother's dying induced by the constantly cherished plans in reference to the grave psychically produced pains resembling those from which she believed her mother suffered, and in the same region. See dreams about mother under date of Feb. 10.



*Feb. 24-25: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

It was, I think, on Thursday, Feb. 22nd, that I proposed to Dr. Walker that some medicine be given R. D. for the headache. He said that he could prescribe something to remove the headache, but it would be likely to produce other effects not so desirable. I urged giving something as an experiment, if only for psychic suggestion. He gave me some tablets, which however did not stop the headache, though they may have deadened it somewhat. One being taken later in the day than he intended may have been responsible for her lying awake for hours on Sunday night.

On Friday evening S. M. casually told me that R. D. had been planning to fix up her mother's grave, plant flowers, etc., in the spring. I inquired further and dug up the significant facts. (1) That she is planning to care for her mother's grave. (2) That she means to take a morning walk there every day. (3) That she has thought about these plans probably every day for more than a month. The next day, Saturday, Feb. 24th, I got from R. D. a statement of her plans, and told her that I thought it not best for her to carry them out. And on Sunday in spite of the broken sleep of the night before, *the headache left her* the first time in thirty-eight days. In the evening she listened too long to reading aloud, and some headache returned. But what made it go? My theory is that it was causing R. D. to disclose and partly relinquish her plan. On the night of the mother's death, the arrival of S. D. was heralded by a terrible pain in the head. The headache of the last five weeks has always been in the left side of the brain. Was that pain on the left side also? On Sunday evening I questioned S. M. and learned these additional facts. (4) The pain that came just before the advent of S. D. on the night of the mother's death *was* on the left side. (5) R. D.'s plan in regard to the cemetery was first formed on the way back from the visit to the sick girls, [521] was suggested by the sight of the funeral procession, and the headache, as we have seen, quickly followed. S. M., now interested and in agreement with my theory gave an illustration applying to the case of how psychic effects

---

521. See page 870.



come to R. D. from old causes. "You know that as it grows towards evening the R. D. often sits and looks out of the window with a far-away expression. She feels like going out, going away somewhere, she doesn't know why. But the reason is that that is the hour when S. D. frequently started for the cemetery. It usually was M. who got there, and she would sit down beside her mother's grave." [522]

Sunday evening I found that M., who has been able to tell time ever since the night of Jan. 23-24, was again unable to do so. "The little hand was where it is now when I came", she said, "and the other was straight up, by which I understood that she came at 9 o'clock. Evidently she has already begun the retrogression that S. M. prophesied would take place as soon as the headache disappeared. Yet the head aches a little still. When we were alone together M. put on her most naive expression, with sparkling eyes, and mouth opening wide and tongue at times protruding (as is often the case with little girls when they are eagerly talking), and with uplifted finger emphasizing every clause, she said, "That D. is going to do something tomorrow morning. She is going to come *herself*, and stay. Won't that be splendid, papo? (Yes, it will. But how do you know?) Because she got to

---

522. Of course it would be folly to regard this headache as having been produced by "imagination", though only more obviously foolish than to regard the major symptoms of hysteria as the product of imagination, as "shamming" or imposture, as a large proportion of physicians are still disposed to do when actual cases are brought to their notice. The patient in this case was ignorant of the relation between her plans to visit and care for her mother's grave and the headache, but so long as she cherished the former was powerless to check the sequel. Even as a phonograph not only renews the words once spoken but renews them with the very timbre in which they were spoken, so daily thinking about the mother's grave not only renewed the thoughts and emotions which she had experienced at the hour of that mother's death but also brought back with it something of the pain-accompaniment in the same cerebral region. Owing to the imperfect record kept during the last days of the headache it is necessary to supplement it by saying that inducing R. D. partially to abandon her plans of visiting the grave every day, etc., was almost at once followed by partial cessation of the headache, and that when, a few days later, she was persuaded fully to abandon those resolves, the headache entirely disappeared. Of course occasional causes would thereafter induce brief headaches, as they had done before the extraordinary seizure.



thinking tonight, and she got real mad with herself. She said 'There is no sense in my losing so much time in the morning. I'm not going to do it any longer. When papa gets up tomorrow morning, I am going to wake, and I am going to stay, and get up.' M.'s manner expressed delight, and admiration of R. D.'s resolve. She went on, her voice hushed to confidential pitch, her manner bewitchingly engaging and child-like. "That D. is going to get an idea, and when she gets it, it's skidoo Margaret! I tell you—papo, when she finds out she can do what she says she will she is going to get an *idea*. She is going to say that I shan't come so long in the evening, and then she is going to say that I shan't come at all in the evening, and then, when she succeeds, she'll go on farther, and I won't be able to come when she's sick. I'll be skidoo Margaret! She'll be well then. Won't that be *fine*, papo?" I wish that M. could have been photographed. Her attitude and expression, that uplifted finger, and what could not be photographed, her words and tones, were simply delightful. When M. went to sleep, which she usually does as soon as her head touches the pillow, S. M. began to speak of the scene just over. "Wasn't it delicious?", she said, "her tone—so confidential, and her finger lifted up, and her manner—almost tragic! I almost laughed out. If I had done so I would have scared her. O what a child it is! But she is right; somehow she feels it. And she is pleased. She wants the R. D. to get well."

Feb. 26. R. D. succeeded in staying this morning, and was quietly happy over her success. I reported to Dr. Walker who agreed that the secret of the mysterious headache is discovered, and that R. D. should be induced entirely to abandon her plan in reference to her mother's grave. While alone in the house R. D. went to sleep and woke herself. Later she joined me in the Registrar's office, but the heat brought a little headache, and we came home.

When M. came in the evening she crowed over R. D.'s success, and said, "I told you so." For some months M., after going to sleep in the evening, seldom wakes until I wake her for R. D.'s return, and makes few manifestations in her sleep as a rule. But if she sleeps in the daytime, she is



still active and talkative in her sleep. I find that she has forgotten her relatives except as persons whom she once knew. She can tell the old stories about them glibly enough, but if asked where Ada, for instance, is now, her face takes on a puzzled, almost scared look, as she struggles with the notion that Ada has a present existence. When I say, "Ada has gone away off" she seizes upon the suggestion with relief. "Yes, Ada has gone away", she says, and immediately turns to other and less troublesome subjects. R. D. came at 9.40 and slept well. *Feb. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Feb. 27.* All three of us were to go in the afternoon to a town 22 miles distant, where I was to speak in the evening. Mrs. P. was prevented from going, but urged R. D. to go, and it was so decided. I advised her to take the precaution to leave the church for a while during the service and walk around in order to counteract nervousness, and she did so with good results. It was nearly 11 when we got back to the house, yet she did not appear weary. Considering how long she had been out, the journey and the service, it was surprising that she maintained herself for full half an hour after entering the house, finally going at 11.28. She had been out 25 h. 48 m., the record time to date. M. came bright and cheerful, insisted on sitting before the fire for some minutes, and after only 20 minutes, at 11.48, R. D. came for the night. *Feb. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 48 m.; M., 20 m.*

*Feb. 28.* R. D. complains of tossing and turning in the night, and S. M. corroborates the statement. [523] M. did not appear in the morning.

She told Mrs. P. today that she never felt so well before.

---

523. Remember that R. D. had never had any glimmer of memory of the former standing, tossing, and turning which we have ascribed to S. R. D., having been in the habit, on the contrary, of reporting in the morning that she had slept so soundly that she did not believe that she had moved during the night. Her present recollection of tossing and turning shows that these movements are now *hers*. So that, while she supposed that her sleep was worse than it had been, it was really not only somewhat better in point of physical demonstration, but much better mentally, in that it was more fully that of the primary personality.



After an active day she went at 8.37, and returned for the night at 9.25. *Feb. 27-28: 20 h. 49 m.; M., 48 m.*

*Feb. 29.* R. D. maintained herself in the morning, but having a sore and painful eye, probably from M. scratching an itching spot, and understanding a remark addressed to her by me as implying reproach, she went in the afternoon, for about forty minutes.

In the evening I took the Rev. G. B. Richards, who spoke in the church, home with me. He had seen M. and S. M., but not R. D. He talked judiciously with R. D., not betraying that he was acquainted with the peculiarities of her case, though she may have suspected that he was. At 9.45, with a jerk made more pronounced by her effort to "hold on," R. D. departed, and M. gave a cry, and covered her face with her hands. Soon, however, she was on her knees on the floor, pawing over the contents of her drawer, and showing them in child fashion to the visitor, who manifested exactly the right sort of interest. Then I put her to sleep and S. M. talked. Mr. R. left at 10.45 and R. D. was back at 11.45. She had dreams of being threatened in her old home, but these were caused by hearing someone tell a story in the early part of the evening about a girl being brutally treated by her father. *Feb. 28-29: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 41 m.; M., 2 h. 39 m. Average daily total of R. D. during February, 1912, 21 h. 21 m.*

*Mar. 1.* I shall look forward to tomorrow with apprehension, since it is the anniversary of the day that S. D. left her home to come to us, and especially to the evening, when she came in such a lamentable state of mind owing to the brutal treatment to which she had just been subjected. She herself has observed, "It is March 1st; it was March 2nd when I came over here," so she is likely to renew the thoughts and emotions of a year ago.

M. came in cheerful mood in the evening, and soon began to talk about what R. D. had been doing during the day, alleging that she got her information from thoughts passing through R. D.'s mind during the few minutes following her departure and while she was "going down". M. laughed at R. D.'s forgetfulness. "That girl forgot that she hadn't



finished washing dishes and had to go down-stairs and finish up. She forgets everything." We have now had testimony from all three as to the present inability of R. D. to remember what she is to do or even, oftentimes, to finish what she has begun. R. D. deploras it, S. M. explains it, and M. laughs at it. R. D. is learning to control her tendency to reverie, but her imagination is still liable to go off on short excursions, nothing to the long flights to which it has been accustomed for the most of her lifetime. I saw her stop stock-still, and her face take on an absorbed expression, and persuaded her to tell, though reluctantly, what she was thinking of. Her answer was significant of how reverie promotes dissociation. "My mind went off in two directions. I was planning a dress that I am going to make next week, and then I went on and made that dress one fit for a palace—I imagined that I was a queen. At the same time I was thinking about the work that I was doing."

M. described S. R. D.'s actions of last night. S. M. says that at the same time that R. D.'s thoughts are passing in review just after she goes and while she is descending, underneath them are thoughts or impressions which come from S. R. D., and which M. also gets. Yet S. M. affirms that S. R. D. has no *thoughts*. However, S. M. has her own notion of what deserves the name of thought, as already stated. R. D. has informed me that she must have been restless last night, that she woke once to find the bed-clothes huddled in a heap and held in her arms. Now M. says that S. R. D.—or Sleeping Doris, as she usually calls her—did this, that she heard me speak to the mother in the next room and started to hunt me up, got up and took her bed-clothing with her, [524] but

524. During one season in my own boyhood I performed various somnambule exploits. One morning I woke and found that there was no bed-clothing over me, nor could it be found in the room, but on going down-stairs I saw the covers piled in a chair. I had no recollection of anything except a very faint and dream-like one of going to a certain chest, where bed-clothes were generally kept, but which was empty at the time. The presumption is that, feeling too warm, I gathered all the clothing up in my arms and carrying it down-stairs deposited it in the chair, and that afterwards, feeling cold, I went to the chest in a vain search for something to put over me.

The gathering up of all the covers by S. R. D. was probably not so co-



on reaching the door of her room became afraid to go further, being affected by S. D.'s old fear of going out of her room by night. So she went to bed and huddled the clothes in the manner that R. D. found them on waking. S. R. D. seems to have been unusually active last night, perhaps the effect of the excitement to which M. was subjected by Mr. R.'s call. She tipped over a glass of water on the window-sill and said "papo." "Everything she touches", said M., "she thinks is papo." S. M. added a point which M. did not know. She said that R. D. fell out of bed on the floor, and that S. R. D. associated even the sensation of the fall with papo. Now the fact that S. M. knew of the fall and M. did not is an illustration. M. gets facts regarding R. D., whatever R. D. thinks while "going down", but S. M. is conscious of them while they are occurring, so is able to fill many a hiatus left in M.'s accounts. Also S. M. admits that M. is closer to S. R. D. than herself, and has always known more about her. The question is, has S. R. D. what deserve to be termed thoughts, and if so, does M. know them better than S. M.? S. M. expressed the opinion that R. D. would not be affected by the fact that tomorrow is the anniversary of her leaving home. R. D. came at 10 and slept uneasily. She has a swollen and painful eyelid. *Feb. 29-Mar. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Mar. 2.* There were only the two evening alternations today, according to what is getting to be the rule. R. D. has not yet, since she began to "stay" in the morning, waked prior to my entering the room to light the fire, which fact is an illustration of the tendency to habits which establish themselves from precedent and persist until some disturbance breaks them up only to rearrange themselves in new form.

R. D. sees to my accounts and bills, and finding that my check-book was used up, and knowing that there was an unused one in M.'s drawer, she ventured first to open the drawer a little, then to touch the check-book, and finally to lay hold of it. Feeling no unpleasant effects she came to

herent a result of design even as my own exploit. Perhaps she had been lying in such a way that she could not readily emerge from beneath the covers, and so, removing them in a heap, she chanced to retain her hold upon them.



me and proposed to use that check-book. I demurred, not having witnessed the preliminaries. But she confidently affirmed, "I *know* there is no harm in this. I can do it. I *feel* it." In the evening M. said, "The D. can use that check-book, *papo*." So for the first time the stirring-up of subliminal M. by touching an article claimed by her elicited a judgment of approval, so that M. did not come.

The day passed and R. D. experienced no psychic discomforts from the fact that it is an anniversary of a trying and epochal event in her life. She was not feeling her best, but this is attributable to constipation and allied troubles. She came for the night at 10.03. *Mar. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 56 m.; M., 1 h. 7 m.*

*Mar. 3. Sunday.* R. D. did not go to Sunday school today. She proposed that her name be taken off the list of the class and that she be regarded as a visitor when she attends. - This is good, as it removes one worry, that she may lower the record of the class. The eyelid is still quite troublesome. She came at 9.27 for the night, and slept about as usual. *Mar. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 54 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Mar. 4.* In the forenoon she worked pretty hard. As she herself admits, it is difficult for her to take hold of a job like sweeping and dusting the rooms without feeling impelled to go on and on until she has accomplished all at one stretch; this proclivity comes over to her from S. D. In the evening I read aloud according to a frequent custom. It is evident that she employs little devices to keep the monotony of the voice from tiring her; though keenly interested she takes up a magazine and glances at pictures, etc. M. slept most of her only interval for the day, of just one hour. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Mar. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 48 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Mar. 5.* The Rev. W. M. Cleaveland of Virginia, who made acquaintance with the case a year ago, called today. R. D. went to the door and at once greeted him by name, though *she* had never seen him. She was unable to explain how she knew him. But the process seems to have been a "stirring-up" of M. by the appearance of a former visitor, and the bubbling up of the name to the consciousness of R. D. As S. M. says, "M. was brought near the surface."



After dinner R. D. dressed to go to town, but I induced her to sit down and talk a while first, informing her that Mr. C. knew about her case. She entered, and in about a minute, with the preliminary jerk, M. flashed out, ran and perched upon my knee, and covered her face with her hands, saying between her fingers, "I know who that is. I know him." Soon she was showing him her things and chatting with all her naïveté. Asked why she came she replied, "I wanted to come." [525] I put her to sleep and S. M. talked. The door-bell rang, and M. woke and shouted "Someone at the door! Someone at the door!", and could hardly be quieted. After I returned from seeing the new caller R. D. returned, and said, regretfully, "I don't see what made me forget." When she turned and perceived Mr. C., she said "I thought you had gone." Then she went to town. The visitor expressed himself as being amazed at what he had seen. R. D. came for the night at 10.25. *Mar. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Mar. 6.* In the evening all three of us were in a suburb where I spoke, and got home at about 10. M. came at 10.18, went to sleep at about 10.30 and R. D. came at 10.53. She suffers from her inability to remember to take the pills prescribed for her daily use. *Mar. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 43 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Mar. 7.* R. D. woke at 8.10 in a way which is representative of the last few mornings. She turned her face towards me, her eyes opened with utterly blank expression, in a quarter of a minute they closed, and after a minute of sleep they opened again, this time with the light of intelligence and recognition. She did not remember the "false waking."

R. D. today became possessed by the utterly unfounded notion that Mrs. P. and I were "ashamed of her", owing to our lowering the window curtains in the evening and at some

---

525. This seems to contradict S. M.'s general dictum that M. had lost her power of coming voluntarily. But a general rule sometimes yields exceptions under extraordinary circumstances. Yet I think that in this very instance, while M. subliminally "wanted to come", R. D.'s nervousness in the presence of the stranger helped to bring about the alternation.



other times, according to our life-long custom. [526] This I afterwards learned from S. M. In the evening, while Mrs. P. and I were out, she thought and thought, her imagination reared a lofty structure, and she wept for a considerable time. M. came in our absence, perturbed in consequence of R. D.'s feelings which she only obscurely understood, and when we entered appeared grieved and chillily resentful, though not actively so. She went to sleep soon and I discussed the matter with S. M., after learning all that had happened. She said that I ought to be glad that R. D.'s imagination is getting curbed, and hopeful, because "everything passes away." "She is in a peculiar condition now, as if she were sitting in the middle of all her troubles and worries, looking at them in every direction. This will pass away." I remarked how absurdly causeless this particular worry that we were ashamed of her was, and she said, "You needn't tell *me*. I understand about it." I was anxious that M.'s mood should be changed before R. D. came, but she did not wake, nor did her mood alter in sleep as it sometimes does, and presently S. M. announced, "R. D. is here." That means that R. D. is ready to come, so I woke M. and brought R. D. by taking her hand and pressing it. She said that she was sleepy, and appeared to go to sleep, but really was awake and silently crying. Suddenly M. was back, sobbing. I now comforted her, telling her that nothing was really the matter. She said, "I thought you must have done something to the D." Evidently she did not know what the trouble was, though she had muttered about "curtains" in her sleep. I judge that when R. D. goes in an agitated condition, M. is not able to make much out of her thoughts as she is "going down", exactly as R. D. herself has no memories of S. D.'s more

---

526. Being staid New Englanders by nativity, Mrs. P. and I had always been inclined to draw the shades in the evening, but D. had not. Besides, at the period, for example, when it was necessary to send S. D. away even at the cost of seemingly harsh measures, it would have made a fine scandal at any time of day for the neighbors to have seen me slapping her in the face. Even now M. was sometimes so exuberant or rarely so refractory that it was necessary to draw the curtains to prevent a report of insanity from getting started.



agitated periods. M. was now in good humor and soon told me that R. D. was near. "Don't put the curtain up, though", she warned me, "the D. doesn't want it up any more. Put it up on the other side." I obeyed orders, but after R. D. came proposed putting up her curtain; she said she wanted it down. In about half an hour after Mrs. P. and I had retired the former called me,—M.'s voice had been heard. I found that the unwonted darkness had alarmed R. D., and sent her away. M. was now really merry. She told me that *she* used to be touchy about our pulling curtains down, but that she had gotten over it. She thought I had best say nothing to R. D. about the matter tomorrow as it would be likely to make her cry. But S. M. both before and after this said that I ought to get such foolish imaginings out of R. D.'s thoughts, though how best to accomplish this she could not tell. R. D. coming again, slept poorly, with headache. *Mar. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 7 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Mar. 8.* M. came this morning, and told of the bad night that R. D. had. When the latter came I asked her about her headache. "How did you know that I had a headache?", she asked. "(I know that, and just what kind of a night you had, and about the evening and all you thought and imagined.)" I told her that what she had thought was all a tissue of her imagination, and that she must curb that tendency to make a mountain out of a grain of sand. I did not touch on the subject matter of her thoughts yesterday at all, but spoke in general terms. The effect was happy, and she promised me to forsake such thoughts, and seemed much happier afterwards. She came for the night at 11.15, a few minutes after my return from an engagement.

M. today expressed dislike for Mr. Cleaveland, founded upon the fact that he wanted her to shut her eyes and tell him how many fingers he held up, attempts to "test" her which she would not have anything to do with. *Mar. 7-8: 8 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Mar. 9.* M. was here only for 25 minutes in the evening. R. D. came at 10.15, and slept poorly because M. had eaten an entire cucumber pickle. *Mar. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 25 m.*



*Mar. 10.* Sunday. R. D. did not go to Sunday school, and seemed to fare better in consequence.

M., coming at 9.16 p. m. called for a cracker and cheese, as she often does of late. She is accustomed to say, since I fear that cheese will be bad for her, "You may cut the cheese just as thin as you want to, papo, if it only covers the cracker all over." Then when I have brought up the cracker with a very thin shaving of cheese on it but more than covering the cracker, she says, "O, the cheese goes clear over the edge of the cracker! That is swell!" M. now seldom speaks of anything in the outside world, or indeed, indoor matters, except such as R. D. has been directly concerned with of late. She refers to old memories, but seldom spontaneously to anything of the last year except some occurrence of the very last day or two, which she gets from the thoughts of R. D. while the latter is "going down." Outside of the couple of times when she entertained Mr. Richards and Mr. Cleaveland by showing them the contents of her drawer she has hardly ever touched it for two months, nor has she touched one of her dolls, so far as I can recollect, since Christmas. The other night her eye fell on R. D.'s pocket-book, and she called for the bank and put the money therein, to R. D.'s annoyance the next day. Tonight she told over a story told us earlier by R. D., how the latter missed one of her canaries and found it, guided by the glances of the parrot, behind a window-seat, pinned down by a book. It was a trying moment for R. D., for at first she thought that the bird was dead. M. said, in a tone of amused tolerance, "That girl almost cried, she felt so bad." According to her own testimony, M. came near enough to the surface to know well what was going on, now a rare experience. As soon as the bird had been revived, M. says, she saw no more.

S. M. says that all R. D.'s life the urino-genital tract has been entirely anæsthetic, but that several weeks ago there came, quite suddenly, the beginnings of normal sensibility, and a morning or two ago she as suddenly recognized that there was more, so that she can for the first time tell by her feelings when the bladder becomes distended. Also her sleep is becoming less disturbed by turning and twisting, accord-



ing to her own testimony. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Mar. 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 1 m.; M., 34 m.*

*Mar. 11.* While in the Registrar's office with me R. D. spoke of feeling tired, and her left eye twitched several times, a now infrequent symptom of M. being near the surface. But presently she felt better, insisted on remaining, and did another two hours' work. The trouble may have been caused by her taking salts this morning. This formerly would produce hours of griping pains, vomiting, etc. But lately these symptoms almost entirely disappeared, probably from the suggestion of my telling her, purposely, that salts gave me no uneasiness at all. S. M. says, "She got to thinking about what you said. 'It doesn't hurt papa,' she says, 'why should it hurt me?'" and presto! it didn't. R. D. herself is happily getting to think that some of her physical symptoms are due to psychic causes, and no longer thinks that this is an imputation of "imagination" as she did but a few weeks ago. Another achievement is the ability to stay away from Sunday school and church without grieving. "Anything to get me well!", she sensibly says. She can more easily attend service at some other church when I go to speak there than she can in her own, because she is not obsessed with the idea that people are looking at her curiously or pityingly because she is "nervous" or "odd", and because she is the new daughter of the Rector and his wife. Once she heard one woman whisper to another "She's sort of crazy, I guess", and the effect was to make her more sensitive to glances encountered in that church.

R. D. dreams frequently that Mrs. P. scolds her. She tells this herself, laughingly, and comments on how ridiculous such dreams are, "because she never scolds me." But S. M. says that these dreams are the result of her reflecting on her tendency to forget things that fall to her share to do. "She thinks that she is to blame, and this takes the form in her dreams of the mother scolding her." She also dreams, usually on Sunday night, that I am drunk. My explanation of this type of dream was the following. Every Sunday morning I take a tablespoonful of blackberry cordial for an affection to which I am subject, through the wear of my work



that day. M., who has a horror of alcohol, has smelled the slight odor, and been greatly disgusted, even accusing me of being drunk. I supposed that the dream came up, somehow, from M., and expressed my opinion to S. M. But she said, "No, it hasn't anything to do with M. Really the person she sees in her dream does not look entirely like you; there is a little of Mr. Fischer's looks mixed in—but she has not recognized that fact." So it may be that smelling the cordial in my breath rouses subconscious memories of Mr. F.'s getting drunk, and consequently a dream picture presents itself of a person, mostly myself, but with some of Mr. F. and especially his drunkenness, blended with it.

S. M. lately spoke casually of seeing something out of "the corners of R. D.'s eyes" which R. D. herself did not observe.

M. has grown younger again. She can be persuaded to read aloud only with difficulty, pronounces the small words slowly, like a small child, and balks at the long ones. I do not expect her to get younger than, say, six years old, not to retreat to mental infancy, like S. D. [527] R. D. came at 9.45 and slept well. *Mar. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 2 m.; M., 53 m.*

*Mar. 12.* As I entered in the morning her eyes opened blankly for a moment, shut, then opened again and she looked at me with a smile, the smile seeming stereotyped, however. I spoke to her and she uttered a word too inarticulately for me to understand it. The eyes closed again, and in a few seconds opened, with clear expression of recognition. I said, "You went to sleep again." "Again?", she wonderingly repeated, "I just woke up for the first time." Was it S. R. D. who opened her eyes and smiled in that mechanical way, and muttered something? In the evening I asked S. M., "What about her waking this morning?" She answered, before any word had been uttered by me respecting S. R. D., "That was the S. R. D., before she woke the last time. (What, when

527. On what ground this opinion was so confidently expressed at this time is not certain, but probably on the predictions of S. M. It will later be seen that M. *did* retreat to the age, mentally, of about five years, and no farther.



she smiled at me?) Yes, that was S. R. D. (She has got her eyes open, then? Isn't that new?) O no. She used to go into the bath-room with her eyes open, part of the time. Didn't you know that? (No, I certainly did not. I thought it was always with her eyes shut that she went in asleep.) No, part of the time she had her eyes shut, but part of the time she went in as S. R. D., with her eyes open. (What was it that S. R. D. said this morning, when I spoke under the impression that it was R. D.?) She said "papo" [528] (Has she spoken during these last nights?) No, she has not even laughed when she heard you in the other room. She has done nothing." R. D. came at 10.03, and slept well. *Mar. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 47 m.; M., 31 m.*

*Mar. 13.* I cannot help believing that the practice, which I have resumed, of whispering to R. D., directly after she has fallen asleep, short sentences intended to be soothing and strengthening such as, "sleep quietly", and "feel splendidly tomorrow", is productive of good results. At least her sleep is *getting* quieter, and her spirits are improving. There is a part of her mind that hears still, I am confident. As to S. M., there is no question that she hears, for she can repeat to me next day what I said to R. D., as she can various things that happened during the night, occurrences on the street, etc., of which R. D. was not conscious, or at least retains no memory.

In the evening all three of us went to a distant part of the city, where I delivered an address. We reached home at exactly 10.30, and after congratulating herself that she was back, R. D. went, two minutes later. M. demanded lunch, and Mrs. P. brought up lunch for us all. Through my absent-mindedness M got hold of my cheese also, and ate three pieces. She then read or pretended to read, but when I asked her to read aloud, said, "I don't feel like reading aloud, papo", and when I continued to urge her, pretended not to hear. Sometimes she admits her difficulties in reading, etc.,

---

528. The use of this form, "papo", is itself an indication that it was not R. D. speaking, for she always said "papa". For some reason S. R. D. appropriated M.'s rendition of the word, and not R. D.'s. See also page 885. Perhaps the word got through to her from M.'s subliminally thinking it. See page 538 also page 910.



but generally she is inclined to conceal them. R. D. came for the night at 11.10, and slept poorly, very likely because of M.'s over-indulgence in cheese. *Mar. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 29 m.; M., 38 m.*

*Mar. 14.* In the morning R. D. had a dream about getting supper for Mr. Fischer, and his getting angry because it was not ready, and throwing the knives and cups at her. S. M. and M. in turn told me the dream, the former from seeing it when it was in progress, the latter from seeing thoughts of it in R. D.'s mind after she went. R. D. afterwards said that she had a bad dream, but nothing more. M. called to me, and I found her sleeping. S. M. says that S. R. D. spoke once last night, the first time in the night for a week, saying "papo" when she heard me make some sound, and that she laughed also. [528] Presently M. woke and was surprised to see me. She refused to believe that she herself had called me, so she probably did this while asleep. "I sink that R. D. didn't sleep very well last night, papo", she said. (Didn't she?) I don't think so. I don't *know*, I only sink so. Maybe she did, I don't know for *sure*, you know." Her manner was soggy, like a tipsy person's, and she showed tendency to echolalia. "(I see.) Yes, I see. . . . The R. D. will be here soon. (Yes, I think so.) Yes, I sink so. I shan't eat breket. (No.) No. I don't care for breket. I like bread and cheese, but I don't want breket. (No, you don't want it.) No, you don't want it—I don't want it. . . . She was a scared girl. (Yes.) Yes. (Yes, she was tired.) Yes, she was tired. (Are you sleepy?) Are you sleepy—yes", and she was asleep. S. M. now laughed and remarked, "How she repeated after you! And she was as solemn as a judge,—she thought she was giving you very valuable points."

M. has of late shown a desire, quite unlike her former self, for me to sing to her certain songs and ditties. [529] One

529. It is certain that M. was in the childhood of the case very fond of singing, whether hymns or songs, but particularly the latter. I think that her dislike for singing in 1911 and the early part of 1912 was related to the emotional effects which music had then upon the resurrected R. D., especially in church. Had I recorded the first date when M. began to ask me to sing and



that specially pleases her is "The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring." About 4 p. m. R. D. suddenly said, in a shy and embarrassed way, "Sing 'The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring.' (Where did you ever hear that?) I never heard it. (Then why did you ask me that?) The thought just came to me." After some urging she told me that the form of the thought was "Ask papo to sing 'The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring.' I complied, and then asked again, " (Didn't you ever hear that before?) No, and I never want to hear it again." She explained that she thought it silly. The question how she came by the thought was solved when M. came. She asked, "Did you sing the D. 'The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring?' (Don't you know that I did?) No, I don't know. But I wanted you to. This morning I thought over and over, I wish the D. would ask papo to sing 'The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring.' (Why did you wish that if you wouldn't know when I did it?) I like it, and I fought the R. D. would like it." S. M. supplements this by an interesting comment. "Notice that only part of the sentence that M. thought got through. She thought 'I wish that the D. would ask papo to sing The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring', and R. D. got it from the word 'ask'. "It is also interesting that it took from 8.40 a. m. to 4 p. m. for the words to emerge in the supraliminal consciousness.

In the evening, when M. came, she said, "You haven't holded me for a long time, papo. I forgetted it how long it has been since you holded me. I want to be holded." It had indeed been about three weeks. I "holded" her a little while, that is, she lay on the lounge, with her head and shoulders on my lap. [530] But she woke under the im-

---

to sing herself again, and had that date corresponded with the leaving off, by R. D., of attendance at Sunday school, as she had before almost left off attending church, the deduction would be plain enough. There was certainly a rough approximation of dates, at any rate.

530. The reader will make a silly mistake if he imports any Freudian bias into this desire of M.'s to be "held". She liked what a child likes, and for the same reasons, for she *was* a child. Sometimes, when tired or sleepy, she actually forgot that her body was not as small as a child's, as when in the street she begged me to take her up and carry her home. When physicians



pression that she was in bed, and I sitting beside it, and would not be convinced until she had supplemented her limited vision by feeling around her. R. D. came at 10.13 and slept very well. *Mar. 13-14: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 43 m.*

*Mar. 15.* The period, which began yesterday, is accompanied by very little pain, and there was perhaps the least psychical disturbance yet. M. came in the morning and twice afterwards. R. D. came for the night at 10.08, and passed a good night. *Mar. 14-15: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 52 m.; M., 3 h. 3 m.*

*Mar. 16.* M. did not come in the morning nor during the day, although the sickness continues, and when she did come at 8.23 p. m. she was perfectly cheerful. I remarked impressively that R. D. must come tonight at 9.30, in order to get plenty of sleep for a long journey which she is to take tomorrow, and which would involve a new feat, that of rising at 6.30 a. m. And R. D. did come at exactly 9.30 and slept well. *Mar. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 7 m.*

*Mar. 17. Sunday.* R. D. rose at 6.30 in excellent spirits. S. M. had warned me not to say anything to rouse fear in R. D. that she could not stand the journey. At 7.15 we started for Washington, Pa., where I was to speak morning and evening, and travelled for nearly two hours. According to the plan, she took the next trolley-car home. She was at the helm when I arrived home at about 11.40 p. m., but M. came within two minutes. Presently M. said, "I came out, papo, in a place where there were lots of people. I was so scared. (How long were you out?) A long time. (Tell me what you did.) Well, I came and there were lots and lots of folks around me. And I was scared. And a deaconness—Deaconness W\*\* the D. knows her, but *she* doesn't know *her*—the deaconess said, 'Are you sick?' and I said 'I don't feel ver' well.' And she took me into a room where there weren't many folks and she said

---

or other visitors were present M. would go to sleep while "held", with that absence of any particle of embarrassment which is natural to the little girl or boy who, tired of church, goes to sleep with head in the mother's lap.



'You sit down there.' (Did any one else speak to you?) Yes, a man came to the door and hollered right at me, 'Verona and something, tracks 9 and 13.' And I didn't say anything, and nobody said anything. The chair was so high I couldn't get my feet down. And a man came in and swept right under my feet. (And what did you do?) Just sat there. The woman said 'Sit there', and I sat and waited for my papo. Then the D. came. And she forgot what she came there for and went right off." Later M. asked, "What was the place where I came—a church?" (I think it was the Union Station.) "Yes",—with a wise expression—"I guess it *was* the Union Station." She would have assented similarly if I had said that it was probably the Tower of Babel. The next morning I got the beginning and end of the story from R. D., who had not mentioned the matter for fear I would not let her go on more trips. She said that it was about 12.15 when she "forgot" and 12.35 when she became conscious again. M. also made some graphic attempts to describe R. D.'s feelings when she is about to forget, but said that I ought to get R. D. herself to describe them and added, "She is ashamed of me; that's what's the matter. She doesn't like to talk about it; she doesn't want you to write it down. She sinks it is silly. That D. is a queer child. But she can tell lots o' sings—lots o' sings—if she only will." R. D. came at 12.50 a. m. *Mar. 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Mar. 18.* In response to the request to describe her feelings when she is on the point of forgetting, R. D. said in substance, "When you are away in the evening, and I have been out a long time and am tired, I keep saying to myself, 'I won't go until papa has come.' Then after you have returned—in case, as I said, that I am very tired,—I don't say that to myself any more. It begins to get confused in my head. I can't concentrate my attention on what you and the mother are saying—I can't get the meaning of it, my attention is directed within, there is so much confusion there. It is as if I were surrounded by a ring of people who were whirling around and making a hubbub, and someone outside of the ring was speaking to me and I could not understand



what the person was saying because of the confusion around me."

There was headache and constipation, and after the strain of yesterday's record time out, today was the shortest for some time. R. D. came at 9.13, and did not sleep as well as usual. *Mar. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 12 m.; M., 2 h. 11 m.*

*Mar. 19.* Feeling badly from same causes as yesterday, and M. came in the morning again. In the evening Mrs. P. and I went out and R. D. went to bed at 8 and slept soundly *herself*, until the electric light was turned on at our return. This is the first time that R. D. has gone to sleep in the evening and maintained herself until startled. She returned for the night at 10.23, and had a poor night. *Mar. 18-19: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 32 m.; M., 2 h. 38 m.*

*Mar. 20.* M. did not come in the morning. Mrs. P. and R. D. went to Dr. Walker's office. After their return, R. D. appeared *distract*, almost worried. It appears that she feared that Dr. W. and the mother think she is not doing all she can to get well. Dr. W. recommended that she go to bed at a particular hour of the evening, if out till that time, so as to try to go to sleep herself and to maintain herself. S. M. says that is good advice if R. D. does not get anxious on the subject and does not try to force herself. Indeed, I am inclined myself to think that she may well be content with taking one step at a time in advance, and making sure of it, then when she gets adjusted to the new condition, venturing farther; rather than to attempt a seven-league stride and get discouraged because it proves impossible of accomplishment. Mrs. P. and I returned from calling in the evening, to find that R. D. had indeed lain down at 9 o'clock, and had "tried to sleep, but was not tired enough", so that M. came. This was S. M.'s report. S. M. says that when M. comes and finds herself alone she generally sits with some paper or magazine and reads a little for awhile, stopping at every sound to see if it is us returning. Her reading is pretty perfunctory; sometimes she sits for a long time looking at a single word. She doesn't think much, and after a while S. M. is not able to perceive that she thinks at all. Tonight M. fell asleep in the act of dropping her head on the pillow, in



fact, S. M. began the sentence reporting that M. was asleep before the head reached its destination. S. M. informed me that the reason M. chose an apple to eat tonight was that R. D. thought of eating an apple before she went, and advised that R. D. be instructed to think of something healthful for her to eat, before she goes. "Eating crackers is only a habit of M.'s; she doesn't taste anything,—she only imagines how it used to taste. She will choose what R. D. has been thinking of." R. D. came at 10.20 and slept somewhat better. *Mar. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 47 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Mar. 21.* R. D. felt pretty well today, and S. M. says that my talk with her banished from her mind her sensitive feeling regarding the good advice of the doctor. She came in the evening at 10.25, and her sleep was better. *Mar. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Mar. 22.* R. D. was banished in the afternoon for an hour by a reminder which she felt implied reproof. M. came not seeming to know what the trouble was, but was sober and for some time refused to sleep. R. D. came for the night at 10.35. *Mar. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 29 m.; M., 1 h. 41 m.*

*Mar. 23.* Today, returning from shopping, R. D. said, "I saw some of the prettiest, fluffy little ducks. I felt like getting one. (Why didn't you?) O, it was too silly." The incident was significant to me, for two weeks ago M. spoke of those ducks which R. D. had already seen, and asked me to get her one, which I forgot to do. Today, when R. D. looked at the ducks, no doubt it stirred up M. in the depths, and there came up to the surface M.'s desire for one.

R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. Her sleep is troubled of late by itching of the back, tending to spread to other parts of the body. My theory is that this itching is somehow a symptom of the change that her whole body is undergoing, perhaps of improved circulation in particular. *Mar. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Mar. 24. Sunday.* A "blue" day, perhaps on account of the almost continual rain. Nevertheless R. D. was here without a break until 9.25 p. m. I asked M. some question and she said, slyly, "Ask the Sleeping Margaret." I made an evasive, jesting reply, but she persisted, "You can't fool



me, papo. I know that there is a S. M. The other night you said "Are you asleep?", and I made believe I was, and said 'yes', and you said, 'I wanted to be sure.' (And what did I say then?) I don't know. I guess I went to sleep", she replied, a little shamefaced at having to make the confession. I remember the incident very well. I had wanted to be sure that M. was asleep before talking with S. M. If M. had not fallen asleep at that point she would have heard more of what was not intended for her. Curiously, S. M. could not remember the incident. Her explanation is that she could not have been paying attention. She is more likely to lose outward incidents, because, as she affirms, she is more interested in watching the operations of M.'s mind when the latter is out, but here is a case when S. M. failed to observe a trick of M.'s through her attention being diverted to something else. She steadily denies that she has any moments of unconsciousness. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Mar. 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Mar. 25.* I neglected to set down that a few mornings ago, when I entered the room, S. R. D. opened her eyes and turned them towards me uncomprehendingly, shut them and turned away. Soon, however, she looked at me again, and her face twisted and crinkled in her peculiar smile, then the eyes closed and she said "papo-ho." A piece of paper fluttered to the floor and S. R. D. opened her eyes again, and the same curious, almost quizzical smile played over the features, then she raised her head and appeared to look at the paper on the floor, but sank back and her eyes closed. This morning as I entered S. R. D. turned her face towards me, smiled her odd smile and wagged her head. Mrs. P. came in and I called her attention to what was going on. Every time I spoke manifestations of the sort were produced, but nothing that Mrs. P. said or did won any response.

In the afternoon R. D. and I went to the registrar's office and worked; then, as she was to do a little shopping I told her that I would attend to a bit of business in another place. Upon our return to the rectory, M. came out and cried, "I want my duck! Show me my duck! I won't be here but a minute after I have seen my duck." I produced it and she



rejoiced over it. I asked how she knew that I had bought it, and she replied, "I knew my papo would get it." In three minutes R. D. was back, and her eyes fell on the duck. She said, "I knew you were going to get that, when you said you had an errand." So here was the thought of R. D. regarding an object of interest to M., which stirred up M. beneath, and brought her at the proper time by auto-suggestion. R. D. came at 10.05, and slept fairly well. *Mar. 24-25: R. D., 22 h. 47 m.; M., 58 m.*

*Mar. 26.* R. D. having had no intermission since last night, staid for 10 minutes after my late return from an evening engagement, and came again in 35 minutes, at 11.30. *Mar. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 50 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Mar. 27.* [531] It is noticeable that, ordinarily, if R. D. has not felt cheerful, and even if she has felt seriously depressed before going, M., who used to carry on R. D.'s moods, no longer shows any reflex from them, but is sunny, laughing and joking as usual. Even if R. D. goes in a very tired state, M.'s manner is seldom affected, though she wants to go to bed earlier. But if R. D. goes away suddenly, through some stress of emotion, particularly wounded feelings, M. comes with the impression, as a rule, that I am to blame, and is quiet and gloomy, answering me curtly. At such times it would seem that R. D. goes down so quickly that M. gets only an impression that something has wounded R. D.'s feelings, and assumes that I must have done it.

R. D. was curious about a rather pitiful case which Dr. Walker has, and which I saw in his office today, and I told her something about it. Not long after, she went, and S. M., saying that it was thinking about this and still more, anxiety because she thought I did not look well, which sent her away, advised me not to tell her about such cases. "She sympathizes with Mary too much." In the evening R. D. went so

---

531. When no reference is specifically made to the fact that R. D. maintained her individuality in the morning, it may be inferred from the item in the summary for the day, "2 alt." Since, for a long time after this, M. never failed to come in the evening, and of course R. D. returned later, the "two alternations" must refer to these.



quickly that she had not time to think what she would like to eat, so M., not being steered, went back to her choice of a cracker and cheese. She is oddly interested in the fact that I make the thin shaving of cheese "hang over" the cracker, and looks to see if it does, and crows with delight when "you can't see the cracker at all, for it hangs *way* over." R. D. came at 9.28 p. m. *Mar. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 38 m.*

*Mar. 28.* R. D. said in the morning, "I think I must have walked in my sleep last night, I found things so disarranged in my room." Later she asked, "Do you know what I did with my pocket-book when I forgot?" As she referred to the comings of M., who is all whom she knows besides herself, I answered that I did not think that Phase A went into her room last evening. "But the pocket-book is gone! And I have bruised myself!" Afterwards I learned from both S. M. and M. that S. R. D. rose last night and walked about, in her room and in the room where R. D. sleeps, for a considerable time, S. M. thought for 15 minutes. "She was hunting for something, I don't know what. She hunted all about in R. D.'s room. She found the pocket-book, and felt all over the money, as if she were counting it. Then she put the pocket-book in a drawer and kept on hunting. She bumped into things, and that is how R. D. got her bruises." S. M. thought that perhaps R. D.'s worrying about my health, and thinking of poor Mary, may have caused S. R. D.'s activity. At another time in the night I coughed several times, and S. R. D.'s hoarse laugh was heard, and some droll attempts to imitate the cough.

R. D. returned from town in the afternoon grieved because she had been "snubbed" by a young woman who got incensed at S. D. a year ago because the latter did not wish to talk about the Fischer family. M. came, and said nothing about R. D.'s thoughts, but was soon listening to my alleged singing with great interest and good humor, at the same time unconsciously imitating my facial movements. As I was talking with S. M. later, I blew softly into the face of M., and the latter scowled, snarled like a little wolf, and clawed at her



eyes, while S. M., unaware of what I had done, asked what the matter was.

In the evening S. M. told me that R. D. broods a good deal. "I wish she wouldn't. It seems to me that she is doing it more lately. She is apt to have two trains of thought at the same time, one cheerful, the other sad—brooding over something. If she represses the sad thoughts by will power, they go on underneath. I suppose she will come out of it as she has everything else. She is getting better all the time, so I suppose that somehow it has to be. But I wish we were away from here. [532] She doesn't know that she watches to see Mr. Fischer when she gets to the section of the street where he works, but she always does. She is afraid that she will sometime meet him." I myself have noticed when riding on a trolley car with her, how, as we approached the neighborhood where he was likely to be seen, despite all my efforts to keep her attention her eye would begin to wander vaguely from one car window to another, and her manner become abstracted. While Mrs. P. and I were gone earlier in the evening, R. D. called on a neighboring family, and got into quite a strain of joking and imitating, S. M. reported. It was an indication of the draft on her energy caused by the excitement of the call, that M. was here for an hour and a half before R. D. came for the night at 10.45. *Mar. 27-28: 4 alt.; R. D., 23 h. 19 m.; M., 1 h. 58 m.*

*Mar. 29.* This morning I entered the room by a different door than is my custom, and saw S. R. D. with head raised from the pillow and face turned in my direction. As I walked from side to side of the room the closed eyes followed me. Presently the eyes opened, she smiled her queer smile, and the eyes shut again. A moment later R. D. woke, and smiled in a very different manner.

At about 10 a. m. I saw R. D. throw the empty bottle which had held the "perfoonery" given M. at Christmas into the waste-paper basket. In a flash M. was before me.

---

532. Meaning that she wished we were living elsewhere than in the city where she had experienced her hardships and sorrows and where she was harassed with fears.



smiling but resolute. In a low, snarling tone she said, "I don't *want* that thrown away. I *don't want* that thrown away. (Where do you want it?) In my drawer. (I will put it there.) Let me *see* you put it there." I did so, and she was gone—a half minute from her appearance. I explained to R. D. why she forgot, and she said, "I didn't think that I would care anything about that old bottle." M. was not furious or even angry with R. D. as she would have been three months ago. Her manner rather expressed discontent, it was somewhat lethargic, as though her whole personality had not emerged.

I spent a couple of hours at the home of influential members of the church, the S.'s, and initiated Mrs. S. fully into the secret of D., in order to obtain her assistance to stop any rumors that might possibly spring up in the community regarding D.'s sanity. It was also arranged that she should come over on Friday evening next week, when Dr. Walker and Dr. John A. Brashear are to be here. It appears that R. D. wondered why I stayed so long at the S. house, but said nothing about it. But when M. came she demanded to know what I had talked about, and as a tantrum threatened I was obliged to tell her. She happens not to like Mrs. S., and disliked the idea of her coming, but I quieted her down. Afterwards S. M. was not inclined to talk, and when questioned admitted that she did not approve of Mrs. S.'s coming. "But what difference does that make?", she said, "I am not the R. D. nor a part of her, neither is M. the R. D. You haven't got to mind what she thinks, and as for me, you must do what you think best about it."

R. D.'s health and spirits suffer today, probably from a feat of M.'s last evening. Left alone for a moment, M. went to one of R. D.'s drawers, got a very large piece of chocolate candy which would have lasted R. D. two weeks, and commenced to eat it. Hearing Mrs. P.'s step she bolted it by mouthfuls. Query: Did M.'s quest for R. D.'s chocolate reflect in S. R. D., and was that what she was automatically hunting for, last night? It looks likely.

R. D. came at 10.25 p. m. In the night she dreamed that



"Phase A" was at church, and after service was heard by herself muttering about someone whom she did not want to see. R. D., relating the dream in the morning said, "I didn't catch the name. She was angry with you about it, too. I don't know how you were connected with it. She took a car and went over to the city, and there took another car. She seemed to be trying to get as far away as she could." R. D. knew it was Phase A "because she looked like me and had on my dress." *Mar. 28-29: R. D., 21 h. 14 m., M., 2 h. 26 m.*

*Mar. 30.* Still blue today, constipation obstinate. R. D. came for the night at 10.10, was thirsty in the night, and S. R. D. rose and poured out water from a jar on the desk into a glass, spilling some on her night-robe, so that R. D. woke later and found it wet. *Mar. 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Mar. 31. Sunday.* Another blue day, probably from the same cause. In the evening all three of us went to another part of the city where I spoke. On the way back I rose and gave my seat to a lady and her little boy, and as I did so M. came. Fortunately, in a sense, she was frightened, and kept still, save for curt answers to my remarks. After awhile I was able to sit down and she gave me a peculiar smile, which told me with certainty that it was she. I was pleased to find that she was still able to conceal her identity, though this case is no assurance as to what she might do in other circumstances. She was afraid to go up-stairs in the house, and I helped her up with difficulty. Asked how she felt when she came out on the car, she said, "O, I was awful scared. I didn't know where I was. I thought the car was going to fall over. I thought my papo had changed to a little boy—I couldn't see him anywhere. I didn't know where you were until you spoke to me. I wanted to get out, but I didn't dare to, for there was a policeman out there." [533] The conductor in uniform was the person supposed by M. to be a policeman. S. M. said that M. could not see the faces of any who passed her, as they were outside of her visual angle, so

---

533. M.'s fear of policemen was started by a policeman's pretended sternness toward her on a certain occasion when she was about eight years old.



that all she saw was patches of color, of garments sweeping past her; she could not by looking upwards see my face, as I was too close for that, though she could see the faces of the men on the outside platform. S. M. added that when M. ascended the stairs she could see only the steps coming successively opposite her eyes, and that they had the appearance of tumbling down upon her. [534] When M. sits in my room she sees, alleges S. M., within a circle on the opposite wall of about four feet in diameter. If at a short distance I move my face laterally to the front of hers, suddenly she catches sight of a portion of it and, if her head is held, describes it as looking "crooked" and "skinny." If my finger is pushed up in front of her eyes at say two or three inches distance, she is startled and cries to have it taken away. "I thought it was a big stick", she explains.

S. M. expressed the opinion that R. D. had best not go to church anywhere for a while, "It tires her too much." On the other hand, she says that R. D.'s mind is less frequently confused by subliminal M. R. D. came at 10.50 p. m. *Mar. 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m. Average daily total of R. D. during March, 1912, 22 h. 26 m.*

*Apr. 1.* At the sound of my entrance S. R. D. sat up and, turning her face towards me with eyes open a mere slit, apparently looked at me, then chuckled and wagged her head. R. D. took salts in the morning, and was in consequence physically weak from vomiting, etc., but her spirits improved. She had a short day and came for the night at 9.20. *Mar. 31-Apr. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 20 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Apr. 2.* I made a tactical blunder this morning, in calling R. D.'s attention to two or three grammatical lapses. It appeared to her that she must be making blunders continually,

---

534. It had not occurred to me before, though I well knew the limitations of M.'s vision, how the stairs would look to M. as she ascended them, but after S. M. mentioned it I was struck by the description, and recognized that it would necessarily be correct. Afterwards, I made a funnel of paper, and walked up-stairs with it fixed to my eye in a horizontal position. I got something of the effect that the steps were "tumbling down", though my reason persisted in correcting the impression. But M. was governed solely by the visual impression.



and that we were ashamed of her, neither of which inferences is correct. She began to weep silently, and when I was able to comfort her somewhat attempted to put the matter out of her thoughts. But after her return from town in the afternoon she appeared abstracted, gazing out of the window for a long time. S. M. informs me that the repressed subject continued to ferment in her mind subliminally. Her head ached from soon after the crying spell all day and all night. But she maintained herself all day, which was a remarkable feat under the circumstances. In the evening S. M. showed her disapproval of my course in the morning partly by taciturnity for a time, and afterwards by giving her opinion of it in calm, severe terms, like a judge on the bench. "Why won't you and the mother learn to be patient and leave those things until the R. D. gets well? Now it can only do hurt to speak of them. A small matter looms up before her bigger and bigger, and she reproaches herself, that is the trouble. She doesn't feel any resentment against you; she takes it all to herself, and reproaches herself as though she had done wrong. She thinks that you two are ashamed of her. She is thinking that she won't talk much hereafter, for fear that she will not speak correctly." I asked S. M. if I could say anything to help the matter and she replied, "No, you will only get her to consciously thinking about it again, and that will make the matter worse. It will have to wear off."

Then S. R. D. came under discussion. "She doesn't see you at any time, only hears you. When her head is turned towards you and she is smiling in such a funny way, you will notice that her eyes are all squinted up. Even when she used to open her eyes sometimes, when she walked, she saw nothing. She went entirely by sound. She knew when she had reached the bath-room by the number of times she heard her steps; somehow she got to know how many there should be. I know that because once she stumbled, and it made more steps before she got to the door. The door was not there where it ought to have been at that number of steps and she gave it up and went back to bed. In the same way, she has associated certain little peculiarities of sound in your



movement with you, and she tells where you are by them. The mother might walk all around her and she would never notice. She does not feel, and yet if you touch her *hand* she knows it. I can't explain that, I don't know how it is myself, but I know it is a fact. She would not know if you touched her upon the arm or cheek (unless you bore down—she can't bear to be confined, and yet she wouldn't feel it) but she does know if you touch her hand."

It is characteristic of S. M. that she very seldom spontaneously gives the *history* of any phenomenon, though she often spontaneously mentions its recurrence and explains it, or predicts some occurrence or issue in the future course of the case. But she seldom explains or discusses phenomena which have ceased unless questioned. Then she never hesitates either in giving an explanation or in declaring that she cannot explain it. She has no perceptible reluctance to admit ignorance. She does sometimes hesitate and collect her thoughts, as a normal person would, when I ask her to fix an old date, and she often fixes it, as people generally do, by reference to events occurring just before or soon after. Recurring to S. R. D. she said, "She did not begin to get up and walk about until S. D. went. S. D. appeared to be a damper to her. (One thing is a mystery to me.) What is that? (You know that when S. D. was claiming to have a tuberculous hip there was a conversation-recital by S. R. D., in which there occurred a paragraph of untrue things about the hip, etc. You explained that M. 'butted in.' I don't understand that very well.) Why, that is plain to me. In the first place, you know that M. used to be conscious of everything that went on, no matter who was out. Anytime that the fancy took her she could butt in on what any of the others was saying. You know that she does that with *me*, now, and that when she does I can't speak until she gets through. If I were to write anything, as we intended that I should try to do, I have no doubt that she would butt in now and then, and I would have to tell you, perhaps, where I left off and she began. In the same way, sometimes when S. D. was talking M. butted in, sometimes contradicting what S. D. had just said. S. D. had to keep still until M. was through. And it was like that



with the S. R. D. M. was listening to her, and wanting to help S. D.'s pretending out, she jumped in and talked like S. D. about the hip and so on. S. R. D. was stopped just as S. D. was stopped and I am stopped. I don't know whether S. R. D. continued just where she was broken off or not. I can't tell that. . . . Nothing comes from S. R. D. to R. D. If S. R. D. hears you come near the door and is glad you are coming in, and you don't come and she is disappointed and R. D. wakes directly afterwards, R. D.'s spirits are not affected." R. D. came at 10.30, and slept pretty well. *Apr. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Apr. 3.* M. came this morning and had breakfast. I asked if her head ached. "No", she said, "it isn't *my* headache. *My* head doesn't ache. It is the R. D.'s headache." The headache was gone when R. D. returned, and she seemed in fair spirits, but later it returned and continued all the afternoon and evening. S. M. afterwards said that R. D. again "brooded" over what I said to her yesterday morning. I had an engagement in the evening until late, and M. came after my return. S. M. remarked, "I can't see how M. was able to tell that the coffee was poor this morning. You know that she said it was 'bum.' It was poor, but she can't taste. (Then how did *you* know?) I can taste it now. (What, you have independent taste?) Yes, lately. (Since when?) About six weeks ago. (What does that mean? Are you developing?) No, I am not. I don't think it means anything in particular. I used to be able to taste, not so much as people usually do I suppose, but some. Then I lost the power, and lately it has partly come back. It'll go again." R. D. came at 11.10 and slept well. *Apr. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Apr. 4.* I explained to Mrs. P. an experiment which I wished to make, and which I had not mentioned to S. M. or any other. Mrs. P. entered the room alone while I watched at the door. As she neared the couch, S. R. D. did not move, Mrs. P. took her hand, and the face put on a doubtful, almost distressed expression, and she grunted disapprovingly. Mrs. P. kissed her, and she shook her head, grunted loudly, turned away and on her side, and partly hid her face in the bed-



clothes, afterwards kicking downwards with both feet. Mrs. P. spoke several times, and she burrowed deeper in the clothes. To S. R. D. it was the touch and voice of one unknown and therefore to be feared. It reminds one of S. D. in her last period, when the voices of all others than myself were simply "noise." Now I approached the bed, too softly to be heard, since her ears were covered. I laid my hand on hers, and then on her cheek, and there was no movement. But the moment that I made a slight vocal sound she drew her head from the coverings, turned her face towards me, wagged her head and chuckled. I kissed her, and her face became placid, and she looked as if soundly sleeping. I crossed the room and produced a little cough, with an instant's response of a renewed appearance of animation, movements and chuckles. A half-minute of silence and R. D. woke. R. D. came at 11.30 p. m. *Apr. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Apr. 5.* R. D. staid until about 9 a. m., when the parrot flew at her, and its foot becoming entangled in her sleeve she was severely scratched before it could be gotten free, and M. came, stumbled up-stairs crying "papo", and sobbed a bit before she went to sleep. R. D. was back in five minutes, and exclaimed with woe-begone expression, "O I wish I didn't forget at such a little thing!" I reminded her that not long ago she would have gone the moment that the parrot flew at her.

Since Dr. Brashear the astronomer, the physicians Dr. Walker and Dr. Wholley, and Mrs. S. were to come tonight, and R. D. did not know that the latter was to be here, I informed her a short time before the hour set, and she took it calmly enough, though it was easy to see that she was nervous, as anyone might be under the circumstances. Dr. Brashear and Mrs. S. arrived and I talked with them alone for some time, when Mrs. P. came and told me that R. D. appeared to be getting tired. We all went up-stairs where she was, and the physicians came about 15 minutes later. R. D. was by this time standing on the verge, and soon after M. came, at 8.50. M. crouched up to me and hid her face, but was soon on the floor showing her odd array of things in the



drawer. I do not attempt to describe the interesting hour spent with M. awake. Finally I "held" her, and she slept, and S. M. talked, with M. occasionally mystifying the newer visitors by "butting in", but less than ever before on such an occasion. Then I woke M. Her face being turned towards me, and away from the company, she had forgotten all about the visitors, and commenced to talk to me in her confidential, childish way, and presently proposed, "Let's pretend, papo." She herself began to describe a scene. "Let's pretend that we are going somewhere. We take down the bars, and go through a field, and come to a wall, and we go along the wall and then we climb over it—do you see it, papo?" I surely did, as she was unconsciously describing one of the favorite walks we had been accustomed to take in New Hampshire, so I assented. She went on, "And we go through a field,—O-o-oh! a nice field—what grows in it? (Grain.) Yes, a nice field of grain, and then we come to some trees—what kind of trees shall we pretend? (Pine.) That's it, boo'ful pine trees—" Just here Dr. Brashear said something in a low tone—previously during the rhapsody Dr. Walker had been busily pricking her arms and cheek with a needle without the slightest sign of sensation. At the sound of Dr. B.'s voice M. asked "What was that noise?", and turning her head saw the company. As during the "pretending" she had forgotten the visitors so now she seemed instantly to lose memory of the "pretending", and began talking with them without a shade of embarrassment. The fact is that slight sounds made by the company had been audible to me, and ordinarily would have been thrice so to M., but her stock of attention is so small, so to speak, that when it is directed strongly towards one object she becomes oblivious of impressions from other quarters to a large degree. The pretending incident was a beautiful one to witness. While M. was talking Mr. S. came and was introduced into the company. M. slept and the talk with S. M. was resumed. M.'s appearance this evening was characteristic, though less animated than at previous interviews. However, when Dr. Walker came she ordered him in a loud, impatient voice to sit down, adding "I don't like to have people standing around." She called him "dumm"



several times, and applied to him the epithet "greaser." She did not fancy Mr. S., who is a most excellent gentleman for all that, and when on leaving he last of all offered her his hand, she declined to take it, saying, "I have done enough shaking hands." S. M. showed a little amused impatience with Dr. Walker because of the form of a reference to her in his exposition of the case to the company. "I don't think that you have got *me* straightened out in your mind yet", she said, "I haven't any body." I was struck by the swiftness with which Dr. Brashear grasped the philosophy of the personalities, as it was admirably set forth by Dr. Walker, and the intuition which enabled him precisely to adapt himself to M., engaging her pleased interest by telling her a story exactly as he would tell it to any small child. In leaving he asked M. if he could come again, and she replied, "Sure! come whenever you want to."

But the evening was an exhausting one in its effects upon R. D., S. M. says that if only two had come it would not have been so, "but so many tire her." The company departed at about 11 and R. D. came at 12.03 and slept uneasily, waking often. *Apr. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 48 m.*

*Apr. 6.* R. D. did not lose hold in the morning, but was very tired all day, showing that much energy has been consumed by the strain of last night. Coming at 8.05 p. m. she again slept uneasily. *Apr. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 37 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Apr. 7. Sunday.* In the afternoon I accidentally stepped upon and killed a small chicken that R. D. had owned for several days. When I told her, being careful that she did not see the corpse, she took the news with seeming calmness, though I knew that she was deeply affected. [535] In about half an hour M. came, cheerful as ever, not caring anything personally about the tragedy. For while M.'s moods affect R. D., coming in the midst of them, powerfully, R. D.'s seldom now pass over to M., and M. is not affected by acci-

---

535. Such little tragedies affected her less and less as she progressed toward normality, until by 1914 she was affected by them not more than the ordinary person of tender sensibilities.



dents to R. D.'s possessions, except by way of a more or less amused sympathy. S. M. said that R. D. felt like crying and repressed the tears, and as far as possible thoughts about the loss also. "It would have been better for her to cry and make that an outlet for her grief. Now she is grieving underneath." And when M. woke she said, "The D. is crying underneath. (What, now?) Yes." Ordinarily M. is not conscious of any thoughts or feelings of subliminal R. D., if indeed there are such when M. is out, but at times of strong emotion it appears that the true personality, when subliminal, is capable of feelings still, which are perceived by supraliminal M. R. D.'s head had commenced to ache soon after I gave her the bad news, and it ached most of the time until Monday morning. When R. D. came again I told her that I would get her another chicken, but she said that she did not want it. S. M. says that R. D. gets from M. a repugnance to having a person replace a thing which he has been the means of her losing. But she suggested that I send R. D. to the city tomorrow morning, and give her money, saying that she will visit the bird-store as she almost always does, and that once there she cannot resist buying a chicken. "That will push out the thought of the chicken that was killed. She does not blame you; she is reproaching herself for leaving the box so that the chicken could get out and under your feet." When M. was out the last time today she insisted that I 'phone to Dr. Walker that the chicken was dead, and when I did so to that gentleman's bewilderment, went to the 'phone and talked with him herself. After she had finished she said, disgustedly. "There! I forgot to tell him that the canary had laid an egg. Ugh!" R. D. came at 9, slept poorly and dreamed about the chicken. *Apr. 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 3 h.*

*Apr. 8.* M.'s second period of dislike to Dr. Walker ended with Friday night. Partly to test if this had removed the same feeling, for which she was not responsible, from the mind of R. D., I suggested that when she went to town this morning she call on him. She did so, felt as she ought in relation to her benefactor, and received good advice and a powder to break up the "cat-naps." She bought another chicken,



her headache ceased, and she was in good spirits for the rest of the day.

Before R. D. went in the evening she suggested that I should not give the powder to M. but wait until she came, for fear that the A Phase might sleep all night. I often administer medicines just before R. D. comes for the night, as she so often goes to sleep instantly. But I was struck by the good sense of this suggestion. Since R. D. comes by formula, if M. got too sleepy she might not be able to perform her part of the formula, which is to wake when I blow upon her eyelids, and M. might remain for hours at least. R. D. came at 10, took the powder and slept soundly. *Apr. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 2 h.*

*Apr. 9.* She worked some in the Registrar's office in the afternoon, after a busy morning at home. Her spirits were excellent all day. Coming for the night at 9.50 she took no powder yet slept splendidly. The "cat-nap" habit is broken up. *Apr. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Apr. 10.* M. came this morning, presumably because R. D. is near her sick period, but was good-natured and slept most of her interval. R. D. came at night at 10.45. *Apr. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D. 23 h. 43 m.; M., 1 h. 12 m.*

*Apr. 11.* At about noon two of R. D.'s canaries flew out of the window. After some effort they were captured, and then she said, "I was afraid that I would forget, and then I knew that I would not be able to do anything to get them, so I tried hard not to forget." After M. came in the evening I learned that, as was to be expected, the anxiety of R. D. had stirred her up so that she was conscious what was wrong, and she, on her part, "tried to keep under." It was fortunate that the joint effort succeeded, for the loss of the birds would undoubtedly have disastrously affected R. D. for days. She came at 10.15 for the night. *Apr. 10-11: 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Apr. 12.* I brought from town a Japanese "nest" of wooden eggs, some 12 enclosed in one another. R. D. saw the package and inquired what was in it. As I wanted to see the effect on M. unprepared I tried to put her off, but, incurious as she is about what happens when she forgets, she



has considerable curiosity about little matters of this kind. "Is there a doll there?", she inquired, "let me see it." I still demurred and in a moment M. was there, demanding to know what I had bought her. "(How do you know I bought you anything?) The D. thought you did." R. D.'s thought about M.'s *prospective* property stirred up M. to the extent that she came out. She was pleased with the eggs, put them in her drawer, and R. D. was back after only five minutes of absence. Her period began this evening, she came at 9.30, and has an unusual amount of pain. *Apr. 11-12: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.*

*Apr. 13.* Much internal pain, felt by M. probably less than R. D. I had M. drink a glass of hot water with a little whiskey added; her attention being too much occupied with her feelings to notice the odor. Almost at once after she had drank it I heard a calm voice saying "papa", and turned to find M with her head hanging over the edge of the cushion, fast asleep. She broke into a profuse perspiration, and her condition improved. It was like old times today for alternations. In the evening M. wrote a letter to Dr. Walker, putting on the envelope, in addition to the name and direction to the postman to go up to the tenth floor, "Answer me right away." The letter ran: [536]

Apr. 13, 1912

Dear Dr. Walker,

This is Margaret writing to you Doris has been sick all day so I have been here a lot. I ate breakfast (1) and dinner but not supper Doris ate that. Doris's Bird Betsey laid one egg a week ago and the darn thing hasn't laid another one

536. Notes on the letter. (1) She continued to spell many words correctly after her pronunciation of them had reverted to her early childish one, for example she here spelled "breakfast" correctly (but see note 518) yet she constantly pronounced it "breket". (2) *Enfant terrible!* Mrs. P. did not mean that we were to repudiate obligations, but only that we would defer sending in the checks to the Easter offering and the store until I had made a deposit. (3) Referring to Dr. Smeltz's obligation to give her a Christmas present. (4) *Enfant terrible!* again. The reference is to Mrs. P.'s reluctance to consult a physician with regard to her insomnia. (5) S. M. disapproved of my sending a letter which contained so frank an explanation, and if R. D. had read it she would certainly have bolted directly for the subliminal depths. (6) This was inserted afterwards.



since. Our little chicken is doing fine, he sits on Doris's shoulder. Papo bought me a nest of eggs one big egg with all smaller eggs in it. We are poor now we only have seven cents left in the bank (2) but mother said not to pay the easter offering or Boggs bill so we have a little more. I wish you would see about that Fish Dr. I aint going to let him off. (3) I wanted to call you up today but papo would not let me and mother said she would not call you up for you would ask her about her sleep (4) shes sleeping fierce she was cranky today Papo was cranky the other day The birds got out the other day and Doris had to chase after them she got so skared that is why she is sick today. That big blot was caused by my stocking coming half-way down my leg so I had to pull it up and laid my pen down (5)

April 9 laid first egg  
not the pen but Betsey (6)  
Chicken born April 4

Goodby  
Yours in spirit  
Margaret."

This letter is the longest that M. has ever writtten since I knew her, and S. M. says that earlier she never wrote letters save to the other personalities, including the letters which she wrote S. D. purporting to come from a mythical father.

It appears that earlier in the day, R. D., who writes my checks, discovered that my balance in the bank was reduced to seven cents. Although I was about ready to deposit, the fact "got on her nerves", as S. M. says. Her feeling is reflected in M.'s letter, though I don't think that M. felt any concern personally. Also, directly after I left R. D. asleep in the evening, S. R. D. sepulchrally muttered twice, "Only seven cents in the bank!" Both M. and S. M. afterwards mimicked her tones, and M. became hilarious about it. R. D. came at 9.50 for the night. *Apr. 12-13: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 29 m.; M. 5 h. 51 m.*

*Apr. 14. Sunday.* R. D. rose very early, because I was to go to Johnstown and be gone nearly all day, yet she maintained herself until evening. But she had no pain today. Came at night, 10.15. *Apr. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m; M., 1 h. 30 m.*



*Apr. 15.* M. came at 8 a. m., and as I talked with her I drew aside a corner of the curtain and a brilliant ray of light fell upon her face. She started and was asleep instantly. S. M. says that M. thought it was lightning. A sudden excitement is very apt to send M. to sleep. Then while I was talking with S. M. I said something which she humorously resented by tapping me on the chin. At once M.'s voice was heard saying "Hey!", as her closed eyes seemed to peer at the hand that did it, and then the other hand felt it over. S. M. explained "She thinks that you struck yourself with her hand." Soon M. woke and said, "Here, you papo, I don't want you to do that with my hand. I don't want my hand to strike my papo." In the evening I gave M. a note from Dr. Walker. She came to his query what she was going to do with the canary's egg and her eyes grew wide as she asked, "What did he think I was going to do? Did he think I was going to hatch it? I tried that once and got enough of it."

**M.-asleep is no Longer Conscious of Movements by S. M., and is further Anæsthetic.** M. has lost during the last six weeks in at least two particulars, (1) She is no longer conscious of S. M.'s movements while she is asleep, so that when S. M. moves the hand, for example, it never takes on the sudden acceleration which announces that M. has detected the movement and adopted it as her own. (2) In place of feeling on the backs and palms of the hands, as she did for a long time after losing tactile æsthesia while awake, she now feels only on the palms. Many experiments have proved this conclusively. R. D. came at 9.35 p. m., and I gave her a sleeping powder. [537] *Apr. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

---

537. This proved to be the last night on which S. R. D. ever showed a sign of existence. (See page 936.) For some time her hold had been extremely frail. It was the very next day that the prospect opened up to R. D. of going to live in that land of flowers and sunny skies of which she had heard so much. It seems probable that this stimulus was sufficient to extinguish the last spark of Sleeping Real Doris.



## CHAPTER X.

### NINTH PERIOD: TRIPLE PERSONALITY.

FROM THE DISAPPEARANCE OF SLEEPING REAL DORIS TO THAT OF  
MARGARET.

April 15, 1912—April 19, 1914.

*Apr. 16.* Today I received a call to become the rector of St. John's Church, San Bernardino, California. In the meantime a parish in this state is considering giving me a call. R. D. is considerably excited, and I think, though she does not say so, hopes that we may go to California, sharing with me in the belief that the climate there would be favorable to Mrs. P.'s health. It would certainly be helpful to R. D. herself to leave this city, where she fears that she may meet Mr. Fischer.

S. M. says that the cause of M.'s appearing briefly younger at times than at others, is anything that chances to make her *feel* younger. If she happens to get into a mood for calling herself "baby" and I humor it, that makes her feel younger for the time being. Sometimes, S. M. says, M. feels so infantile and small that she is perplexed to understand why I do not carry her upstairs if she happens to come down-stairs. [538] R. D. came at 10.10 and slept well, without taking a powder. *Apr. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Apr. 17.* M. came this morning, and while R. D. was asleep, which is rare at this stage. M. asked me to sing "Nicodemus", an old war song which she heard me sing for the first time the other day and fancied. [539] More than two hours after

538. Note written in December, 1912. "A number of times since then she has asked me to carry her. The other night she teased me to carry her to her room."

539. Note written in December, 1912. "For some months M. frequently called on me to sing this or 'The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring', etc.,



R. D. had come she suddenly looked up and said, "Sing Nicodemus to me." I had never sung it in her hearing, and knew what the request signified. "(Why do you say that?) It has been running in my mind to ask you. (Do you know the song 'Nicodemus'?) I know a song by that name, but it isn't the one. (How do you know?) Because that ran in my mind too. (Just what words ran in your mind?) Ask papo to sing Nicodemus. It isn't the 'Nicodemus' you know." It was plain that, as in the case of "The Flowers that Bloom in the Spring", M. must have been saying these words over and over to herself, so that they acted like a post-hypnotic suggestion. Only in this case the suggestion was not so long in acting, for I learned that the words had come into R. D.'s mind soon after her return. I sang one verse and then R. D. uttered a joking remark, and I paused. Probably R. D. thought I was not intending to finish the song, for M. flashed out and tumultuously demanded to know why I didn't go on. "I want you to sing it through to her." She asserted that she had not been watching, but that she knew that I was singing "Nicodemus." "I don't watch any more, I only know when something happens." This testimony exactly agrees with S. M.'s, and with external appearances. M. was out only about three minutes, and then I finished the song. R. D. came at 9.35 and slept well. *Apr. 16-17: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 17 m.; M., 3 h. 8 m.*

*Apr. 18.* Again M. came while R. D. slept. There is recurrence of catamenia. R. D. came for the night at 9.42 with headache, and slept badly. M. came in the night. *Apr. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 57 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Apr. 19.* M. did not come until afternoon, the cause being that R. D. had been anxious about a sick canary. Curiously, a headache left R. D. when she found the bird ailing. She came

---

and partly learned them herself. But she has not alluded to them for months previous to this date, and if I suggest singing them or anything else she responds, 'I don't feel for singing'. S. M. has never wanted to hear me sing, which is not surprising. Only rarely has M. in the last months sung anything herself, and then only snatches of songs which she learned when a child."



for the night at 9.57, and slept well. *Apr. 18-19: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Apr. 20.* M. was here in the morning, and again in the afternoon, on account of R. D.'s reproaching herself for some slightly irritable remark which she made out of nervousness. The second time M. was at first inclined to be offended, but was over it in a minute, and merry as a grig. Again S. M. reproved me for worrying because M. is coming oftener and longer of late. "What would you have done if I had not been here to tell you that it is all right? The time she is out is not everything. So long as M. is going all the time, you need not worry. (Are you sure that she is now in the process of going?) I know it, she is going fast. If you could see what I see inside you would know it. And if you could see the brain you would know why the D.'s thoughts are confused by M.'s going. (Do you mean if I could see the brain itself?) No, I mean the working of her mind. (Describe it.) I can't. I haven't the words. But you know how it is if there is a boil on one's arm and one tries to lift the arm. It is as if the R. D.'s brain were in a state of inflammation which is slowly subsiding, and R. D. is trying to work the brain and becomes troubled and confused."

Not since the night of Monday, the 15th, have I seen or heard any sign of S. R. D., though I have experimented by giving R. D. a goodnight kiss just before she falls asleep, and otherwise. S. M. says that for four nights S. R. D. has manifested no sign of her presence, and that there has been no period so long since the fall that originally brought her about five years ago of which this could be said. R. D., coming at 9.55, slept soundly. *Apr. 19-20: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 3 h. 8 m.*

*Apr. 21. Sunday.* It seems to be coming the rule again for M. to appear in the morning. In the evening R. D. called at a neighbor's and returned somewhat nervous from the music and conversation.

Of late M. has been accustomed in the evening to order "six crackers with cheese on one of them." The last two nights I brought five and she did not notice the difference. Yet she can count. S. M. said that she thought that perhaps M. used the word six with no definite intention, as she is apt to say, when I



return and ask her how long she has been out, "sixteen hours." "But if you called her attention to it she would count and know whether there were six or not. But otherwise I don't think she would notice, unless there were only two or three. Suppose you try bringing her four." Tonight she made the same demand, Mrs. P. started, and I said simply, "I'll get the crackers", when M. looked at me sharply, with that curious gaze as though she were peering deep into my soul and were amused at what she saw, pointed her finger at me, and burst out triumphantly, "Now I know what you were thinkin', I see it in your eyes. You were thinkin' that you would bring me five crackers." It is true that I had just been thinking that I would bring a less number than six, but I am not sure that I had got so far as to definitely decide upon the number. I was just at the point of consciously deciding, so far as I can judge, and would have done so in another second, so that subliminally the number may have been chosen. She added, "You were thinkin' before that that you would bring four." That was true, if the "before" could be referred to last night or this forenoon. But it may be objected that M. derived her knowledge by percolation from S. M. On the contrary I must have made my notes very obscure unless it be evident that all the valves between S. M. and M. are shut in the direction of M. Never have I discovered any trace in M. of knowledge derived from any one of the numberless consultations which I have had with S. M. She has never happened by telepathic process or any other to evince knowledge of a single one of the hundreds of communications made to me by the sleeping philosopher. S. M. emphatically says, "She read it in your mind", and no one who had witnessed the many examples of M.'s intent looking into my eyes just before she announces my thought, could doubt that M. herself believes that she becomes aware of it at the moment and by direct method. [540]

---

540. So far as my intention of the moment was concerned, if M. derived it by telepathy the general rule that she announced only past conscious, presumably present subconscious thoughts, found here an exception. But I am not sure that I thought "five" at all, and it might be held that from my saying that I would fetch the crackers she drew a shrewd inference that I had



R. D. came at 9.50, and slept well, but betrayed her interest in the California project by dreaming that she was on the journey, taking her birds with her. No sign of S. R. D. *Apr. 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Apr. 22.* M. came at 6.30 and slept nearly all the time until R. D. came at 7.10. The latter was excited about California, though endeavoring not to show it. She came for the night at 10.20 and slept soundly. No sign of S. R. D. *Apr. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Apr. 23.* R. D. followed M. in the morning, and in the afternoon joined me at the Registrar's office and we returned together. She saw Mr. Fischer on the street, and unconsciously looks for him every time we go through that district. S. M. says that at times R. D. has looked at him and not consciously seen him, and added, "But I saw him out of the corner of her eyes." The other day he saw her and grinned, or rather, sneered, at her. Despite the horror that she cannot help feeling at the thought of him, on account of his brutal conduct, she has a feeling of pity which is natural, as she sees him wearing what were his best clothes in his work on the street, the clothes that S. D. bought for him and kept so neatly. All this troubles her, and we must for her sake get away from it. A letter received from the Vestry of the California church makes our going practically certain, but S. M. says that R. D. will not get over her nervous unsettledness until the decision is positively made. So when R. D. came for the night, at 9.12, I told her that we had determined to go. She gave a glad cry, and fell asleep instantly. *Apr. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 55 m.; M. 1 h. 57 m.*

*Apr. 24.* M. did not put in an appearance this morning. [541] In the forenoon I visited an island near by in the Ohio

some scheme in view. But we can hardly extend the hypothesis of guessing to her correct statement that I had earlier thought that I would bring her *four* crackers. Nor can this incident be judged alone, but it must be taken with the many others of the same but stronger character.

541. S. M. and I had discussed the reason why, after M. had ceased as a rule to come in the morning, she resumed her appearances, and had reached no conclusion, though S. M. ventured the guess finally that R. D.'s inward perturbation as to whether we would go to California or not might explain it. Certain coincidences of dates seem to show that this surmise was correct.



River, to look for Indian relics. A thunder-storm came up, but I found refuge. The search was successful and engrossing and I did not get back until 2 p. m. Mrs. P. told me that R. D. had worried about me. Then R. D. came in, just looked at me with tears in her eyes, and M. came, looked at me in reproachful fashion and said, "You bad papo, to stay away so long and worry the D.! Bad papo!" She would listen to no excuses, but answered them with her old, almost discarded "shut up!", not spoken angrily but only in reproving tones. Later, after R. D. had returned, a neighbor called, and seeing R. D.'s deposit bank playfully pretended that she was going to take it away. After she had gone, R. D. whispered to me, "When Mrs. E. took the bank I almost forgot. I had all I could do to hold on." Here the touching of the precious bank which, while it is R. D.'s property, M. is interested in, had the effect of stirring up M. through R. D.'s thoughts reaching down to her, and almost of causing her emergence.

In the evening I asked M., "Won't it be nice when R. D. gets where she can have strawberries the year round?" M. looked at me in dazed fashion, and said, "What's strawberries? (And oranges.) Owanges—yes, owanges. That will be swell. (And lemons.) What's lemons? (And apples.) And apples! (And olives.) What's o'ives? What's o'ives? (And walnuts.) What's wal-nuts? *Nuts*, O yes, nuts!" This was interesting and consistent with what I have discovered in regard to the

---

M. resumed the rule of coming in the morning when the menstrual period was at hand, and the call to California directly followed its cessation. M. continued to come in the morning with few exceptions until the morning of April 24, and after this M. failed to come for the three mornings preceding the "tantrum" night. Had anything happened in the 24 hours preceding the morning of April 24th to occasion the change? Yes, on the night of April 23d she learned that the doubt about our going to California had been finally resolved. There were to come other periods during which M. would come, not only twice but three or four times a day. In part these periods were brought about by sudden accelerations in M.'s retreat, throwing more burden on R. D., and making more rest through alternation imperative, and in part by specific causes of agitation. In fact it would be possible to work out the reason or reasons for almost any one of these irregularly periodical variations, from the data given in the record, just as the problem in one instance has been worked out, as a sample, in this note.



process of M.'s progressing amnesia. In every instance the names she recognized were of fruit that R. D. had eaten lately. R. D. came at 9.25 p. m. *Apr. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 43 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Apr. 25.* R. D. was here continuously to 9.03 p. m., and came for sleep at 9.57. Immediately after she goes to sleep I whisper suggestions to her for a minute or two, in this fashion: "Sleep, daughter. Sleep well. Sleep nicely all night. God bless my daughter. Dream pleasant dreams." If she has any headache or pain I add, "Feel better. Headache (or whatever it may be) going. Wake in the morning feeling well. Happy all day tomorrow. Sleep, sleep." To test whether she still hears these suggestions, as S. M. says that they rouse no thoughts clear or strong enough for her [S. M.] to perceive, I tonight inserted the charge, "Dream of grandma." Evidently she hears, for in the morning she related a dream about grandma Prince, who "seemed to get mixed up with Aunt Louise." Here is a reflection from M., who has confused Grandma with Aunt Louise. *Apr. 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 38 m.; M., 54 m.*

*Apr. 26.* R. D. was at the helm without a break until 7.30 p. m. After this there came a bad tantrum of M., and it was a bad one without a question. What started the humor out of which it developed? Mrs. P. and I had meant to go to a reception, and R. D. had invited Ella to keep her company, but rain made us change our minds. Was R. D. annoyed because we did not adhere to our intention? S. M. says not, but that R. D. prefers to be with us when we are at home, and 'now wished that she had not invited her friend for this evening, and hoped that she would not come. At any rate there was some discomposure in R. D.'s manner, and after M. came and went to sleep she began to "pat" or rather bang me rather heavily about the head. I gently restrained her. S. M. was puzzled by her actions and said, "She has no idea how hard she hits you." M. woke and renewed her clubbing attentions, saying after each one, "Does *that* hurt you, papo?", as if she were conducting an interesting series of tests. I tried to look as though I enjoyed it, but my head was beginning to ache and my smile was constrained. M.'s gaze began to get intent, somewhat as though



she were beginning to become hypnotized, yet with an expression of scrutiny. She kept on slapping me, with occasional slaps on her own head, inquiring, "Does that hurt me, papo?" I tried to divert her attention by every method known to me, except one, which S. M. had recommended with success, and which did not occur to me, namely, chucking her under the chin, rubbing her nose and such like nuzzling as is commonly employed with babies. S. M. afterwards told me that if I had done this I would probably have made her laugh and forget her "fixed idea." M. became more and more insistent, and went so far as to begin to tear her dress. I held her hand and she said, "You hurt me, papo", which I certainly did not. On her promise to be good I released her hand and she immediately tore her dress. I held her hand and arm as gently as possible, tried hard to look happy, joked, laughed and did all that I could to change the strange mood. She would laugh but at once struggle to get her hand free, only to resume striking and tearing. I tried to put her to sleep, but she resisted suggestion and kept her eyes resolutely open. At last I said "I shall have to smack you if you aren't good. She laughed and said, "Don't smack me", but I told her that I surely must if she were not good. She kept on with her actions and I knew that she did not believe that I would keep my promise, so I gave her two very light slaps on the palm, taking pains to smile as I did so. No effect was produced, and the dose was repeated a little more vigorously. She did not seem at all angry, but continued her obnoxious acts. I waited a short time and again warned her, then administered two slaps still harder, but not especially so. But the effect was, for no reason that I could perceive, terrifyingly sudden and extreme. Her features froze to stony horror, as though she saw no longer her loving "papo" but some dreadful dragon, her face became congested, almost purple, her eyes bulged and stared, and she threw herself backward, sharply yelping, "No! .. No! .. No!", while she writhed and struggled to get free. I held her, fearing that she would tear her clothes off and pull out her hair. But her strength became so great that she wrested herself to the floor, then sprang up and drew me part way across the room, all the while barking in staccato, "No! .. No! .. No!" I let



her go, standing ready to grasp her should she attempt to do herself violence. She ran like a hunted creature to the corner of the room, crouched with her face pressed partly against the door and partly against the bookcase, and continued the series of noises, which gradually grew fainter until they ceased, but resumed at any utterance from me or Mrs. P. After some time Mrs. P. went down-stairs and twice rang the bell, her idea being that this might bring M. out of her state. Both times M. writhed, pressed her face harder into the corner and recommenced her yelping cries. Then Ella came and rang the door bell with the same sequel. I asked Mrs. P. to tell the caller that D. was too ill to see her, and this was done. After a time I found that Mrs. P. and I could talk without rousing the "no" reactions, and I walked up and down bemoaning that my "baby" was gone, and got Mrs. P. to go through the form of 'phoning someone to ask if he had seen her. No notice was apparently taken. It had been about an hour when M., who had twice caught a glimpse of me and rebegun her ejaculations, gradually moved her body until she could grasp the edge of the door, and attempted to open it wider. Believing that if allowed she would escape from the room and probably from the house, I held the door firmly at a point some distance above her hand, but could not close it as her hand was grasping the edge. For perhaps fifteen minutes she struggled to get that door open, and seemed mightily puzzled, twisting the knob, looking into the keyhole and even poking in it with a hairpin, tugging and yanking, and from time to time falling asleep with head drooping, only to rouse in a few moments and resume her efforts. My hand became numb, and I put it lower down to ease it; she caught sight of something and shrank. Then she grasped the knob and fell asleep. I put my hands to her back and gradually received the weight of her body, her hands then relaxed from the knob, and I slowly lowered her until she lay on my knees. The face suddenly cleared up and S. M. began to speak in her calm tones. She was perfectly amiable, and said that M. would not remember what had happened, only that something had frightened and hurt her, and that she might think that it was I. "If she should get so that she would not come to you in her normal state, it would be



terrible." When M. opened her eyes I at once said softly, "Papo is back. It is all right now. Naughty man gone. He never will hurt M. again. If papo has to go out again he will fix it so that nothing can scare M." As I began to speak her features took on the most infantile smile, and her voice was very soft, almost a whisper, as she echoed, "fix it." She then fell asleep, woke again in a little better possession of her faculties, slept and woke the third time fully restored. She said that a man had hurt her, pointing to her forehead which she had pressed with such cruel force against the shelves, and added, "He pretended to be you." She asked Mrs. P. to 'phone that M. had come back, betraying some recollection of the previous incident, and asked me why I didn't look in the corner, "for I was there all the time." Now she slept heavily, with a headache. R. D. came at 11, and immediately before her coming I administered a sleeping-powder. She was asleep in an instant. *Apr. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 33 m.; M., 3 h. 30 m.*

*Apr. 27.* M. came at 8 a. m. in good humor, with only vague memories of last night and making little allusion to it. R. D. did not come until 10.10, and has a constant headache. Her forehead was sore, and she asked if she bumped it when she forgot. I told her that I did not think so, but she was evidently suspicious that something had happened. Later she broke a period of silence by asking, "Papa, do I cause much trouble when I forget?" Of course I assured her that she did not, since Phase A had changed from the old days, which is true enough. She came for the night at 9.50, and slept off the headache. On the whole it is remarkable that she got through the day so well. *Apr. 26-27: 6 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 43 m.; M., 4 h. 7 m.*

*Apr. 28. Sunday.* While R. D. was alone in the evening and asleep, the front door slammed, and M. came, went down and fastened it. Fortunately she is now afraid of the stairs, so she slid down sitting, from step to step, and came back on her hands and knees, and so made the dangerous journey safely.

M. says, "Do you know how you can tell that I am going? When you see the R. D. getting flatter and straighter, and that she doesn't do this so much",—here M. made a wash-board of



her forehead— "that means that I am going." [542] I asked M. if she knew why R. D. does not stay out so much as awhile ago, and she replied, "Her body was changing then, her head is changing now." S. M. says, "That is correct. Of course her brain has been changing all the time, but it is changing more rapidly now." M. alleges that she is further back on the left side of the brain than ever and that the space she has vacated R. D. has added to her territory. R. D. came for the night at 10.08. *Apr. 27-28: 6 alt.: R. D. 21 h. 32 m.; M., 2 h. 46 m.*

*Apr. 29.* R. D. was annoyed to find that as Phase A she had made out a duplicate of a check already made by her as R. D. Her disgust was comical.

I set down a few of M.'s sentences. "It made the bleed come." "Put some water on the flowers before they melt (wither)." "O it's co'it (cold), fierce co'it." (This she often says when it is really uncomfortably warm.) "I want you to held me, papo." "Give me a drink of war-r (water)." She seldom says "asa" any more. R. D. came at 10.03 and slept pretty well. *Apr. 28-29: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Apr. 30.* R. D. did not forget this morning, and staid all day. From forgetting to take pills she became constipated and contracted a headache. A dose of salts produced pains, and M. came at 7.45 and was inclined to be "cranky", but by babying her I managed to control the situation. S. M. said, "The R. D. tries hard to remember about the pills, but she can't. I wish you could see into her brain. Her mind is in such a state of confusion that it is a wonder that she remembers as much as she does. I think that her confusion is now at its height." She advised that I begin a course of whispering or talking in a low voice to M., in the hope that when she reaches California she will not yell out, as she sometimes does, and be heard outside of the house. For example, on Monday night Mrs. P. was entertaining a lady down-stairs. M. wanted to go to sleep and was waiting for her kiss from the mother before she did so. Suddenly she

---

542. The predictions were fulfilled. After M. went the tendency to elevate the brows so as to produce lines in the forehead was renewed, gradually to die out again. But the abdominal distension was permanently gone.



shouted "Hurry up!", and the lady started, but Mrs. P. went on conversing, and nothing was said about it. When Mrs. P.'s stay is protracted M. seems to be worried and will cry, "O, the mor'r's lost!"

R. D. came at 10.10, and the headache soon departed. *Apr. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 42 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m. Average daily total of R. D. during April, 1912, 21 h. 46 m.*

*May 1.* I will here sketch an hour and a half of M. after R. D. has had a good day. M. comes at 9 with the words, "Hu'o papo!", continues what R. D. had been doing for a minute or so, and then says, "Papo, go down to the dwug-store and get me an ice-cweam." Her manner is coaxing. "Did R. D. want an ice-cream?" Yes, she has been wanting it all the afternoon." While I am putting on my shoes the bell rings and Mrs. P. goes out, shutting the door. M. opens it, but as a visitor is ushered into the parlor she lowers her voice to a whisper as she communicates with me with childish ceremony and elaboration of secrecy. S. M. says that M. feels as though no one could hear her when the door is closed. She whispers, "You hurry awful fast, papo, won't you", and repeats this at intervals until I go, charging her to be good. When I return Mrs. P. is again in the room. M. greets me as soon as I open the door with a kind of a triumphal hurrah, and when I come in says, "Get two dishes and some war-r." I get them and she divides the ice-cream and asks me which dish has the most. I point out the one, and she keeps that and gives the other to Mrs. P.,—I do not eat ice-cream. I ask " (Were you a good girl?) Yes, wasn't I, mor'r? (That's nice, to whisper when there is company.) Yes, I was a good baby. I think I was a *wise* baby, don't you, papo? ( Yes.) A good, wise baby." She eats her ice-cream, and throws the dish and spoon several feet into the waste-paper basket. I start and laugh a little. "Once I tell you what I did. I ate breket up-stairs, then I threw the dishes down-stairs, then I sung out to Ada, 'Here's the dishes to wash', and they all broke. That's what *we* did." .. "Rub our feet, papo; our feet are cold." She had already removed shoes and stockings, and now put her feet on my knees, and I rubbed them while I read. M. also read, or appeared to do so, seeming much absorbed in an article, and



going from line to line as any person would. But when I repeatedly asked her what she was reading about she pretended not to hear, and finally answered with the odd Rubberneck Row term, ah-ah', which means "no" or "I don't know", or "I don't want to." When she had finished I asked her what the article was about and she said, "I wasn't reading, I was only looking." But in the meantime, while "looking", she broke out "Isn't it too bad! They are going to cut down all those Harvard elms. (How do you know?) D. has been thinking it. (Why are they going to cut them down?)" M. remained silent for some moments, with an absorbed expression, then answered, "The bugs have been eating them. (How do you know?) Just saw it in the D.'s mind." S. M. afterward told me that R. D. read this in the afternoon. While M. and I read little was said. Occasionally I would ask, "Are you ready to go to bed?" and she would answer, according to her formula, "Pretty soon." Once she asked, "When are we going away? (The last day of May.) How long is last day of May? (About four weeks.) How long's four weeks? (Thirty days.) How long's thirty days? (Soon.) Soon. Yes, soon." Then she made some patronizing remarks about "that girl", meaning R. D., and her forgetfulness. "That girl can't remember *any* thing. I wonder she remembers to put on her clothes in the morning." When M. was ready I stepped out and she prepared for the night, was kissed by "the mor-r", and watched intently while I received two kisses from the mother by her direction, "Kiss the papo twice." Then Mrs. P. unexpectedly kissed her again, and she was pleased, laughing boisterously and saying, "I got two kisses, just as many as you." She lay down at about 10 p. m., took my hand to which she loves to cling when she goes to sleep, and in a moment the calm voice of S. M. was heard, saying, "She is asleep." S. M. and I now discussed the events of the day, with intervals of silence.

**M. Gets a Few Thoughts of R. D. at Intervals after the Latter's Departure.** She said, "There has come a change lately, not all at once but gradually. You know that a month or so ago the thoughts of the day would pass through the R. D.'s mind during the five minutes after she went. It is not so now.



You notice that M. tells things she sees in R. D.'s mind a half hour or an hour after R. D. has gone. They seem to come in groups, at least that is the way that M. seems to get them. I can't see R. D.'s thoughts after she goes except through M., and so I can't say if the thoughts are continuous. You see that anything R. D. has thought of with a good deal of interest during the day, like the matter of the Harvard elms, forces itself on M.'s attention as R. D. thinks of it after she has gone down, while other thoughts are fainter, and M. has to pay attention to see them. The elm thoughts forced themselves on M. right in the midst of her reading. Then she looked into R. D.'s mind to find out the reason that you asked for. Doesn't it look to you as though R. D. didn't go down so far, remained nearer the surface when she goes, than she did? I don't know, but that is the way it looks to me." A little before 10.30 S. M. said, "R. D. is here." (Does she need anything?) No, nothing." I blew in M.'s eyes, and she woke and said. "Hu'o, papo! Hu'o, papo! Hu'o, papo! Put the blinds up. (Will R. D. come sleepy?) Yes. She is a sleepy girl." I press R. D.'s hand and she comes and falls asleep instantly. I give her suggestion treatment for half a minute and leave the room. *Apr. 30-May 1: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 12 m.; M., 2 h. 8 m.*

*May 2.* R. D. had a headache early and M. came at 7.20, R. D. came at 7.35 without the headache, staid until 11.05 p. m., Mrs. P. and I being out until 10 minutes after this, and came for the night at 11.25.

*May 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 20 m.; M., 35 m.*

*May 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*May 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 37 m.; M., 2 h. 28 m.*

*May 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*May 5-6: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*May 7.* I have been very busy the last days, making preparations for removal. R. D. has been considerably perturbed by the turmoil, the packing of books and minerals, the hammering of nails, etc. Both M. and S. M. give this as the reason why M. comes regularly in the morning, and R. D.'s daily average is lowered.

As to M., last night she came and found many of the book-



shelves with which the study is lined empty, and inquired, anxiously "O-o-oh! Where are your books? (Packed up.) Don't give 'em away, papo. (No, they are in boxes. You know we are going to California.)" When S. M. could speak she said, "M. doesn't comprehend what the books are gone for. She assents to what you say but doesn't understand." Tonight more of the shelves were empty, and M. spoke of it wonderingly, and seemed dissatisfied. The best that I could do was to tell her that *soon* she would see the books on the shelves again. M. told me the other night that there were salts in the bathroom closet, and asked if she could take some. S. M. informs me that by "salts" M. means some potash that is there. "You had better take it out. She might taste of it. It is marked, but she doesn't notice that. You know it looks something like salts." The can promptly disappeared. M. has asked, "If I should drink some ink do you think I could write a letter better?" R. D. has wanted for some days to clean out the "Christmas plate", for the candy on it is black with dust, since it has been on the top of a bookcase for four months. I consulted M. and she refused to allow the plate to be washed out, seeming surprised that I should ask such a thing. I told her that it was very dirty, but she insisted that "a Christmas plate doesn't get dirty. (But it makes R. D. sick.) You show it to me tomorrow. I don't think it is dirty. The D. 'zaggerates sometimes." This was said very wisely. When I did show it to her her instinct of cleanliness was revolted. "Take it away! It 'tinks. (Then the R. D. may clean it out?) You tell her she can throw it away plate and all."

S. M. has advised that we start for the West on a morning train. R. D. says "I am willing to go whenever you and the mother want to." Consulting S. M. again she said, emphatically, "Have you forgotten what I told you? Now listen. If you start in the evening, M. will come when R. D. is excited and confused, and will feel that there is something wrong with R. D., and will lay it to you or the cars, and will be scared. You wouldn't want a screaming M. on your hands in the train, would you? But if you start in the morning, R. D. will probably be out all day. She will get settled down and when M. comes she will



be quiet." The next day I asked R. D. if she would be willing to start at night, and she said sincerely, "Why yes, perfectly willing." *She* had no fears, no foreboding. But it was decided to go in the morning.

On Monday night, before R. D. had a chance to wash off the stains of the work she had been doing M. came, complained that she was dirty and washed her face and hands nicely. The next morning R. D. came from the bathroom and said laughing, "A funny thought came to me while I was in the bathroom. It was 'Gee whiz! what a dirty sink I had to wash in last night'." [543]

S. M., referring to the cramps that passed over to M. after R. D. went last night, said "You can't imagine how it seems to M. when she has a pain inside of the body—like a pain in space. You know she doesn't feel ordinary sensations on the surface. (Didn't she feel it when I tickled her foot tonight? She drew back and complained that I was tickling her.) No, she saw you doing it, and imagined how it felt. If you had done that in the dark she would not have noticed it." [544] Referring to a stool which represented one of M.'s "children" in the drama, and which has lately had its cover ripped off, so that the sawdust with which it was padded escaped, M. said "They scalped her, and her brains have come out." But this she said merrily. The other night she commenced in her sleep to pat my cheek, and it brought back the "cricket-chirp" which runs, "Go to sleep. Go to sleep!" This continued until I removed her hand at the upward-inflicted squeak of "to", leaving "sleep" unuttered. [545] R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. *May 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*May 8.* In the evening I was telling Mrs. P. a story and imitated a growling tone. M. called from the next room, and when I reached her said, "A bad man was talking. He said 'Er-r-r-r!'" (No, it was I telling somebody did.) No, it

---

543. It shows the intensity of M.'s feeling about the matter on the previous night, that R. D.'s looking at the sink should have roused M. subliminally to think so vigorously that the thought rose into R. D.'s consciousness.

544. Unrecorded experiments proved this true.

545. Note made in December, 1912. "This crops out even now, and the words cease the instant that the hand is removed so as to check the patting."



wasn't you, papo. It was a bad man." M. had been out a quarter of an hour when Mrs. P. announced that Ella was down-stairs. M. said, "I will let R. D. come." In a few moments R. D. was here, at 8.32. When Ella had gone, R. D. came up-stairs and said, "Don't let me come like that again, papa, after I have forgotten in the evening. I have had an awful headache nearly ever since Ella came." Then she went, after having been back for about an hour. M. came without headache. I asked her how she brought about R. D.'s coming. "I thought real hard, 'Ella is here, Ella is here', and that made her come." [546] Later, M. was going to the bathroom and met Mrs. P. coming out and hurrying to make way for her. M. cried out and ran to me whimpering and clinging, and exclaimed "A bad man—a bad man came at me!" Mrs. P. could not convince her that it was she. "No, it wasn't you, mother, it was a bad man, he came up the steps, he didn't come out of the bathroom." This impression is to be accounted for by the peculiarities of her vision; if she turned her head suddenly to the left the image of Mrs. P. would shoot in from the left as though coming from the stairs. We could not remove her conviction. She made me examine a closet in the hall, and when I reported that no one was there she said that he must have crawled out of the window. I resumed the practice of barricading the stairway, and afterwards S. M. applauded this, saying that when M. saw the obstruction she was pleased, believing that this would keep the bad man away. There is no doubt that the "bad man" episode had as its soil to spring from R. D.'s dread of meeting Mr. Fischer, indeed once M. said, "It looked like Mr. Fischer." S. M. deplored that M. had used the device to bring R. D. back, saying that it would put the latter back a day, and it did indeed make her sluggish the next day. R. D. came at 10.10, and I had to give her a powder. *May 7-8: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 58 m.; M., 1 h. 27 m.*

*May 9.* While I was packing, M.'s drawer happened to be opened. A thought surged up in R. D.'s mind that the window

---

546. M. did not "bring" R. D. in the old way, but notified R. D., as it were, so that R. D. by her own energy came and caused M. to sink below the surface.



should be closed to keep the contents of the drawer from getting dirty. Later I was packing things in "unit" bookcases, and a thought came up that all of M.'s dolls except the largest should be packed in one of them, which was promptly done. R. D. distinctly recognizes that these thoughts are pushed into her mind by "Phase A." The process seems to be this. Something happens to, or threatens, an article belonging to M. Formerly she would have voluntarily come out, but now R. D.'s thinking of the accident or danger stirs M. in the depths, and very rarely brings her out as by mechanical impact, not of volition, or R. D. may say "I almost forget then." Generally, being thus "stirred", M. desires that something shall be done relative to her property, and this desire rises into the realm of R. D.'s consciousness, clothed in words or not. R. D. came at 10.45 and slept well. *May 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*May 10.* M. came for a moment when a doll's hat was crushed in a drawer. In the afternoon I called R. D. in to test if it would be safe for her to assist in packing M.'s things. In an instant she knew that she was permitted, and later the thought pushed into her consciousness that she was to get two outline pictures that M. has expressed a desire for R. D. to color, and two articles belonging to M. which were in my desk. In the evening M. said that the things had been packed "real nice."

S. M. remarked, "It has been a great help to R. D.'s cure that she has so little curiosity and has known so little of the personalities. She has known nothing about me or the S. R. D. A good deal about S. D. she does not know, [547] and but little regarding M. . . She knows of course how M. acted when they were little, because people told her. She thinks that she is like that now when she forgets, only in a grown-up way. As to the dolls, she likes dolls pretty well herself, you know—only she won't play with them, of course. She doesn't think much about the other toys and trifles. If she knew all about herself she would be worrying, and try to keep from forgetting, and her very efforts, with the worry, would make her forget. That is the right way, to keep such things from her." R. D. came at 8.50

547. Especially R. D. did not dream that S. D. retreated to infancy before her departure.



and slept nicely. *May 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 43 m.; M., 2 h. 22 m.*

*May 11. Improvements during Two Months.* For the last two months R. D. has not averaged so long out as during the preceding month. Nevertheless she has made distinct improvements.

(1) S. R. D. has disappeared.

(2) R. D. has increased in will-power, and ability to maintain herself after disturbing stimuli.

(3) S. M. reports that there has been considerable approach to normality in the genito-urinary region, which had been anæsthetic probably from the time of the first split in consciousness at the age of three.

(4) The skin-eruption, boils, pimples, etc., which followed each other in such rapid succession at some stages of her cure, seem to have ceased, and any scratch or abrasion heals more quickly.

It was R. D. herself who called attention to the last particular, and after I set it down S. M. announced that a swelling is coming under her arm, and has been coming for several days, but that R. D. had not noticed it. Perhaps the remark was brought about by subliminal recognition of the swelling.

In the evening a caller came and was in the study for some time. Mrs. P. and I supposed that R. D. was working down-stairs. But at 8.30 we found M. in the dark parlor, crying. For a time all she would say was "I want you to go out." I got her to laugh, but she would return to tears and reproaches. She blamed me for not taking the caller down-stairs so that she could have come in the study and not been afraid. She blamed R. D. for sitting in the parlor and causing her to be frightened. "She was afraid I would speak loud. I'll show her! I'll come and I'll scream and yell all I want to. That's what I'll do." She declared that she would not go up-stairs, but by dint of monotonously repeating, "You want to go up-stairs. Papo will help you", she was caused, seemingly without volition, to rise, and I helped her, thumping her feet and crying out in terror, up to the study. She quieted down, but still occasionally broke out in anger against R. D. Once she looked at a small vase on the revolving



bookcase, "Don't let that get 'round here or I'll smash it." Afterwards S. M. advised that the vase be hid, saying "M. might break that, but she will not injure anything else of R. D.'s." The threatening pet against R. D. passed away with the night. [548] R. D. came at 10.05. The monthly period came on during the night, with some cramping pains. *May 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*May 12. Sunday.* R. D. has little pain but is languid, and there were a larger number of alternations than for a long time. Once M. came because R. D. took up a small animal figure in metal which I had given the former yesterday, but after she had put it away she departed. Before church M. asked me to bring R. D. some ice-cream on my return, since the latter had been craving it. I forgot, and M. came out and snarled about my breaking my promise; I renewed the assurance and she left at once. R. D. got the ice-cream.

M. has gone through three periods since I have known her, in the matter of eating. (1) The period of coming out to get something that she wanted to eat. (2) Ceasing to come out for that purpose, but delaying in order to eat a meal, or some delicacy of which she was fond. (3) Little inclination to stay longer because she wants to eat something, and actually planning that R. D. shall have a longed-for tidbit, and going away though fond of it herself in imagination. [549] R. D. came at 10.35 and slept well. *May 11-12: men. per. began; 12 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 30 m.; M., 5 h.*

*May 13.* R. D. said, "I think that I must eat borax when I forget." She came several times with the taste of it in her mouth, and S. M. says that the surmise is correct, that M. mistook borax for sugar. She has also eaten dental paste. I have removed everything which could hurt her out of her reach. R. D. came at 10.35 and slept well. [550] *May 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m.*

548. Note that M.'s "tantrum" occurred on the verge of the menstrual period. See note 281.

549. Note written in December, 1912. "It has been long since eating has had any influence upon M.'s going or coming."

550. On several consecutive nights I made experiments in suggesting to



*May 14.* R. D. feels well except that the noise of the packing, and the desolate looks of the rooms, affect her nerves.

The only signs which have been at all reminiscent of S. R. D. are some feeble and momentary flutterings of the hands after R. D. fell asleep, and these only twice. M. says that she is able to tell what is going on for a few moments after the R. D. has fallen asleep at night, "while I am going down", and she spontaneously spoke of these flutterings and said, "It isn't the Sleeping Doris. She's gone. It's just her hand, which has got used to doing it." R. D. came at 10.50 and slept soundly. *May 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 43 m.; M., 1 h. 32 m.*

*May 15.* Once R. D. was banished by becoming grieved at something, I forget what. She came for the night at 10.45 and slept soundly. *May 14-15: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 19 m.; M., 3 h. 36 m.*

---

R. D. in her sleep at what time she should wake in the morning. The result of these may be compressed in a note.

Suggested May 13th, that she sleep nicely until 7.00 a. m. She slept very well and woke as M. at 7.05.

Suggested May 14th that she sleep soundly until 7.00 and she did so by the correct time until 6.55, but by the striking of the clock until 7.00.

Suggested on May 15th that she sleep soundly until 7.30, and she did so, again by the sounding of the half hour by the clock.

Suggested on May 16th that she sleep soundly until 7.30, and she slept splendidly again until 7.32 by my watch, the time by the clock unnoted.

Suggested on May 17th that she sleep soundly until 7.30, and she slept very well, in spite of the boil, but the morning sun shone on her with unusual brightness, and she woke as M. at 7.05.

I continued from time to time to suggest good sleep but ceased to suggest the hour of waking, thinking it best to leave this to nature. To determine whether the suggestions influenced the hour of waking for the five mornings of the five days of the experiments, I insert an equal series preceding, and one following this period. She woke on May 9th as M. at 6.30, on the 10th as M. at 5.53, on the 11th as M. at 6.10, on the 12th as M. at 7.15, and on the 13th as M. at 6.55. On the 18th she woke as M. at 7.15, on the 19th as M. at 7.45, on the 20th as M. at 6.30, on the 21st as M. at 7.30, and on the 23d (the 22d being omitted because a special stimulus governed her waking this morning) as M. at 6.33. The comparison seems to show two things. (1) The waking usually coincided with the striking of the clock—which strikes the quarters—allowing for the difference between my watch and the clock, since I usually set down the time by the watch. (2) The suggestions as to the time of waking did have a governing effect.



*May 16.* The boil, or whatever it is, under her arm is getting very painful, and in consequence she had a very unstable day. M. was disgusted with being out so much, and sagely remarked that "life isn't hardly worth livin'. Don't you think so, papo?" R. D., coming at 9.50, was given a sleeping-powder, and slept peacefully thus aided. *May 15-16: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 4 m.; M., 5 h. 1 m. May 16-17: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 30 m.; M., 3 h. 55 m.*

*May 18.* Still unstable from the pain of the boil. M. today was unaccountably frightened by the door-bell, almost screamed, "The bell! the bell!", and added "The bad man! the bad man!", and listened despite assurance until she recognized the voice.

Sometimes of late when M. has wakened, and I am silently reading, she forgets that I am there, her eyes begin to wander vaguely, and she incessantly repeats, "Papo! .. papo! .. papo!" Though I keep saying "I am here" in an ordinary voice, she pays no attention in spite of her marvelous auditory hyperæsthesia, until I have forced her attention by some act like actually turning her head until my figure lies within her angle of vision. Then she always eagerly asks, "Where *was* you, papo?", and when I reply, "right here", insists "a-ah [no]. You wasn't there; you were gone." There is no question as to her absolute sincerity. Apparently the conviction that I have gone, arising from her not catching sight of me after waking because of the narrowness of her visual field, creates a suggestion which makes it impossible for her to hear my voice until convinced again by sight that I am there, much as when the hypnotic subject is told that a person has left the room and is unable thereafter to see him. R. D. came at 9.50. It is remarkable that she sleeps so well, with so much pain. *May 17-18: 14 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 4 m.; M., 4 h. 51 m.*

*May 19. Sunday.* R. D. accomplished a *tour de force* today. To be sure some salve helped her, but it is evident to me that when she has pondered on a state of things which makes it expedient for her to maintain herself well, she can somehow nerve herself to do it, unless too much below par, though she may have to pay the penalty by forgetting all the more the next day. Since the process involves strain it is not well for it to be practised often. The emergency today was created by the absence of Mrs.



P. and myself in the afternoon, and my own absence in the evening. M. came the instant my hand touched the street door at 10.15 p. m. R. D. had been out nearly 15 hours, which considering the pain from the boil was an achievement. R. D. came at 11.15 and slept fairly well. *May 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 58 m.; M., 1 h. 27 m.*

*May 20.* Dr. Walker had been intending to visit us again, but press of office work prevented. Consequently M. renewed her dislike toward him, and R. D., without knowing the motive or being directly influenced by it, had something of the same feeling of repulsion bubble up in her consciousness in milder degree. Today we went to Dr. Walker's office and M. came out after R. D. had talked for a minute or two. M. held my hand tightly with both hers. She told the doctor, with characteristic child-like frankness, that she had been angry with him, and asked if he was going to come and see her before we leave the State. He replied that he was going to a medical convention in Boston, and feared that he could not. He added in a side remark to me that he was to dine with Dr. Morton Prince, and M. asked if he could not write to Dr. Prince and have the engagement put off, saying, "You know you *won't ever see me again.*" But he did not think that he could put off a hundred doctors. I suggested that she could 'phone him and in the meantime say goodby to him there. She rose and very prettily kissed him goodby. I had suggested to R. D. to ask him for his photograph, and M. now said that she wanted it, and that R. D. would send him hers. After Dr. Walker promised to send a photograph R. D. returned, and finding herself in the attitude of going renewed the request. He had not happened to notice the return, and verbally stumbled a little at the moment of adjusting himself to the changed state of affairs. "Oh-ah-yes", he responded, so that afterwards R. D. said, "I knew in a moment that I must have spoken about the picture when I forgot." Again the slight feeling of repugnance to Dr. Walker was gone from her mind, and when M. next returned the reason was manifest in her enthusiastic exclamation, "I think that Dr. Walker is a boo'ful doctor, don't you papo? I think he is a boo'ful doctor." R. D. came for the night at 10.10. *May 19-20: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 19 m.; M., 3 h. 36 m.*



*May 21.* Two of the transitions today were caused by sudden pains from the boil. Coming 10.10 p. m. she was kept awake about an hour at night by the crying of a baby next door, and by seeing through an uncurtained window and hearing its supposedly civilized mother and father shaking it and yelling at it as a method of keeping it quiet, thus endangering the laying the foundations of a chronic nervous malady. Her outraged sympathies could not stand it, and M. came for quarter of an hour. *May 20-21: 10 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*May 22.* Today I rose at 6.30 a. m. to go to a Convention at Uniontown, 70 miles away. It is another illustration of how R. D. can force herself, that, knowing I should be anxious about her, she not only maintained herself until I had gone in the morning, but also all day until the moment of my reaching the street door at 8.35 p. m. It might seem well to create emergencies in order to stimulate her to make such records, and I formerly was of that opinion. But (1) If the emergency is not a real one M. is likely to discover it and then there is trouble; (2) R. D. is not sure to be able to "hold on" even in an emergency, and if M. is on deck a long time while I am absent there is great danger of a disaster, as experience has shown; (3) R. D. generally has to pay heavy interest for the unusual draught on her energy, as witness the day following this.

R. D. came at 10.10, the third night that she has made her appearance at almost the same minute, and slept fairly well, helped by a powder. She dreamed that a doctor was cutting her arm off, so there must have been much pain from the boil. *May 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*May 23.* The strain of yesterday, coupled with the pain of the boil, caused the absence of R. D. from 6.33 a. m. to a half hour after noon, nearly six hours! M. slept, talked, read, ate, joked, sulked and scolded by turns, and would not have me out of her sight. At intervals she would cry, "What's become of that D.? She's *lost!*", "Won't that D. *ever* come?", "I don't *like* being out so much. Won't she ever come?", "Come along D.! come up here D.! Wake up there D.!" When R. D. did come she glanced out of the window, then at the dishes which told that she had just eaten, and asked, "Is this breakfast? (No) Is it dinner? (Yes.) O, I have come so late!" M. came



three times in the afternoon, totalling only about 7 minutes for the three. The last time M. went with me into the kitchen to mix some lemonade. Just as she was about to drink it R. D. came back, and I think appreciated the humor of the situation as *she* drank the lemonade. I 'phoned Dr. Walker and he advised having the boil lanced. S. M. feared to have this done for fear that M. would come. R. D. came at 8.55 p. m. and slept well considering her pain. *May 22-23: 10 alt.: R. D., 15 h. 56 m.; M., 6 h. 49 m.*

*May 24.* R. D., learning that Dr. Walker had advised having the boil lanced, proposed to go alone to a physician's office, fearing that Phase A would be more likely to come if I were with her, but I 'phoned Dr. McCorkle to come to the house. I left her with the physician and Mrs. P., but in a few minutes Mrs. P. called to me and I ran in to find that the cut had been made and the pus was being squeezed out. It was M., she was crying, and she grasped hold of me. It appears that R. D. found herself going and asked the doctor to wait a moment, hoping that she could rally, but in vain,—M. came in another moment and began to sob and ejaculate "*I can't stand it.*" The doctor managed to complete the operation, as M. sobbed and clung to me. I had felt that it was best to confide to him something of the nature of the case, in view of just such an emergency, so that he understood the change when it came. He seemed much impressed, and remarked that it was the most extraordinary thing he had ever seen. M. wished me to call up Dr. Walker and tell him at her dictation, "That D. had a bad boil opened, and that M. was a real good girl." He was not in, and I promised to 'phone tomorrow. Then she slept, and R. D. came delighted to find that the operation was over. I had promised M. to get her ice-cream, and in the afternoon M. came out for a minute to tell me what kind to get, and again to eat it. She was willing that R. D. should have it, but the latter did not care for any, as her stomach felt weak, so M. ate it with seeming satisfaction. [551] R. D. came at 9.25 and slept well. *May 23-24: 14 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 8 m.; 4 h. 22 m.*

551. Neither was this a case of true volition on M.'s part. My promise acted after the fashion of post-hypnotic suggestion.



*May 25.* Pimples, that had appeared after the boil had pained her for several days, are already disappearing, now that the pain has ended.

At 10 R. D. came into the study, and a moment later M. came and charged me with forgetting to 'phone Dr. Walker. I said that it was only 10, and Dr. Walker had barely reached his office. M. said with surprise, "Why, the D. thought it was 11. That's why I came." She was pleased when I sent the message, and was gone in two minutes.

R. D. came for the night at 10. and I tried by suggestion to cause her to sleep soundly until 7.30 a. m. She slept soundly indeed, and would probably have done so until the specified hour if our amiable male neighbor had not earlier yelled loudly to his wife. *May 24-25: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 3 m.; M., 2 h. 32 m.*

*May 26. Sunday.* A good day. R. D. came in the evening at 10.05 and slept well. *May 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*May 27.* The other day M. got a photograph of mine and wrote on the back a presentation to Dr. Walker signed, "Margaret, D. D. LL.D.", wrapped it up and wrote on the outside "This is a present from the A Phase Open after Doris has gone." She directed that R. D. should take it. When R. D. came I handed it to her, she glanced at it and threw it down with a look of shamed annoyance, saying "You must take it." M. afterwards consented to this. Today I went to the city. After I had gone R. D. happened to glance at the packet, and, as she told me, "I forgot for a few minutes." S. M. says it was not more than a minute. R. D. also said, "because you forgot to take that package." S. M. says that R. D. knows the reason because she found the picture thrown upon the floor. Curiously, M. made no allusion to my neglect. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. and slept well until nearly morning, when the wind slammed a door, bringing M. *May 26-27: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 13 m.; M., 3 h. 22 m.*

*May 28.* There is a big street parade on today which R. D. has planned to attend. M. said last evening that R. D. would change her mind for she was already beginning to "underneath." As for herself, M. didn't care, for, she said, "I shan't be there."



S. M. feared for R. D. to go lest she should meet some of her relatives. Today R. D. decided not to go, not for S. M.'s reason [S. M. had already told me that this had not occurred to her] but because she feared that the parade would be so long in starting that she would be tired. R. D. came at 9.05 and slept badly. *May 27-28: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*May 29.* R. D. had an uncommonly long day, and came for sleep at 11.20. *May 28-29: 6 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*May 30.* M. is disgusted with the way that the dismantled rooms look, yet is in good spirits. R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *May 29-30: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 30 m.; M., 3 h. 50 m.*

*May 31.* A day of confusion and bustle, sending away the last of the furniture, supper out, and going to a hotel for the night. But, after the morning interval, R. D. staid all day and a half hour after we reached the hotel. Of course we obtained connecting rooms. After M. had gone to sleep she heard me crunching a troche, fumbled at my lips with her fingers, and I put a piece of troche in her mouth. She began to say in her sleep, with those peculiar inflections indicative of the enjoyments of imagination, "That is *good candy*. That is *good candy*. I go to hotel every night if I get candy."

At 9.12 R. D. came. Unfortunately I have a bad cough, and my coughing made M. come for about half an hour in the night. *May 30-31: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 23 m.; M., 1 h. 9 m. Average daily total of R. D. during May, 1912, 21 h. 16 m.*

*June 1.* No M. this morning. All the way to Chicago R. D. looked eagerly at everything, but showed weariness and nervousness during the preparations for the remainder of the journey. At 9.30 we entered a car of the Los Angeles Limited, and found the berths in our section made up. When R. D. had climbed into hers she became afflicted with a singular and overpowering dread, and wept convulsively for some minutes, with the inevitable result. M. came at about 9.45, at first troubled as R. D. had been but not for long. I do not think that she felt any fear or dread except as reflected from R. D., nor did M. manifest any afterwards during the journey. S. M. later said that the crying-fit would probably keep R. D. away all night, and so it did until



4.30 a. m., when she returned and trembled and slept by turns. *May 31-June 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 3 m.; M., 30 m.*

*June 2. Sunday.* She enjoyed the day very much except for dread of the coming night. Soon after lying down M. came, at 8.30 p. m., but R. D. returned in 20 minutes, and continued, sleeping uneasily, until about 4 a. m. *June 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 16 h.; M., 7 h. 5 m.*

*June 3.* R. D. came at 6.30, feeling better than yesterday. As she lay down at night the nervousness seemed somewhat lessened, owing perhaps to suggestions made to her when asleep. M., coming at 9, grasped my hand and floated trustfully off to sleep. S. M. said, "M believes anything you tell her, so when you say she is safe and she is where you can get hold of her hand, she is all right. But R. D. can reason, and she knows that you couldn't prevent an accident." Nevertheless S. M. had not expected this state of things. As she expressed it, "I was surprised. I thought that M. would be the one to be frightened, and that R. D. would not mind the berth." Though S. M. had not foreseen the exact situation which arose, she was able to explain it when it came. R. D. came for the night at 9.10, and slept better than on the previous nights. *June 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.*

*June 4.* M. did not come at all this morning. We were able to see some of the finest parts of the route because of a delay caused by an accident to the engine, but it entailed passing through the desert during the heat of the day. R. D. was very uncomfortable, through appreciating the unique sights, and had to "hold on" a number of times. We reached San Bernardino, California, at 8.45, were met at the station and taken to comfortable temporary apartments. At 9.20 M. came in good humor and went to sleep soon, followed by R. D. only 15 minutes later. *June 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 10 m.; M., 15 m.*

*June 5.* After a morning interval R. D. continued until 7.45 p. m. She was happy during the day. The beauty of the city and mountains, the pleasant appearance of the rectory and grounds, the chicken-yard for her to begin the poultry-raising plan that she has in mind, made her exultingly ecstatic and no doubt fatigued her likewise. When M. came she said, "Our D.



is too happy. That girl will get crazy. She will bust if she gets any happier." She was amused as any little girl might be at the transports of a sister which she only half comprehends. At 8.53 R. D. began the night, and would have slept well but for worry about my coughing. *June 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 28 m.*

*June 6.* R. D. had a sore throat today. I believed that it was due to some psychic cause, but did not see how it could be related to my cold, as she has no cough and I have no sore throat. But in the evening S. M. told me that R. D. yesterday saw a sign in large letters,—OSTEOPATH, and that it took until this morning for the effect "to get through." She said that S. D. often had a sore throat when she went to the osteopath, and that he sprayed something in her throat which made it feel worse.

R. D. came at 8.15, but my very bad cough caused her such agitation that at 10.40 M. came, and fell to weeping bitterly. She would say, "How you 'pec a person to seep when you coffy all time?" R. D. returned at 11.20. Both times that she fell asleep I made suggestions to strengthen her against the suggestional influence of osteopathic signs. *June 5-6: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 57 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*June 7.* The throat is no longer sore, but there seems to be some cold. In the afternoon Mrs. P. hurried to get ready to go with me to an early tea, and her nervousness made M. come, who eyed "the mother" disapprovingly and expressed her sentiments frankly. While alone R. D. was banished a short time by a fit of yelling on the part of the parrot. R. D. coming at 10.35 p. m., had backache, and was sent away early in the morning by my coughing. *June 6-7: 10 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 54 m.; M., 2 h. 26 m.*

*June 8.* Somewhat better today. It is noticeable that M. has not mentioned the "bad man" since leaving Pennsylvania. Though door-bells, footsteps and other sounds by night are heard here as well, they cause her no fear. R. D. came at 8.55 and slept fairly well. *June 7-8: alt.: R. D., 19 h. 22 m.; M., 2 h. 58 m.*

*June 9. Sunday.* R. D. wished to go to church today, but both S. M. and M. said that she ought not, the latter sagely remarking that this would be "rushing things." The monthly



period began today with backache and some pain. M. came at 1 p. m., cheerful as usual. After she fell asleep there were wincing movements and I asked S. M. " (She has pains?) No, M. has no pain. (There seems to be pain somewhere.) It must be R. D. then." When M. woke and the wincing was repeated I asked " (You have a pain?) Asa got no pain." Although there was wincing, M. never at any time today made any complaint or appeared otherwise than in good humor. R. D. came at 10.10 and slept well. *June 8-9: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 53 m.; M., 5 h. 22 m.*

*June 10.* Trying to speak of the rectory M. called it the *resurrectory*. Noticing my amusement she seemed to suspect that something was wrong, and altered the word to *directory*. She reveals an increasing tendency to be side-tracked by phonetic resemblances. She asked for some *canny* [candy], and as there was none asked me to give her some icing from a cake. I brought her a bit, with some cake adhering, and she said that she would imagine that the cake was 'canny' and so have more. "Yes papo, I can just as well imagine the cake is canny, can't I? (Why certainly.) And it will taste just like canny, won't it? (Yes.) And if you haven't any canny you can give me some cake and I will think it is canny and it will taste just like canny. (Yes it surely will.) Yes. I think that is a good idea. Or you can give me some cheese and I'll imagine that it's canny and it'll taste like canny. (Yes.) Yes, papo." When she slept S. M. laughed and said, "She is pretty shrewd. She likes cheese, or at least she imagines how it tastes and thinks she likes it. You notice that what she is willing to substitute for candy is what she likes.

I made a *faux pas* yesterday. The beds in our apartments are of the built-in sort which turn up so that the foot nearly touches the ceiling. When down there are to be seen two holes in the ceiling covered with netting. My break was in making a careless joke about the netting being for the purpose of keeping the rats from coming down. M. at once looked up apprehensively, with a curious, twisted expression, [552] and asked "Are there

552. But *not* the twisted expression which had been characteristic of S. R. D.



rats up there?" I hastened to undo the mischief, by telling her that I was joking, that there were no rats there, but the seeds of suggestion had already sprouted. Soon she was looking up uneasily and murmuring, "Rats up there. (No, there are none.) I see 'em. One is looking down at me." (No, we left them all behind when we came here.) I can see 'em moving. (No, they couldn't cross the desert. Don't you remember that R. D. saw the skeletons of animals that tried to cross the desert? They would die before they could get across.) "This seemed to relieve her. "They couldn't get across, could they papo? (No, they couldn't.) They would die, wouldn't they? (Yes, they would all die.)" Yet several hours later, in the evening, she looked up and said in timorous tones, "Rats up there, moving 'round." I hastened to apply the antidote again. That night R. D. dreamed she saw rats somewhere overhead. In the morning M. had another brief spell of apprehension. S. M. told me the fact of the dream, but had not noticed anything except that it was about rats, but later R. D. told me the dream with some details. [553] It was 9.19 when R. D. came for the night. *June 9-10: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 29 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.*

*June 11.* M. comes every morning now. Once today R. D. went because I said something uncomplimentary in reference to myself, but only for about five minutes. M. scolded me, saying that R. D. could not bear to hear me talk that way. R. D. came at night at 8.45, and slept well. *June 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 8 m.; M., 2 h. 18 m.*

*June 12.* She woke as M. at 5.35, came as R. D. at 7.25 and staid until 9 p. m. Came for the night at 10.25. *June 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*June 13.* Mrs. P. was ill today and R. D. worried about her and in consequence went early, at 7 p. m. I remarked to S. M. that I hoped that R. D. would have longer days when we got into the rectory. She replied, "I don't hope it—I know it." At another time she said spontaneously, "She is making pro-

---

553. For two or three days after this M. continued about once a day to refer to rats. But the mention of the certain fate of rats that should attempt to migrate over the desert was sufficient to make her desist, and the effect of my careless remark gradually wore off.



gress every week. I can see it, though I can't always explain. If you could only see from the inside as I do you would not doubt it. Sometimes I see that she is improving in one part of the body, at another that she is making progress in another part. You can't *force* M. out; she is going as fast as she can. If she went faster it would be bad for R. D.'s mind."

**M.-asleep's Æsthetic Region Further Reduced.** I find that M.'s region of æsthesia while asleep is reduced to a small spot, not much larger than an old-fashioned penny, in the center of her palms. R. D. came at 8.55 p. m. *June 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*June 14.* Some hens that I have purchased arrived today, to R. D.'s delight. After this M. remarked, "I guess I shan't come in the morning. The D. is going to get up early and go out to see the chickens, so I won't be here." R. D. came at 9.05 p. m. *June 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*June 15.* True to M.'s prophecy she did not come in the morning, and not until 8.06 p. m. R. D. arrived for the night at 9.05. *June 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*June 16. Sunday.* Neither did M. come this morning. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *June 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 50 m.; M., 55 m.*

*June 17.* No M. this morning. The household goods have arrived, and R. D. worked pretty hard at the rectory, also many of the articles were injured *en route*, and so M. came at 4.25 p. m., while at the rectory. I suggested helping her to our nearby apartments but she said, "I would be afraid", so we waited until R. D. returned in half an hour.

It is a curious fact that M. again reads understandingly, mostly to herself, but occasionally aloud, quite fluently. Her fluctuations in this regard S. M. does not profess to understand, though she does not think that it means any real recrudescence. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *June 16-17: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 23 m.; M., 4 h. 7 m.*

*June 18.* R. D. continued until 9.15 p. m., and we slept at the rectory, though but little beside the beds is in place. R. D.'s couch was so narrow that she woke repeatedly just on the point of falling off, and her sleep was so disturbed that at about mid-



night M. came. In about 20 minutes R. D. returned, and it was suggested that she make up a bed on the mattress on the floor, but she said "I am too sleepy", and instantly was asleep. Again M. came in perfectly good humor, and said, "She is a tired girl, that D. is, let's make up the bed now." So all three of us set to work, M. bossing the job. R. D. returned and finished the night in peace. It had been 10 p. m. when R. D. first came for the night. *June 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 45 m.*

*June 19.* R. D. persisted in the morning but the wearisome experience of the night caused her to go at 12.50 p. m. She came for the night, after a half an hour's absence, at 9. She is very much pleased with a handsome brass bed, bought her today. *June 18-19: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*June 20.* I have just learned that she has had a backache ever since she came to California. R. D., with her accustomed reticence about her ills, had not told me, and S. M. had "forgotten to do so." R. D. came at 11 p. m. *June 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*June 21.* M. came this morning. R. D. arrived for the night at 8.50. *June 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 3 m.; M., 1 h. 47 m.*

*June 22.* M. came again in the morning. R. D. did not have the backache so badly today. She came for the night at 9.05. *June 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*June 23. Sunday.* R. D., departing at 5.15 a. m., was out 5.30 a. m.-5.50 p. m., and 6.20-8.45 p. m., coming for the night at 9.35. *June 22-23: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*June 24.* M. came first at 2.55, in consequence of R. D.'s misunderstanding the purport of a remark. M. came crying and reproaching, but was soon pacified. R. D. came at 8.53 p. m. *June 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 58 m.*

*June 25.* R. D. was here until 11.25 and thereafter 12.08-2.00, 2.18-6.55, and 7.25-7.52, coming finally at 8.57. *June 24-25: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 28 m.; M., 2 h. 36 m.*

*June 26.* R. D. was on deck until 7.08 p. m., then 7.15-7.35, coming for sleep at 9.15. *June 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 31 m.; M., 1 h. 47 m.*



*June 27.* Today M. called for "canny", yet would not allow me to leave her to procure candy, and Mrs. P. was not circumstanced so that it was possible for her to go. M. persisted, sometimes laughing, sometimes almost whimpering "I'll die if I don't have some canny." Gradually the desire became an obsession; though I could by devices get her mind off for a minute it returned as does a spring. I suggested troches, and she would have been willing if I had been able to offer the kind that she had at the hotel, but the kind I have now she thinks is not good. She asked if she might have some of the cannies that R. D. takes, meaning phenolphthalein pills, but this bid was vetoed. She began to get cross, and to exclaim, "Go away, you bad man!" The situation was getting desperate, so I said, "(I think I have some pieces of the old kind of troches in my vest pocket. I'll see.) Why didn't you say so before? (Because I didn't think.)" I did indeed find the pieces, but they were of the new kind of troche. She chewed them up eagerly and said "They taste like the new kind." [554] Thinking it justifiable, under the circumstances, to fib to a personality, for the heinousness of the deceit in that case is what it was in Sparta, getting caught, I assured her that they were the old kind. Fortunately M. was satisfied, and the danger of a tantrum passed by. I asked M. if R. D. had wanted candy. "Yes, she wanted some awful bad. [555] (Why didn't she get some?) She was too lazy to go and buy it." After dinner I bought a bag of candy, intending to give R. D. a little, though it is hardly good for her, whenever I can learn that she longs for it, in order to prevent an explosion of the unsatisfied craving from taking place in M. I gave her two pieces, which she received with pleasure, and told her that if at any time she felt much longing for candy it would be better for her to eat a little, otherwise she would be pretty sure to eat it in the A Phase, which I would prefer should not be the case.

---

554. This did not mean that she really tasted anything, but that she was a little suspicious, on the ground of the tardiness of my announcement, that they might be the new kind.

555. It will be remembered that at this period R. D. had a morbid craving for candy, which she did not, however, over-indulge. It gradually passed away.



It was evident to me why M. experienced this sudden desire for candy, but to test, for the hundredth time, the accuracy of S. M.'s judgments, formed on the basis of what she sees on "the inside", I asked her what she supposed gave M., now and then, a sudden and insistent desire for a particular article of food. She answered without a moment's hesitation "It means that R. D. has felt a longing for that thing and has repressed the longing." [556] R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *June 26-27: 10 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 18 m.; M., 2 h. 47 m.*

*June 28.* R. D. has complained for several days that she gets tired very easily, and seems troubled about it. She came for the night at 9.35. *June 27-28: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 18 m.; M., 1 h. 57 m.*

*June 29.* R. D. was at the helm until 9.50 a. m., and 10.22-11.05, 11.20-2.55, 3.15-8.10. She attended the laying of a corner-stone, and sat among a crowd of people. After her return I noticed that her body frequently twitched. [557] The backache has been gone for several days. She came at night at 9.15. *June 28-29: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 28 m.; M., 2 h. 12 m.*

*June 30. Sunday.* R. D. had wanted to go to Sunday-school. S. M. had been dubious but not exactly opposed, but in her nervous condition owing to the excitement of the corner-stone laying it was not to be thought of. Fortunately, she gives up without demur or inward revolt. She came for the night at 10.10. *June 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 33 m.; M., 2 h. 22 m.*  
*Average daily total of R. D. for June, 1912, 21 h. 48 m.*

*July 1.* Carpenters, callers, etc., made R. D. nervous, so that, after persisting in the morning, she went at 9.38 a. m. Last

---

556. The next day R. D. was given some more candy, and M. did not call for any that evening. The day following this she was given six small pieces. When M. came she resented my having given R. D. what, she claimed, had been bought for *her*, and promptly demanded six pieces for herself, but let fall the significant remark that she wouldn't have wanted them if I had bought a separate box for R. D. So we see two principles working, (1) Repressed longings of R. D. breaking out in M., (2) A remnant of M.'s old pride of individuality, manifested in a desire to have her property rights respected.

557. The twitching continued the following day, and troubled her. I told her that it was due to the strain of remaining too long in a crowd, and would soon pass away, as it did on Monday or Tuesday.



week a chicken that she has been nursing in the house died, and today another one was stepped on by a hen and killed. There was no such effect upon her emotions as was noted some weeks ago, perhaps hardly more than the normal but very tender-hearted girl would have felt.

M. is actually getting careful of R. D.'s clothes. She takes pains in removing them, saying, for example, "We must be careful of R. D.'s nice dress." S. M. says that the fact that R. D. has learned caution, and has not crossed M.'s few remaining demands, has contributed to this benevolent feeling in regard to R. D.'s clothes. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *June 30-July 1: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 26 m.; M., 1 h. 44 m.*

*July 2.* I had a temporary mood of feeling blue about R. D.'s progress, and S. M. fairly laughed at me. "Why, papa, she is getting on rapidly. I am rejoiced at it." S. M. is unwavering in her certainty that R. D. is improving. M. is as confident in her way, and explains R. D.'s perturbations by saying "It is because I am going so fast." R. D., on the contrary, cannot see that she is improving, and even asks anxiously if she is not getting worse, and has to be reassured. S. M. mentioned some proofs that she says even I ought to see.

(1) "Don't you see that she doesn't take the death of the chickens as hard as she would have done a little while ago? She feels badly, of course, but in a more normal way." (2) "Then she is straightening up. The protruding of her stomach made her stoop to conceal it, and I think that she inherited, on S. D.'s going away, a little of her tendency to slouch. But that was never R. D.'s way, and she is beginning now to straighten up. I see her from time to time throwing her shoulders back and making herself more erect." (3) "This is partly because the abdomen is flattening out, and this is one of the signs of improvement." (4) "Another sign may be added from M.'s testimony, though it is of a negative character, relatively to R. D. When, the other day, I asked her to wait until R. D. came and I could get some candy and then she might return and eat it, she responded, "I can't do that any more." That is, M., on her own testimony, no longer has the power that was hers until we came to California, to order me for example to get some ice-cream, and



in departing to retain the impression of what is to happen, *i. e.*, that some ice-cream is to arrive, so that when it does happen it will act as a talisman to bring her out. It is too early to be sure that this power is permanently lost, but she has not exercised it since coming here. R. D. arrived at 9.05 p. m. *July 1-2: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 59 m.; M., 2 h. 46 m.*

*July 3.* M. is getting less reliable in her remarks regarding R. D., not because she means to deceive, but simply because, no longer being able to watch, and seeing in R. D.'s mind only what passes as the latter is "going down", she often makes wrong inferences from R. D.'s feelings. Often, after M. has made a statement about R. D., S. M. laughs and contradicts it, saying, "It was no such thing. You can't believe all that M. says. She thought that must be the reason, but she was wrong."

A 'phone was put in the house a day or two ago. M. came in my study tonight, and for the first time caught sight of it. She ran towards it, sputtering, "O let me 'phone to Dr. Walker. May I 'phone Dr. Walker? I can 'phone to his house." I told her that the 'phone would not reach him, and she seemed dazed and incredulous, and needed some persuasion to be led away. R. D. came at 9.22 p. m. Her sleep at night has usually been fairly good of late. *July 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 32 m.*

*July 4.* We took dinner at a vestryman's house. There were nine persons present, and I would hardly have ventured R. D.'s going but that the verdict of S. M., M. and R. D. was unanimously in favor of trying it. The company was congenial, and I took her away early, but before coming to California she would not have been able to stand it so nicely. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *July 3-4: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 26 m.; M., 1 h. 27 m.*

*July 5.* R. D. today became somewhat mysteriously grieved about something. S. M. says, "She did not consciously dwell upon these things, but they affected her deep down, and came out in M. all the more." The trouble began in R. D.'s worrying about the mother, who is having a turn of ill-health, and then finding some reproach implied by something the mother said, though none was intended. M. came at 3.20, while in the back yard, would not come in, and, while the other members of the family were engaged, lay down with face upturned in the hot



sun and slept for three-fourths of an hour. This I learned from S. M., and the scorched face confirmed the report. After this M. had several short crying spells. The first one was preceded by a period of a couple of minutes during which she looked fixedly in my eyes in the way that she does when she is supposed to be reading my mind. It is a fact that I had been thinking that I wished that M. could be abolished sooner. I tried again and again to cheer her, only to see her lips draw down in a peculiarly infantile way, and the tears gush forth afresh. The crying was silent throughout. Even after falling asleep, as she often did, exhausted by emotion, the lips would draw down and the tears flow. I knew well the disastrous effects of such crying, but was powerless to prevent it. At 5.05 R. D. came, went at 5.50, and there was a renewal of the crying. When R. D. came back at 6.25 she perceived that she had been crying and asked the cause. I told her that the cause was a mystery to me. In the evening Mrs. P. felt better, and M. got more serene, and began to say, "I won't cry any more", but even as she said it her lip would quiver. R. D. came at 9.35, and in the night, according to S. M., M. came and wept for about 25 minutes. In the morning I found that R. D. was unaware that she had forgotten during the night. *July 4-5: 10 alt.: R. D., 16 h. 45 m.; M., 7 h. 35 m.*

*July 6.* We were invited to a little picnic, and S. M. thought that because M. had been here a considerable time in the morning it would be safe for R. D. to go, if she would promise to leave as soon as she was tired. The trial was made. I took her home directly after lunch and she suffered no harm. She came for the night at 9.03. *July 5-6: 12 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 36 m.; M., 3 h. 51 m.*

*July 7. Sunday.* Today was illustrated how D.'s mind can register external conditions, and when there is no storm sweeping the deck can accommodate itself to those conditions in the matter of the periods of M.-rest. Every Sunday morning since coming here that I have had to be at the church from 7.55 to 8.10 M. has not come during that interval. But today I did not have to go, and M. was here from 7.10 to 7.53. In the afternoon, forgetting that it is about time for D. to be sick, I took her and Mrs. P. on a long walk. On return M. came and



reproached me sharply for my negligence, saying, "She had cramps all the way back."

In the evening S. M. said, "The R. D.'s progress stopped from the time of M.'s crying spell. But it is nothing to worry over. She is not going back, and soon she will be over the effect and be going on again." R. D. came at 9.35 and slept poorly. *July 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 29 m.; 5 h. 3 m.*

*July 8.* The monthly period began last night. It was the most unstable day experienced for a long time, and M.'s late emotional spasm probably had much to do with that fact. M. today marred her new reputation for being careful of R. D.'s clothes, by tearing off the latches of her shoes. She was quite gleeful over it, explaining that R. D. had left them unfastened so often that she, M., was tired of it. Afterwards R. D. said to me sadly, "The A Phase has torn off the fastenings of my shoes." I tried in vain to induce M. to say that she was sorry. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *July 7-8: men. per. began; 16 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 9 m.; M., 5 h. 31 m.*

*July 9.* Three of R. D.'s departures were caused by the pain of combing her hair, tangled by her long lying down.

S. M. says that she enjoys watching decisions and judgments and forming her own. That is, she watches the R. D.'s mind as it is debating a question. While this is going on S. M. forms her own judgment and then waits with interest to see how R. D. and M. will decide. Secondly R. D. makes up her mind. Then M. comes, and often does not see at what decision R. D. has arrived since the latter has settled down comfortably upon it and gives it little thought, but does see the previous debate reviewing in R. D.'s mind. Then M. forms her judgment, frequently different from either of the others.

M. still has a property sense, though much weakened. Since I give R. D. a monthly allowance M. asked if I would give her one, putting it at the modest figure of 20 cents. I agreed to this and she had me put the first installment in her compartment in R. D.'s shopping-bag. R. D. afterwards had to use the money, but repaid it with a quarter, which pleased M. Today she came and went to the piazza door to look for me, faintly calling "papo." I approached near enough to touch her; she did not



see me, nor hear when I repeatedly spoke to her, her mind was so occupied with the impression that I was gone. She went around to another door that opens upon the piazza, and there met me face to face. Her features showed wonder and relief as she asked, "Where were you, papo? I couldn't find you. Where were you?"

The following are pronunciations by M. which have developed in the course of her declension. "Lemmyade" for lemonade, "lee-a-num" for linament; "wah'r" for water, "mizable" for miserable, "hanchet" for handkerchief, "canny" for candy. [558] R. D. came at 9.37 p. m. *July 8-9: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 32 m.; M., 4 h. 50 m.*

*July 10.* R. D. had a blue day. In the afternoon she went to a near-by store, and M. came on the street. R. D. could not tell how long she forgot, M.'s estimate of 2 minutes is worthless, but S. M. thought it was perhaps 3 minutes. M. said nothing but remained as if waiting for someone, and was pretty badly scared. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *July 9-10: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 47 m.; M., 2 h. 56 m.*

*July 11.* R. D. here to 7.40 a. m., and thereafter 8.00-12.13, 12.40-2.45, 4.30-8.40. Came at night, 9.50. *July 10-11: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 23 m.; M., 5 h. 7 m.*

*July 12.* R. D. out to 7.35 a. m., and thereafter 7.53-10.12, 10.35-6.18, 6.37-8.40. Menstruation renewed yesterday and today. Came for the night at 10. Was gone 1.05-1.35 a. m., cause caterwauling. *July 11-12: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 3 h. 20 m.*

*July 13.* R. D., who has been below par in spirits for several days, remarked "I don't see what is the matter with me. I don't feel like doing anything. I am afraid it is laziness." But it is not. She added, "I worry about things now; I never used to." Her own sickness, cutting a wisdom tooth, worry about

---

558. When I first knew M. she had comparatively few childish pronunciations. As time went on these multiplied, as will be seen. Not only from S. M.'s testimony, but also from various associated signs, some of which will be found set down later on, it is a safe conclusion that M. was mentally traveling backward, and that she was picking up on the way pronunciations which she had employed in early childhood and afterwards mostly discarded.



Mrs. P., and also, according to S. M., the confusion incident to getting settled in the house, are the probable causes. Several times during her long stays of the last two days M. has said, "This is a fierce world. What is there for me to do?" She often seems about to cry but when reminded that she has promised not to do this and hurt R. D., she represses the inclination.

**M.'s Vision Begins to Shorten.** Another change in M. has been discovered. The hollow cone, as it were, within which she sees, is shortening. That is, not only can she see only within a narrow angle, but her sight extends only to a certain distance straight in front of her. S. M. says that she thinks M. cannot see from one side of a room to the other, though she knows the location of objects so well that only experiment and careful observation can detect the fact. But I have noticed lately that M. sometimes asks "What is that?", when the object at which she points is of some size and directly in front of her.

Again, if M. "comes out" when on the porch she does not care to stay there, and she never goes out of the outside doors except rarely to do something that was in R. D.'s mind as necessary to do, before she went. Even this has almost ceased, she is telling me what to do instead. Probably nineteen-twentieths of her time is spent in her room or the dining-room, where there is a narrow couch, and probably nine-tenths of her time is spent lying down. Often she will say, when about to go to sleep, "Will you hold my hand *all the time*, papo?" She reads, sleeps, wakes, talks, reads, sleeps and wakes, and perhaps grumbles if out for a considerable time during a day. If out but a short time she spends it mostly in sleep. She tastes nothing, though acute to discover, in many cases, the condition of fruit and food. Once she declared that the lemonade was not fresh, perhaps because of the looks of some bits of lemon floating in it. The next time she came she exclaimed, "No wonder I didn't like that lemonade. The D. poured water into the pitcher just to keep the lemon, and once in a while she took a piece out to eat. (How do you know?) I just saw it." That is, she saw it in R. D.'s thoughts as the latter was going down. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m.



and slept better, since there was no sound heard from musical cats. *July 12-13: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 2 m.; M., 4 h. 48 m.*

*July 14. Sunday.* R. D. woke at 5.30 and began to say to herself, "I must not forget this morning. Papo has to go to the church early." By this process, since she fears that she will be a "bother" to me when she forgets, she maintains herself until a more convenient hour. While alone in the house and taking a bath M. came and finished the bath. M. told me, "The D. forgot in the bath-tub and she didn't know it. She was rattled when she came and found herself through,—she didn't quite understand it." R. D. came for the night at 10.10. *July 13-14: 8 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*July 15.* While M. was here asleep after 4 p. m., I noticed that she was lying perfectly still,—not a movement except her measured breathing—and my suspicion was aroused. I addressed a question to S. M. and received no answer. Finally there came a jerk, and then I learned that S. M. had been "away" for some time, I should judge for 15 minutes, and had not heard me speak. This has not happened for some time previously.

Since the Friday when M. had frequent crying-spells, resulting in temporarily checking R. D.'s progress, she has shown a tendency towards crying beyond any previous period, though she tries to check it when I remind her that crying hurts R. D. It is probably of the nature of an automatism, started on that Friday. The automatisms that go in pairs are interesting. M. performs some act with a high degree of interest or other emotion, at the same time giving utterance to some verbal expression. After that the performance of the act, whether she is awake or asleep, tends to bring along with it the associated utterance. For example, she copied one of my then methods of getting her to sleep with amused interest, stroking me on the temples and saying, "Go to sleep! Go to sleep!" After that, particularly when she is asleep, if she begins to pat me anywhere about the head the utterance is sure to start. It seems to me that the more M.'s individuality shrinks the more delicate it is, and the more care must be taken to preserve her equanimity. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *July 14-15: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 22 m.; M., 2 h. 43 m.*

*July 16.* M. has taken to the habit, when she wishes to go

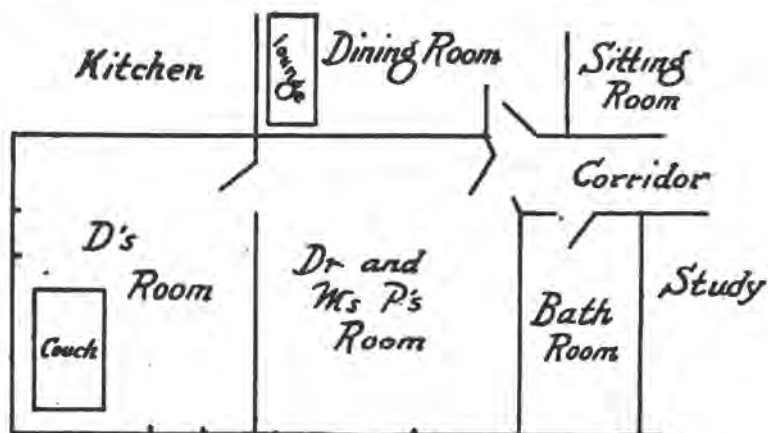


into another room, of taking hold of my coat, and having me tow her, as it were. Once she said pitifully, "I bump myself against the doors, papo; I can't see." Ordinarily she conceals her difficulties, even stoutly asserting, "Yes, I see it; sure I see it." But when in a confidential mood, she admits, to me only, that she cannot see as she formerly did. I tried the experiment, when M. was entering her room alone, of standing at the far side, but she came to me at once. I had my theory, but did not mention it to S. M. when I asked her how she accounted for M.'s finding me so quickly. She promptly answered, "She hears you breathe." After one or two repetitions of this experiment I varied it by checking my breathing as M. entered the room and otherwise remaining perfectly motionless and silent. She entered, looked in various directions, called "Papo, where are you, papo?", and went out of the room, seeking me. The instant I moved she turned with a glad cry and came to me. Another time, as she was going to the bath-room I let her see me go into an adjoining room, then crept back to hers as noiselessly as possible. I took my place in her room about eight feet from the door, and in the full light. As she emerged from the bath-room I held my breath. She entered, glanced about and then sat down about nine feet away from me. Presently I stole quietly in her direction. She looked up, with a strained expression, as of one peering into a bush-thicket expecting a friend to emerge. When I had arrived at about six feet distance her face broke into smiles, she thrust out her hands and laughed loudly and somewhat hysterically, then resumed her occupation.

Standing with bated breath I have watched her progress from the bath-room to her own room. The diagram shows the path she has to take. Not doorways but doors are the buoys which shape her course, and she hastens towards them so quickly that she almost or quite bumps into them before she can check herself, as she probably has difficulty in gauging distance. She bolts from the bath-room into the corridor, usually first catches sight of the dining-room door because that is nearly opposite, plunges towards it and either bumps into it or arrests herself just in time, then like a boat caught by a wave that whirls its bow to one side heads for the door to the middle bedroom, catches herself before



bumping that door or fails to do so, veers to the left enough to pass through, keeps on in nearly the same direction until the door of her room looms up, almost or quite comes into contact with that, swings abruptly to the left again, rushes blindly towards her couch until that comes in sight, and then with a still quicker movement and often with a cry of relief, flings herself into her haven on the couch. [559] One evening R. D. spoke of her forehead smarting and a new abrasion was to be seen, which M. got by colliding with a door. Observation led to the conclusion



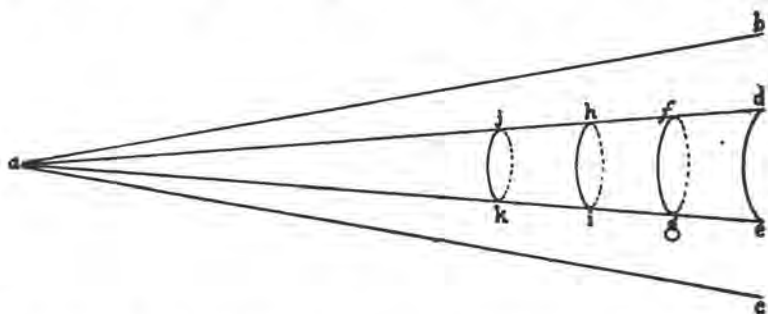
that M. can see about six feet, and this was afterwards interestingly confirmed by S. M., to whom the fact had not been mentioned. As I sat down by the couch and M. sank to sleep S. M. said, "You were just visible to M. now. She could not see you plainly." I happened to be sitting at just about six feet distance. At some date before Oct. 30th of last year M.'s vision began to narrow. It was as if she were looking through a hollow cone of very wide angle, indefinitely extended. The angle gradually diminished until it may be represented by *bac* in the diagram, continued to diminish until it reached what may be represented by *dae*, and since then has not narrowed. At

559. Note written in December, 1912. "In a few weeks she became accustomed to the paths that she must take, as a blind man does, so that she ceased to bump into doors."



some date, at least several weeks ago, the cone began to shorten, and after that shortened rapidly, as represented by *fag*, *hai* and *jak*. We will assume that *jak* stands for the present condition, when the visual cone is about six feet long.

R. D. had the thought come to her this morning, as she was looking at M.'s dolls ranged on her bookcase, "I want them in papo's room." It is seldom that M.'s thoughts, in definite wording, come up into the consciousness of R. D. now. I afterwards quietly asked M. if she was thinking that sentence at the time. She replied, "I wasn't thinking it then. I didn't know that R. D. was looking at 'em. It was because I thought it real hard when I was here, before that." It was deferred auto-suggestion, if it may be so-called, bubbling up from M. to R. D. In the evening M.



told me that she had a pimple, and the act of pointing at it roused the old habit of scratching it. I gently said, "Don't do that", and she stopped, with a frightened expression, and broke out into hysterical laughter. S. M. says, "She was scared. She knew she ought not to do that." Later I formed on her fingers the words, "I am going to give you a little bronze cat", referring to a watch-charm which I had found. "O that is boo'ful!", she cried, showing that she understood, instantly woke, and said, "What is it? what is it, papo, that you are going to give me?" R. D. came at 11 p. m. July 15-16: 12 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 9 m.; M., 4 h. 36 m.

July 17. In the afternoon R. D. started to make a short call, but got interested and staid far longer than she had intended. On the way home M. came, for 5 minutes by S. M.'s estimate,



but very likely not so long. M. stood still on the sidewalk, looking at the leaves on the low-hanging trees, and very much frightened. There was some twitching in the afternoon in consequence, and both M. and R. D. seemed tired. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *July 16-17: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 23 m.; M., 4 h. 27 m.*

*July 18.* This was the third hot and humid day, during which R. D. has suffered much, with effects upon her stability. She came for the night at 9.35. *July 17-18: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 47 m.; M., 4 h. 58 m.*

*July 19.* The day was hot but dry, and she felt better. At dinner I made a side-remark to Mrs. P. about preserving some daintiness, but did not mention why. A moment later M. came, and explained, "You made R. D. think of me, and that made me come." M. ate the tidbit and went. R. D. came at 10 p. m. *July 18-19: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 41 m.; M., 3 h. 44 m.*

*July 20.* Still hot but dry, and "the bunch" felt well. M. did a remarkable thing for her, she sent for ice-cream and paid for it herself. And she was unable to eat it all, and left some for R. D., another remarkable thing. But she repented of paying, and proposed that I should give her the money back, which I gravely maintained was impossible. Even after she was asleep she would break out, "Wish I had that dime back." S. M. commended my not giving her the dime, saying that if I had done so, M. would expect the precedent to be followed hereafter. In the early evening I went away for an hour, leaving R. D. on the porch. M. came for 20 minutes, and after my return came again and on the way upstairs pounded me unmercifully, and when the lamp was lit showed great resentment about something. All the finesse that I could summon, and several naps, were required to restore her good nature. S. M. reprovingly said, "Don't you remember that I said you should not leave the R. D. out on the porch in the evening? She is awfully afraid when alone at night, afraid in her room, but more so on the porch. And if M. comes on the porch she is afraid, though not in her room. The danger in M.'s case is that she may go out on the street looking for you. She thinks you can do anything, and so blames you for not being there and keeping her from being afraid." R. D.'s fears at night are new, and do not yield to suggestion in her sleep.



S. M. suspects that she goes to sleep too soundly to hear me. R. D. came at 10.50 p. m. *July 19-20: R. D., 21 h. 7 m.; M., 3 h. 43 m.*

*July 21. Sunday.* Another disaster and a short day in consequence. R. D. woke to find one of her canaries dead. On my return from church I found M., who had been crying. In fact M. *seemed* to feel worse than R. D., but no doubt M.'s long periods out acted as a vent and relief for R. D.'s repressed sorrow. R. D. came at 9.22. *July 20-21: 8 alt.; R. D., 15 h. 53 m.; M., 6 h. 39 m.*

*July 22.* The weather was fine, R. D. felt well, and no effects of the bird's death were perceptible.

In the evening, as M. sat with her foot under her but protruding, I asked if her foot would not get "asleep." She looked mystified, glanced at her foot on the floor, and said, "Why, papo?" I drew her attention to the other foot. She said seriously, "What's that for? That isn't my foot. (Yes it is.) No it *isn't*." I put her hand on it. "I don't want to touch people's feet. (If that isn't your foot, where is your foot?)" She pointed triumphantly to her foot on the floor. "(Yes, that is one foot, but where is the other?)" She caught sight of a slipper under the edge of the couch. "*There* it is." I drew it out and showed her that it was only a slipper, reiterating the query, "(Where is your other foot?)" She again pointed at her foot on the floor. "Why, *there* it is." I then took hold of that foot, and said, "(You see the foot I am holding. Now if the foot under you isn't the other where is it?)" She again bent over and searched, then lifted a convulsed face, and cried in tones of increasing poignancy, "My foot is *gone!* O papo, I've lost my foot. I've lost my foot." As she seemed on the point of bursting into sobs, and her feelings were fast mounting to fear and agony, I hurriedly pulled her foot from beneath her and showed it to her. She cried out in relief, "O, *there's* my foot. I thought I'd lost my foot." Later she seemed to believe that she had lost it for awhile, but that it "came back." Even in her sleep she would exclaim, "I 'most lost my foot." S. M. said, "You'd better be careful. She got pretty scared." Afterwards I tried sitting on my own foot, and asked her where it was. She



began to get agitated, and I hastily put the foot down. It has not been long that she has been liable to such confusion regarding external objects, even parts of her own body. The disappearance of tactile sensation laid the foundation for it, and of course the limitations of her visual field react upon her mental processes.

M. has considerable trouble with her money. Lately R. D. tied a coin in the corner of a handkerchief for some reason, and soon after M. came she did the same with a nickel of her own. The next time she came she could not remember where she put it and became quite anxious. I gave her another, and she said, "That's all right, but it doesn't make up for the nickel I lost. If you lost the Doris, and someone said 'Here is another girl', would that make up for D., papo?" At another coming she bade me go to a certain basket and see if the handkerchief containing the nickel was there. It was. Suddenly she shouted, "Where is my forty cents? I tied that up in a handkerchief. I bet that has gone to the wash." I inquired of R. D. and learned that she had found the money and supposed that she herself put it there and forgot it. I saw that it was restored to M.

R. D. came at 10.20, and slept very well, as she has for a number of nights. She hardly wakes, perhaps because of the psychic treatment after she falls asleep, so has little chance to be afraid in the dark. *July 21-22: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 26 m.; M., 3 h. 32 m.*

*July 23.* R. D. has been trying to abstain from food between meals, but since during the most of her life she seldom sat down to meals, but ate by snatches at any time that was convenient, she is probably too rapidly forcing herself into a new channel. She was hungry when she went at noon today, according to M. In the afternoon I advised R. D. to take a little lunch in the forenoon so as not to get too hungry before dinner-time. She asked, "Is that why I have been forgetting at noon?", and was informed that this is probably the case.

During the noon interval M. said, "See Gyp [a canary] hopping from one perch to another." I found that she could tell across the room when he was lightly hopping, and when he was standing still. I said, "(You hear him, don't you?) Yes, I see



him." She continued to assert stoutly that she could see him, but with that something in her tone which is characteristic when she is concealing or evading. But her pupils were not directed precisely towards the cage, but were staring vacantly, as one's eyes stare sometimes when he is listening intently. Again she asked if my Turkish fez was hanging on the wall. I assented and asked how she knew, and she replied that she had seen about it in R. D.'s thoughts.

S. M. thinks it not more than two weeks since M.'s visual cone began to shorten. I inquired how much she [S. M.] looks out through the eyes when R. D. or M. is out. She replied, "More than I used to. I used to find their thoughts so interesting that I spent nearly all my time watching them. (You knew what was happening outside by watching their thoughts?) Why, certainly I did. (How did you become conscious of outside happenings?) I saw them as a picture in the mind. It was very interesting to see the side-flashes that came in of the thoughts of the different personalities about it. I wish you could have been able for a week to see what I have seen."

R. D. is feeling splendidly. She spends her time partly in household tasks, is out in the henyard many times a day, typewrites when she feels like it, sews now and then, reads sitting on the porch, etc. Variety of occupation is excellent for her.

In the evening M. said, "I'm your little nuisance, ain't I, papo? (No, you are not a nuisance.)" To my surprise she seemed a little put out, and replied tartly, "Yes, I am." And then, probably suspicious from my expression that she was on uncertain ground, she asked, "What is a nuisance? (You are, if you want to be.) Can I be anything I want to be? (I guess so.) Then I'm your little nuisance", and she went happily off to sleep. This is characteristic. She often employs terms and sentences which sound far more sophisticated. But when I ask her quietly what they mean she is nonplussed. If not in an evasive mood she will look puzzled and reply, "Asa no", or "Asa d'no." She will often give me some item of news from the papers, of political or social or scientific import, with a sage air, but when I casually question her she breaks down, and appears what she is, a little child that is quoting from other's expressions beyond its com-



prehension. The "news" is something that R. D. has been thinking about, and M. sees the phrases in her mind as she is going down. This evening M. read some 50 pages in a story-book. I remarked to S. M. that M. seemed to understand her reading better than formerly. She responded, "You test her, and see how much she understands. She just reads one word after another, regardless of commas or periods. It makes next to no impression upon her. You notice, when R. D. begins to read that book M. will begin it again." The next morning I questioned M. in the most diplomatic way possible. All that she could tell me about the book was that it was about a "nigger." She could not recognize the names of the characters, when I named them. Why did she remember that the chief character was a negro? Because I had previously told R. D. so, when recommending her to read the book. M. much prefers to read something that R. D. has already read, doubtless because she borrows some interest in it from R. D.'s mind.

**M.-asleep Loses all Tactile Æsthesia.** For some days I have suspected that all tactile sensation had at last disappeared from M.'s hand when she sleeps. I questioned S. M. but she had not noticed it. Tonight I rubbed and squeezed M.'s hand over its entire surface, without reactions. I stated the result to S. M., who answered, "Then it must be that she has lost all feeling in her palms, for she was not soundly asleep, and certainly would have made some sign if she had felt." So M. has passed two more milestones in her retreat from Moscow, during the last two weeks. (1) Her vision has shortened to six feet. (2) She has lost all hitherto remaining tactile sensation when asleep. She has had none while awake for many months. I insert a letter written to Dr. Hyslop, just after I had written to him.

584 Fourth St.

July 23, 1912

San Bernardino.

Dear Jim

We have moved away off on a train Doris cried because she was afraid to sleep in the train and papo had to hold her and then I came. We have a nice home here Doris thinks so and Doris has hens and rooster and one chicken last



Sunday her Bird Molly died and she felt very bad I felt worse papo says and I was here a great deal Doris is not getting well so fast now because we had the furniture all broken but it is fixed now and we are all fixed up if you ever see that fish doctor in New York you tell him he owes me a present. I wrote to Dr. Walker and he hasn't answered me yet I will get after him if he don't soon write. We have lots of flowers and trees peach olives figs and apricot If you are not too busy write me soon and tell me how many trees you have. Oh and Doris is going to get a dog.

Yours in spirit

Margaret. [560]

R. D. came at 9.18 and slept well. *July 22-23: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 23 m.*

*July 24.* Coming at night, 9.35, R. D. slept very well. *July 23-24: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 29 m.; M., 3 h. 48 m.*

*July 25.* I proposed that R. D. go to a service at the church which would be attended by few, but she became nervous at the thought, and M. came. Visitors took dinner and spent the evening. They were congenial to R. D., and she stood it splendidly, remaining in the room with them until their departure, at 10.05, [561] whereupon M. promptly came, and remarked, "It is a

---

560. It was a little before this date that S. M. made her first attempt at writing, taking the form, at my suggestion, of a note to Dr. Walker. True to her prophecy, M. asleep, since she then still retained æsthesia in the palm and detected writing movements, "butted in" from time to time. The following is the result, with M.'s interpolations placed in brackets.

"Dear [Margaret] Dr. Walker [Prince]

This is Sleeping Margaret writing [Margaret Prin] to you Margaret is going very fast now and [Margaret Prince] is beginning to feel it she is very tired."

The "Prin" is joined to the following "to". That is, S. M. regained control of the pencil and went on without lifting it.

561. R. D. was wearied by being with persons outside of the family in proportion as they were (1) strange to her, (2) uncongenial from their characteristics or what she had heard about them, (3) numerous, (4) loud of voice and "long-winded". The presence of two or three persons whom she knew well, liked and respected, and who were quiet of manner and voice, was often stimulating and beneficial.



good thing for the D. to stay longer this evening. Maybe now I won't come so early in the evening. Because she has got into a habit, you know." I asked S. M. how M. could know this, "Because it has always been so. All her life D. has had a tendency to run in grooves. She would get into the habit of M. coming such a way or time for a while, then break the chain and follow a new groove."

It was at 10.55 that M., composing herself to sleep, opened her eyes widely and said, "R. D. coming just as I got ready to sleep. Now waz you think of that? Ain't that fierce?" R. D. came at 11, and slept soundly. *July 24-25: 10 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h. 30 m.*

*July 26.* Since that calamitous Friday it has been S. M.'s testimony that R. D. was not making progress, though not retrogressing. But today, after we all three made a pleasant trip to Redlands, S. M. announced, "I think that R. D. made a little progress today." Yet in the meantime M. has kept on losing, even though R. D. did not advance in her own personality, so there has been a net gain. And S. M. has throughout been perfectly serene, asserting that the pausing of R. D. was only temporary. R. D. came at 9.15 and slept well. *July 25-26: 6 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 48 m.; M., 4 h. 27 m.*

*July 27.* M. did not come at all this morning. [562] R. D. was in first-class spirits. This morning I went to Colton to find the best way to climb a hill known as "Slover Mountain", before taking her, but unwisely failed to tell her my intention. When I returned and reported she made little answer, but evidently thought that I might have taken her. M. soon came, was pleasant at first, but presently caught sight of R. D.'s thoughts, looked coldly at me and refused to talk, said "shut up!" to most of my overtures, etc. Her mood persisting, R. D. came looking gloomy. M. returned in an hour, in a not much altered frame; for a moment the sun would peer out, and then the clouds would roll

---

562. M. had come every morning from the crying-spell of July 5, to July 26, on the afternoon of which S. M. announced that R. D.'s progress had begun. Not only did R. D. thereafter occasionally maintain herself in the morning, but the number of alternations in a day at once became generally less.



over again. An hour and a half passed, when suddenly the spell broke, M. flung her arms around my neck, laughed and prattled as usual, and fell asleep. After-tests showed that M. did not retain memory of the incident. It was not grave enough to leave much impression on R. D., who came at 9.35 and slept pretty well. *July 26-27: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 51 m.; M., 2 h. 29 m.*

*July 28. Sunday.* R. D. went to Sunday school for the first time for months, S. M. approving, and was tired but little. She asked to go to church also next Sunday but both M. and S. M. thought this would involve too much strain, and I certainly agreed to the verdict.

R. D. came for the night at 10.45. For some nights her sleep has been getting sounder. During this series I have been suggesting sound sleep, not in a whisper as heretofore, but in a low voice, thinking that this might reach the slumbering consciousness better. The improvement in sleep may be due to the suggestions, or to the banishment from the back yard of warbling cats, or both. Her sleeping attitude, as observed in the morning, is in contrast to the dormouse ball that S. D. used to make of herself. She lies most frequently on her back, her hands clasped or lying easily on her chest, her lips closed and her features in calm repose. Neither she nor any of the personalities has ever been known to snore. *July 27-28: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*July 29.* S. M. says that R. D., when she learned yesterday morning that she was to go to Sunday school, went to her room, "kicked up her heels and did some steps of a Scotch dance." But in our presence she was sedate enough. Probably it was the excitement of looking forward to a pleasure-trip today which caused her to forget this morning. After R. D. had returned, at about 9 a. m., R. D. was looking for me wishing to ask me something, and did not perceive that I was on the side porch. She then went into her closet and a mouse ran over her arm, and M. came. The latter continued the search for me, and went to the church next-door, afterwards explaining, "The D. thought you were over to the church." She found the church closed, and returned from what is to her a foreign trip. I happened to meet her, and she ran to me with hysterical laughter, asking over and



over, despite my replies, "Where *was* you? Where *was* you?" R. D. was soon back and the family took a trip out into the semi-arid plains by the Santa Ana River. She greatly enjoyed the botanizing, study of insects, etc. As we were lunching she suddenly perceived a snake coiled up on her dress, screamed and jumped, rudely dumping his snakeship from his bed—but maintained her individuality! It was the second snake which she has ever seen. After our return home M. came, and presently yelled, with startling suddenness, "Snake!", as she caught sight of R. D.'s thoughts. Then she laughed with enjoyment, adding, "She was so startled that she forgot to forget." S. M. afterwards commented, "It was a wonder that M. didn't come."

I asked R. D. today if she ever heard of the claim that some people—putting it this way so that she would not suspect anything—can read words and whole sentences, simply from their being formed on their fingers with the lips while they are blind-folded. She looked at me with a highly sceptical expression, and replied, "No, and I don't believe that anybody could do it. I would have to see it done to believe it." I dared not glance at Mrs. P. R. D. little knows what can be done, though it is very doubtful if she will ever see anything of the nature referred to. R. D. came at 9.07, and softly murmured as she instantly fell asleep, "Snake!" She slept well. *July 28-29: 8 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 23 m.; M., 3 h. 59 m.*

*July 30.* S. M. says that she is now certain that R. D. is making progress, as she can see it on the inside. She declares that R. D. does not dream much. "If she did I would know it. I know whenever she is dreaming, unless I happen not to be paying attention, but I don't fail in that enough not to know about how much she dreams. She dreams but a small part of the night,—unless I am a dream", she added, humorously. "(How did *you* feel when you saw the snake?) Of course I regarded it more calmly than the R. D. did. What took my attention most was the perfectly blank expression of the mother when D. yelled." She laughed at the recollection. "(Would it have been possible for you to perceive the snake before R. D. did?) O yes, if her eyes had been turned sufficiently in that direction. They were turned away until the instant that we both saw it. I often see



things before she does. (How can you tell that?) Because I see an instant picture of what she sees, in her mind. For that reason I don't have to look at just what she is looking at, but can give my attention to details which escape her." R. D. came at 9.35 and had a splendid night. *July 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 33 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*July 31.* M. did not come this morning. I asked M. today why she did not sleep so much while out as formerly, and she said it was because R. D. sleeps so well and long at night. R. D. keeps a book of accounts. On coming tonight M. attempted to post it to date from what she saw in R. D.'s mind, but misinterpreted some items, so that the next morning R. D. complained that "Phase A puts down things that don't belong there." R. D. came at 9.47 p. m. *July 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 13 m.; M., 1 h. 59 m. Average daily total of R. D. during July, 1912, 20 h. 15 m.*

*Aug. 1.* M. came first at a little before 1 p. m., in consequence of R. D.'s worrying over the discovery that mice enter the canary cage at night. R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. *July 31-Aug. 1: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 2 h. 3 m.*

*Aug. 2.* R. D. came at night, 9.15. *Aug. 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Aug. 3.* M. came in the morning. R. D. came at night, 9.30. *Aug. 2-3: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h. 10 m.*

*Aug. 4. Sunday.* M. has been uniformly amiable and cheerful since R. D. resumed progress. Within a few minutes of her coming she usually calls for something to eat, in this fashion: "Get me a roll, split it, put some butter on it and some ham between. And get me a glass of lemmyade and put plenty of sugar in it. And get me another glass of lemmyade to put on as-serve." This last clause first appeared about 8 days ago, and has been repeated every day since. "On asserve" is her version of "in reserve", and means that she will drink the second glass later on; I don't know where she picked it up. Practically every time she comes in the evening, and sometimes in the daytime, I have to rub her feet. No doubt this is a good thing, as very soon after she comes the feet become icy cold, but good or not, the task could not be declined without trouble. Fortunately, I can read



or study while it is being executed. When M. reads and then intelligently comments upon her reading, I can be sure that R. D. read it before her, and that she is rehearsing the opinions which she has seen in R. D.'s mind during the going down of the latter. When she reads something that R. D. has not previously read it is impossible to get her to tell anything about it. She pretends not to hear, or evades the question, never acknowledging that she is unable to answer. One evening when she was reading an article which R. D. had not seen, Mrs. P. happened frequently to interrupt her with remarks. At last she said, "I can't talk to you and read at the same time, mother. I lose my word. I can't find my word again." Thus she inadvertently betrayed the mechanical quality of her reading,—she does not keep the place by the sense but by the word. Every word is an isolated thing to her, not part of a sentence. Her peculiarities of vision are frequently illustrated. A curtain flaps and comes for a moment near enough for her to glimpse it. "Something is coming! What is that, papo?", she cries in alarm. Or I am leading her to the door of the bath-room, and the light is reflected from the door. "What was that, papo?" she asks apprehensively. R. D. came at 10.55 p. m. *Aug. 3-4: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 22 m.; M., 4 h. 3 m.*

*Aug. 5.* M. came while R. D. was in the bath. M. did not seem to know how to get out, and Mrs. P. had to explain to her through the door how to turn the key. She falls more and more out of relation with the external world. R. D. came at 10.55. The monthly period began in the night, with little pain. *Aug. 4-5: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 13 m.; M., 2 h. 47 m.*

*Aug. 6.* There was little pain, yet it was a very unstable day. Once I broke out into boisterous song so suddenly that it scared her away. Once she was banished by a pain. When she returned after the time proximately referred to I asked how long she would judge she had been gone. She guessed 20 minutes, whereas the absence had not lasted more than 2 minutes. She has very little if any sense of time-elapsd between departure and return.

S. M. can impress the consciousness of R. D. voluntarily, though apparently she does so but seldom. For example the other day R. D. was looking at a piece of lace which she will



later need. She could now get it at half price, yet made up her mind not to do so. That night S. M. told me about it, and I agreed that R. D. would have done wisely to buy it. I was surprised to hear R. D., almost as soon as she came the next morning, say "I think I will go down this morning and get that lace." Not until two days later did S. M. refer to the incident and allege, "I made her do that. (How did you do it?) I thought intently about it—that she ought to get it—through the night." If S. M. can do this sort of thing voluntarily, is it not probable that her thoughts and moods may sometimes be impressed upon R. D. involuntarily? Observation inclines me to think that this is so. Two or three times I have said, in conversation with S. M., something which she has construed as reflecting upon R. D. Now S. M. often herself criticises R. D.'s peculiarities and laughs at them, at the same time in the main excusing them, as due to the ferment and confusion induced by the rapid shifting of interior conditions. I may then share in the merriment and friendly criticism. But when on these two or three recent occasions I volunteered remarks of the kind S. M. cloaked herself in that passive silence which is her sign of displeasure. When R. D. afterwards came, she seemed "dumpy", though evincing no sign that she was aware of any reason for so feeling and if asked what the matter was she answered, "Nothing; I just don't feel well." Another time S. M. said, "Now don't get to worrying, or you will make me worry", and I have found that S. M.'s worrying results in R. D.'s feeling indefinitely out of sorts.

When callers were here R. D. took down M.'s dolls for a little girl to play with, without stirring up M., or evoking any disapproval after M. came. Verily a change! R. D. came at 10.02 and slept well. [563] *Aug. 5-6: men. per. began; 14 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 10 m.; M., 5 h. 57 m.*

563. M. wrote Dr. Hyslop a letter on the 6th, in a larger hand than I had ever known her to employ. Doubtless this peculiarity resulted from her failing vision.

"Mar. 5, 1912.  
San Bernad.

You Jim Hyslop what you say you wrote me a letter and then you didn't you can't fool me making me think theres a letter there when there isn't you had better send it write off as I will be waiting for it Doris is getting better now she started to Sunday School and but they closed it so she had to quit



*Aug. 7.* Referring to the more frequent alternations and the shorter days which R. D. has now, S. M. said, You know I told you before we left Pennsylvania that before M. disappeared you must expect R. D. to forget more than she had done. This is what I told you would take place—it doesn't worry me at all. R. D. cannot stand the changes which are taking place in M. and be out so much as she was. M.'s losing feeling in her palms when asleep and her sight getting shorter makes it look to me as if the end were not far off, though I cannot tell certainly about that."

did you see that Fish Doctor he swiped 5 stamps papo sent him to send me a present with wish I had him hear I punch him one well mother is so busy she can't wait to hear this letter so I will have to quit

Yours in spirit  
MARGARET."

The reference to the "Fish Doctor" needs explanation. M. had been so concerned about the failure of Dr. Smeltz to send her a Christmas present that finally I wrote to him stating the case, and asked him to send her a trifle, enclosing ten cents in stamps for the purpose. He was never heard from, and very likely did not receive the letter.

The same day M. wrote to Dr. Walker the following letter:

"Mar. 5, 1912.  
San Ber.

Dear Dr. Walker.

If you don't write to Doris and us I am coming to see you Jim Hyslop wrote me to day but forget to put it in Papos letter.

MARGARET.

Papo and mother and Doris were out yesterday and and when they were eating a big snake curled up on Doris dress mabe she wasn't skared Doris is still wanting a dog but has not got it yet geas she will keep on wanting I told Jim Hyslop if he saw that fish Doctor to tell him he owes me a present. Doris is getting better now again she started to go to Sunday School but they closed it *Now I ant going to tell you to write again you greaser*

Yours in spirit  
MARGARET."

The incident referred to as taking place "yesterday", really happened eight days previous to the writing of the letter.

M. also wrote a letter to me "for fun". It shows that she is not entirely through "imagining".

"Mar. 5, 1912.  
Pittsfield  
Boston (1)

Dear Papo

I have been here most a month (just pertending) and like it very much the rattlesnakes are thick as oats (2) and we are having a good time we went



I tested M.'s vision today. Careful devices are necessary, else she resents it or attempts to deceive me, or else deceives herself. I asked her what time it was by the clock on the mantel, and she said she could not see it. I brought it slowly towards her until it was about 5 feet and 6 inches away, when she saw it and said, "Six o'clock! O, it is supper-time!" It was about 4 o'clock, but nevertheless, she saw the clock. When I withdrew it she protested that she could see it still. Then I took a statuette from the mantel that M. admires, and asked if she liked that. Her face twisted as it does when she is puzzled and is endeavoring to conceal the fact, and she kept saying, "No, papo, I don't like that. I don't like that, papo." This in itself was a betrayal of the fact that she did not see the object, for she never would have said that she did not like it had she known what it was. When the statuette had come to this distance of 5 feet and 6 inches, her face underwent a change, and she cried, "I like that. That is D.'s statue." But as I began to withdraw the figure slowly, she showed signs of resentment, and refused to answer any more questions of the sort. I think that the hollow cone has shortened

---

in swimming the other day and most drowned but don't get skared we won't go in again (3) we found lots of flowers and pressed them they are very beautiful and they are keeping there color fine (4) we have a beautiful pony and cart and we go out riding every day (5) but our chickens are not doing so well now they are all dead (6) well it is time to cook our supper (7) Good by

Your beautiful (8)  
baby

MARGARET."

This deserves some notes of its own. (1) The letter is supposed to be written from the place where we spent the summer of last year, which M. calls Pittsfield, Boston. (2) Suggested by the incident of the snake referred to in her letter to Dr. Walker, and also by the talk about rattlesnakes in the mountains. (3) A reminiscence of an incident or incidents of her childhood. (4) All about the flowers true in reference to R. D. (5) Suggested by seeing ponies attached to carts pass the house. (6) Not a fact. (7) None of the personalities have anything to do with the cooking, though they were formerly familiar with such work. (8) M. probably did not mean beautiful in looks but in behaviour.

M. read the letter aloud very impressively, pausing to assure me, several times, that she was only pretending. After reading about the narrow escape she said, "You mustn't be scared, papo, that is only pretending. I didn't mos' dwown".



a few inches during the last two weeks. I asked S. M. how she supposed that M. would endure existence if M.'s sight entirely vanished, and received the reply, "O I don't think that will happen. I think M. will go before that takes place." [564] Often, when M. comes while R. D. is on the porch in the evening, she falls asleep as I am helping her into the house. S. M. will then be heard to say, "She lets herself go to sleep on purpose. She likes to feel herself moving. Blow in her eyes and wake her." S. M.'s tones contain just that spice of exasperation that one feels towards the annoying antics of an interesting child.

As has always been the case, during the sleep of M. the expression changes according to whether S. M. or M. is for the moment governing the features. I am never at a loss to tell which it is. When S. M. is talking her expression is there. It has a certain range to indicate pleasure, amusement, regret, disapproval, etc., but, except for amusement, her emotions stamp the features less than do those of M. or R. D. either. Her dominant expression is one of sedate calm. It is the most mature of the three. Her tones are in accordance. While S. M. is talking calmly, suddenly the expression will dissolve into that of M., and M.'s strident tones will break S. M. off. It may be that a cough from Mrs. P. has roused M.,—"Mother's gruntin'," she will cry, or "You 'tink of le-a-mun'" she will chant, which means nothing now, but is a "cricket chirp" started by her once smelling some liniment which I had applied to a sore place of my own. If the door-bell rings she wakes immediately and simultaneously shouts, "The bell! the bell! the bell!" This is an echo of her old fears that Mr. Fischer was coming to get her, which later became a hazy fear of a "bad man." She has not forgotten my assurance that the bad men are left behind, and after the bell reaction will reassure herself, "There ain't any bad men here, are there papo? (No, no bad men here.) No, no bad men here." Looking at her feet M. asked, "What makes it, papo?" and when I did not understand put the question "What makes it between it?" She distinctly labored to convey her thought, and finally pointed to the back of her hand and asked "Why isn't it here?" I don't know whether or not she was alluding to

564. But it did happen.



the space between her great toe and the adjoining one. Again she asked, "What made it so. (God, I suppose.) Ho, ho! God didn't make us. (Yes, He made D.) Then he was called away from his job. He got us mixed up with somebody else."

S. M. herself cannot always fathom M.'s thoughts, when they are in themselves obscure. She will say, "She is not thinking anything, clearly." That is, S. M. can see M.'s thoughts always, but she cannot more than guess their meaning when they are obscure, any more than a person of good eyesight can see what lies in the depths of muddy water. R. D. came at 9.45 and slept well. *Aug. 6-7: 12 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 25 m.; M., 5 h. 18 m.*

*Aug. 8. [565]* Today R. D. was oppressed by the heat,

565. M.'s letter of this date to Dr. Brashear is interesting psychologically as exhibiting M.'s belief that she could easily 'phone to Dr. Walker, and that ice-cream could be brought by Dr. Brashear from Pittsburgh to San Bernardino. Her notions of space as well as time were now very vague.

"Mar. 5, 1912.

Dear Dr. Brashear

This is Margaret Prince the phase you came down to see the night with Dr. Walker and Mrs. ——. We came a long way on the train and Doris was afraid and cried I guess you never got a letter from a personality before did you I only writed to Jim Hyslop Dr. Walker and you If you are are coming out here to visit us come before I go and bring some icecream we don't like the kind we get here I am going to call up Dr. Walker and ask him to come out Doris is getting better and I am going but it is as hot as blazes here don't come here now it is too hot one of our canaries died the other day and D. felt very badly I am eating an egg sandwich now and I am soon am going to drink a glass of lemeade so goodbye I am all ready for bed.

Yours in spirit

MARGARET  
(the imp) "

The beginning of a letter written by the Real Doris to Dr. Walker on June 27th is inserted for comparison, the rest being omitted for economy of space. One misspelling occurs, and a failure to make "formation" plural, both errors doubtless being slips of the pen.

"584 4th St.  
San Bernardino, Cal.

Dear Dr. Walker

We arrived her on Tues. three weeks ago at 8.45 o'clock in the evening six hours late. The journey here was very interesting, to leave hilly country and come to the plains and prairies. I saw several prairie-dogs, but they were so little one could not see them very well.

I liked being on the train in the daytime but did not like it at all in the night. The mountains were very beautiful and the different formation of rocks were interesting to see, but the worst part of the journey was in crossing the desert, it was so very hot, and the glare of the sun on the sand was very trying to the eyes. I was glad when we were out of it."



though little more than her expression betrayed the fact until M. came. The latter wept, though she tried to control her feelings when reminded that this would hurt R. D. But even in her sleep the tears would trickle down. Once she said something about "going away from here" and twice she ordered me to "shut up", when I essayed to comfort her. When R. D. returned she was in somber mood.

M. so well remembers the position of objects, and infers so much through her hyperæsthetic hearing, that Mrs. P. has found it difficult to believe that she cannot see six feet. So I decided to try an experiment in her presence. I removed a cabinet photograph of D.'s mother from the place that it usually occupies on the bureau, fronting the couch. M. was lying on the couch, her eyes about 8 feet from the spot allotted to the picture. So acute is M.'s hearing and so quick is she to make inferences that I could hardly have accomplished the removal with her in the room, if her attention had not been absorbed at the time. She was engaged in conversation with Mrs. P. when it was done. Soon I began to gaze at the bureau, as I sat close to M., in order to excite her curiosity. Presently she asked, "What you looking at, papo? (Whose picture is that?) Why, it is our mother's picture. (Can you see it?)" I knew that she never in the world would admit that she could not, with anyone present besides myself, and only rarely to me would she make such an admission. "Sure, right there by the pin-cushion." Here Mrs. P., unprepared for the experiment, turned and looked at the spot, and asked, "(Do you see the picture?) Why, sure I do. It is right beside the pin-cushion." I had intended that the experiment should stop here, but there was something in Mrs. P.'s voice as she inquired again, "Are you sure that you can see it?" which roused M.'s suspicion, or else she determined to point the picture out. She sprang up so quickly that I could not replace the picture in time. As she stood before the bureau she gave a cry of alarm, then broke into wild lamentation. "Our mother's picture is *gone!* Our mother's picture is *lost!*" she wailed, then threw herself face downward on the bed and hammered with her feet on a chair beside it. I had the picture in its place in an instant, and called out to her that it was there, that it had only fallen on its



side. "No", she insisted, "I looked all over the bureau. It went off somewhere. I'll have to tell D. to hide it. It isn't safe." It was some time before she entirely got over the incident. The next morning R. D. wondered that her feet were sore. R. D. came at 9.40 and slept well. *Aug. 7-8: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 40 m.; M., 4 h. 15 m.*

*Aug. 9.* Today R. D. told me that not a voice but a thought had come to her mind, "You had better take care of your mother's picture", and asked me what it meant. I told her that Phase A could not find it for a while, and worried about it.

I find that it is not for long after R. D. goes that M. is able to glean anything from her thoughts. It is interesting to hear M. answer "Asa no" to a question about something that happened during the day and a few minutes later talk intelligently about it. R. D. came at 9.52 and slept soundly. *Aug. 8-9: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 39 m.; M., 2 h. 33 m.*

*Aug. 10.* There appeared in a magazine extracts and a synopsis of the play "Becky", centering around a case of double personality, and evidently founded to an extent on the "Beauchamp" case. R. D. read but did not comment upon it, M. afterwards read it and denounced it as a "crazy thing", declaring that she was not a bit like Becky, and that she did not believe that "any Margaret" ever was. I referred laughingly to M.'s feeling in conversation with S. M., and found that she shared in M.'s disgust. She went on to criticise it, and made the following comments. (1) "In the play Becky, the secondary personality, comes so pat, just at the right time. Now really a personality doesn't, at least M. didn't. She didn't come always when it would produce the best effect." (2) "Becky blurts out that she is different from Dorothy and all that before anybody that comes along. Now I don't believe that is ever the case. M. and S. D. always concealed what they knew about their being different from R. D. Think! D.'s own mother didn't know! And how they kept you from knowing as long as they could!" (3) "Becky said, 'I'm two people.' That is not natural. We never thought of ourselves as two people or three people, and all that, until we heard the terms 'personalities' from you. Of course in a way we thought it, we knew we were different from other people, but



we had always been used to it, and we never thought or would have spoken in those terms, 'two people'." (4) "Dorothy would say before she went, 'I'm not myself', and things like that. That isn't the language that the real personality would use, for she doesn't feel that way. Often she feels tired and confused before going, that is all, and often she goes without any feelings in particular." At another time M. attempted to criticise the play, but her animadversions were not very intelligible. I asked R. D. what she thought of it, and she made some slighting remark, but without adding reasons. [566]

For a week or more R. D. has had a dull headache at the base of the brain. She is also having microscopic ailments of several sorts, a pimple here, a pain yonder, which loom up pretty big to her. I continue the policy of sympathizing when she mentions these and then forgetting them, and this course both comforts her and prevents them from getting so near the footlights of her attention as might be the case if I inquired frequently about them.

In the evening M. read an article about a woman who broke her leg so that the bone would not knit, and the doctors at the hospital put a band of steel around the fractured ends to hold them together. M. appreciated the story because R. D. had already read it. R. D. came at 9.40, and towards morning dreamed that she broke her leg and I took her to the hospital, that Phase A came and was out all the time there, that I did not go to the hospital for some time and M. forgot me so that when I did go she denied that I was her papa and refused to go with me, while the doctor said, "Well, I don't know that you are her father", so that I had to leave her in the hospital. This frightened her so that she woke, the disagreeable emotions continued and M. came at 6.20 a. m. R. D. said that at first she seemed to be

---

566. Somewhere near this date M. wrote to Dr. Hyslop.

"Pittsfield Boston  
Mar 5 1916

Just a note

Dear Jim Hyslop I am writing to tell you how some one is slanderous  
us in the *Ladies Home Journal* by writing a bum story I think us person-  
alities ought not to stand it do you

Yours in spirit

MARGARET.

Got more eggs under a hen."



Phase A and afterwards to see her, "though I don't know where I was." I had to leave M. and go to the church. On my return at 8.05 she said. "I have been real good. I have been pleepin [sleeping] most all 'e time, so that the R. D. would come as soon as you came back. What you spose the mother said? She said, 'Now you let the R. D. come.'" Here she giggled. "She thinks I can *let* her come." *Aug. 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 57 m.; M., 2 h. 51 m.*

*Aug. 11. Sunday.* In consequence of the bad dream of R. D., M. was here an hour and three-quarters this morning, and two hours and ten minutes at one time in the afternoon. At the latter period S. M. "went away" for about 20 minutes. In the evening I proposed to S. M. that she write something. She began to write out the directions for the care of R. D. after M. goes, when Mrs. P., who had not been informed of the experiment, came into the room. Curiously, Mrs. P. acts as a stimulant, not a sedative to M., and she woke, but I got the writing-board out of her way in time. Mrs. P. left the room, M. fell asleep and the writing was resumed. Again Mrs. P. innocently entered, I managed to conceal the board before M. woke, but she found the pencil in her hand. "What I got this for?" she asked curiously. "What I been doin' with it? Have I been writin'?" She caught sight of the corner of the writing-board. "What's that?"—and there was no help for it, she would see it. Fortunately, she did not think of Sleeping Margaret, but took the writing for her own, done when she was asleep. She laboriously picked out the words, separating them with perpendicular marks made with the pencil. "Why didn't you tell me to write better, if I was goin' to write in my sleep?", she said. As soon as she had picked out the words she lost all interest, and fell asleep again. At 8.15 R. D. came, and slept well. *Aug. 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 15 m.; M., 4 h. 20 m.*

*Aug. 12.* No M. this morning until 9.20, when, after we had planned to go on a trip to Waterman's Canon, ~~we found~~ that there was no car for two hours. R. D.'s face clouded at the news, and M. came. S. M. said, "She can't help it. If she repressed the feeling it would come out in M. and you would have a tantrum on your hands. It is better as it is. When she



gets well she will stand disappointments better." R. D. was back at 10.45, and at 11.30 we took the car, and had a splendid time, returning at about 4.30. R. D. came at 10.22 and slept well. *Aug. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 42 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Aug. 13.* Affected, I think, by the ill appearance of Mrs. P., M. cried some, consequently R. D. was absent at one stretch for 2 h. 20 m. R. D. came for the night at 9.55 and slept soundly. *Aug. 12-13: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 30 m.; M., 4 h. 3 m.*

*Aug. 14.* R. D. remained from waking to 8.08 p. m. All three of us often take walks after supper, and R. D. enjoys them. She came for the night at 9.32 and slept well. *Aug. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 13 m.; M., 1 h. 24 m.*

*Aug. 15.* R. D. came at 10.05 p. m., and slept poorly, from hearing snoring. *Aug. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 58 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Aug. 16.* The poor sleep of last night produced more frequent alternations today. Special pains were taken after she came tonight at 10.35, to suggest sound sleep, and her slumber was profound. *Aug. 15-16: 8 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 2 m.; M., 2 h. 28 m.*

*Aug. 17.* Came at 9.25 p. m. and slept well. *Aug. 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 38 m.; M., 2 h. 12 m.*

*Aug. 18.* Sunday. M. did not come all day. In the evening I read aloud for about half an hour. Signs of weariness in the face made me expect that she would go at the end of the chapter, and it was even so. R. D. came at 8.57 and slept well. *Aug. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 28 m.; M., 1 h. 4 m.*

*Aug. 19.* In the evening M. wanted a "sherbet ice" and the supply was exhausted at the store. She became gloomy as a thunder-cloud, grumbled that she *never* got what she wanted, and every device failed to change her mood until she happened to hiccough, when I turned around quickly, which made her laugh and broke up the mood. But the underlying causes of this mood were two: (1) I was away most of the day, and R. D. "held on" to maintain herself until my return, thus wearying her. (2) R. D. undoubtedly was the first one to wish that she had a sherbet ice, and repressed the inclination. R. D. came at 10 and slept fairly well. *Aug. 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 51 m.; M., 2 h. 12 m.*



*Aug. 20.* Yesterday R. D. learned the name of a person on Lawrence St. who has Rhode Island Red hens' eggs for sale. She said that she could find out in the morning where Lawrence St. is. This morning while M. was out she began to speak of R. D.'s plans as she often does, then asked "Where's Lawrence St.?" This question was natural also, as her knowledge would stop with R. D.'s. I answered "I don't know." Her face took on a far-away look for a few moments, and then she announced, in a matter-of-fact, confident way, "It is between A. and B., and 6 and 7. (Are you sure?) A'-ah. (How do you know?)" The far-away expression vanished, and a puzzled, helpless expression replaced it as she replied, "Asa no. (What makes you think so?) Asa no." My theory was that R. D. had subconsciously located the street on the map, or had subconsciously heard the neighbor mention the location. Before breakfast R. D., without saying anything, consulted the map, it appears for the first time. At breakfast I took up the map, and she said, "I couldn't find Lawrence street. See if you can." The street was not named on the map, the only one of the city accessible. After breakfast she went to the neighbor's, and on her return I asked if she knew how to get to Lawrence street. "Yes", she said, "it is between 6th and 7th streets, and A. and B. (How did you find out?) Mrs. X. just told me, and I wrote it down", and she showed me a slip of paper with the location written in pencil. "(Why didn't she tell you last night?) She didn't know where the street was, except that it was somewhere north of here she thought. She had to wait and ask her husband when he came home." Presently it evidently seemed odd to her that I asked the questions, and she said, "What makes you so curious about Lawrence street?" I accounted for it by some device, and she did not refer to the subject again. The next time M. came she said, "I didn't know where Lawrence street was, papo; I just guessed. That was all I did." Later S. M. reiterated, "It was just a guess of M.'s, she really didn't know. She happened to get it right." If so it was a remarkable guess. We have been but a short time in the city. The street is a short insignificant one. I have never been near it, Mrs. P. has not, and certainly D. has not. I had no idea where it was, and do not know that I had ever heard it



named. R. D. is absolutely incapable of guile, and so far as her consciousness is aware, knew nothing about the street. Besides, it was M. who named the location. Taking out the streets known to us, there are more than 100 city squares to the north of us, besides the one bisected by Lawrence street. The chance of "guessing" the location was less than one in a hundred. Besides, what was the relation of the peculiar, far-away look of M., before she made her announcement so confidently, and why did she look so puzzled and helpless when asked to account for it? These questions cannot be entirely put aside. The only normal possibility that I can see, and it would not appear probable were it not for the dread we have for the supernormal, is that someone at some time has mentioned to R. D. the location, and M. extracted the facts from R. D.'s subconscious memories. If so there has been no other known incident like it in the history of the observation of the case. M. never referred to the matter again, and R. D., after my really but not apparently evasive reply to her very natural question, has not spoken of it.

In the evening, as M. went by the dining-room door on her way to the bath-room she said to me, "You have left a light in the dining-room, papo." Mrs. P. was sitting, silently reading, in the direct line of her vision, brightly illuminated, not more than 12 feet away, and M. was unable to see her. If M. sends me for a glass of water or on any other errand and is reading when I return I have to be careful how I approach her. Her slender stock of attention may be entirely on her reading so that she does not hear my footsteps in spite of her auditory hyperæsthesia. Putting the glass to her lips frightens her. It appears like some very large, terrible object "coming to hit" her. Tonight I went in and pulled down a curtain behind her as she was reading, and she started violently and uttered a wail of fear. It was some moments before she became calm. R. D. came at 9.40 and slept well. *Aug. 19-20: 6 alt.; R. D., 21 h. 7 m.; M., 2 h. 33 m.*

*Aug. 21.* No M. in the morning. R. D. came to me today and said that she had an idea that she could go to bed tonight and sleep without forgetting. "I am going to try, anyway." This I encouraged her to do. But in the evening the expression that betokens weariness appeared, and at 9.12 M. came out. I



remarked to M., (She didn't succeed, did she?) Succeed what?", she inquired, blankly. "(You look and see.)" She waited a few moments with introverted expression. Evidently she saw in R. D.'s mind, for her face lighted up, and she broke out, "O, succeed in staying tonight! No", and a little later she added, "She can't do that quite yet. But it is a good thing for her to think about it." R. D. came at 9.35 and slept well. *Aug. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 32 m.; M., 1 h. 23 m.*

*Aug. 22.* R. D. did not go until evening. We had visitors who are agreeable to R. D., and they did not tire her. It is bizarre to hear S. M. say earnestly, "The X. sisters remind me so much of D", and explain why. R. D. came at 9.27 and slept nicely. *Aug. 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Aug. 23.* Today R. D. did show effects from the long stay of the visitors of yesterday. M. remarked, "The R. D. got excited yesterday." In the afternoon R. D. slept about an hour, remaining herself, a rare event. Coming for the night at 10.35 she slept well. *Aug. 22-23: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 52 m.; M., 2 h. 13 m.*

*Aug. 24.* Once today R. D. departed for half a minute from agitation at my joking proposal to finish reading aloud at another time a story that she was interested in. In the afternoon a letter arrived, addressed to "Miss Margaret Prince." R. D. exclaimed, "Good gracious! who is writing to me—" and was intending to add, she afterwards said, "by that name", when M. was there exulting. Three months ago the sight of the letter would have brought M. irrespective of its effect upon R. D., but M. has now retreated too much for that; it needs some strong excitement or interest on the part of R. D. Really, this excitement or interest sends R. D. herself away, when M. must perforce come. M. was so agitated that it was almost impossible for her to read the letter, which was from Dr. Brashear, and I read it to her, to her delight. Later I suggested to R. D. that *she* write a letter to Dr. Brashear, and she consented to do so tomorrow. In the evening S. M. said that *she* would try writing to him. When M. was soundly asleep I raised S. M. to a sitting posture, placed a pencil in her hand and held the writing-board before her. The brief note was written without suggestion on my part, or assistance further than as described and



notification when the pencil was going too widely astray and when the end of the sheet was near. I had to support the head, which tended to roll to one side or the other, since M. was sound asleep and S. M. has not sufficient muscular control to support the head firmly in an erect position. Once the pencil slipped too far up between her fingers, and she asked me to replace it. Since M. is now wholly anæsthetic in her hands, she showed no consciousness that writing was going on, and did not "butt in." I wished to retain the original, and S. M. made another copy after my dictation. The second writing was smoother than the first, and in it she wrote "Sleeping" in the first mention of her name, with a capital letter. [567]

R. D. is very much constipated again, [568] with return of piles. Since salts happened to make her sick the last time she took them she dreaded taking them now, fearing she would be made sick again, but she was, nevertheless, persuaded to do so. She came at 9.30 and slept well. *Aug. 23-24: alt.: R. D., 20 h. 43 m.; M., 2 h. 12 m.*

*Aug. 25. Sunday.* The cathartic was drastic in its effects, but did not make her so ill as she feared. But she was unstable today. When M. came the last time she was afraid that she was unwelcome, and looking at me timidly, said in plaintive tones, "Hello, papo! Hello, papo!", with lip just beginning to tremble.

---

567. S. M.'s note to Dr. Brashear.

"Dear Dr. Brashear

This is another phase writing to you. I am sleeping Margaret not Margaret asleep though I can only talk or write when she is sleeping but cannot see. Doris is getting better very fast now and Margaret will soon be gone also myself as I go when she does.

Well I guess this is about all I will write as it is kind of tiresome.

SLEEPING MARGARET."

568. S. M. once declared that this difficulty was contracted in the course of working in the houses of woman patrons, sewing, and because of the callous selfishness of some of them, who were unwilling that the seamstress should absent herself for a few minutes, saying that they had paid for her time and that she should have attended to the necessities of nature before coming to the house. S. M. said that while not all wealthy women were like this, of course, I would be astonished to know how many are as narrow and mean as the above almost incredible statement signifies.



I hastened to reassure her. R. D. came at 9.25 and slept well. *Aug. 24-25: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 47 m.; M., 3 h. 8 m.*

*Aug. 26.* Mrs. P., R. D. and I went to Colton and ascended Slover Mountain, a hill several hundred feet in height. R. D. went up swiftly and gaily, and enjoyed it much.

Just before R. D. came for the night at 9.38 M. had directed me to place a door so that it would protect the canaries from the draught. I forgot it, and M. came back, saying that she knew I would forget, and went as soon as the direction was carried out. R. D. slept well. *Aug. 25-26: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 3 m.*

*Aug. 27.* She weighs now 150 pounds, the most she ever has. [569] In the evening, after M. had become ensconced on the couch, and had me rubbing her feet while I read, callers came. M. said, "Get me a glass of lemeade and I will keep just as quiet!" The lemonade was provided, and M. left alone. On our return she said, "Wasn't I a nice girl? I was awful firsty, O awful firsty, but I didn't say anything. I just peeped [slept]; I peeped most *all* the time." While asking M. something in reference to the past I mentioned the name Fischer. M. laughed and said, "What's that? Say that again." I "caught on" and changed it to Swisher. "Who is that?" she asked with amusement. "What a funny name!" S. M. says this was perfectly *bona fide*. "She has forgotten the name." S. M. was interested, as I was, to observe this astonishing proof of the failure of M.'s memory. At 10.10 R. D. came and slept well. *Aug. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 29 m.; M., 3 h. 3 m.*

*Aug. 28.* Since she was weighed R. D. has begun to worry about her becoming stout, and to think that she must not sleep so much, but she has said nothing on the subject to me. Since suggestion while she was asleep has destroyed R. D.'s fears at night—at least S. M. gives this as the cause—I tonight began, after R. D. came at 9.15, to operate against this new fear. *Aug. 27-28: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Aug. 29.* M. did not come this morning. R. D. feels

---

569. Her weight in the spring of 1911 was about 117 pounds. After attaining a maximum of 150 pounds it slowly declined until it reached about 125 pounds.



splendidly these last days, and M. is almost always in capital humor. S. M. says that another change has taken place within two months. She says that she told me more than two months ago—I have no doubt that she did, but I “must have been dreaming”, as S. M. disgustedly remarks—that for say three months M.’s having “read” an article would produce a certain reflex upon R. D. Not that the latter would remember the substance of the article in the slightest, but she would feel a certain distaste for reading it. Also, if R. D. read an article to a certain point and laid it down, and M. took it up and finished it, R. D. would not feel like reading the remainder. But for about two months, says S. M., it has made not the slightest difference in the relish that R. D. has felt for the article whether or not M. has read it before her.

As I have already said, M.’s feet chill very rapidly after she comes, unless they are rubbed. But it is very noticeable that the left foot chills before the other one. The right foot will often feel warm when the other is very cold. R. D. came at 10 and slept very well. *Aug. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 50 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Aug. 30.* Again R. D. maintained herself all day. Two incidents today illustrate the fact that wounding the feelings of a sensitive subject acts as a psychic poison. I have a vest which does not set well, so that it seems necessary to twitch and pull it after it is on, a practice which is not pleasant to me, and against which I humorously complain. Today R. D. was about to yank it into good behavior when it occurred to me that on other accounts another vest was more suitable, and I said so. Too late I thought I detected that R. D.’s feelings were hurt, though she said nothing. In the evening we all went to a picture show, and the orchestra played loudly. On the way home Mrs. P. innocently remarked, “If you can stand that music I should think you could stand church.” No censure was intended, but in a moment I could tell, from the shadow that passed over R. D.’s face, what she thought it implied. Without speaking she went to her room to change her clothes. Soon M. came out, looking a little confused and inquiring, certainly nothing more, and began to read. But within two minutes she evidently caught



sight of the incident just over, passing in review in the mind of R. D. "going down", burst into tears and began to sob. I set at work to comfort her, told her that Mrs. P. did not mean anything which should hurt R. D.'s feelings, and besought her to remember that she must not cry, on R. D.'s account. She soon checked her weeping, but continued sad and rather cross for some time, and I found that the incident of the vest was also mixed up in the affair. M. went to sleep, and I found S. M. as communicative as an oyster, whether because she blamed one or both of the unintentional offenders, or for some other reason. M.'s sadness wore off by degrees, and she was restored fully to good humor at 11. But R. D., coming at 11.10, did not have so good a night as usual. *Aug. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Aug. 31.* M. came at 6.45, with just a bit of the feeling of last night hanging to her. In the afternoon R. D. found one of her birds with its head torn off by a cat. M. came and said, "Take it away, papo; it isn't a pretty thing for her to look at." I did so and in a couple of minutes R. D. was back. She felt badly, naturally, and her stay in the evening was undoubtedly shortened, but stood it much better than she would have done a few months ago. A year ago it would have banished her for hours, and probably have affected her for two days. R. D. came at 9.30 and slept pretty well. *Aug. 30-31: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h. 15 m. Average daily record of R. D. for August, 1912, 21 h. 17 m.*

*Sept. 1. Sunday.* M. did not come in the morning nor until evening. R. D. went to Sunday school, which reopened today. R. D., coming at 10.12, slept very well. *Aug. 31-Sept. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 27 m.*

*Sept. 2.* R. D. persisted all day, although the monthly period began in the afternoon. At 9.30 she brought me a letter, remarking "Here is a letter from Dr. Walker." A letter to M. was enclosed. The family spent part of the day at Urbita Springs. At 7 p. m. M. came, and had been here a quarter of an hour before she said, suddenly, "O, did Dr. Walker send me a letter?" It is a striking proof of her decadence that, in spite of the eagerness with which she had awaited a letter from Dr. Walker,



speaking many times about it and asking me if he would *ever* write, the knowledge of R. D. that he had written me, and the actual reception of the letter into her own hands, did not rouse M., who was entirely ignorant of the matter until she saw it in R. D.'s mind, a quarter of an hour after the latter had sunk below the surface. M. shouted with joy when I told her that she had a letter, but was not so excited but that she could read it herself. While reading it she jumped and exclaimed, grasping at her ankle, "I've been bitteded. A bug bitted me." No bug was discovered, however. R. D. came at 9.30, and naturally did not sleep so well as usual. Once M. came in the night. R. D.'s sleep was better after that. *Sept. 1-2: men. per began; 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 18 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Sept. 3.* This is the first day, I think, that R. D. has ever staid in the morning during the monthly period. She is feeling remarkably well, considering. In the evening M. called out to Mrs. P., who was for the moment in a room adjoining, "Mother, why don't you light your lit? Can you see by our lit?" She spoke of her September allowance of 20 cents, and, motioning me to put my ear to her lips, whispered, "You put it where she can't find it or she will be borrowing it. I don't want her borrowing my money all the time. She hasn't paid back the 40 cents she borrowed of me. Don't let her know where it is. Let's have it a secret between us two—huh?" She has gotten into a way of suddenly asking, "What think?" I answer by anything that comes into my head, as " (I think M. is a good little girl.) That's good. What think? (I think that R. D. is a good big girl.) That's good. What else think?" And so on. [570] R. D. came at 9.35, and slept uneasily. [571] *Sept. 2-3: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 58 m.; M., 3 h. 7 m.*

*Sept. 4.* Again R. D. remained in the morning in spite of her condition. Towards noon she hurt her tooth chewing on

---

570. This had its origin in a practice that existed between Doris in childhood and her mother of telling out their imaginative thoughts in turn, stimulating each other by saying, "What think?" Presumably the practice was initiated by the child, but the mother entered into it with enjoyment.

571. Today M. wrote a letter to my sister, the Aunt Louise whom she visited in the summer of 1911. It has already been stated that, having met



something hard, and brought M. for 2 minutes. At M.'s request Mrs. P. had bought a wooden plate with an orange painted upon it, which R. D. had seen and admired. M. now wrote on the back of it, "From Margaret", and left it for R. D. to find. She also wrote a note to Dr. Hyslop. [572] R. D., after a cheerful day, came at 9.30, and slept well. *Sept. 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Sept. 5.* Mrs. P. had a very bad headache today, and looked very ill. R. D.'s sympathies were much affected, and she too contracted a headache, and her other sickness resumed.

M. caught sight of a diagram which I had made of the rooms in D.'s former residence on Colorado avenue. She recognized what it represented, and said, "That's where we used to live—not where our mother lived", [573] and corrected one or two errors in the diagram. I ventured to ask who lived with her, and she gave the name of a boy, a nephew who had lived with them, and then added, in a slow, puzzled fashion, as if groping to recover memories, "And there was someone else—someone who hit

---

my mother for a few days at the home of my sister, she had gradually fused them in her mind, though but little of the "grandma" remained in the composite picture.

"Pittsfield Boston  
Mar. 5, 191

Dear Aunt Louise Grandma

Papo said I could write to you I remember the time I was at your place the cow and chickens Doris has 13 hens 2 roosters and 13 pullets last month she got 15 dozen eggs sold them to Mother Mrs. Kendel and Mrs. Johnson she also has a setting hen. I got a lovely letter from Dr. Walker, Jim Hyslop and Dr. Brashear is coming out to see us but I won't be here then Doris is getting much better now and will soon be well she don't go to Church yet, she would like to come to see you because she liked you

Yours in spirit,  
MARGARET."

572. "Dear Jim

I am sending you a present. Just pretend it is Christmas.

Yours in  
spirit  
MARGARET.

You don't need to answer this you greaser."

The postscript was probably suggested by the fact that I at various times endeavored to induce M. to defer writing to Dr. Hyslop, explaining that he was very busy. Nothing of the sort was said, however, this evening.

573. It was after the mother's death that the residence was removed to Colorado Avenue.



us. . . Papo, who was it that hit us?" I hurriedly turned her mind away from this dangerous topic, but two or three times afterwards she murmured, "Who hit us?" S. M. is surprised that M. remembered the name of the nephew, and said that she remembered nothing else except that he was a boy who lived with her. R. D. came at 10.18 and did not sleep quite so well as usual. *Sept. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 48 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Sept. 6.* No record, except of alternations. *Sept. 5-6: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 36 m.; M., 2 h. 16 m.*

*Sept. 7.* Mrs. P. continued to look the illness that she experienced, and R. D.'s headache also continued. M. proposed today that she would give Dr. Brashear one of those wooden plates, and one to Dr. Walker. I remarked unthinkingly that Dr. Walker had just had one present, the portrait of R. D. M. became pettish at once and said that she wouldn't send any,—she didn't care anything about the darn things. I told her that it was all right, but she insisted "No, I don't want 'em." Mrs. P. did not understand that she was not to buy them however, and remarked cryptically to R. D. that she guessed she would buy one or two more of those pretty plates. In a flash M. was out, indignantly protesting that she did not want them. As I had supposed that M. was past being brought out in this fashion I asked S. M. about it. She said, "M. could not have come out if R. D. had been feeling well, but you know that she has had a headache for two days." M. is nearer the surface when R. D. is sick. When R. D. returned I remarked to R. D. in explanation of her sudden exit. "(Phase A didn't want the plates.) What plates?" she asked in wonder, "I didn't know anything about any plates." She must have gone so quickly that she did not remember what Mrs. P. said. R. D.'s expression is much altered from what it is when she is well and her mind at ease, the features are heavy, the eyes anxious and brooding.

M. came in good humor early in the evening, called for her money, counted it, piled it up on the couch and let it lie awhile. Said that she guessed she would "frow it out of the window", and when I demurred, said "Well, the D. can have it. I don't want it", and flung it helter-skelter across the room.

**M. Loses all Interest in Money.** S. M. says that another



change has come to M., and indeed, I have seen it coming for some time. "She no longer cares for money. I don't think that she will ask for any more, and I would not give her any if I were you." Next morning R. D. asked what all those coins were scattered about the floor for, and I told her that Phase A had made her a present of it. R. D. came at 9.25 and slept better. *Sept. 6-7: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 59 m.; M., 4 h. 16 m.*

*Sept. 8. Sunday.* When M. comes in my absence it is impossible to get anything reliable from her as to the time she came. She is apt to say, "sixteen minutes" or "sixteen eighteen hundred hours." Then I may learn from S. M. that M. came about five minutes before. [574] M. took up a pamphlet of "rarebit fiend" cartoons, and looked at them, but could not appreciate the humor of them. She twisted her face and looked puzzled, serious and disgusted, pushed the pamphlet away and said, "Such crazy pictures!" R. D. came for the night at 9.40 and slept well. *Sept. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Sept. 9.* M. came at 7.08 a. m., R. D. was here 7.35 a. m.-9.40 p. m. and came for the night at 10.45. *Sept. 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D. 23 h. 38 m.; M., 1 h. 27 m.*

*Sept. 10.* R. D., departing at 8.08 a. m., was at the helm 8.25 a. m.-8.45 p. m., and came at night, 9.35. *Sept. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 38 m.; M., 1 h. 12 m.*

*Sept. 11.* M. did not come in the morning. Mrs. P. was ill today and lying down much of the time, and I had to be away much of the day. R. D. became depressed and went for the day at the early hour of 6.35.

M. looked somewhat sober when she came but soon became cheerful. She called for paper and wrote a letter to Dr. Walker, and another to Dr. Brashear, [575] both dated March 5, 1916.

574. A clock was generally within sight or hearing.

575. The original of the following letter, the longest M. has written, covered more than three pages of large letter-paper, written in a big, scrawly hand. The scrawliness was due to the anæsthesia, and the size of the writing to the growing limitations of sight. Both tendencies increased as long as she continued to write.

"Boston, Pittsfield  
Mar. 5, 1916.

Dear Dr. Walker

I thought you was never going to write and I was as mad as the dickens



The March 5th has been invariable for two months, but the 1916 is new. S. M. said, "You know where that March 5th comes from, don't you? (No.) M. has forgotten almost everything that happened in Pennsylvania, for a year or more. But on March 5th of last year, three days after coming to your house to live, she wrote a letter to Anna B. She remembers this and the date on the letter, and she gets the date from that." But where she gets the 1916 is unknown. R. D. came at 9.33 p. m. *Sept. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 2 h. 58 m.*

*Sept. 12.* R. D. was here all day to 9.15 p. m. after our return from a picture show. This form of entertainment seems to have a beneficial effect, especially if the pictures are of a high class, and part of them are humorous. She came at 9.55. *Sept. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 42 h.; M., 40 m.*

*Sept. 13.* M. did not come in the early morning. But later there was some trouble about the chickens, and Mrs. P. was helping her when, fearing that Mrs. P. would step on them, R. D.

---

but I aint mad anymore We all like California at least all of us do, I think mother and father does mother was sick all day, today We have 12 little peeps hatched out and they are so cute all yellow but one and he is black. She still has fits that she wants to earn more money Did you get her picture and letter you don't need to answer her letter but you can ans this instead she paid a dollar for that frame I was going to pretend it was Christmas and send you a pretty plate which cost a quarter but I threw all my money away but I don't care do you I got a letter from Jim Hyslop and I pretend it was Christmas with him and had a letter from Dr. Brashear and he is going to tell you about it Why don't you come out here with him some one of us can sleep in the shed we have room for one person at a time You had better send us that picture I wrote and asked Dr. Brashear for his for Doris. Well I guess this is all

Yours in spirit

MARGARET.

Papo said he would be very glad to sleep in the shed if that would bring you I don't see how that would help for you would have to sleep with mother this letter made me sweat like a nigger at the election

MARGARET."

And indeed, M. did sweat profusely while writing, and the water fairly dripped from her palms. Her letter to Dr. Brashear follows:

"You don't need to answer this unless you want to for papo said I bother you  
Boston, Pittsfield  
Mar. 5, 1916.

Dear Dr. Brashear

I was glad to get your letter and since I got your letter that greaser Dr. Walker has written me the fish Doctor was sick that is why he swiped



said something by way of cautioning her, after which Mrs. P. went into the house, and R. D. feared she had taken offense. Soon after M. came, and sought me, sobbing and hysterically telling the story. With the aid of Mrs. P., M. was soon gotten over the worst of it, and when she came in the evening was in splendid spirits. At 11 R. D. came for the night. *Sept. 12-13: 4 alt: R. D., 23 h. 22 m.; M., 1 h. 43 m.*

*Sept. 14.* R. D. was here all day until 8.40 p. m. and came for the night at 9.40. *Sept. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 40 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Sept. 15. Sunday.* "If anything occurs to wake R. D. with a start in the morning, it is apt to bring M.", says S. M., and this was illustrated this morning when the slamming of a door woke her as M. R. D. went to Sunday school.

In the evening S. M. said, "The R. D. is passing through rather a hard experience now. (How so?) The M. has been going so fast that it affects R. D. more than ever. (How long has this been going on?) About a week. She can't do any one thing a great while. She thinks she will do this or that, and in a minute she has forgotten all about it. Then too, she has considerable headache—not severe, but just a dull, annoying sort that makes her think she is going to have a bad one, and it doesn't get bad. (I can't see any difference in M.) No, it doesn't show outside, but there is a difference inside. She has been going rapidly the last week, and that is why R. D.'s nerves are affected. (I have noticed for a couple of days that R. D. seemed restless, but didn't know the reason.) It worries her some. She doesn't know what is the matter with herself. (Does

---

papo's stamps. Doris is pressing all the flowers she can find. Mr. Parish one of papo's parishiner is a botanist and taught Doris how. Oh we have 12 little peeps just hatched today and they are so cute the pick their mothers eye and she just shuts them. I had a letter from Jim Hyslop and he is way up somewhere where there are lots of trees he has to cut them down to count them. I am waiting for the icecream and lemeade and want you to hurry up and come before I go away it is most winter now because we most freeze in the night and morning. If you will send me your picture for Doris she will send you one of hers and tell you all about it.

Yours in spirit  
MARGARET  
(the imp)"

This letter covered two sheets, in the same large, scrawly hand.



M. know that she is going more rapidly?) No, I think M. is getting pleasanter, don't you? (I certainly do. That is a good sign, don't you think?) O, most surely. Do you think that R. D. will be well by Christmas? (That is impossible for me to say. I think there is a good prospect of it.) I rather think she will be almost well, except for M. coming back a little at the sick times and like that. I think that is a beautiful idea about the thank-offering. She has already begun to save for it." It was in the afternoon that R. D. said to me that when she got well she wanted to make a thankoffering, and it was decided that she should give something to the local church.

R. D. came at 9.18 p. m., and slept poorly, being troubled by dreams about her old home, the first of the kind for many weeks, I believe. She also had a dream in which Margaret figured. *Sept. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 52 m.; M., 46 m.*

*Sept. 16.* Some time ago M. said, "If you will stand at the door and look in at the D. when she sleeps late, it will wake her, and perhaps I won't come. Sometimes she is lazy and goes to sleep again, and then I come." I tried this several mornings. Approaching the door softly I would stand at a distance of 10 feet and simply look at her. Invariably she woke in a few seconds, usually her gaze traveled vacantly about the room, then her eyes met mine, and she seemed to wake more fully. After greeting her I would close the door, and she would rise. But this morning, after the first part of the process her eyes closed again. Thinking that she might not have slept sufficiently, I left her, and in a few moments M.'s voice was heard. Laughingly she said, "She had the craziest dreams. She thought she killed her father, and was 'rested and put in jail." M. asked several times, "Who was her father?", and I answered that I did not know, not wishing to revive any of her lost memories. Once she said, "He was an old man", and again, argumentatively, "But you were there. (When?) When they 'rested her. (But that was only a dream.)" She laughed and went to sleep. S. M. now told the dream. "She dreamed that she—the A Phase—was going over to your house, and her father was drunk and didn't want her to go, and struck her. She got an axe and hit him with it; he fell down and then she cut off his head. Then



she—that is, the R. D.—came and ran over and told you what the A Phase had done. You said she had done right. Then an officer came and took her to jail. You and Dr. Walker visited her in jail and you two were busy with books and a good deal of writing. Dr. Walker told her not to be afraid, she would not be hung though she might have to go to Dixmont [576] for a few weeks, but he could get her out. And she felt so that she didn't much care whether she was hung or not. You were standing in the door of the room when she dreamed this last, and when you went away it shaped her dream so that you left the jail. Then M. came and she woke. I don't see why she dreamed such things. She never thought of her father yesterday. She hardly ever thinks of him. But M. really used to plan to kill her father, after he had been specially hateful—struck S. D. or something else. She would lie awake at night thinking how she would kill him." Therefore in this M.-dream as in all others, the incidents were pertinent and based upon facts in the life of the Margaret phase. R. D. has not alluded to the dream, and I certainly shall not recall it to her mind. But there is another interesting point, my leaving R. D. in the dream was coincident with my actually leaving the doorway. "(You knew that I was standing there?) Yes, I knew it. (But R. D. did not?) No, she didn't, but I did." It seems to me likely that the common impression that a steady gaze directed upon a sleeper will wake him, if well founded in many cases, may be explained by subliminal hearing of soft footsteps, the rustle of garments, breathing, etc. Even to effort to concentrate the gaze might alter the character of the breathing, and so attract the attention of the sleeper.

M. woke and related a dream that R. D. had about her mother, then asked, "Who was our mother? What was her name? (I don't know.)" But suddenly the maiden name of the mother, which she recalled awake a few days ago, came to her, and she ejaculated, O, Brandt! What a funny name!" Then she exclaimed, "Don't you suppose I could see the chickens?" and ran to the outside door of her room, opening out on the back yard. I could plainly see the old hen, but not the chicks. M. could not see her, but she said, "I hear 'em! I hear 'em!", which I

---

576. The location of a hospital for the insane.



could not do. She went back to her couch and whispered in confidence, "I heard 'em, but you know papo, I really couldn't see so far. Can I go out and see 'em when I come next? No, I should have to go out in my nightgown. Ah well! I can see 'em just as well in R. D.'s mind, can't I?" M. has not seen the chickens which she has written about to her friends, since they were hatched.

Today R. D. complained of feeling "nervous." I asked how long she had felt so and she said, "A couple of days." S. M. says, "It has been going on longer than that; she can't remember now."

**M.'s Early Memories Begin to Fade.** In the evening M. told something about Trixie then looked puzzled and asked, "Who's Trixie?" S. M. says that M. is losing the memories of the early years now, and that when she tells stories of that period they come to her lips automatically, and she does not really remember them, and wonders after she has told them. M. picked up a postal card signed "Ella", the name of the friend whom D. has known nearly all her life. M. asked, "Who's Ella?", and looked at a loss. But I find that if a clue in regard to the long past is given her she studies it and is sometimes successful in getting back some scrap of her memories, but it soon fades out again. The failure of her *early* memories is a new stage of her declension.

Both R. D. and I had letters from Dr. Brashear today. She was charmed with hers, and I read her a portion of mine. In the evening M. demanded to see my letter. Knowing that she would not understand the technical allusions to the case I let her read it, but forgot that S. M. was referred to, fortunately by initials only. M. puzzled over these, and I told her that he must have meant her. She seemed satisfied with this explanation, but directly after found a reference to herself in terms implying that she was another. "What does he think I am?", she ejaculated, "two or three people?" Dr. B. remarked that he had seen R. D. only 20 minutes in her own personality. M. broke out in rather derisive laughter. "She ain't a *personality*; she is the *Real* Doris. I'll have to write and tell him she's the whole thing; he's twisted." He spoke of the drama under my



eyes. To my surprise M. remembered what that word means. "What does he think we are?—a theater? We're no drama. O, he must mean that time he visited us. I *said* I ought to charge admission. I wish I had." And so she went on, being amazed at various expressions in the letter because of her naive interpretations, and commenting in a laughable way. She declared that she would write and set him straight, but not tonight, she was too tired. And indeed, the effort of reading the letter made both the palms of her hands and the soles of her feet sweat profusely. R. D. came at 9.25 p. m. *Sept. 15-16: 1 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 52 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Sept. 17.* M. again referred to Dr. Brashear's "twisted" ideas, and reiterated "Papo I ought to have charged admission when he came, and a lady—and a man—and two doctors." She attempted to remember the name of one of these doctors, and after several trials got something near it. "I ought to have charged a quarter apiece. All that money wasted!" When I offered her a nickel she did not care for it. R. D. seems cheerful today though suffering from something of the nature of a boil. She came for the night at 10.50 and slept well. *Sept. 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Sept. 18.* M. came in the evening at 8.30, while R. D. was in her room finishing the task of changing the positions of all her furniture, according to a lifelong habit. After a time she gets tired of the arrangement of the furniture of her room and alters it. Her predilections in this respect contrast with those of M. R. D. came at 10.30 p. m. and had a good night. *Sept. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Sept. 19.* I can plainly see an alternation in M.'s manner during the last 10 days. While at times, as during the reading of a letter from one of the three friends whom she corresponds with, M. is capable of excitement, yet her prevalent mood is duller, more lethargic than ever before, her expression is sleepier, her eyes being often kept half-shut, and her features are much of the time suffused, as it were, with a comfortable smile, something like that of a smiling Buddha. S. M.'s way of putting it is "She is less energetic, and pleasanter." I have seen a baby, somewhat dumpily amused, present an expression similar to hers.



This morning M. proposed that we should pretend that she was testing my vision, and put a series of questions to me regarding the position of the articles in R. D.'s room. She has lost her bearings since R. D. changed things around. [577] "Let's see how far you can see." She held her hand a short distance away, our faces being about equally removed from it. "Can you see that far? (Yes) You can't see that far?"—putting her hand a little farther away. "(No)" After she had fallen asleep S. M. said, "She has unconsciously told you how far she can see. (Can't she see farther than that?) No, that is how far she can see now." On M.'s waking I tested her. As long as she is in the mood, and feels as if it were a game, she is willing. I held my finger before her face at about two feet distance, and asked, "(Can you see that?) What, papo?"

**M.'s Vision Shortens to Nineteen Inches.** The finger was slowly brought to about 19 inches before she exclaimed, "I just see it—a stick." At 18 inches she said, "I see it now. (What is it?) A stick." Not until it was several inches nearer did she recognize it as a finger. The experiment was repeated with my whole hand, with exactly similar results. The astonishing fact is that her visual cone has shortened to 19 inches, and done so with great rapidity. Also, if she looks in the general direction of an electric light she is able to distinguish nothing. Except to and fro between the dining-room (where there is a narrow couch) and her own room she almost never goes anywhere in the house save to the bath-room. She has become accustomed to her routes and can go without bruising herself. Up to two weeks ago I had to watch or she would go on past the bath-room door. In the evening, M. came in the bath-room, and pounded on the door, saying, "I want to get out." Mrs. P. and I told her, "Turn the key." She fumbled at the knob, and cried, "I am scared, papo. Get me out, papo!" Mrs. P. told her to turn the key, under the knob, and she did so and came out, greatly to her relief and ours, since we saw that she had actually forgotten about the use of a key. She was tremulous with excite-

---

577. It is very probable that M.'s questions were really for the sly purpose of finding out the location of objects in the room for her own information.



ment. R. D. came at 9.45 and slept soundly. *Sept. 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Sept. 20.* R. D. is childishly eager to see the Barnum and Bailey parade on Saturday, but M. shivers at the thought of it, and says, "I'm glad I won't be there." R. D. came at 10.45 p. m. *Sept. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 33 m.; M., 1 h. 27 m.*

*Sept. 21.* In the evening M. wrote at my suggestion a letter to me. [578] When she reached the date she said, referring to her last letter to Dr. Walker, etc., "I made a mistake. I put down 1916,—that was a mistake. It is 1912. I saw the R. D. thinking it. (How did you come to get it 1916?) The R. D. was thinkin' she would be 'bout a millionaire in 1916." She told me that R. D. had been reckoning up what 100 hens would earn by that time. M. saw 1916 in her mind as she was going down. S. M. has no doubt that M. has given the correct explanation, but wished me not to think that R. D. thought she was going to be a millionaire in 1916. M. cannot "pretend" with anything of her former fertility. Her letters are usually mostly about R. D.'s concerns, particularly about the chickens and her being better. Dr. Brashear's letter was so full of passages that she misinterpreted that it caused perhaps the most interesting piece of writing, from a psychological standpoint, that she has done. [579] R. D., coming at 9.50, slept well. *Sept. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 22. Sunday.* R. D. was here 8.12 a. m.-8.57 p. m., and came for the night at 9.35. *Sept. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 48 m.; M., 1 h. 57 m.*

*Sept. 23.* M. was not here until evening. R. D. got much excited because the mother-hen was trampling on her chicks, and abdominal swelling came on. She seemed melancholy and

578.

"Pittsfield Boston

Mar. 5, 1912.

Dear Papo

I am going to tell you all about Doris chickens she has 2 little wee chickens Rhode Island Reds and more coming also lots of other one I wrote a bum letter to Dr. Walker and am going to pretend it is Christmas soon. Doris is getting better very fast and you Baby will soon be gone you will have only Doris

Yours in spirit

MARGARET."

579. Unfortunately this letter cannot be found.



brooded in the afternoon, and M. came early, at 6.15, but without a trace of R. D.'s sadness and agitation. She ate a meal, the first for some time, and then asked for the letter which I was to have ready for her. I had put an old stamp on the envelope, and an imitation postmark, and she asked in sudden alarm "Did you go away, papo?" but added, with relief, "You was just pretendin', wasn't you?" I assented and she said, "I was afraid you went away." She then wrote a letter to "the mother." [580] She addressed the envelope, "Mother c/o Papo", then hesitated, seeming to think the address incomplete, picked up the envelope that had enclosed my letter to her and copied "584 Fourth St., San Bernardino, Cal." R. D. came at 9.17 p. m. *Sept. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 40 m.; Lf., 3 h. 2 m.*

*Sept. 24.* No M. until evening. R. D. is in excellent spirits, and kept very busy.

S. M. says, "I never used to forget anything. (What, nothing?) I don't think that I did. But I have forgotten a good deal now." Soon after I remarked that M. liked a certain article of food and S. M. responded, "I like that too. (You mean that you have taste in your own personality?) Yes. (But don't you always like what M. likes in the way of food?) O no. Sometimes I do and sometimes I don't. It was so about S. D.'s likes. (Odd I never knew that before.) We never happened to speak of it, I guess. I did not think it worth mentioning. (Can you remember what you liked and disliked?) Yes, I remember all about myself, still. It is about the others, many things are getting hazy. I could remember what they liked to eat though. When some new dish was being made I used to have a kind of game, speculating whether I would like it or not. I used to bet pins with myself that I would like it or wouldn't. Of course I never paid."

580.

"Pittsfield Boston  
Mar. 5, 1219.

Dear Mother

The other day we all went out to the country and saw a snake and then Doris yelled and we all ate lunce well Doris want a pony and cart and she think a lot of her chickens she has 12 hens and 2 roosters and 11 pullets and 11 little peeps one died to day she has lost Sporty and Betsy and Molly all gone I guess we soon won't have anything Doris got worried about the chickens to day and so I came and had supper well Good by

Yours in spirit,  
MARGARET."



R. D. came at 10.10, and later a noise of something falling brought M. for 10 minutes. R. D. had a very restless night, almost ceaselessly turned, and even got up on her knees in her sleep. Her hand clawed considerably, and I understand from S. M. that this has gone on for something like two weeks. S. M. says, "The twitching of the hands will not hurt her. It comes from M.'s going so fast, and will pass away. I don't know, though, why she rolled and sat up so much last night. Of course that isn't good for her; it makes her tired." M. never accuses me of sneezing her now. She observed that she sneezed once when I was not near her, and for several weeks talked of her head sneezing her. Of late she sneezes without comment. *Sept. 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 8 m.; M., 2 h. 45 m.*

*Sept. 25.* I seldom put down her walks and other trips, they are so frequent. The wife of a neighbor banker, who is fond of her, often takes her riding in an automobile, and this does her good.

**M.'s Vision Shortens to its Ultimate Fourteen Inches.** I ascertained that M. cannot see more than 14 inches, nor can she read so far away as that. I often test her when not more than two feet away by changing my expression. The slightest accompanying breathing seems to give her the cue how I look, and a casual observer would say, "She saw you." But if I am careful, her face does not change expression though I grimace, whereas she would dislike it extremely if she knew that I was doing this. Tonight I swiftly moved my face forwards into near proximity to hers, grinning as I did so. The effect to her, of course, was of a grinning face suddenly emerging from the fog, and she was delighted, and repeatedly said, "Do it again", using the words, and in somewhat of the same manner, of S. D. in her last stage, when I would behave similarly to her. [581] R. D. came at 8.50, and slept better though somewhat uneasily. *Sept. 24-25: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 26.* S. M. has "gone away", to my knowledge, only a very few times since we came to this State. R. D. came for

---

581. But later she acquired a mysterious power of determining my expression, beyond her range of vision, and even after she became blind.



the night at 9.55 and slept well. *Sept. 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 11 m.; M., 2 h. 54 m.*

*Sept. 27.* In the afternoon a letter came from Dr. Hyslop, with "For Margaret" in the corner. R. D. made an exclamation and M. was there, delightedly reading the letter. M. said that she came because R. D. was startled. R. D. was back within 5 minutes. Again R. D. was sent away by the parrot flying at her.

Of late M. is awake about two-thirds of the time that she is out, contrary to what had earlier been the case. S. M. thinks it makes no difference at this stage. M. unexpectedly volunteered to take salts, which are needed, if I would have bread and butter and coffee ready for her to "cram in" her mouth. But she detected that the coffee had condensed milk in it, and refused it, saying that the milk was from a cow. I told her that this was bought, but she declared that it said on the can that it was from a cow. S. M. says that M.'s mind recalls the cans which we had in the East, which had the words, "Silver Cow" on them. S. M. suggested that when M. speaks of her own mother I should ask her what she means. "She won't be able to tell you." So I got M. to tell a story of the old times in which I knew that her mother figured. When she said, "our mother" I asked "(Who was that?) Why, our mother. (What, the mother in the next room?) Why—why—", and her face was a map of bewilderment—"let me think." She cast her eyes down and seemed to be wrestling with elusive memories. Then she looked up and smiled, as though the mystery were solved, and said, "Why, it was our *mother*. Yes, our mother. (Why, the mother wasn't there.) No, not *this* mother." She was again plunged into bewilderment. "It does sound crazy, doesn't it? Nobody has two mothers. . . I guess I was pretendin'. (Yes, I guess you used to pretend, so it seems real.)" With relief she responded, "Yes, that is it, I was just pretendin'." But she seemed dissatisfied and disposed to ponder, so I turned her thoughts to another subject. M. learned that I had given R. D. some gum and was bound to have some. This was when she was ready to sleep, but she said that she could chew it while asleep, and it would "be a comfort" to her. She did chew very



competently while sleeping, and S. M. managed to talk in a broken fashion at the same time. R. D. came at 9.35 and slept well. *Sept. 26-27: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 10 m.; M., 4 h. 30 m.*

*Sept. 28.* In the evening M. went to the bath-room. I called to her not to lock the door, but she locked it, S. M. says automatically. When ready to come out she twisted the knob and called that she could not get out. In vain I reiterated, "Not the knob but the key", and in vain, "Put your hand below the knob and turn the key", she could not understand what knob or key meant in the state of mind in which she was. She cried "I can't get the door open", and was fast getting hysterical, when by tapping below the knob I induced her to follow the sound, so that she seized the key. Even then she turned it the wrong way at first. When the door opened she flew to me in a state of tremulous excitement. M. recurred to Dr. Brashear's letter, which spoke of when she lived in Pittsburgh. "He's twisted. We never lived in Pittsburgh. I don't believe he lives in Pittsburgh. We met him—we met him somewhere, but it wasn't in Pittsburgh." Again she inquired, "Who were those folks we lived with once? We lived with somebody." Hoping to turn her mind away I said that I guessed she imagined it. "No, we did live with somebody—five or six people, older than us. Then two went away. Where were you, papo? You weren't there. You couldn't have known about us then, or you wouldn't have let D. work so hard. (I had to be away, then.) Yes, I guess you were away, papo." R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. *Sept. 27-28: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 3 h. 5 m.*

*Sept. 29. Sunday.* In the afternoon M. asked to be "held", for the first time in weeks. It was on the eve of the monthly period, when M. is apt to feel more babyish. She lay down with her head on my knees, slept and prattled by turns, and suddenly without any preface except the jerk of the head R. D. popped out. R. D. came at 9.45 p. m., and did not sleep as well as usual, and M. came for three minutes before midnight. *Sept. 28-29: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Sept. 30. [582]* R. D. came for the night at 9.25, the period

---

582. This was the date of the first experiments with M. in automatic writing. These will be described under their several dates in Chapter XII.



began in the night with unusual pain, which M. shared when she came. I afterwards learned that R. D. had lifted a very heavy box, renewing her backache, and this probably was the cause of the pain. Her sleep was poor all night. *Sept. 29-30: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 17 m.; M., 3 h. 23 m. Average daily total of R. D. during September, 1912, 21 h. 52 m.*

*Oct. 1.* R. D. brought a letter from Dr. Walker to me and saw me take out two enclosures. She said afterwards that she did not see why he wrote to the A Phase *all* the time. It was perhaps from disappointment that she went and M. came and demanded her letter. R. D. was back in 5 minutes. She came at 9.40 p. m. and slept rather better. *Sept. 30-Oct. 1: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 20 m.; M., 5 h. 55 m.*

*Oct. 2.* R. D. remained from waking to 1.30 p. m. I secretly tested M.'s hearing, waving my hand at the distance of 4 feet from her. In every instance she detected the movement, but charged it upon Mrs. P., who was seated in front of her, while I was at her side. If she had felt the breeze she would have known that it came from my direction, and S. M. emphatically says that M. did not know by feeling but by hearing.

At 9.30 p. m. R. D. came, and slept rather poorly, on account of lightning flashes and worrying about the possibility of her chickens getting wet. *Oct. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 22 m.; M., 3 h. 28 m.*

*Oct. 3.* M. did not come until evening. R. D. had a clouded face today, though she stoutly asserted that she felt well. It appears that she was again worrying, perhaps subconsciously, about being "useless." Owing to the cause set down under this date in Chapter XII, she did not come at night until 11.45. *Oct. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 50 m.; M., 6 h. 25 m.*

*Oct. 4.* R. D. continued from waking until 4.43 p. m. Then M. said, "You mustn't worry about my being here. It is better than for the R. D. to be here worried. She is getting better all the time. My coming doesn't hurt her." Perhaps R. D. is partly worried about my being confined to the house by a troublesome sore on my ankle. She came at night at 10.30. *Oct. 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 13 m.; M., 3 h. 32 m.*



Oct. 5. R. D. was sent away while rising in the morning, by the fall of something which startled her.

It is sometimes hard to make out what M. says, owing to her infantile pronunciation of many words, "bu" (with slight final sound of r), for *bureau*, "mell" for *smell*, "wah'r" for *water*, etc. Tonight, when she asked me how to "'pell pa'pa", it took much guessing before ascertaining that she wished to know the spelling of the word "pampas." There is a pampas-grass plume in the room.

R. D. today has internal pains, and I suspect that she has taken cold. The monthly period having been unusually severe and otherwise unsatisfactory I suspect from former observation that she will have more or less trouble, in body and spirits, for perhaps a couple of weeks. S. M. advised that I tell R. D. that it is not best for her to attend Sunday school tomorrow. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. Oct. 4-5: 6 alt: R. D., 21 h. 56 m.; M., 1 h. 54 m.

Oct. 6. *Sunday.* In the middle of the forenoon R. D., as I was talking to her in ordinary fashion, suddenly burst into tears. She would not tell me her trouble, soon checked herself, and occupied herself with some task. M. soon came and was at first as cheerful as usual, but her face got more and more clouded; she seemed to be mentally searching, and I am sure did not know the trouble at first, but at length fished it up. She did not cry, and was not exactly cross, but was uncommunicative and told me to "shut up." S. M. also refused to explain, saying it would do no good. My theory is that R. D., being physically below par, and more sensitive than usual, felt wounded by some remark, probably of the most innocent intention, and that the matter is preying upon her mind. I have known a simple reckoning of certain expenses not at all related to her to send her off into a fit of worrying because *she* cannot earn money. Afterwards I learned that she had cried earlier in the morning, and had had a crying spell out in her poultry-yard, each day for several days. So the trouble, whatever it is, dates some days back. I have noted that she looked gloomy for several days. When M. came later she seemed unaffected by R. D.'s poor spirits. In the evening R. D. wrote to Dr. Walker and Dr.



Brashear, [583] lapsing as soon as they were finished, whereupon M. announced that *she* must write to them, too. Her script was the most Hancockian that it has ever been. "Don't I write fast!" she several times exclaimed with evident pride, and she certainly did. "I've got a big correspondence to attend to. There's six, Dr. Walker and Dr. Brashear, the mother, Dr. Hyslop, you, and Aunt Louise-Grandma." She added after finishing the two letters, "I'm pretty tired. It's hard work writin' two letters. I'm pretty peepy. Don't you think I wrote nice letters? (Yes.) I think I wrote awfully nice letters." But perhaps an incident which happened just before she began to write did most to tire her. I failed to find Dr. Walker's last letter in her drawer, and she went in to make a personal investigation. Presently her voice was heard in tones of agitation, "The letter's lost! It's lost! It's lost!", and her voice rose to piercing accents. I shouted to her that I had found it in my pocket, but her attention was so concentrated on her conviction that the letter was lost that she could not hear. Mrs. P. ran to her, but not until she

583. M. was greatly disgusted because, as she supposed, Dr. Walker got her "mixed" with R. D., since he wrote in terms which implied that M. sent a photograph, tended the chickens, etc. The heading of her letters to Dr. Walker and Dr. Brashear were copied from that on a sheet which R. D. had discarded because she had written "Sept." by mistake. She started to write with a pen, as R. D. had done, but discarded it on account of the difficulty which it gave her in connection with her anæsthesia, and substituted a pencil, without remark.

"584 Fourth St.  
San Bernardino,  
Sept.

Dear Dr. Walker

You are the worsed twisted man I ever knew. I [am] not Real Doris and I did not send you her picture but I got both letters alwrite smarty and she was as disappointed as anything I hope you wont wait a hundred years before you have one taken a picture I mean you greaser. The peeps are all well but one it died but I want you to know we don't all tend them I have never even seen them as papo does not let me out. The Doris has write you a letter and she is expecting more peeps on tuesday will write and tell you about them she has not been so well lately and I have been out more she got a blue spell and cried so she don't get well so fast when she does that she got worried about her old chickens hens I mean geting wet and that made her as nervous Well Papo is laid up with a boil on his ankle and walks with a crouch and a cane but he is still able to rub our feet I glad he don't have any thing the matter with his hands She is going to get a nother bird soon Will write again

Yours in Spirit

MARGARET."



had actually touched M. did the latter seem to hear. Then she came to me, her eyes protruding, and repeated hysterically, "I thought it was lost! I thought it was lost!" So always, when the fire-alarm is heard, her face takes on a wild expression, and she raises her right hand with pointed finger and says in poignant tones, "Fire! fire! There's a fire! fire!", until she is quieted by getting her attention and assuring her that the fire will not hurt us.

Sometimes M. temporarily recovers lost memories, or disentangles memories which have coalesced, because of glimpses which she obtains, after R. D. has gone, into the content of R. D.'s thinking. Once I was surprised to hear her speak of Aunt Louise and Grandma as two separate persons, but remembered that a few hours before R. D. and I had been talking about them. These recrudescences soon fade out, however. We are getting to call D. by the name Theodosia, and today I used the name in talking with M. She spoke up, "What's that? (That is D.'s name.) It is NOT", she returned with great energy. "(Well, it is what I call her.) I don't see it in her mind. What is it? Say it again. (Theodosia.) That's the fiercest name I ever heard. Sounds like Roosevelt's [sic] first name. Say it again. (Theodosia.) It's too much for me. The—I can't say it. What was it? (Theodosia.)" By this time she was in a state of hilarity, and made me repeat the name a number of times, but it baffled her to pronounce it.

During the last few days, says S. M., R. D. has made no progress. The causes, she now states, are worry about the chickens and about her "uselessness", failures of memory, etc., also the fact that Mrs. P. is again feeling ill and has seemed to R. D. to speak sharply. R. D. has never alluded to the last particular, and I could hardly drag it from S. M. or M. R. D. came at about 10.10 and slept better. *Oct. 5-6: 8 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 9 m.; M., 4 h. 41 m.*

*Oct. 7.* Spirits a little improved today. In the evening on my return from an engagement I found M., who caught my hand and was pathetically glad to see me. "Haven't I been good?", she exclaimed, "I read all the time and was just as



quiet!" R. D. came at 10.20. *Oct. 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 8.* M. did not come until evening. I had a talk with R. D. intended to encourage her and keep her from worrying so much. Afterwards S. M. advised me to say little of the sort, as R. D. cannot help worrying at present, and probably must go through with such a period. When the experiment was going on which is described under this date in Chapter XII, a rather amusing incident occurred and M. began to laugh, but in a muffled involuntary way, and she appeared puzzled at the same time—it is hard to describe it. Repeatedly she said in the midst of the laughing, "Somebody is makin' me laugh. Somebody is makin' me laugh." I quieted her and after she was asleep S. M. said that she was the one that was amused. "I couldn't help making her laugh. I was laughing." When M. woke I spoke of her laughing, and she again asserted, "Somefin' made me laugh. (What?) I don't know. It was like when S. D. would laugh and make me laugh. She would get to thinkin' of somfin' funny that had happened, and I didn't know what it was. But I knew it was somfin' funny and that I would know about it when she came out, and so I would laugh with her. Once I did it when I felt her laughin' inside, and I was in Sunday school, and the teacher looked at me. (And did you laugh underneath when she was out?) Yes, when somefin' funny happened to her. Not at anything I was thinkin' separate. For I was always watchin' her when I was thinkin' at all. But you see she couldn't watch me when I was out, so she had to laugh at her own thoughts. (You couldn't watch her thoughts when she was in?) O no." I supposed that I had set this down correctly, yet have to admit that S. M. said I misunderstood M.'s meaning; that really it was when S. D. laughed while she was going down, that M. caught it and would laugh, not while S. D. was actually lying underneath, as it were. M. told me today that R. D. had just received a letter from Ella. We were surprised that she had not mentioned it. But when S. M. could speak she said, "When will you stop believing what M. says? The D. did not get a letter from Ella; she only read over an old letter." This incident is typical. M. gets glimpses and pictures, she fishes up incidents of the day which she often mis-



interprets, she guesses and fibs. Sometimes she fibs as to what she herself has done. For example, I left her for a short while the other day, and when I returned she said that she had been out and seen the chickens, and had "carefully squeezed one" of them. I was disturbed, because I do not want her to enlarge her experiences. When S. M. next was able to talk she said, "When will you learn not to trust M. now? She did not go out-doors. She wanted to go out, and she felt like squeezing a chicken—if she had, as she cannot feel she would certainly have squeezed it to death. But she cannot see, you know, but a short distance, and she would not have dared to venture off that doorstep." The other day M. asked if she could have one of the record books that she sees me writing in. I told her that I would give her another book of my writing, and she was satisfied. Last night I gave her an old diary which I kept 25 years ago, and she directed me to put it in her drawer the following morning. Tonight R. D. came a little before 10.15, and I was whispering "Sleep well", etc., when M. popped out again and cried, "Excuse me papo, but did you put that book in my drawer? (Yes.) The D. was looking at it and thought that she would like it. I was afraid she took it. (No, it is in your drawer.) All right", and R. D. was back. She slept well. *Oct. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h. 50 m.*

*Oct. 9.* M. came at 7 a. m., R. D. came at 7.20 and staid until 9 p. m. and came for the night at 10 and slept well. *Oct. 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Oct. 10.* M. came at 6.10 a. m. R. D. was here 7.25 a. m.-9 p. m. and came for the night at 10.12 and slept well. *Oct. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 37 m.*

*Oct. 11.* Mrs. P. usually retires before R. D. comes for the night. Tonight R. D. came at 9.33 and was left asleep as usual, but Mrs. P. sat in the next room reading until 10.15. This change in the program woke R. D., who unwisely said to herself, "I'll wait until papa goes to bed so that I won't wake again", though she wakes for only a few minutes when, after an hour or two of work in the study, I retire. In consequence of this auto-suggestion she did not go to sleep until 11.15, when, just as I was on the point of retiring M. came, and was heard by Mrs. P. who



summoned me. At 11.30 R. D. came again and, as nearly always, was asleep in the fraction of a second. She slept well. *Oct. 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 23 m.; M., 1 h. 58 m.*

*Oct. 12.* M. came at 8.12. R. D. was here 8.17 a. m.-7.05 p. m., and came for a good night of sleep at 9. *Oct. 11-12: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 2 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Oct. 13. Sunday.* M. did not come and R. D. staid until 8.55 p. m., and came again at 11.03 and slept well. *Oct. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 8 m.*

*Oct. 14.* M. did not come in the morning early, but did at 9.30. M. said that the reason was that I was "nervous" and "irritable", and in the evening S. M. mildly lectured me. I was not aware that my manner was censurable, but have no doubt that the fact that work is piling up ahead of me made me justly liable to the criticism. In the evening, at R. D.'s suggestion, we all went to a neighbor's and listened to a piano-player. This sort of music no longer has a deleterious effect on her, and she can listen to it for an hour and a half without fatigue.

R. D. may hand the dolls to a little girl caller, or handle them herself, with impunity. But she is not able to carry out her wish to close her door at night to shut out the occasional sound of snoring. At the preliminary movements to do so she feels down below something that warns her that she would forget if she proceeded. R. D. can tell by her feelings how far she can go, and her advance towards freedom is measured by M.'s retreat, and M.'s retreat is marked by her loss of interest in this and that concern and object, successively.

R. D. went at 9.27 p. m., being at the time in the bath-room with the door locked. We had quite a time getting M. out, and she became somewhat hysterical. After becoming quiet, she remarked that R. D. had intended to try to go to sleep tonight without forgetting. "She was disappointed. (But how could she feel disappointed before you came?) She could feel me coming. . . But papo, that is good for her, to make up her mind not to forget. That is the first step, you know." And after S. M. could speak she took up the parable and said, "It means progress for R. D. to be thinking about staying in the evening. She has to come to that point herself, it is of no use for anyone



else to try and hurry her. Of course, when she gets so she can, she won't always be able to do so, but it will be a beginning."

S. M. says that M. no longer knows the difference between morning and evening, night and day, and has no real sense of time whatever. When she goes into the bath-room in the morning she turns on the electric light automatically, just as she does when it is dark. It is a formula to be gone through. S. M. today said that her own coming was in answer to the prayers of R. D.'s mother, who used to pray that D. should be guarded from all evil. The time came that she knew that her prayers were answered, and she did not worry. "(How old was D. when her mother commenced so to pray?) A wee little baby. (How did you know that she prayed. Did she tell R. D.?) No, it was written in her Bible. (O, I see. R. D. saw it then.) Yes, but I knew it before D. could read. (How did you know?)". S. M. evaded the question, with the voice and manner of one who feels that she has said too much. This may be a piece of dramatic acting, but it has a genuine appearance. This evening she "went away", and her return about 5 minutes later was announced by a sharp jerk of the head. R. D. came at 10.27, and slept well. *Oct. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 12 m.; M., 1 h. 12 m.*

*Oct. 15.* In the evening I asked S. M. if she could "go away" voluntarily, and she replied that she could whenever R. D. is comfortable both in body and mind. I asked her to do so then, as I wanted to watch the process. She was a little curious as to what I meant by this, but consented, "only", she said, "I cannot tell just at what instant I can go, but I will soon." We were then silent, and in about two minutes M.'s hand, which I was holding, relaxed its grasp, and she lay limp and quiet for about 3 minutes. Then a snap of the head announced that S. M. was back. R. D. came at 9.40 for a good night. *Oct. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 8 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Oct. 16.* M. came at 6.45, and R. D. was on deck 7 a. m.-9.20 p. m., coming for the night at 10.40. She is feeling well. *Oct. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 17.* This evening S. M. became offended with me on account of my refusal to answer a certain question, [584] and

584. See Chapter XII under this date, page 1308.



desisted from talking, except in direct answer to questions, and then expressed herself in laconic terms. As always when she is displeased, her face preserved a sphinx-like calmness and immobility. I feared the effect of this mood upon M. and also upon R. D. But there was no effect perceptible in M.'s case, except that while asleep she was a bit more restless than usual, and woke more frequently, probably because she missed the lulling effect of the voices, which S. M. has often said have a soothing effect upon her sleep. Awake she was as jolly and talkative as ever. And no after effect appeared in the case of R. D. either, who slept well, and was cheerful the next day.

In the morning, at 9.30, we had started for Redlands to make a visit, and did not return until 6.20 p. m. R. D. became very tired in the afternoon, and had to fight to keep M. from coming. M. asked, "What would you have done then, papo? (I guess you could have pretended to be Doris.) No, I can't do that any more.)" Afterwards R. D. said, "I must not go away again for all day, it tires me too much." It might be argued that S. M.'s mood in the evening was the result of R. D. getting tired, but I am confident that this is not the case, since S. M. has never shown the slightest emotional effect from R. D.'s weariness. It is the case of a personality showing a reaction from a provocation received by herself, and maintaining it independently. R. D. came at 9.55 p. m. *Oct. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Oct. 18.* S. M.'s taciturnity continued today, M. and R. D. showing no effects whatever. But R. D. showed the effect of nervous strain from the too long extended visit of yesterday. I was absent the greater part of the day and M. came twice, both times in the back yard, S. M. judged for about half an hour each time. As I got the story from M., pieced out with answers laconically vouchsafed by S. M., the first time M. came in the henhouse, "I sat right down and hollered papo! papo!, and nobody came. And the hens hopped up on my lap and scared me. And I squeezed one—just enough to make her squeal. And I just staid there, and the hens kept hopping all over me." The second time R. D. was in the shed when she went. R. D.



came for sleep at 9.35. *Oct. 17-18: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 32 m.; M., 3 h. 8 m.*

*Oct. 19.* Today R. D. brought me a letter from Dr. Bra-shear, from which I drew three enclosures, one for myself, one for R. D. and one for M. R. D. easily guessed who the last was for, and her thoughts did not bring M. out. But at 6 p. m., being weary at the time, she happened to speak of the letters, perhaps thought of the third, and M. came and demanded her letter. In 10 minutes R. D. was back, and at her next departure at 8.35, M. asked to see my letter. She pronounced it a "crazy" one, since she could not understand it. I no longer fear for her to read a letter which discusses her in scientific terms, and names S. M. by initials. I tell her that S. M. means M. asleep, and she believes it. S. M.'s mood still persists, it being the first time that she has ever maintained a similar one for more than an hour or two. M. shows no alternation, nor does R. D. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m., and slept well. *Oct. 18-19: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Oct. 20. Sunday.* M. having come at 5.25, R. D. returned during supper, without warning, just as M. had finished a sentence. S. M. is still in the same mood, never speaking save in reply, and I question her little, so that there is almost continual silence between us. M. continues jolly, and R. D. shows no psychical coloring of sadness or any other undesirable feeling. She has slept as well as usual during the continuance of the spell. R. D. came at 9.55 p. m. and slept well. *Oct. 19-20: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h.*

*Oct. 21.* M. did not come this morning. In the evening S. M. spontaneously resumed talking, and I made no allusion to the cessation.

M. has somehow of late got the idea that 9 o'clock is the time for her to go to sleep. S. M. said, "if you told her it was nine earlier she would not know the difference and would probably go to bed." So at 8 I told her it was 9, and she hurried into bed. R. D. came at 8.45 p. m. *Oct. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Oct. 22.* M. came at 6.30 a. m., after which R. D. was out



7.30 a. m.-8 p. m., came for the night at 9.35. *Oct. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 23.* I was absent in the evening until 10. M. said, "The D. tried to stay until you came but she couldn't." R. D. returned at 11. *Oct. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Oct. 24.* In the morning I saw M. emerge from the bath-room and go, in an uncertain fashion, in the wrong direction, and enter the parlor. Mrs. P. followed and turned her about, and I called to her. As she heard my voice she fairly bounded through the hall and intervening room, and threw herself into my arms, laughing and exclaiming, hysterically, "I got lost. I almost got lost. I was lost, papo. I thought I saw you out there. And I saw eyes,—eyes looking at me. I got lost." She was very earnest and excited. S. M. says, "The top of the lamp was what she took to be an eye." Several times of late I have done what S. D. in her last infantile stage liked for me to do, rapidly brought my face near that of M. This has much the same effect upon her that it had upon S. D. She wants me to "do it again", but laughs wildly with eyes bulging, so that I soon desist. Once she said, "You look so funny! Your eyes first look as big as this", and she made a circle about as large as the eye, "and then they get big as saucers. And your face gets awful big." R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Oct. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 38 m.; M., 1 h. 32 m.*

*Oct. 25.* M. came at 7.10 a. m. R. D. was out 8.15 a. m.-9.25 p. m., and came for the night at 10.05. *Oct. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Oct. 26.* R. D. made a few errors in copying for me, for which I was as much to blame as she, and probably I was too precise in calling her attention to them. She mentally pronounced herself "stupid", as I learned from S. M., and lamented that she "wasn't any help", and M. came and began to cry and sob. She did not seem to blame me, but said that she could not help crying. It was R. D.'s repressed emotion expressing itself through M. But a short sleep carried most of the feeling away, [585] and

585. The emotion brought M. and expended itself mostly through her, with the secondary effect that the emotion caused weariness which was rectified by M.'s sleep.



R. D. was back after absence of half an hour, but with headache. It was probably the headache principally which brought M. nearly two hours later. From the moment she came M. had no headache, as is the general rule, unless the headache is exceedingly severe, when M. very rarely has a little consciousness of it. When R. D. returned after 50 minutes, the headache was gone. While M. was sleeping, strangely enough, since the conditions would not seem to have been favorable, S. M. "went away," for one of the longest periods I have known, about 25 minutes. Meanwhile M. lay almost upon her face, absolutely motionless. I think that S. M. has said that she never went away prior to the beginning of the cure, and am sure she asserted that she does not go away now save when I am with D., so that she feels that the latter is perfectly "safe." M. showed the effect of R. D.'s morning feeling more or less through her several appearances, misunderstanding several remarks of mine and seeming about to cry. [586] S. M. said "She is in earnest, and yet at the same time you can see that she is almost laughing." After one of my disturbing remarks I pleasantly said, "O well, I'll take it back." M. was eating an apple, and started to wail, declaring that I had said I would take the apple back. When I had explained that I did not mean the apple she insisted, "But you were looking right at the apple." R. D. came at 9.50 p. m., was wakened several times by the barking of a dog, and had altogether a bad night. *Oct. 25-26; 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 10 m.; M., 3 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 27. Sunday.* After an unstable day M. was sleeping in the evening, and as I read it happened that my elbow, leaning on the couch, confined her sleeve. She attempted to change her position, being still asleep, then suddenly fairly yelled, "GET OFF!" This recalled to my mind the tales I had heard, how when she was little and slept with her sisters, if one lay on the night-robe of another the latter would shout those words. I asked M. why she spoke so loudly, and she replied, "I couldn't help it. (Could you help yelling other things?) Yes. (Then why couldn't you help yelling that?) Asa no. I *had* to yell that." S. M. afterwards said, "She has forgotten that she used

586. R. D. had gone away, grieved by a remark of mine. This caused M. to be sensitive to whatever I said.



to say that so loudly." R. D. came at 9.15, and the owner of the noisy puppy having kindly shut him up, her sleep was good. *Oct. 26-27: 10 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 7 m.; M., 2 h. 18 m.*

*Oct. 28.* S. M. went away for a few minutes this morning. R. D. went early, at 6.20 p. m., in consequence, according to S. M., of the bad sleep of night before last. M. came sitting at the table, and would not lie down. It was not long before S. M. and Mrs. P. cried out together, and I jumped just in time to catch M., who was falling from her chair asleep. I held her with her head on my shoulder for a short time when she woke refreshed. Such sudden lapses into sleep on M.'s part mean that R. D. has either been improving so rapidly as to bring an additional burden upon her proper individuality, or else that she has in some other way been subjected to a strain. A short nap usually restores M. so that she can stay awake for a considerable time without appearance of drowsiness. Later M. put her mouth close to my ear and whispered earnestly, "There ain't any such person as Jim, is there? (Jim? what Jim?) Jim Hyslop. (Why, what makes you think so?) There isn't though, is there? I was just pretendin', wasn't I, papo? (Well, perhaps you were.) Yes, I was—just pretendin'. But there isn't any Jim Hyslop. (That's right.)" After M. was asleep S. M. said, "I came near telling you last night that I thought that Dr. Hyslop, Dr. Brashear and the rest do not exist any more for M. as real persons. I think she is about at the point where only you and the mother exist as real persons. [587] (But what about the persons whom R. D. meets?) They don't make a vivid impression on her mind—she is used to meeting people, and so M. doesn't get any strong impression of them. The reason that M. spoke of Hyslop is that R. D. has had a dream for two nights running that he was visiting California, and M. last evening saw the dream in R. D.'s thoughts and thought it a foolish dream because she didn't believe there was any such person.

---

587. M. was subject to more or less fluctuation in this respect. A few days later her observations indicated that she thought that, outside of our own immediate family, only Dr. Walker, Dr. Hyslop and Dr. Brashear were real beings. Probably R. D. had thought about these during the day, and thus revived the feeling of their actuality in M.'s mind.



Today R. D. said that she believed she could safely shut the door between her room and ours at night, S. M. afterwards advised that this be done, and tonight, to my surprise, M. caught a glimpse of the plan and approved it. "But", said she, "open the door in the morning, so I won't come." The next morning I referred in conversation with S. M. to my astonishment that M. approved of the plan to which she had always been so opposed. S. M. instantly said, "She simply said off what she saw in R. D.'s mind; she did not stop to think of it or she would have objected. (Well, if she has gotten so that she can repeat R. D.'s wishes contrary to her own, without thinking about them, it seems to me that this is another mark of her fading.) I think so, and I see many such marks, but I don't often think to mention them to you." Surely M. fades from week to week, memories, touch with external realities, pet obstinacies, particular whims, etc., are going one by one.

Several times S. M. has remarked that M., in reading, holds her book as far away as she can see. This is because she has to oscillate her head less to follow the reading, since the funnel bounding her visual field of course enlarges with the distance from the eye. Consequently the distance at which she holds the book measures pretty exactly the distance which she can see.

When R. D. went last evening she was reading a long story. M. today complained that the story was so long that she herself was bored when she started to read it over. "I wish she wouldn't select such a long story. (Why don't you take some other story, one that R. D. hasn't read?) I can't do that, papo. It *must* be something the D. has read." Formerly, say six months ago, M. was interested in what either I or R. D. had read, but for many weeks she has shown no interest in an article because I had read it. R. D. came at 8.50 p. m. Oct. 27-28: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h.

Oct. 29. R. D. walked some three miles in the afternoon, and her period came on without any disagreeable symptoms. In the evening there was a large party in the house, so she spent the evening at the home of Mrs. Kendall, who regards her in quite a motherly way, and whose society seems to act as a tonic, since she always comes away feeling invigorated rather than wearied.



In the case of certain others the effect is precisely opposite, and the good intentions of the persons do not alter the result. Repose of manner, a voice not loud, speech not too voluble nor touching many topics in rapid succession, and congeniality of interests, make the most beneficial combination.

After her longest day since coming to this State, R. D. came for the night at 11.45, and slept well. Her door is shut every night now, but opened in the morning, when the arrival of M. is likely. *Oct. 28-29: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Oct. 30.* R. D. got along very comfortably today, came for the night at 11.10, and slept well. *Oct. 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Oct. 31.* This morning I asked S. M. " (What do you think about all night?) Why, I don't think all the time. (What do you do?) I only watch a good part of the time. (Don't you think when you watch?) Not necessarily. I just watch. (What do you watch?) D.'s dreams and thoughts. (Does she have thoughts which are not dreams?) Yes, according to my way of thinking. What I call her dreams are pictorial,—where she sees things. But she also thinks things. Sometimes problems come up in her mind in the daytime that she can't solve, and she thinks of them while asleep and they solve themselves then, and in the morning the result comes to her. But it isn't the part of her mind that she knows which thinks them out in the night-time. I wish I knew how to say it, or that you could see inside, as I do. I suppose it is so with everyone. I presume that everyone solves questions in their sleep, and in the morning it seems as if they had just worked out the answer, when it was really done in the night-time. At any rate it is so with the D." Then I brought up the subject of S. M.'s "going away." She said that she had twice done so when R. D. was out, a fact that I had not learned. "Once was for quite a long time, when R. D. was sitting beside you alone on the piazza. I would not feel justified in going away unless you were taking care of her and no one else was about, for I would fear that something might be said or done that would disturb her. I would not go away if even the mother was there, since she does not understand as you do. (You would not feel



justified? Then you go away voluntarily and not automatically, when she is comfortable?) I go away because I wish to." She also remarked that she would go away just after M. did, because then R. D. could take care of herself. "(Then you guard her?) [588] Yes. (Could you go before M. did?) Yes, I could. (And you are a personality?) Certainly I am a personality." She gave as a minor incident of her guardianship, "Sometimes when she is sleeping R. D. turns over wrong, so that she lies on her arm, and then I think and think about that arm and so cause R. D. to turn over, or take the arm out." For several days M. has insisted that the time must be at all times nine o'clock. "She began by asking what time it was. I told her and she said, 'No, you must say nine 'clock. Ever'sing must be nine 'clock.'" The next day she told Mrs. P. the same thing when I was absent. "Ever'sing must be nine o'clock. The D. must come nine 'clock, I must come nine 'clock, eat breket nine 'clock, eat dinner nine 'clock, eat supper nine 'clock,—*ever'sing* must be nine 'clock." S. M. explained the phenomenon thus: "You would say, 'It is nine o'clock, time you were in bed.' She got so she thought she must be in bed at nine o'clock, and when you told her she would usually go, though it might be earlier. That started it. Now she wants it nine o'clock all the time." I said to S. M., "(It cannot be that M. thinks now that there are no real persons but the mother and me. She speaks of whom R. D. has talked with and so on.) Certainly she does, and she knows who come to the door when she is here. But nevertheless they are not real to her as you and the mother are. They are like phantoms to her. Or, you know how a moving-picture show appears to you. You do not think that the figures are real, live persons. It is the same to her—all other people are a moving-picture show to her." [589]

In the evening R. D. was left alone, and I took the precaution to remove the bath-room door-key. S. M. reported that R. D. hunted for it and that it was fortunate that I removed it, for M. came in the bath-room and had the door been locked she would

---

588. This was not a leading question, because of the statements already made in the automatic writing familiar to her. See Chapter XII, pages 1295, 1299, 1303-5, etc.

589. M. seldom met anyone besides Mrs. P. and me in these days.



have been forced to remain there until our return. The next morning I told R. D. that she must not lock the bath-room when she felt near "forgetting", as the A Phase was liable to get confused about the key. She promised to heed the injunction. She came tonight at 10.10, and slept soundly. *Oct. 30-31: 6 alt.: R. D. 19 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m. Average daily record of R. D. during October, 1912, 21 h. 20 m.*

*Nov. 1.* S. M. says that for a week or two she has hardly been able to follow M.'s thoughts, she shifts about so, follows no thought persistently, and, if I understand S. M.'s meaning, does not think strongly enough. S. M.'s own expression is, "She does not think", but, as I have noted in other connections, S. M. seems to use that expression to denote active, or orderly, thought. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m., and slept well. *Oct. 31-Nov. 1: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Nov. 2.* I wakened R. D. this morning and she remained herself, but not for all day. Usually in going to her room at night M. precedes me and turns on the electric light herself. Tonight I entered, turned on the light and lit the fire, then went back and got M. As she passed the bulb she reached up and turned off the light. " (What are you doing?) I turned on the light, papo. We want the light, don't we?" I put on the light again, and she seemed not to notice. R. D. came at 10.45 and slept well. *Nov. 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Nov. 3. Sunday.* I again woke R. D., who went to sleep afterwards, but maintained herself until afternoon. She came at night, 10.05. *Nov. 2-3: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Nov. 4.* M. turned on the bath-room light in the broad daylight. S. M. says that M. cannot tell whether the light is on or off, unless she looks directly at it or is reading. It hangs quite high. She cannot judge by the amount of light whether it is day or night. She is used to changes as she turns towards the window or towards the darker part of the room, these changes producing about the same effect upon her consciousness in her condition of curiously limited vision as do day and night. At 8.15 R. D. went, probably affected by the fact that I showed that I was worried about certain matters. M. came exceedingly jolly, and was laughing heartily when R. D. suddenly returned about



an hour later. I expected to see R. D. influenced by M.'s previous mood, but, though I had put away my worries, the gay, joyful look died out and a perplexed, troubled expression came in its stead, and continued for a little while. In the afternoon we all took a walk of about seven miles, which she much enjoyed. In the evening I had a committee meeting in my study, and M. came upon my return. Later I asked S. M. why M.'s jolly mood of the morning did not produce its wonted effect upon R. D. She laughed and said, "The reason is that I tried a little experiment. I went away while M. was awake—it is the first time that I have done that,—and did not return until a little while after the R. D. had come. It made her feel strange and confused,—she must have missed me,—and that accounts for her troubled expression." R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. Her sleep was uneasy on account of having eaten cheese sandwiches which disagreed with her. *Oct. 3-4: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 30 m.; M., 3 h. 15 m.*

*Nov. 5.* I went in at 8.10 to waken R. D., but as I entered she started, opened her eyes, and sank to sleep as M. I exchanged greetings with S. M. but after that got no reply. As M. lay without movement I knew that S. M. had gone away. In a few minutes she returned with the usual jerk. Presently she said, "Sometime when you are alone with R. D. so that I can be sure that she will be quiet in mind, I am going to go away again. I will select a time when we know beforehand that you will be alone and tell you about what time I will go. Then you can watch, and see just how my going affects her." At 1.30 p. m. a disaster occurred. Mrs. P. made a well-meant remark, but an unfortunate one in that it was capable of being misconstrued by a sensitive person. R. D. did so misconstrue it, and Mrs. P., in a kind of despair, uttered a hasty exclamation. M. instantly came, and Mrs. P. informed me, whereupon I went to D.'s room whither M. had fled. She was crying, and when I endeavored to comfort her would say, "Go away from me!", "Shut up!", "I want to go to my own home", "Go out of my sight", etc. Every word and every movement of mine called forth such exclamations. She declared that I was not her *papo* any more. Fortunately she soon fell asleep, and I discussed the situation with S. M., who could give me no hint how to bring M. into a



better frame of mind. When M. woke, the ejaculations went on. She begged me to take her to the train, "to go to our old home. I have money enough. I have a dollar and twenty cents." She varied by suggesting that she might go to Dr. Walker, and once named Dr. Brashear, and once Dr. Hyslop. She said that perhaps Dr. Walker might like her "as a specimen", and rang the changes on this for a time. Mrs. P. joined in trying to cheer her, but was loudly told to "shut up." With successive naps and wakings M. got a little calmer, and at 3.30 R. D. came in a sad frame of mind, and presently went out into the henhouse and staid some time. At 9.05 M. came, and immediately fixed her eyes on *me*, Mrs. P. being in the room, and said, loudly, "Go away from me." She allowed me to do all that I usually do for her, light the stove in her room, rub her feet, etc., but at everything I said, and at intervals when I was silent, uttered her cricket-chirp. Not much feeling was expressed in the ejaculations, but she seemed to feel obscurely that something had gone wrong. She again spoke of going away, said I was not her *papo*, and yet addressed me as *papo*. I had to be absent a portion of the evening. M.'s mood was somewhat mitigated when, at 10.10, R. D. came. I told her in her sleep to forget this afternoon, but after leaving her reflected that this might pack the trouble into her subliminal consciousness, and cause her vague uneasiness which would be worse than leaving it supraliminal. *Nov. 4-5: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h. 45 m.*

*Nov. 6.* I gently awakened R. D. at 8 a. m., and she staid. Mrs. P. and I were absent at a convention 9.50 a. m.-5 p. m. M. came during supper, and instantly glared at me and cried, "Go away from me." Interlarded between pleasant utterances by her this and other ejaculations of the kind appeared until I went out to see a caller. On my return I found that R. D. had returned. When M. came back about an hour later she recommenced her cricket-chirps. My policy is to appear not to notice these, and endeavor to divert her attention. When M. fell asleep S. M. said that M. did not really feel any resentment, that the exclamations were now purely mechanical, and that M. had forgotten yesterday, only that something had happened which made her think of going away, and that I was somehow implicated. But the mood



grew more and more shadowy, and presently M. was gaily indulging in stories of S. D., the exclamations ceasing, at least for tonight.

On her second waking M. said, "The D. saw our mother out in the henyard. (Saw the mother?) No, saw *our* mother—she saw her twice—our *mother*, the one we used to have. (When?) This afternoon—and yesterday. (What was she doing—your mother?) Standing—and looking at D. (How long did she see her?) Asa no. She saw our mother—*our* mother—a fat lady. I had forgotten about her. But she saw *our* mother." As she spoke M. looked delighted, and clapped her hands, from which I inferred that whatever the experience had been it was not unpleasant to R. D. As M. resumed her looking at a book, I looked at her feet, as I sat chafing them, and asked, "Correct?" Immediately the right foot moved signifying the assent of S. M., and M. almost at the same moment asked, "What, papo?" I later questioned S. M., who told me something like this. "It is true that R. D. saw her mother twice, once yesterday afternoon at about half-past four, and also this afternoon, perhaps at half-past two. Yesterday she had been crying, and she sat down in the henyard and held a chicken. She looked up and saw her mother, dressed in a dress she wore when she was living, standing looking at her and smiling. Nothing was said by either of them. D. was transfixed with pleasure at seeing her mother. She saw her about three minutes. [590] Just the same thing happened in the same place today. (Had R. D. been thinking of her mother just before she saw her?) No. She often thinks of her and imagines her. She can see you in the same way when you are gone. But this was different. (She often lets herself imagine?) I don't mean that she spends much time doing so, but she often does it for a moment. (Was she frightened when she saw her mother?) No, she was pleased. She was happier afterwards. (Has she thought much about it since?) No, not very much. Such things don't make her

590. But S. M.'s estimates of periods of one, two or three minutes, were apt to be too long. R. D. afterwards said that she saw her mother "a second", and she was probably too short. The apparition may have lasted a half-minute or a minute.



nervous. You know she used to see her mother when she was absent from her, just what she was doing. When she came home she would ask her mother 'Were you doing that at such a time?' and her mother would always answer that she was. You know that on the day her mother died she saw her lying on a lounge, and told the woman she worked for that she must run home, but would come back, and that she found her mother lying on the lounge, very ill. [591] Of course this isn't evidence. If her mother had lived she could have told you many things of the sort, if she found that you were interested, but she did not tell anyone, for no one would have believed it. (What did you have to do with R. D.'s seeing her mother yesterday and today?) I didn't have anything to do with it that I know of." Later in the evening I suggested to S. M. that we agree on some cue-word which I could use when R. D. is with me and conditions are favorable for S. M. to go away. She agreed that this would be a good plan, and added, as if impulsively, "I went away this afternoon. (You did? Where?) In the henyard. (Before or after R. D. saw her mother?) Before. (Did you go away yesterday before she saw her mother?) Y-e-s. (Did you come back before she saw her mother?) Y-e-s. (How long before?) I don't know. (Within ten minutes of the time?) Yes." Her manner was exactly that of a person betrayed into an admission, and reluctantly answering, conscious that her questioner would be likely to draw inferences. "(You had nothing to do with the vision?) I don't see how I could have had." [592] Here M. woke.

---

591. I remembered the story with great distinctness. It had been told me more than a year before. See page 208.

592. The next day I asked R. D. "(Have you something to tell me?) Why no, I don't know of anything. (Nothing out of usual the last two days?) O, do you mean out in the henyard? (Yes.) Who told you? (Won't you tell me about it?) I don't need to tell you anything; it is always told you before I get a chance. (Well, I may not get everything right from the A Phase. Tell me.)" Then R. D. essentially repeated the story of S. M., with one remarkable addition. "I was sitting in the henyard day before yesterday at half past four, feeling sad, and holding a chicken, looking down at it when I saw a shadow. That made me look up,—I thought it must be you, and I saw my mother, just as plainly as I ever saw her, dressed in a calico dress which she wore when I was a child about eight years old. She looked down at me and smiled, and her face shone—it seemed to reflect light,



Several times when S. M. has apparently been driven into a corner M. has opportunely come, as if S. M. had dodged, not wishing to answer more queries. I do not say that it is my opinion that she does so, but I am bound to record the exact appearance of things. Nor am I now afraid to ask any question whatever of S. M., as I have found her as nearly non-suggestible as it is possible for anyone to be.

M., when she had entirely recovered her good humor, said to me with bewitching naïveté, her finger uplifted, "If M. ever says to you 'May I have a cheese sandwich?' you say NO, and if she says 'M. *wants* a cheese sandwich' you say NO [with great energy] and if she cries you say 'You 'top or I'll 'pank you', and if M. doesn't 'top you 'pank her hard. (And what would M. do if I should do that?)" She laughed heartily. But at least she recognizes that cheese is bad for her, and should be denied her. The next morning she tested me, saying "M. wants a cheese sandwich." I promptly said "NO", and she was a little frightened, but delighted at the same time. R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. Usually she sleeps until about 6 a. m., stays awake for a time, sometimes an hour, then sleeps again, as M. expresses it, "like a brick." S. M. does not like that last sleep, deeming it too dense. *Nov. 5-6: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Nov. 7.* R. D. maintained herself until 5.40 p. m., and then after an interval of 50 minutes, until 9.05. In the morning she related, with considerable glee, and all unsuspecting of its significance, a dream that she had last night. She dreamed that the A Phase started out to go away from here, walking on the railroad. She seemed to see the A Phase throughout the dream, but not herself to be waking or to have any bodily habitation—she was just an accompanying consciousness, so far as I could gather. "The A Phase went through El Cajon Pass, and out upon the desert, and it grew very hot, a heat that R. D. also seemed

I saw her only a second, [it is doubtful if R. D. uses this term more accurately than S. M. does the expression 'three minutes'] and then she suddenly disappeared. I saw the same thing yesterday afternoon." Here is a hallucinatory figure that casts a shadow! Or, if the shadow was a part of the hallucination, it is singular that there should have been such similitude to a real event, the shadow being seen before the presence of the figure to account for it was suspected!



to feel. M. stumbled on and on, but at length wandered away from the railroad track and became lost. Finally she sank down on the sand and lost consciousness. R. D. did not feel much sorrow for her, somehow, but wondered whether anything could be done for her. She saw a Mexican walking, and was rather afraid, but she thought, 'Well, it is a Mexican or nothing', and called to him. He came and took M. up and carried her away to his shanty and laid her down upon the floor, and went away. After awhile a gentleman drove up in a buggy and took M. up still unconscious, and carried her to his house. He was a doctor. She was put to bed and cared for and got well. But then she commenced to get younger, and kept getting younger until she was a baby,—well not a baby exactly, but about six or eight years old. And the doctor liked her and wanted to keep her. Well, after she had been there for a time the doctor saw in a paper that the daughter of Dr. Prince of San Bernardino had wandered away and the people had been searching for her, and he wondered if this could be she. And he wrote to Dr. Prince and he came on. In the meantime M.'s body had been getting small too. Dr. Prince came and looked at M., and said, 'Yes, that is Margaret, but I don't understand about her body getting smaller. To be sure Phase B became a baby, and I thought likely that Phase A would, but I didn't think that her body would grow small.' And the doctor shook his head gravely and said, 'Yes, it is a great mystery.' But Margaret said, 'No, you are not my papo', and also said that she was going to Dr. Walker. The doctor thought she meant him, for it appears that his name was Walker too, but she said, no, there was another Dr. Walker. Then Dr. Prince said 'I don't know what the people in San Bernardino will think. They know her as a young lady, and I shall have to carry her back as a little girl. You know I am a minister, and it will be an embarrassing position.' But you took her back, and then she began to grow until she got to her full size again. Such a singular dream!" The above is very nearly the way that R. D. told it. R. D. is all unconscious of the relation of the dream to the fancies and thoughts of M., that it is in some mysterious way symbolical of M.'s retreat to earlier childhood, and of her own destined growth to a full mental



maturity, or that S. D. actually did become a baby ere she disappeared. R. D. came for the night at 10.05. *Nov. 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Nov. 8.* I woke her according to a method which I have lately adopted, which is to go in just before M. is likely to come and begin stroking her forehead. It is amusing to see her efforts to wake. Sometimes she smiles faintly at first, sometimes not. Then she turns her head from side to side, and twists her features in an odd way, looking more like S. D. than herself, and evidently struggling to wake. If I cease to stroke her forehead or hair, she may subside into slumber, but when I renew the movements, her efforts begin again. They are over in less than a minute. Her eyes open and peer to the right and left uncomprehendingly. Then she discovers me, and simultaneously the sort of a world she is in, and the whole expression resolves itself into that of smiling R. D. She came at night at 10.05. *Nov. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Nov. 9* I woke R. D. and she remained until 8.40 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.10. *Nov. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Nov. 10. Sunday.* I had an early service, and consequently did not waken her before leaving the house, as experience demonstrated that she would not have slept enough at that hour. Before my return M. came. R. D. was troubled with indigestion today and consequently was unstable. She came at 10.10 p. m. *Nov. 9-10: 8 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 15 m.; M., 2 h. 45 m.*

*Nov. 11.* I woke R. D. a little before 8. The same troubles, indigestion and intestinal disturbance, continuing, M. came at 8.55, and again in the afternoon. M. is very sensitive to any words or looks of mine implying that I regret her coming, since she fears that I blame her. If she detects such, or thinks she does, and sometimes she thinks an expression caused by a headache is due to her coming, she begins to whimper and cry, "I can't help it; don't look that way." It is marvelous how she can tell when my face is too far away for her to see it. Can it be possible that my looks affect the quality of my breathing? At 10.10 R. D. came for the night. *Nov. 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*



*Nov. 12.* M. first came at noon. I left her to do an errand immediately after her arrival, and within two minutes a squawking in the henyard brought R. D., who dashed out to ascertain the matter. I found her in the house on my return. In the evening, on my return from an engagement M. came again, and at once asked "Where *was* you? You went away when I came, and never came back. (I came back in a few minutes, but the R. D. was here then.) No, you went away and you *never came back*, *papo*." The other day I pointed out my name in print to M., and she gravely asked who that was. I told her it was my name, but she drew up her forehead, shook her head and said with emphasis, "No, that isn't you. You are *papo*." R. D. came at 10.45 p. m., and slept well, as usual. *Nov. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 28 m.; M., 1 h. 7 m.*

*Nov. 13.* I woke R. D. at 8, but she went for about 2 minutes at 8.45, on account of my being flurried. Again she was sent away after dinner by my shouting to the parrot to stop its noise. She came at 10.35 and slept well. *Nov. 12-13: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Nov. 14.* I woke R. D. at about 8 a. m., and she staid until 8.55 p. m., returning for the night at 10.30 and sleeping well. *Nov. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Nov. 15.* She was wakened in the usual way, and staid until 5.20 p. m., was here again 6-7.55, and returned for sleep at 9.30. She had a good night. *Nov. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Nov. 16.* The violent ringing of the doorbell brought M. in the morning. R. D. had some marshmallows today and told me jokingly that I had better give some to Phase A "(Why?) Because she always hated them. (How do you know?) Because I used to be asked why I acted so." Afterwards, when M. was asleep, S. M. suggested, "Try giving her a marshmallow when she wakes." The effort to open the box woke M., who when she saw the white morsel approaching her mouth exclaimed in delighted tones, "O, canny! canny!" and opened her mouth to receive it. But as her teeth closed in the soft mass, an expression of utter loathing overspread her face, her head and whole body shook with revulsion, and—R. D. appeared. She came laughing,



with the marshmallow in her fingers, at first said, "What am I laughing for", and quickly added "O, did you give this to the A Phase?" Mrs. P. and I were both laughing at the irresistibly comical episode, and I replied in the affirmative. "And did she shake? (She certainly did.) She always hated marshmallows." But why did R. D. come laughing? She could not have carried it over from M., for that damsel was far from being in a merry mood. I told Mrs. P. when we were alone that probably S. M. began the laugh and R. D. continued it. When M. came in the evening, she said, but without anger, "Don't give me any more marshmallows, papo. Ugh! I don't like 'em. They're dirty." She kept insisting that they were made of dirt, and added that R. D. didn't know it. When M. was asleep I asked S. M. how R. D. happened to come laughing. She replied, "I guess I started her. I couldn't help it, M. was so funny. M. was always convinced that marshmallows were made of dirt." At exactly 10 R. D. arrived and slept splendidly. *Nov. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Nov. 17. Sunday.* Fearing that M. would come this morning on account of having done so yesterday,—and S. M. had warned me that she would tend to do so—and desiring to avoid this and to set up in R. D. a strong habit of maintaining herself in the morning, I woke the latter earlier than usual. She staid all day, until 9 p. m., and came for a good night's sleep at 10.20. *Nov. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Nov. 18.* A noise outside startled her at 7.25 a. m., and M. came. Sometimes, in the evening, if Mrs. P. has gone to bed M. will cry in a terrific voice, "Mother! are you 'peepin'?" [sleeping]. If Mrs. P. says yes, sometimes M. believes it, sometimes not, depending, I think, on whether Mrs. P. remains otherwise silent or not. R. D. came at 10.55 p. m. for good sleep. *Nov. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Nov. 19.* I woke R. D. and she remained until 9.35 p. m. The electric light sometimes flickers badly, sometimes goes out for a few moments. Often M. does not notice it, though it is annoyingly noticeable to a person with normal vision, and sometimes she knows that something has happened, but seems to have no idea what. "What is that?", she cries. "Something hap-



pened. (What happened?) Asa no." At 10.35 R. D. was here and slept well. *Nov. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Nov. 20.* R. D. was awakened at 8, the customary hour, and staid until 6 p. m. In the afternoon R. D. and I were left alone, and were sitting on the piazza. S. M. had not said anything for some time about the plan of going away while R. D. is out, and I had arranged with her no signal by which to signify that I would like for her to do it. It occurred to me that I would see if it would be possible to convey to her a hint, so, after gazing vacantly as if lost in thought, I said, "Why not now?" R. D. looked up and said, "What? (What?) You said 'Why not now?' (I was thinking aloud. It is nothing)." She showed no curiosity, and returned to her reading of a book on poultry, and I read also, but with my book at such an angle that I could glance at her unperceived. Very soon her face became clouded, her lips pursed as they do when she is perturbed, and the forehead elevated anxiously. She frequently looked up from her book and spoke to me, then returned to her reading, making an evident attempt to concentrate her mind upon it, her lips moving with the effort. After some 20 minutes she said that it was time to feed the hens. I said that I would go out with her, and she seemed to be pleased. Watching the hens took up her attention, and yet it was plainly to be seen that she was not fully at ease. Then I had to leave to see a caller. When M. came in the evening she asked, "What made the D. feel queer today? (Did she feel queer?) A'-ah. (When was it?) Asa no. It was some time today. (Was it when that man came?) Yes"—spoken with relief, "*that's* when it was, before he came she felt so queer. And when he came she didn't feel queer any more." When S. M. could speak I asked, "(What made the R. D. feel queer today?) I went away. (What made you?) What you said. I knew that was what you meant. But I don't think I will do that again. It makes her feel too badly. (How does she feel?) As though something had left, as though there were an empty place. (What made you come back when you did?) Your leaving her. (But how could you know, when you were away, that I had left her?) I don't know. But I can. Don't you know how I come back, when M. moves? (I am sorry



I was not there when you came back. I would like to see that once. Would it be any harm to do it once more for a few minutes?) O no, it won't *harm* her; it only makes her feel uncomfortable. I can do that."

S. M. also commented on the peculiarities of R. D.'s sleep, of late. "You know that I have told you that the R. D. is in a state part of the night that I don't understand, when she seems to be asleep and awake too. Well, last night I took particular notice. More than half the night she was in that state. She would be dreaming, and at the same time listening to all the sounds outside. At about 12 o'clock there was a noise from the chickens, and she listened to that, and there were other noises afterwards and she listened and thought about what they were, yet at the same time she was dreaming. At about 5 o'clock she sank into a deep slumber and didn't listen any more. I don't understand it. What do you suppose it means? (How long has she been doing that?) About three weeks, I should think. (But all the time she has been getting better?) Most of the time, certainly. (I don't understand it exactly, yet it must be a part of the process. Perhaps she has gained so rapidly in some ways that it has made a sort of ferment in another way, like the period when she was likewise improving, yet dreamed underneath when M. or S. D. was out.) Perhaps that is it." At 11.15 R. D. came and slept well. *Nov. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Nov. 21.* Wakened as usual, R. D. rose, but something worried me during breakfast and she saw it and M. came at 8.50. M. berated me for my looks so comically that I got in cheerful humor directly. It is mysterious how M. can tell, beyond the limits of her vision, the character of my expression. She could not in an earlier stage of the shortening of her sight, but now, the instant I change my expression she knows it, and comments upon it. I tried changing my expression and at the same time holding my breath, but this made no difference,—she correctly characterized my looks. Yet when I asked her to tell what I was doing, and made gestures which would certainly have irritated her had she known what they were, being however careful that they were executed so lightly as not to set in motion a cur-



rent of air, to which she is keenly sensitive and which she interprets with marvelous accuracy, she was baffled. She would say at a venture, "You are winkin' at mother", which I was not doing, but she remembered having caught me doing that in times past. Once I held my hand before my face and she nevertheless correctly said that I was smiling; but this may have been a lucky guess. When it is her lot to come to the table, one of her first questions is, "What have you got to eat?" Sometimes she finds out by indirect process, asking, "What are you eating, papo?", and when I reply, proceeding, "What else are you eating papo?" until I have named something that she wants, or all that is on the table. She will call for the butter when it is within eight inches of her plate. If she drops a crumb she cries "O, I have lost it!" and gropes for it anxiously.

Today, to my astonishment, R. D. inquired, "Papa, how many phases have I? Is there any besides the A Phase?" (What in the world makes you ask such a question?) O, I got to thinking. I am getting better and I would like to know. I thought there might be more than one. (You did have another phase, you know.) Yes. (If you could watch yourself all the time now, you would see only Phase A. Phase A is here all the time that you forget. That is the truth.)" And it is the truth, though not all the truth, but the whole truth is not best for her to know as yet.

S. M. remarks that at times she can see outside of M.'s angle of vision. R. D. arrived for the night at 10.20, but the bursting of an automobile tire outside brought M. at 10.45 for about 5 minutes. M. advised leaving her door open tonight, so that she would not be afraid of more noises, but the result was that snoring made her sleep uneasy, and some sound, possibly my yawning, brought M. at 6.30 a. m. *Nov. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 57 m.; M., 2 h. 8 m.*

*Nov. 22.* S. M. said, "If after M. goes entirely away, the R. D. doesn't feel well because I am gone—for I shall go when M. does—I shall probably come back. (You could come back?) Yes. (If you had been gone six months, you could come back at will?) Why, certainly! (Why did you come in the first place? Because M. was here?) I came before M. did. (Did you know



that M. was going to come?) Y-e-s. (Did you come for that reason?) Y-e-s. (And you can come back if there is a good reason?) Y-e-s, I could come back." By this time S. M.'s facial expression and her tones indicated embarrassment, and she seemed to be conscious of that also, for she managed to avert her face. I made no comment.

In the afternoon, as R. D. and I were on the piazza alone, and she was reading a paper, I uttered an *ahem!* forcibly but not unnaturally, and pretending to be engrossed in the beauty of the hills, which were cloaked in hues of blue and purple, was able to watch her face. For perhaps a couple of minutes I could see no change. But gradually there came the alteration described in the record of Nov. 6th, only less pronounced. Presently I asked, "Aren't you feeling well?" She replied with a nervous laugh, "No, I feel so queer. It came on a few minutes ago. I was the same way on Wednesday. I wonder what makes it! I never felt that way before. (Describe the feeling.) It is hard to describe—I'm very nervous,—as though I wanted to bite my lips and twist my fingers—as though some support was taken away from me, somehow." I told her that I did not believe that she would feel that way often, that the annoyances which came to her seldom lasted long. Just then her face *melted*, and she said, with a bright smile, "It is gone. I feel all right now." Afterwards S. M. told me that she had understood my "*ahem!*" to be a signal, and had acted accordingly. R. D. went at 5.30, because, says S. M., "my leaving made her nervous." I reminded S. M. that while we were in Massachusetts last year and I would be walking alone with R. D., she, S. M., according to her own statement, had gone away two or three times. She answered, "Did I? I don't seem to remember. I probably left her only for a very short time then. Did you notice that she did not show nervousness at once on Wednesday or today but only after a few minutes?" This is true.

While M. was asleep, Mrs. P. remarked that she had today given someone a lesson in the prayer-book. This attracted the attention of M., just as she was on the point of waking, and she cried, "What did you—charge?" When she uttered the last word she was awake, and it was spoken in a tone markedly



different, low and hesitating. The suspicion that she did not remember what she heard while asleep a moment before was confirmed when, on Mrs. P. asking, "Charge for what?", M. turned to me and whispered, "What was it, papo?" I softly told her and she turned to Mrs. P. and went on loudly, "What did you charge for giving a lesson in the prayer-book?" Also, while asleep she held a little pamphlet in her hands, but presently held it out to me, ejaculating, "Keep that till I wake up." This made S. M. laugh, and astonished her likewise. She said, "Well, that beats all I ever heard *her* say!" But when M. woke she did not know that I had or was supposed to have the pamphlet, since she asked me where it was. With some misgivings I took Mrs. P. and R. D. to the theater in the evening. At 11.15 R. D. came for the night, but did not sleep well. *Nov. 21-22: 7 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Nov. 23.* R. D. wakened according to custom, staid until 5.27, and was here again 5.37-9.30, but felt "dumpy" and "nervous." S. M. said that being out so late last night was the cause. R. D. came at 11.15 again, and slept better. *Nov. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Nov. 24. Sunday.* R. D., roused by noise from her henyard, rose at 7. She proved unstable today, and once was sent away by sensitiveness to a well-meant remark. She is on the eve of the period, which probably accounts for the instability, though M. said that R. D. was "tired from being nervous yesterday." She came at 10.15, and slept well. *Nov. 23-24: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Nov. 25.* I woke R. D., and she staid until 5.45 p. m. Menstruation has begun, S. M. informs me. Her final appearance was at 10.30, and she had a good night. *Nov. 24-25: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Nov. 26.* I woke R. D. and she began to tell me that I had interrupted a dream, but in the middle of a sentence M. came with an outburst of laughter and was asleep instantly. It is probable that R. D. had not had sleep enough. It is hard to tell just when to wake her; if I delay too long M. is liable to come. When R. D. returned she asked, "Did I forget?"

When M. came in the evening I found her feet as cold as ice,



and found it almost impossible to warm them by chafing. I remarked that I wished that R. D. would not sit in a room without a fire. R. D. came at 10.30 and slept fairly well, but dreamed that a lady caller rubbed her feet, that she enjoyed it, and that the henhouse was on fire. She related the dream the next morning with amusement, never suspecting that there were three elements of the dream which bubbled up from the experience and thoughts of M. in the evening. *Nov. 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Nov. 27.* I woke R. D. and she staid. S. M. remarks, "How funny R. D. looks when she is trying to wake; she makes such faces", just as if she could see her. The period had been without pain, but she had a little headache yesterday. R. D. came at 10.35, and slept well. *Nov. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Nov. 28.* R. D., wakened in the morning, staid until late in the afternoon again. M. said, "That R. D. eats like a hog", which is not true. I carelessly returned, "Yes, she is quite a hog", and M. almost had a spasm before I could explain that I was only agreeing with her. She gave me to understand that I was not to say such things even if she did, which is like some other people. I talked with S. M. about her (S. M.'s) old statement that she did not like people. She asserted that she had not changed in this respect. "I see their faults too well, I guess", she said, nonchalantly. "(Do you like R. D.?) Yes", she answered calmly. "(Hasn't she faults?) I suppose so, but her motives are always right. I suppose that since I am on the inside I can see the reasons for things and make allowances. Perhaps if I could see others from the inside I would do the same." She reported that R. D. had more abdominal swelling than ever. "I do not understand it. It troubles her. There was a time that it went down some, but it is worse than ever." R. D. came at 9.35 and slept well. *Nov. 27-28: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 33 m.; M., 2 h. 27 m.*

*Nov. 29.* Wakened as usual, R. D. staid until 5.15 p. m. As I had to go to a banquet in the evening, I wished for M. to come so that R. D. could rest, and stay longer in the evening. So I said, "Suppose you lie down", pointing to the lounge. She



demurred, but almost instantly M. was there, and soon asked, "What am I here for? (Don't you often come about this time?)" She knew nothing about the time, but asserted, "Yes, but this time I was pulled out." She had no idea how, but S. M. later said that R. D. understood my intimation. Often when M. comes in the afternoon she thinks it is bedtime. Sometimes she asks, "Have we had dinner yet?" and when answered affirmatively continues, "Have we had breket?"

R. D. had to "hold on hard", as she afterwards said, to stay until my return at 11.30 p. m. M. now declared that R. D. had some "plocolate pleams" in her drawer, and demanded a couple, affirming that it was only fair that she should have some, as R. D. had eaten *her* candy. I promised M. that I would get *her* some candy the next day, and she said, earnestly, "Be sure and hide it, *papo*." S. M. was amused at M.'s pronunciation of "chocolate creams", and could not remember that this was a childhood pronunciation. Neither could she be sure that it was not, and I have little doubt it was. R. D. came at 12.50 p. m. *Nov. 28-29: 4 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Nov. 30.* R. D. wakened at 8.30, staid until 1.05 p. m. S. M. said that she was tired from the strain of last night, and a very short day showed it.

**M., Retracing the Path of her Development, Reaches her Sixth Year.** A curious change in M.'s speech began to come about a week ago, and I carefully refrained from making any remark about it until this evening, when I was sure of it. M. is beginning to show a German accent. This evening she repeatedly said "*vell*" for *well*, "*vot*" for *what* and "*babo*" for *papo*. I now mentioned it to S. M., who had not noticed it. She told me that M. when about six picked up some German from hearing talk in that language, and that up to the time of going to school she had German tricks in her pronunciation of English. The teachers corrected it. She began to go to school just after her seventh birthday, so, if my theory is correct, she is still growing younger, slowly retracing the path of her development, and has reached the close of her sixth year. Of course I do not mean that she is in all respects the same as when she was six years old, for her limitations of æsthesia, tactile, gustatory,



visual, etc., make her psychically *less* than she was at six, but in her modes of thought and manner of speech she seems to be retrograding and to have arrived at her sixth year. R. D. came at 9.45 p. m., and slept very soundly. Nov. 29-30: 6 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h. Average daily record of R. D. during November, 1912, 21 h. 54 m.

Dec. 1. Sunday. I woke R. D. at 7.30, as M. had advised the night before, but she snuggled her head into the pillows in the manner of a chicken working its way into its mother's feathers, and I let her sleep longer. This curious movement was begun by M. a few weeks ago, and that seems to have started it in R. D. in a milder degree. Of course R. D. is unconscious that she does it. Later she woke and rose. In the afternoon M. told me that R. D. had been searching for her (M.'s) "pleams. (How did she know you had any?) Asa no." Soon after R. D. returned she asked me "Did you buy some creams? (Yes, how did you know?) I don't know. The feeling came to me that you did. May I have one? (I am afraid not. They don't belong to you.) I should think I might", she said, smiling, "she took two of my chocolate creams. I will exchange one with her." But she said nothing more. When M. came a few hours later, she evidently approved of my course, for she said, "I don't want that D. to have any of my pleams; I don't want to exchange. I don't like her plocolate pleams. (Her what?)" The question directed M.'s attention to her pronunciation, for she made several attempts getting it as near right as "chocolate pleams", then gave it up, saying, "You don't care how your baby says it, do you? (No indeed. It is all right.) Yes."

In the evening it occurred to me that I was acquainted with R. D.'s religious views, and with M.'s pagan indifference to anything relating to religion, but had never heard S. M. express any opinions relating to religious matters, though she approves of R. D. attending services when her health permits. So I mentioned the antithesis between R. D. and M. in this regard, and asked "(And which do you agree with?) I don't agree with either. (Why, what are your views on religion?) I guess I haven't any. (What, none?) None that I care to talk about."



Again I brought the matter up when Mrs. P. was not present. "(Now tell me how you disagree with R. D.'s religious views.) I don't care to. (Do you agree with mine?) No. (Don't you believe there is a heaven?) I don't want to talk about it. (Or God?) O, I don't wish to talk about it." After conversing on another topic I asked, "(Do you think it likely that Dr. Hyslop is receiving communications from the spirit of his father?) I don't see why not. (O, you do have some views about *that*!)" Her face took on an expression as though she felt herself trapped, and she laughed a little uneasily, I thought. Then S. M. told how R. D. would pet and doctor a sick hen that is dirty and rather repulsive, and added "I wouldn't want to handle her. It would make me sick. (*You* handle her? How would you do it?) I mean if I were a person." I made a remark about R. D. appearing young for her years, and S. M. said, "I think she does and says a good many things that appear very young, don't you? (Well, we must remember that she has lost a number of her years, nearly five at one stretch.)" Here Mrs. P. said, "But she got back a great deal of that from S. D." Here S. M. uttered one of her remarks which show profound and intimate insight, an insight which she explains as simply "seeing from the inside." She said, "Yes, but she didn't get that back as experience which would develop her. What she got from S. D. was only as if someone had told her what had happened during the five years, that is all." At 10.10 R. D. came, and slept well. Nov. 30-Dec. 1: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.

Dec. 2. Nothing special to record. Dec. 1-2: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h.

Dec. 3. The regular formula of waking R. D. in the morning, carried her along until 4.45. In the afternoon R. D. attempted to open the door of the room in which I was, and for some reason it did not open. I did not hear her. When M. next came she began to say, "B-a-ad papo!", and I found that R. D. had had the impression that I locked the door. Even after I told M. that I had not she said, "Well, you might as well have. The D. felt bad just the same, didn't she?" Somehow I was still to blame. R. D. had supposed herself locked out, and her repressed feeling of injury uncorked itself, so to speak, in M. R.



D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Dec. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Dec. 4.* R. D. staid to 5.30 p. m., and again 6-8.30. M. called for a cloth to wipe the stains of dates on, and Mrs. P. tossed her a napkin. It fell across her chin, and she was much frightened. "Something came and hit me", she sobbed repeatedly, then slept murmuring the same phrase. When she woke she would not accept the explanation, but insisted, "No, something fell from the roof. No, papo, you are mistaken. It was a picture that fell from the roof." R. D. came at 10.25 p. m. *Dec. 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Dec. 5.* M. came at breakfast, owing to sensitiveness in R. D. Coming again in the afternoon, M. asked if she might tell the mother what R. D. got her for a Christmas present. I tried to dissuade her, but she burst out, "It is a coffee-percolator. It cost four dollars. And she bought you some slippers. [593] They cost two dollars." We could not help laughing and M. laughed with us, but S. M. says that she is serious enough until we start her off. "And what do you suppose she got me? A nice paper baby-doll. It cost ten cents. Wasn't that nice? She thinks I don't know it. She thunk, 'I won't think about it, and she won't know it.' And she thunk *that*, and I got it. She was stung." When she slept S. M. said, "Isn't she a rascal? But the D. didn't buy the doll. She only looked at it and thought that she might buy it. She did think what M. said, and M. got that and didn't stop to see the rest of the thought, so she got the idea that the doll was bought. (Will R. D. buy it?) I don't know. It will be a joke on M. if she doesn't." M. says that she wants no presents from Mrs. P. or me, not even a Christmas plate. R. D. came for sleep at 11 p. m. *Dec. 4-5: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m.*

*Dec. 6.* M. came this morning because R. D. delayed rising, dreading the cold. Often M. starts the merry game of her asking and my refusing a cheese sandwich. Though she expects the NO, if I say it too loudly she is a little frightened, though she

---

593. She at first pronounced this "pipers", but Mrs. P. laughed, this attracted her attention, and she pronounced the word correctly, but with evident difficulty.



enjoys it. When she was asleep, Mrs. P. jokingly stamped her foot and said NO to a flickering electric light, and M. ejaculated, "The mother thinks I asked for cheese." S. M. remarked, "She heard her stamp, and noticed her tone, but did not hear what she said." R. D. came at 11.10 p. m. *Dec. 5-6: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.*

*Dec. 7.* R. D. wakened as usual, staid until 3.40 p. m., and then from 4.15 to 7, coming for the night at 9.50. *Dec. 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m.*

*Dec. 8. Sunday.* R. D. staid until 2.30.

This afternoon I considered four points. (1) That the automatic writing (presented in Chapter XII) had made declarations concerning S. M. which she had denied, as it had said she would do, which, while liable to the suspicion that S. M. is carrying out a dramatic game, would equally follow if the automatic writing is authentic. (2) That S. M. has always been to me the mysterious one, that is, the one who has not seemed to fall in with the category of the personalities consistently with the supposed principles of "personalities", to say nothing of her invariable claim, if we are to give credit to it, that she came with mature faculties when R. D. was three years old. (3) That, though I have never been able to move S. M., so far as I could discover, one inch in any direction by "suggestion", yet I have known her to conceal her opinions and facts out of deference to my feelings and views, so that it becomes possible that, owing to the fact that I have for more than a year pooh-poohed at the suggestion of Dr. Hyslop that it might be well to watch and see if there was not evidence for spirit intrusion into the phenomena, she might be concealing something in regard to her identity. (4) That repeatedly, as recorded, S. M. has appeared curiously embarrassed and evasive when I have tried to clear up the anomalies and inconsistencies of her case.

It struck me that every hypothesis in a perplexed issue should be fairly tested, and that it is as unscientific for me to maintain an openly hostile attitude towards a particular hypothesis [594]

---

594. This does not mean that I had discoursed on the subject to S. M., but that she had heard me demur to Dr. Hyslop, Mr. "Smead", and others, and utter sundry jests and innuendoes.



and thus perhaps intimidate S. M. to concealment, as it would be to actively advocate that hypothesis and possibly move her to avowals agreeable to my supposed views. Then, too, with a view to getting the psychological facts of the case, I, as the person most *en rapport* with it, should be so far as possible a neutral factor; I should be an inquirer and experimenter solely. Generally, this is the attitude that I have sought to preserve. But I recognize that this has not been so in reference to the hypothesis to which I refer, to an extent that might well have intimidated S. M. to concealment, supposing that there is something counter to my prejudices which she knows regarding herself. So, while proposing to continue mentally as critical as hitherto, I conceived it my duty to reduce myself more nearly to a neutral factor in the investigation of S.M. I cannot take space to state the casual approaches to the questions which follow, which sound abrupt and more suggestive than they really were. I asked S. M., "(Is there anything regarding yourself which you have not told me?)" Again came that indescribable something in her manner which I have noted when she was brought face to face with the anomaly of her coming in infancy with mature mind, when she denied the statements of the automatic writing regarding her, and even when on one occasion, last year, she denied having "jolted" M. In tones of a *muffled* quality she replied, after a slight hesitation, "Not that I know of. Why? (Then you acknowledge that your story that you came with the mind of a mature person is an illusion?) What do you mean? (I mean that you may have an illusion of memory, project your later thoughts back to the time when you first came.)" With some stress she said, "*I did not.* (If your memories reached back of the time you came I could understand your having a mature mind when you came, or if you came with an infant mind I could understand that, but I do not understand your coming into existence when D. was three years old with a mature mind.) I don't see why not." But I am confident from her tone, that she was not oblivious of the reasons "why not." "(Are you sure that you understood the reason why Mr. Fischer dashed the baby on the floor, at the moment that it was done?)" I certainly *did*. (Can you explain how you could have come



from baby D. by a shock, and have a mature mind; how a part of a baby, so to speak, could be grown up?) Well, M. was brighter than R. D. (But was she mature,—did she think as a grown person thinks?) No. (And you did?) Yes." Then I meditatively murmured, to take S. M. off her guard, if she was on it, " (I wonder how there happened to come *two* of you.) I came to take care of D. (You came *in order* to take care of D?) " Her answer was faint, "yes." I do not think that anything else was said on the subject, and I passed to another as lightly as possible. But in the evening, without my recurring to the topic, S. M. said, "Before M. goes I will tell you about myself, and what I remember before I came. And I will write for you. [595] I don't want to talk about it now. (Don't wait too long before you do so; M. may go before you do it.) There is no danger of that. I will know long enough before she goes. (Very well, the sooner the better.) " I said no more. R. D. came at 10.45 p. m. *Dec. 7-8: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h.*

*Dec. 9.* Attempts to waken R. D. this morning by speaking to her were unsuccessful, nor did she make any movement whatever. I went out, softly closing the door, but was recalled by M.'s voice. Presently S. M. said, "I was to blame for M.'s coming. I had gone away. I didn't know it was so near morning. (How long had you been gone?) About an hour, I think. (What brought you back?) The closing of the door, probably. (The closing of the door automatically brought you back, I see.) No, I came because I wanted to. (Then you couldn't have been very far away.) I guess not." R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Dec. 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 10.* R. D. continued until a picnic trip was over, at 5.15 p. m. In the evening Mrs. P. gently lifted the foot of the couch on which M. was lying and moved it forward about a foot, to get at a drawer behind. M. cried out in alarm, "O, I'm fallin'! I'm

---

595. I had charged her with being the real source of the automatic writing when M. was the apparent agent, though I did not really believe that she was, since it was contrary to all precedent that she should be able to employ the muscles of the hands when M. was out and awake. What she now means is that she will be the intermediary through whom "automatic" writing will come or that she will be the actual communicator,



fallin'! The bed's breaking down!", and clutched at me, her eyes staring. The exclamations continued, and as it is of no use to attempt to explain at the moment, I said, "Sleep! sleep!", and, her cries subsiding, her head seeming to endeavor to bury itself in my shoulder, she fell asleep. Several time during her sleep she broke out, "It's fallin' all down!", and when she woke she still cried, "It's fallin' all down, papo; it's fallin' all down." As she was preparing for bed in her room I could hear through the door the exclamation going on without intermission, in the same excited tones. It continued until she was asleep, resumed when she woke, and though I got her to talking about something else, two or three times she switched off on the same monotonous sentence, without seeming to know what she was saying. At 11.10 R. D. came, and slept well. *Dec. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Dec. 11.* R. D. remained in the morning, and in the afternoon was to go on an errand to Colton for me, intending to walk back and gather wild flowers for pressing. But I went away and forgot to give her a key that she needed. Then a lady invited her to go to a picture-show, and against her better judgment she went, and got very nervous on account of noisy children around her. After her return M. came, and instantly turned an accusing eye on me and began to say, "B-a-ad papo! She got awful nervous, and it's all your fault, it's all your fault, forgettin' and goin' off with the key." The process by which M. comes to blame me in such cases is well illustrated by this. (1) R. D. has joyful anticipations of the trip. (2) I forget to give her the key. Consequently (a) disappointment, and, later while in the theater (b) thoughts that if I had not forgotten the key she would not be getting nervous from the noise. (3) M. comes, and as R. D. is going down sees the disappointment *a*, and the occasion for it *b*, and from her sympathy with R. D.'s feelings, reacts, childlike, against the cause of it. She was not angry, as she would have been a year ago, but only reproachful.

R. D. "held on" after her return until a party had left the house, and in consequence of the double strain did not come for the night until 12.05. Her sleep was broken. *Dec. 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 50 m.*



*Dec. 12.* R. D. staid in the morning, though she slept awhile after wakened. Being wakened somehow seems to enable her to sleep again and maintain herself. She took the Colton trip today.

In the evening the electric light went out, but only for a moment; yet M. was confounded, and with eyes fast shut kept exclaiming "O I can't see any more! I can't see." I told her to open her eyes, but she declared that they were open. I could not get them open, and put her to sleep. S. M. said, "She would not have noticed it if she had not been reading." When M. woke the exclamation began again, when she showed amusing astonishment, and changed it to "I couldn't see, papo." Then she went to reading without further excitement. Once later, she said something, and I think it was the tone which she happened to use, which made her slip off into "It's all fallin' down", but I diverted her attention and the cricket-chirp ceased. R. D. came at 10.50 and slept fairly well. *Dec. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 40 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 13.* I woke her at 8.10 and she staid until 5.50 p. m. She came for the night at 10.20 and slept well. *Dec. 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Dec. 14.* R. D. staid until 3.25, being worried at that time by a little matter.

I remarked to S. M. that I hoped she would not delay the fulfillment of her promise unduly, and would give me time to ask questions. "You will be able to ask all the questions you want. (But suppose that M. should go before you expect it.) Never fear, I shall know that she is going long enough beforehand. (Will there be anything evidential about it?) The evidence will be in the writing itself. It will not be I that is saying it." S. M. then spontaneously referred to a past claim of M. "You remember what M. used to claim—that she could go in and touch you. That was true, that it could have been done. (What, and leave D.'s body behind?) Yes, only it would have been me. I wouldn't do it. (Why?) Because I wouldn't trust you fully then. That is, I knew you meant well to D., but I was afraid that if anything of that kind happened you would get so interested in experiments that you would hurt her without meaning to.



(How could M. think it was herself?) Things of that kind which had been done flashed up in her mind just as some things M. did flashed up in S. D.'s. (Why didn't you do it after you got to trust me fully?) Because M. was too much gone. (Then you were dependent on M.) I depended on her much as R. D. depends on her clothes, which are not a part of her. (In what way were you dependent on M.?) For force. (Couldn't you get force from R. D. to do such things?) I don't know; I never tried. (Did M. go away and see things at a distance?) That was really I. I got into the wrong house when I tried to go to the X.'s though." [596] S. M. also said that it was less exhausting to R. D. for her to go away as she claimed to have done in search of the X.'s house than it would have been to have left R. D. and come up to my room and touch me, because, during the clairvoyant trips, though she did not use that term, I was in the room with M., holding her hand. I well remember that at such times M. kept a firm grip upon my hand. S. M. says that she drew force from me.

Mrs. P. stood on a chair to wind the clock, and M. said, "Don't fall down", and instantly her face put on an expression as of hypnosis, and the automatism "It's all broken down, papo; it's all fallin' down", began and kept up until her attention was diverted. Then she tried to reckon how many days would elapse before R. D. did a certain thing. "Sunday,—that's one day, Monday is two, Tuesday is—what is it papo? (Three) Wednesday—er—what is it? (Four.) Thursday—what comes next, papo?" I evaded and she said impatiently, "Papo, what is it? (Five.)" And so on.

S. M. says that R. D. stopped dreaming and thinking at the same time about a week ago. "When she is asleep and dreaming she pays no attention to sounds." R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. Dec. 13-14: 6 alt.: 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 45 m.

Dec. 15. Sunday. R. D. awakened as usual, first went at 2.10 p. m. While M. was asleep and waving her arms as she sometimes does, her fingers happened to brush my lips. She laughed and repeated the two or three words which I had spoken



to S. M. at that instant. I tried to bring her hand to my lips for experimentation, but she always pulled it away. I contrived to duck my head so that my moving lips brushed her fingers for an instant, as I was saying, "Then she still hears with her fingers." "Hear fingers", she said, and laughed, "Ha, ha! Hear fingers. Hear with fingers, Ha, ha!" At 10.30 R. D. was here for the night. *Dec. 14-15: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 3 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 16.* I woke her at 7.30, and we took the car for Patton, went up a canon, climbed high on the mountain, and returned home, after a trip of about 8 hours which she greatly enjoyed.

M. happened to use the word "down", and instantly the automatism, "It's all fallin' down" reappeared. I quickly got her interested in some object, and it ceased.

Since M. wrote on her own motion, some time ago, the first sheet of her "will", I have several times suggested that she finish it, but in each case she demurred, saying that she was too tired. But tonight she spontaneously announced that she was ready to do so. First she gave attention to the drawer in which her possessions were, saying in a business-like way, "I must sort them first." This done, she wrote rapidly, in her immense chirography. She earnestly asked if I thought that Dr. Walker would like the funny book she bequeathed to him, and if Dr. Brashear would like his ribbon. She left her letters from Drs. Walker, Hyslop and Brashear to me, and asked if I would always keep them. In the course of half an hour she finished the task, [597] including the wrapping of the wooden plates which she had purchased as presents to Dr. Brashear and Dr. Walker, with notes to accompany them, then sat down, and instantly

---

597. The original of the will covered four and a half large pages of letter-paper, and besides, there were codicils, dictated when she was past writing. The wording of both sections is here given:

*"Last will of Margaret (the imp) phase of Doris Prince.*

Picture with the girl and dog to Papo (1) Orange to papo Flag to Doris  
Picture of Boys for Papo to keep Picture of girl to keep Christmas pictures  
(2) to papo to keep (3) Picture of Church to papo 6 hanchits (4) I leave  
to Doris, I mean 7, the beautiful red ribbon I leave to Dr. Brashear, the  
beautiful waste to mother because Doris don't want it silk braid and medal-  
lion go to doris Devotion book to Doris, Book of Papo writing goes to  
Doris Painted velvet by Doris go to mother cherries made by sick Doris  
goes to papo. All my letter go to papo All in Envelope 6 goes to Doris



toppled over, asleep. In her sleep she ejaculated at intervals, "I'm awful tired, papo", "I'm glad that's all fixed", etc. Her air of relief that it was all over, her appearance of helpless weariness, were really touching. After some time she woke and said, "Don't ask me to write any more papo, it tires me too much. I don't *ever want* to write again." The other evening M. lay asleep in such a position that her arm probably became numb. She woke and said, as nearly as I could make it out, "Prtharomyarm." When after many repetitions I made out that she was trying to say, "Pretty hard on my arm", and released the arm from its confined position—she did not seem to be conscious that she could do it herself—she laughed and

Jim Hyslops's present and Beads go to Doris Fairy and Visitors (5) goes to Dr. Walker (the greaser) Blue round book goes to Jim (6) spoon goes to mother because it is hers little candle stick goes to Doris All in Envelope 5 goes to papo.

Yours in

Spirit

MARGARET (the imp).

Amendment (7) (after thinking that Dr. Jim did not get enough I leave him the Kaufmann's Sunday School greeting (8)).

Codicil to will, dictated Jan. 3, 1913.

"The duck goes to papo, the dolls go to papo, and the fan-Japanese goes to papo, and the Christmas tree to mother. These are all to be held in trust till you find somebody that's got a Margaret. I want the box for ring kept in the drawer for a Margaret, and the perfoony bottle, watch in black case I want kept in there. Apron goes to Doris. I want the red leg (9) kept in drawer. I want the vase given to mother. I want the marble given to Dr. Brashear. I want the egg given to Dr. Wacker [sic]. Want package from Dr. Wacker kept with dolls for papo. Doris can have the roll of ribbon, but she can't get the box of shells for the mother gets that, and I want the box of sand kept in the drawer, and the doll's dress I want kept in the drawer. If you don't find a Margaret, you can keep them."

Codicil added Dec. 27, 1913: "Baby-doll" to be added to what goes to 'Dr. Wacker.'

Still later M. directed that another little doll was to be given to Dr. Brashear.

(1) The Christ child and a lamb. (2) M. asked what to call the pictures, and the term "Christmas pictures" was suggested. (3) "To keep" may mean to preserve for "a Margaret", i. e., for a secondary personality, if I ever should find a dissociated person, as indicated in the codicil. (4) Handkerchiefs. (5) A book of fairy tales. (6) A booklet advertising sewing-machines. (7) If I remember rightly she asked me what she should call the addition to the will. (8) A book given by a department store to Sunday school pupils. (9) A pin-cushion in the shape of a leg and foot.



crowed with pleasure. The next night she uttered the elided sentence again, and was gratified when I understood it at once. S. M. said, "You have re-established yourself in her confidence. She was beginning to think that you didn't know so much as she had supposed." Tonight she used the expression, meaning that the arm was tired by writing. S. M. says, "Dr. Brashear and Dr. Walker ought to value those notes, for they are the last they will ever receive." At 9.45 R. D. came and slept splendidly. *Dec. 15-16: 2 alt.; R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Dec. 17.* M. was brought this morning by my sneezing. She showed further evidence of declension in understanding, repeatedly using words which she was formerly familiar with and then inquiring wonderingly what they meant. "I am rolled up like an Esquimaux—what's Esquimaux? .. Is it the same as nigger?—what's nigger? (Black people.) Black people? What, they dirty? (No, they are black, like some hens.) No. (Don't you know that D. has a black hen?) No, iridescent." R. D. frequently speaks of the iridescence of the feathers of her black hen. (But it is black, you know?) No. It's feathers are black, but it's skin isn't. (Well, perhaps niggers have black feathers.) No, you are mistaken, papo. People don't have feathers." She asked, "Who is my grandmother? The R. D. sent something to grandmother. (I guess she means Aunt-Louise-Grandma.) But she sent something to Aunt Louise, too. (Perhaps she means Aunt-Louise-Grandma by that too. (But she thinks they are different. She must be twisted. Is Aunt-Louise-Grandma *two* people? Has she got a Margaret?" To see what S. M. would say, I remarked that R. D.'s walk did not do her good, since she went early last night and M. came this morning. S. M. was disgusted. "Don't you understand that her going is no indication? If she went fifty times it wouldn't be. And it was your sneezing that brought M. this morning. The mountain was not to blame for that." R. D. came at 10.45 and slept well. *Dec. 16-17: 6 alt.; R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 50 m.*

*Dec. 18.* Wakened as usual she staid all day. She wakes with less effort and facial contortion lately.

R. D. changed the position of her bed from the side to the middle of the room, and I did not mention it to M., supposing



that she would see it from R. D.'s mind. At night I took M. to her room, and seeing that she was about to run into the corner of the bed, drew her aside. She went to the place where the bed had formerly been, and broke into loud lamentations. "Our bed is gone! Bed's all gone! I haven't any bed!" I kept telling her where it was, but her attention was too fixedly engaged for her to give heed. I drew her to the side of the bed, put her hand on it, and even pushed her face down so that I thought she ought to be able to see it, but twice she went back to search for the bed in the corner, and continued to lament, getting more distressed than ever. I drew her to the bed again, pulled down the covers, and patted the pillows, saying, "Here is the bed. See the pillows", and now she recognized it, and becoming hysterical in her gladness, shook from head to foot, crying, "O here's our bed. O you dear bed!", and clambering in, was asleep in a moment from exhaustion of emotion. Then came the calm voice of S. M., "R. D. mustn't move the bed again until she is well. M. has got so that it excites her too much. It had better be moved back, and you must tell D. to let it stay there. Tomorrow night you might not so easily be able to get M. to understand where the bed is. (You don't think she would remember from tonight?) I don't think so." Later M. said, "The D. mustn't change the bed. Because I might come in when my papo wasn't here, and not find my bed. I might have to come in an emergency—what's 'mergency? (In a hurry.) Yes, I might have to come in a 'mergency—hurry." Then she told how R. D. used to change the positions of beds in other rooms than her own in the old home, and men would come and bump themselves and get mad. These old stories still come up, though less frequently, when some current incident touches the chord. And she will even sometimes mention the names of persons, but if asked who the persons are will look bewildered and reply, "Asa no." She added, "Men are such creatures of habit—papo, what's pweatures of habit?" This also is characteristic, when she automatically parrots an expression that she would formerly use,—often picking it up and using it without understanding of its meaning—she generally employs correct pronunciation, but the moment that she becomes curious and inquires what it means,



her pronunciation becomes that of a small child. Witness "emergency—'mergency", and "creatures—pweatures." S. M. commenting on M.'s pronunciations, such as "peckamis-kit" for *pessimistic*, a word which she heard me use, S. M. said, "M. used when little sometimes tell her mother things that she fancied about people, and when she found that they were incorrect would say, "Mother, I think I thunk a lie."

Under my tuition, and with her pleasurable occupations, such as poultry-culture, botanizing, etc., R. D. is all the while losing her tendency to reverie and excessive imagining, and coming into more constant and healthful contact with the world of reality. Along with this the associated movement, which was almost an index of reverie and the like, the unconscious oscillation of her foot, has almost disappeared. Since the mountain climb she has not needed to take pills for constipation.

Also, since the date of the climb, though that may have had nothing in particular to do with it, M. has seemed indescribably flatter and thinner in her personality, less coherent in her thoughts, more than ever a congeries of automatisms, at the same time that she is more sensitive to the effects of sudden surprises. S. M. also tells me that M. sees less and less of R. D.'s thoughts while the latter is "going down." "Did you notice, she tried to tell what R. D. had for supper, but she didn't get it right? Yes, and though she made a hit in mentioning mackerel, she got the facts twisted when she said that R. D. ate some, for what she did was to prepare it for tomorrow." R. D. came at 10.55 and slept well. *Dec. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 19.* M. came this morning, perhaps from R. D. being wakened too suddenly. In the evening M. was reading and suddenly began to laugh in a peculiar, mechanical fashion, "Ha, ha, ha!" I asked her what the matter was, and she responded, "It was a joke." She was silent a minute, reading, then sang out, in the same tones without mirth in them, "It was anudder joke. Ha, ha, ha!" She read on, and laughed in the same forced manner, and explained in answer to my question, "It was anudder joke." I asked her to read one aloud and she did so. "(What was funny about that?) Asa no", she said seriously. "(What makes you laugh?) Because it is a joke. The R. D. read 'em.



(Did she think they were funny?) Ah-ah." M. feels that the laughing is a ceremony to be gone through. S. M. says, "She does not say things to be funny, and she doesn't understand the jokes she reads."

M. is never outside the house now save on the few occasions when R. D. "forgets" sitting on the piazza. M. at once goes into the house. She spends nearly all *her* time lying either on the lounge in the dining-room or in bed in her own room. R. D. came at 10.40 and slept soundly. *Dec. 18-19: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Dec. 20.* R. D. staid until 4.55 p. m. She returned from shopping and, with an amused expression, showed me a little vase that she had bought for Phase A. When M. came she immediately called for the vase, admired it, and dwelt upon its cost, five cents, as though it had been five dollars. She then read the paper, in her fashion, but could not find the continuation of it on another page, and got me to do it for her. On that page the article was printed in columns which did not reach to the bottom, and M. read down into another article, but it was all the same to her. S. M. says that M. reads the first lines of an article earlier read by R. D., with some comprehension, but after that simply looks at word after word. In the middle of M.'s reading I read something aloud, and she then complained that she had "lost her word", and went back to the beginning of the column and read it over.

The monthly period began, and M. said that R. D. had cramps "and I want some of that bark." After awhile she pointed out the bottle, and said, "That is it; evergreen is what I mean", so I gave her some hot water with essence of wintergreen. S. M. says, "R. D. has no pains. M. told you that in order to get the wintergreen." At 10 p. m. R. D. came. *Dec. 19-20: men. per began; 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Dec. 21.* Today I lent money to a stranger, and R. D. made a remark indicating disapproval, to which I made no reply. Soon after M. came, at once turned on me a baleful eye, and began to berate me in childish terms for my foolishness. She often laughed, but was very serious, nevertheless. She kept this up, except for the small portion of the time when she was asleep,



for more than two hours, and it grew somewhat monotonous, as can be imagined. S. M. assured me that R. D. did not think of the matter so severely, and observed that her feelings of disapproval, at once repressed, came out in exaggerated degree in M. When R. D. returned she did not speak of the matter, but soon her face clouded and a headache began. I learned from S. M. that R. D. began reproaching herself as soon as she had made the remark criticizing me, that the catamenia stopped and M. came, and the headache which began with R. D.'s return stopped at M.'s second coming in a jolly mood, and did not return, though M. was here but 5 minutes. R. D. came for the night at 9.50, and as she fell asleep, instantly as usual, I whispered sentences like, "It is all right, all right; Doris did not do wrong." Her face turned towards me, and a smile wreathed her lips, showing that she was comforted. *Dec. 20-21: 6 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 40 m.; M., 5 h. 10 m.*

*Dec. 22. Sunday.* Wakened at 7.30 R. D. staid only until 9.35 a. m., and was out after that 9.50-12.40 p. m., 1.45-4.15, 4.45-8.45.

M. said in the evening, "I wish you would ask D. to put on her nightie and kimono before I come. It tires me to undress. I am getting *too old* to do the undressing." As M.'s declension is marked at every stage by cessation of former activities, I was glad to hear this, and shall heed the request. M. is still interested in Christmas. Though she had said that she wanted nothing but some candy and chestnuts, when she learned that I had bought her a present she teased in bewitchingly baby fashion until it was shown to her, and went into ecstasies over it. Every day she asks, "When is Cwistmas?" Last night she said disconsolately, "Ev'y time I ask you, you say it is tomorrow, tomorrow, tomorrow. [598] Isn't it *ever* coming? I sink it'll *always* be tomorrow." [599] Told that we might have our Christmas on

---

598. The answer "tomorrow" was not so mendacious as it would appear. As she could not understand such terms as "in a week", "four days", etc., but only "today", "yesterday" and "tomorrow"—if indeed she fully understood them—it was as near as I could contrive to give her the idea that Christmas would come soon.

599. To account for inconsistencies in the quotations from M., I must



Christmas eve, M. was mystified, and said she did not know her—she had never heard of more than one Eve, and she was dead.

S. M. takes considerable interest in the fact that R. D. greatly enjoys her warm bed at night. "She cuddles down and feels so cozy and comfortable. It amuses me to watch her snuggle in the blankets and enjoy herself. I think that perhaps it is because she hardly ever, since she was a baby, slept in a comfortable bed." R. D. came at 10.15 and slept nicely. *Dec. 21-22: 8 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Dec. 23.* M. came at 7.40 a. m. She asked if it was "Cwist-mas", and later in the day asked the same question, not seeming to be aware that it was the same day. For a number of nights M. has not permitted the portable oil stove to be taken into her room to warm it before she goes to bed. "No, no!" she cries, "Will set room on fire; ev'sing burn up." She rushes into the room, hops into bed, and shivers, with teeth chattering. I asked her what made her think that the stove would set the room on fire, and she said that R. D. read it in a paper—that a woman had an oil stove in her room and it exploded and woman and all were burned. This explains M.'s sudden fear.

I brought up the incident of naming the location of Lawrence street, [600] during conversation with S. M., in the most casual way possible, remarking reflectively, "I wonder how M. happened to guess it." The incident had never been referred to since the day after it occurred. S. M. now said, in the low, colorless tones which characterize her remarks on her own nature and her alleged supernormal powers, "I guess it was I that saw it, and she that told it. (That was the case?) Yes. (You distinctly remember it?) Yes. (You will sometime tell me how it was done?) Yes." Later, S. M. remarked substantially, "The R. D. reads every item she finds in the papers of a tragic character,—that involves suffering. It is not good for her. She

---

again remark that only seldom did I attempt in recording them to reproduce her pronunciation, and the best attempts that were made are imperfect, as there were many nuances of pronunciation which could hardly be indicated on paper.

600. See page 1000 seq.



is inclined to be morbid that way, and to dwell on the sufferings and to sympathize with them. And here is a curious thing,—when a particular hurt is described she often feels a pain in the same part of the body. (Does she observe the connection between the pain and what she reads?) No. (Ought I to say something to her about it, by way of warning?) I think it would be well to, not in a way to alarm her. There is nothing to worry about. Still it would be well to say something."

I forgot to speak to R. D. about getting ready for the night herself, and M. made quite a touse about it, asking to be allowed to go to bed with her dress on. R. D. came at 10.15 and had good sleep. *Dec. 22-23: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 30 m.; M., 3 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 24.* M. was here in the morning, the expectation of Christmas very likely accounting for her coming yesterday morning and this.

R. D. asked me if I had the little blank-book in which S. D. kept an account of her gifts to people. "It was such a curious thing. She wrote at the head of each list what she thought of the person. I saw it since I came to live with you." I heard this book described last year, but never saw the book, and it must have been destroyed by M., or possibly by S. D. herself.

R. D. brought in the mail and there was a letter for her from Dr. Walker, and a package addressed to "Miss Margaret Prince." She read the letter, and then her thinking about the package probably sent her away, for M. came out in great delight. The package contained a number of small articles, whistles marbles, etc., enclosed in a netting cover. M. did not take them out, but rejoiced over them, and, since I was not present, wished that I should be 'phoned for. When I was seen coming M. returned and was in a state of high jubilation when I entered. When she came in the evening another spell of delight sent her to sleep.

**Changes in M. during the last Three Weeks.** S. M. says that for two weeks M. has not pursued any active train of thought. "Of course thoughts come to her, but she can't follow any train of active thought." So three marks of declension belong to the last three weeks. (1) She sees less still in R. D.'s mind as the latter is "going down." (2) Undressing at night is



getting to be a burden to her. (3) She cannot carry on an active train of thinking. R. D. came at 10.30, and had a dream of her father getting drunk and beating her, yet nevertheless slept well. *Dec. 23-24: 7 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 3 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 25.* M. was here in the morning, as was to be expected. Today she asked me to write to Dr. Walker for her. I suggested that she write herself, but she distractedly said, "O, I'm most tired to death thinkin' of writin'." But she dictated a letter. [601] When I suggested that R. D. be allowed to see the present from Dr. Walker, M. demurred, saying, "She'll laugh at me", and made the same remark to Mrs. P., at another time, but at length she consented. R. D. when she saw it, looked both amused and sheepish. R. D. came at 10.15 and slept pretty well. *Dec. 24-25: 8 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 45 m.; M., 3 h.*

*Dec. 26.* I woke R. D. at 8.45 but at 9.50 she saw the parrot biting a sprig on the miniature Christmas tree, and thought, "the A Phase wouldn't like that", and this acted no doubt to bring out M., who shrieked with indignation at what the parrot had done. Then she got me to open the package sent by Dr. Walker, and examined the articles with ecstatic cries. There were several paper whistles which popped out and squealed or grunted. She tried the first one and was frightened and delighted at once, laughing in a loud hysterical manner and clutching the air until

---

601. Here is the letter, literally as she dictated it, with all her accompanying remarks in parentheses:

"Dear Dr. Walker (the greaser!):

(I have the worst trouble with my correspondence!) I think the present is *boo'ful*. (Put a line under that.) It has pretty *beads* (line under that.) and *whistles*, pretty horn, pretty glasses—green glasses (or red, I don't remember which) (I'm so tired!), and a big marble in the toe (ha, ha!) O, it's just *boo'ful* (tell him). [Here she went to sleep from the effect of dictation.] Doris just loved the letter, she 'most kissed it. She thought that was good as any present. (Tell him what I got, for I can't.) A chair (tell him that cost fifteen cents.) a vase—vase cost five cents, nice box—cost ten cents, Christmas tree—twenty cents, all dec'rated. (Tell him) Merry Christmas, Fourth July. (Tell him) I'll write him tomor'r when I feel ber'r. (Tell him) Topsy laid three eggs and is sittin' on 'em. (I guess that's all.) (Say) Margaret, Imp. (Say)

Yours in spirit,

MARGARET."

[Goes to sleep, and ejaculates while sleeping, "It's damn hard to write letters." I never heard her use such an expletive before, but see page 425.]



I calmed her. In ten minutes R. D. was back, and we took a trip of some four hours to a near-by quarry. After this she had a bad headache, and S. M., discussing the headache, reminded me that the last preceding trip of the kind had likewise been followed by a headache, and that both times R. D. ate hard-boiled eggs. I gave M. some medicine for indigestion, and in half an hour she reported that the headache was better. Note that while M. usually does not feel the headache that R. D. goes away suffering from, she does when it is very severe. R. D. came at 9.35 p. m. and her head troubled her all night. *Dec. 25-26: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 50 m.; M., 3 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 27.* M. came in the morning. R. D. had headache until afternoon. Several days ago an annoying eruption upon her limbs began and still continues. R. D. came at 10.30 for the night, and still suffered headache. *Dec. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Dec. 28.* At a Sunday school festival several gifts for D. were received. When they were brought home M. undid one, but, to our astonishment, left the others for R. D. to open first, and carefully tied up the one that she had examined. R. D. came at 10.40 and slept well. *Dec. 27-28: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 29. Sunday.* R. D. was as excited with her second lot of gifts as any child. Indeed M. remarked last night, "That child is awfully excited about Christmas. It's the second one that *she* ever had." R. D. had maintained herself in the morning, but this excitement made her go at 9.10 a. m. A little before this she had asked, holding up a box covered with shells, which I had given M, "Do you suppose that the A Phase would let me have this? (No.) Won't you ask her? (I know already. She said that you would want it, but that she didn't want you to have it—now.) I don't see how she could know that. I have never seen such a box before". When M. came she made no allusion to R. D.'s request until she had lain down and fallen asleep. Suddenly she loudly ejaculated, "No!", and after a pause, "No!" again. I divined what had happened, but asked S. M. what M. was saying *no* so emphatically for. S. M. laughed and said, "She sees that the R. D. wanted the box." Soon M. woke, and



began commenting on R. D.'s request. "I ain't going to give ev'-sing mine away. Do you think that I am, babo? She needn't think I'm going to give ev'-sing mine away. That was my babo's present to me; I'm not going to give it to her."

On my return from church R. D. told me that she had forgotten for about five minutes as nearly as she could tell (S. M. thought it was nearer 10 minutes.) The occasion was that M.'s miniature Christmas tree fell from the table and two candy canes broke, and the parrot on the floor instantly commenced to nibble a little candle. "When I came again I found that the A Phase had scratched a sore place on my leg, and she had thrown her presents all over the floor. I wasn't to blame; I wasn't even near the tree when it fell." I suppose that telling the story stirred up M., for she came about as soon as it was finished. Aggrieved indignation characterized her mood, though the passion of it had apparently expended itself. She seemed near tears, and yet laughed now and then in giving her version of the story. "She *was* to blame, too. She put a chair up against the table so that the tree tilted, and then the polly shook the chair and the table fell over, and she ate my candle. The D. *was* to blame. She no business been so careless." She said that she grabbed the parrot by the back of the neck and shook her, "and she looked so funny, clawing in the air with her feet, and she hollered 'look ahere' twice, and I put her down and she just stood with her mouth open." S. M. said, "It is a wonder to me that the parrot didn't bite her, for when she put it down she put her hand on its back, and shook her finger before its face while she scolded it, and it just stood with its jaw hanging, and never offered to bite, meek as Moses. If the R. D. had done that, Polly would have bitten her finger half off." S. M. added that M. sat on the floor afterwards and cried, and called constantly. "Where *is* you babo?"; also that M. acted on her first impulse when she scratched the leg. "If she had waited a moment she would not have done it. But she gave one vicious dig with four fingers, and tore the skin and brought blood." The old propensity roused by S. D.'s "working M." momentarily broke loose on fancied provocation.

For a couple of days M. has been apt to say repeatedly, after coming, "Where *is* you, babo?" This evening she inquired



earnestly, "What is you, babo?" No answer, "Your papo", "A man", or anything else, satisfied her. "That isn't what I mean. What is you?" At last I said, "(Same as the R D.)", meaning that I was a person likewise. "What!" she asked in surprise, "Have you got a Margaret? Have you got roomers too?" S. M. has been trying to find out by studying M.'s mind what she means by both queries. "'Where is you' does not mean what it seems to, but 'come and sit beside me.'" But what the other question means she had not been able to make out. R. D. came at 10.10 and slept well. She made up her mind to rise at 7, but S. M. laughed and predicted that she would not be able to do it. *Dec. 28-29: 10 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Dec. 30.* And sure enough R. D. did not wake to carry out her intention, and M. came at 7.50, while she slept. Pills have not been needed since the mountain climb on the 16th. R. D. came and slept at 10.55 p. m. *Dec. 29-30: 6 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Dec. 31.* I woke R. D. and she staid until 5.55 p. m., then from 6.10 to 8.20. She came at 9.50, and I told her in her sleep that she would not mind the whistles at midnight but would sleep on. She did sleep,—the whistles were not loud, though probably she would have waked in the absence of the suggestion,—until a revolver was fired next door. That was not specified in the bond. But she was not alarmed, and maintained herself. *Dec. 30-31: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m. Average daily total of R. D. during December, 1912, 21 h. 23 m.*

*Jan. 1, 1913.* R. D. was kept until 9.40 a. m. The eruption on the limbs, which S. M. says covers quite a patch on each, and resembles a scald, troubles her considerably, and headache has come on again. Remedies seem of no avail for the eruption. R. D. came for the night at 9.40. *Dec. 31-Jan. 1: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Jan. 2.* Wakened according to custom R. D. staid until 5.55 p. m. Today, thinking that there should be some physician understanding her case who can be consulted in emergencies, I saw Dr. X., who is said to have had large experience in neurotic cases, and told him the story of the dissociation in confidence. He showed considerable interest, and I invited him



to see such as remained of the phenomena of the case. [602] He prescribed a salve for the eruption.

I offered M. a piece of candy, and to my surprise she declined it, saying, "It isn't good for M. to eat canny." Afterwards she spontaneously said, "The doctor says it ver' bad for M. to eat canny." Whether this statement was mere "pretending" or was an echo of what Dr. Walker used to say, S. M. thinks that M. has come to the point when she will eat no more candy. To be sure, she had a period more than a year ago when she would not eat it, but she gave no reasons then for refusing. A few days ago R. D. bought some hairpins and laid them on the lounge where M. found them on coming, and admired them, saying, "See babo, nice pretty hairpins." Tonight as she lay down on the lounge she looked in the direction where the hairpins had lain, and uttered the same words with the same admiring unction. She is almost uniformly pleasant and cheerful in demeanor. R. D. "held on" in the evening until the moment that she finished a piece of sewing. She came at 10.10, and slept well, considering. *Jan. 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Jan. 3.* R. D. persisted in the morning, going for the first time at 1.15 p. m. At first she thought the salve was helping, but on her return from a trolley-trip alone to Redlands, the trouble was worse, and the headache also. M. had to undress in the evening, which she did cheerfully, but it was too much trouble to apply the salve, she would not do that. She had me write down to whom her recently received property is to go, and fell asleep when this was attended to. R. D. came at 9.35, and had headache all night with poor sleep. *Jan. 2-3: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 15 m.; M., 3 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 4.* The throbbing in the temples is worse and is getting sadly on R. D.'s nerves. Consequently M. came in the morning, and it was a very unstable day.

It is getting habitual for M., when she sees me looking sober, to endeavour to cheer me, perhaps in unconscious imitation of

---

602. The interest was probably in the fact that even a "layman" could be so deluded. He proved to have less acquaintance with the later literature of abnormal psychology than I had assumed would be the case, so it is not to be wondered at, perhaps, that he rather broadly hinted that the girl was insane.



my devices to alter her own occasional "cranky" or "fixed idea" moods, to say "See pretty birdie, babo?" or "See pretty hairpins, babo?" (in the latter case always looking towards the corner of the lounge) in the sweetest, most cajoling fashion. Once a small napkin fell on her chest, slightly grazing her chin, and she cried, "Something hit me. Something came down—", and then she slid off into the cricket-chirp "The bed's all broken down! It's all fallin' down!", until I diverted her attention. At another time M. partly slipped from the lounge, and was terribly frightened. I caught her, and she clutched me, shook from head to foot, and cried, 'I'm fallin'! I'm fallin'!' I assured her, "(You are not hurt.) Ain't I, babo?" And the excess of her alarm passed away, and she slept. S. M. remarked, "It was the funniest thing to me to hear her ask you if she wasn't hurt."

The attitude of the three towards the proposition that Dr. X. shall make a call, is characteristic. S. M. approves from calm judgment; R. D. is willing simply because she trusts my judgment; M. is interested as a child would be, asks if Dr. Walker is coming with him, when he will come, etc. In the evening I 'phoned to Dr. X. about the headache and he prescribed tablets. R. D. came for the night at 9.30, and a second tablet was to be taken at 11, when R. D. would be fast asleep. But M. had suggested that I give it to her while she was asleep, and I did so. When I pressed the tablet to the sleeping R. D.'s lips, she at first frowned, then parted her lips, and when it was pressed against the teeth seemed dimly to comprehend and allowed me to insert it; I then put a glass of water to her lips and she sat up and drank—all without waking. Nor did she know the next morning that she had taken medicine while asleep. *Jan. 3-4: 12 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 20 m.; M., 6 h. 35 m.*

*Jan. 5. Sunday.* M. came at 10.15 a. m., and four times thereafter. The headache and other trouble still are bad. M. was on deck in the afternoon three and a half hours at a stretch, and during the latter part of it, while she steadily declared that *she* had no headache, she began to show a tendency, while asleep, to brush her temples heavily, betraying some kind of recognition of trouble there. I 'phoned to Dr. X. thinking that a personal inspection might enable him to prescribe more successfully, and



he came. When he entered M. had her head in my arms, her face against my coat, and would not look at him for several minutes, answering with her face hid. By degrees she overcame her shyness, though not completely. As soon as she looked at him she told him quite frankly that he was "not so pretty as Dr. Walker." He asked a number of questions as to how I knew this or that, and evidently had on his most critical cap. Indications were that he wondered that a layman should have the colossal impudence to assume to know anything about a case that properly belonged to the profession. I had M. go to sleep, and twice he roughly wakened her by pulling open the eyelid. After the second time she said, "I can do that", and clawed open her eyelid herself, seeming to think it a sort of unpleasant game that he had devised. One of the first things that she had said after he came in was, "Dr. Wacker gave me a pretty present", and repeated the statement ingratiatingly. But before he left, his putting his finger in her eye, and his grim demeanor, began to affect her unfavorably. [603] The doctor sent home other tablets to be taken after meals, and *her headache began to decrease before she took them*, and continued better through the night. It was 9.55 when she came, and she slept well. *Jan 4-5: 10 alt.: R. D., 18 h.; M., 6 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 6.* M. came in the morning. At R. D.'s third disappearance for the day S. M. remarked, "I was to blame for that, I think. I won't do that again. (What did you do?) I worried some from fear that she was a bother, and got a little cross about it. It must have got through, because she began to worry, fearing that Phase A made trouble." On the contrary,

---

603. He heard S. M. make statements, but evidently regarded them as shamming. On leaving the room he told Mrs. P. that he had seen a hundred cases like this—meaning insane cases! Exit the wise Dr. X. from the scene—except that I felt obliged to consult him for the next few days in regard to the physical aspects. The foregoing satire is good-humored, and really applies to all of the medical profession who rivet their attention upon "nerves" and other material elements, and hardly suspect the existence of the psychical elements involved in many of their cases, or, if psychical elements cannot be denied, know no alternatives but shamming and insanity. The good doctor was very competent along certain lines.



with one or two momentary exceptions for which I was to blame, M. has been uniformly amiable during R. D.'s period of ill-health; if not always jolly, at least cheerful and winning in demeanor. The fact that R. D.'s illnesses no longer make M. "cranky" is a great relief. R. D. came for the night at 9.20. *Jan. 5-6: 10 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 43 m.; M., 3 h. 42 m.*

*Jan. 7.* R. D. woke at 5.30 and began again to worry, the headache returned, and M.'s voice was heard at 6. M. was not conscious of any headache. The headache reappearing with R. D.'s return at 8.40, I called up Dr. X., and in the afternoon R. D. went down, had some conversation with him, and received some new medicine. The headache began to disappear soon after she took the first dose, and was gone by 8 p. m. Was it the medicine, or the hopes that she reposed in the medicine that had the effect? If the medicine taken on the 5th was the cause of her relief then it started its beneficent work before she took it. She came for the night at 10.20 and slept well. *Jan. 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h. 55 m.*

*Jan. 8.* I woke late and before I had a chance to waken R. D., M. came, in good humor as usual. The eruption is worse again, and is irritating her by a burning sensation; the headache also has reappeared. R. D. came at 10.25 p. m., and slept very well. *Jan. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Jan. 9.* Last night M. remarked, "I don't think I will come tomorrow morning, the R. D. feels so well." This in spite of the eruption and the headache. And M. did not come this morning. The trouble with the limbs continued, yet she felt pretty well in general.

In the evening I was rubbing M.'s cold feet, and she asked "What makes you hit me, babo?" By experiment I found that the corner of the blanket which I kept over her feet while I chafed them underneath, would occasionally flip over upon her foot. In spite of the anæsthesia she was conscious of the light fall, but perhaps from her hyperæsthetic hearing. At 10.10 R. D. was here for good sleep. *Jan. 8-9: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Jan. 10.* At the sound of Mrs. P.'s rising, M. came. I asked S. M. if R. D. is making progress now. "Not very much now,



on account of her troubles." Then she added, "I haven't seen the R. D. look so much like S. D. and act so much like M., for a very long time, as she has for the last two or three days." This is positively and literally true, and had troubled me considerably, but I had kept silent about it. But S. M. asserts confidently that this is nothing to worry about, that it is due in some way to perturbations on the part of M. beneath, [604] and that such resemblances will not be seen when M. has gone. [605] Now most certainly R. D. never thinks or imagines that she looks like S. D. or borrows M.'s traits of demeanor in a degree at certain times. But these spontaneous utterances of S. M. show that there is in her brain an intelligence which accurately observes and is able to describe, the changes in the eyes when M. comes, the fact of her slower pulse, the changes which like a cloud pass over R. D.'s features and demeanor rarely, etc.

In the evening M. broke out into mechanical laughter, and explained "I was weadin' a joke!" Afterwards S. M. said that M. supposed that she was reading an item which R. D. had smiled over, but really had before her a serious item in the same portion of another page. Of late M. has begun to waggle her head in a curious fashion immediately before she goes to sleep, as though she were burrowing into the pillow, and R. D. has derived the movement from her, likewise before going to sleep, but in less vigorous degree. Tonight S. M. spoke of it, saying "The R. D. shakes her head, too", accompanying the remark with an illustrative waggle. M. instantly woke, exclaiming, "Something peeped me! Something peeped me! It made my head go like when I go to peep." She continued hilarious for a minute, then with another waggling preface, fell asleep again. S. M. laughed and said, "She could not understand her head going like that." At 10.05 R. D. came for the night. *Jan. 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 11.* M. came in the morning. At her second appear-

---

604. Probably a complete statement would be that her sickness caused the resemblance to S. D., and M.'s subliminal perturbations, also related to the sickness, caused the cropping out of M. traits.

605. These did not disappear immediately with M.'s disappearance, but did so gradually thereafter.



ance, 3.40 p. m., she demanded a roll to eat. S. M. informed me that R. D. has taken a notion that she will not eat anything between meals. "But she gets hungry, and then, when she won't eat, M. comes and calls for something to eat." I made up my mind to advise R. D. to eat when she feels hungry, both that M. may not be unnecessarily brought out by the sensation of hunger and that M. shall not be the one to eat. The eruption still continues. Dr. X. said over the 'phone today that he thought it was caused by the nerves. Several days ago I shyly ventured, in conversation with him, the opinion that it was psychically caused. I suppose we mean about the same thing, for it can hardly be supposed that those telegraph wires, the nerves, by any direct physical nexus can produce a breaking out on the skin. R. D. arrived at 10.40 p. m. *Jan. 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Jan. 12. Sunday.* M. did not come until 5.25 p. m. From the time that the eruption and headache came, about two weeks ago, according to S. M., R. D. made little progress up to last Friday. Since then the progress has been slightly accelerated. R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. and slept fairly well. *Jan. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Jan. 13.* M. did not come until evening. I still make a practice of waking R. D. at about 8, and letting her doze after that if she feels like it. This course seems, from experience, best adapted to retain her. M. said this forenoon that the breaking out on the legs was about well. As Mrs. P. has seen it and described it as looking like a large burn bordered by pimples, this seemed a change of astonishing swiftness, but S. M. confirmed it. All day R. D. felt splendidly, and came at night at 10.30, sleeping very well. *Jan. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Jan. 14.* R. D. staid all day. In the forenoon she remarked that she had come to the conclusion that the eruption which so suddenly vanished was caused by her "thinking about it and worrying." A pimple first came, and remembering that a boil used frequently to form from a pimple (but that was because M. scratched it) she worried. "I notice that when I forgot about it for a while it would get better, and when I worried again it got



worse." True, and good that she has discovered it for herself! [606]

M. had been present in the evening for about 20 minutes when she suddenly saw something of great interest to her in the mind of R. D. as the latter was yet going down. "O, the D. has got me a pretty doll", she shouted, and ran to her room and got it. I asked her how she had known. "I just saw it." She was in ecstasies, laughed and cooed and chattered precisely like a happy little child. She fell asleep with the tiny doll, which she had proudly announced "cost five cents", lying on her chest, and occasionally touched it with her hands. Presently I removed it, trusting that I could get it back quickly enough after she missed it so that her alarm would be only momentary. But when she next felt for it and found it gone, though, strangely, she did not wake, she cried out in piercing tones, "O, my baby doll is los'! Is los'! Is los'!", flung her arms up and hammered with her heels, her whole body convulsed with agitation, her excitement growing every second. In vain I thrust the doll into her hands while they were extended, and it was not until I had put it upon the spot from which it was taken and placed her hands upon it that it was recognized. She had to find it in the spot where she had left it! In an instant her grief was turned to joy, expressed almost as tumultuously as the grief had been. I woke her by blowing in her eyes, she uttered a few incoherent exclamations to the effect that she had thought her doll was lost, then swiftly whirled around, put her head into my lap, and was asleep again, panting and exhausted from emotion. I must avoid

---

606. "Wetterstrand produced two gangrenous vesicles by means of suggestion in somnambulism. One of these, situated in the middle of the hand, was produced on October 7, 1890, and the other, on the thumb side of the hand, was produced on October 14, and he photographed them on October 15. Both vesicles appeared eight hours after the suggestion was given. \* \* \* I have seen one other case like this in the practice of Dr. Marcel Briaud in Paris. The patient was an hysterical female, and the blisters were produced beneath a paper by suggestion. While these cases are very rare, it is very easy to produce bleeding from the mucous membrane by suggestion." (Forel, "Hypnotism and Psychotherapy", pages 97-98.) A number of incidents in this record illustrate the possibilities of auto-suggestion in producing eruptions, headaches, etc.



such experiments; the effect is too drastic. R. D. came at 10.35 and slept nicely. *Jan. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 15.* R. D. was here all day. R. D. showed me the doll and said, "I bought it for the A Phase. (What made you?) Just for fun. And I guess I liked it myself." Later S. M. said apologetically in behalf of R. D., "You know that she was never able to play with dolls when she was little." [607]

Mrs. P. and I went to Redlands to a convention in the afternoon, and R. D. accompanied us to buy a finch that a dealer had promised to have ready for her, and to return alone. There was no finch, and M. came at 7.20 p. m. saying, "I might not have been here if the D. had not been disappointed." R. D. came for a good night at 9.35. *Jan. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Jan. 16.* R. D., maintaining herself in the morning, attended a young people's society without asking permission, and got very tired. In consequence M. came at 7 p. m. for 20 minutes.

Any matter which R. D. has conceived or read or heard discussed, and has thought over herself, M. can rehearse with a close approximation to R. D.'s vocabulary, pronunciation and construction of sentences. But the moment that she begins to express her own thoughts she relapses into her own modes of construction, etc. It is a curious phenomenon.

S. M. thought that I had best tell R. D. that she should not attend meetings of any church society yet. Then she remarked, "How young she appears! Do you suppose she will ever get over it?" After M. has said some quaint thing in her sleep, as tonight, when she described Mrs. P.'s preparations for bed in the next room from hearing them, ending, "She has hopped into bed—like an elfant", S. M. loses her balance and laughs heartily, sometimes saying, "Isn't M. a rascal?" R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *Jan. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 17.* M. came at 7.20, and said that it was because R. D. got so nervous at the meeting yesterday. When M. was asleep I asked S. M. if she agreed. "Certainly. Don't you see that

---

607. She had only paper dolls and a rag doll or two, but M. did the playing.



yesterday was the first of several days that M. came before night, and this is the first of several mornings that she has come?" When R. D. came she said, "Did I forget? (Don't you know why you forgot yesterday after supper and again this morning?) No. (Think.)" But she could not tell. "(What did you do yesterday afternoon?) Was it because I attended the meeting?" I told her that it was, and that she had best wait awhile; she would be able to go later. She acquiesced without a murmur, though she said that she would have liked to be of assistance to the leader.

In the evening the oil-stove in her room was found to be smoking furiously, and the room filled with smoke. The windows were thrown open, but M., in the dining-room, declared that she could not sleep in her own room, because it was dirty, and she wouldn't sleep in a dirty room and dirty bed. I had her sleep awhile where she was, and then began alternately to say that she wouldn't sleep in a dirty room, and to ejaculate, "I's tired! I's tired!", in most infantile, squeaky, plaintive tones. Finally she went to her room and got ready for bed, since R. D. had departed in the beginning of that process, and I could hear her lamenting steadily, and almost crying. She fell asleep, and commenced to cough, woke, lamented anew, slept and coughed again. The coughing ceased, and then she began a monotonous chant, "It smells in this room", over and over. I woke her after some 30 repetitions, but the cricket-chirp continued. She would stop and respond to my talk about the dolls, etc., but go back like a spring to the tiresome sentence the moment my efforts relaxed, little by little her responses to the attempts to divert her mind became more animated, and the intervals longer between her interested and even laughing answers to my questions and the toneless sequence of "It smells in this room", until at length the spell was broken. But it was not until 11.45 that R. D. came. She slept fairly well. *Jan. 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 18.* M. came just as I was about to wake R. D., but made only vague allusion to last night's experience. In the evening M. sang one of the ditties which she learned in her childhood. It is a movement-song, and I was interested to see, dimly, that



she went through the motions faithfully, in the dark, just as she always has done in the light. At 9.40 p. m. R. D. came. *Jan. 17-18: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Jan. 19. Sunday.* R. D. continued all day. In the evening M. sang "Nicodemus", some lines of which she learned from me. She sang it with even more of the tedious slowness and hesitation that marked her singing of it the last time I heard it weeks ago. S. M. said, "She cannot remember it ahead. [608] One word brings on another, word by word." This is exactly the explanation that S. M. gave months ago. "Nicodemus" is the only song that M. has picked up since I have known her. The old songs of childhood she sings with perfect ease. R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Jan. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; 1 h. 20 m.*

*Jan. 20.* M. was brought at 8 a. m. by the noise of something falling. R. D. was out 8.35 a. m.-9.20 p. m., and came for the night at 10.35. *Jan. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Jan. 21.* M. came at 7.20, it being the morning of the day when the monthly period began. R. D. was here 8.20 a. m.-9.25 p. m., and came for the night at 10.35. *Jan. 20-21: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 22.* M. came at 8.20. R. D. was out 8.40 a. m.-8.45 p. m., coming at night 10.15. *Jan. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Jan. 23.* R. D. continued until 9.50 p. m., just as Mrs. P. and I returned to the house, and came for sleep at 11.10. *Jan. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Jan. 24.* M. came in the morning. The period has been almost perfectly painless, and R. D.'s average time out has been little affected.

I learn from M. and S. M. that R. D. has again begun to think about trying to maintain herself in the evening. The difficulty is that it does not seem to be natural and convenient for her to lie, say at 8 p. m., in her room, and read until she falls asleep, at least until the weather is warmer. S. M. says that if R. D. should purposely go to bed at 8 she would not feel sleepy,

608. That is, M. could not remember a whole line or clause at a time, but each word in turn recalled the next.



and the effort to go to sleep would bring M. "She can't force herself; it has got to come in its time."

**R. D. Begins to Feel Better when M. does not Come in the Morning.** From R. D. I learn that, beginning very lately, she feels "dumpy" if M. comes in the morning,—feels better if M. does not come. The reverse was formerly the case, as she then missed the rest that M.'s coming gave her. But both S. M.—unprompted by me—and I argue from the change that R. D. is getting more in the ascendancy, more independent of M. S. M. remarks that R. D. is becoming calmer, that she has "more poise, doesn't get so confused, her brain grows clearer." I note a growth in independence, as relates to myself. She does not so easily get lonesome and as if bereft of support when I am absent for a large part of the day. R. D. arrived at 10.25 p. m. *Jan. 23-24: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Jan. 25.* R. D. was here until 8.35 p. m., and came for the night at 10.15. *Jan. 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D. 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Jan. 26. Sunday.* R. D., here until 8.55 p. m., returned for sleep at 10. *Jan. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Jan. 27.* Firebells woke R. D. with a start in the morning and M. came. At supper Mrs. P. urged me to take the last cinnamon bun on the plate, but I hesitated, not knowing that there was a reserve supply, and thinking that M. might be out and demand one. R. D. divined the reason of my hesitation, and the thought of M. brought out the latter, who instantly asked for the bun. Just as she finished it, R. D. came back, looked a little pensive, but said nothing.

Probably owing to her getting engrossed in a strenuous task in relation to her hens before she was over her sickness, R. D. had a headache for two days, and the red patches on the limbs reappeared. Last evening I told her in her sleep that the headache would go that night. Tonight M. spontaneously broke out, "It was going through her head all night what you said. That cured her. (How do you know it was going through her head?) I saw it in her mind this morning. I don't mean the mind that



she knows." [609] At 9.40 p. m. R. D. was here for the night. *Jan. 26-27: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 2 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 28.* M. was not here until 9.30 p. m. I learn from S. M. that for about a week M., though she has spent half an hour or so each evening with a book or paper in hand, has not read at all. The latest previous stage was reading without comprehension of what was read. The present practice, if permanent, marks a new stage in the declension. M. part of the time looks at pictures, part of the time simply looks at the printed page, her mind, what there is of it, on something else.

This evening M. woke and instantly asked, as though to resolve a question which had occurred to her in her sleep, [610] "What for the devil, babo?" All my conjectures as to her meaning, such as " (Do you mean 'What is the devil for?') " were vain. Presently she said, "Say all that before *for*. (Before what?) What you just said. (What is the devil?) Yes. That's it, babo. (I don't know.) You pretty min'ster, and don't know that." At 10.30 R. D. was here. *Jan. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Jan. 29.* R. D. was out until 8 p. m. She seems very happy these last days. Yet last night the old dream which she has had off and on ever since she came to us, reappeared in almost exactly the same terms. Her mother, in the dream, was scrubbing the floor of a room in the Colorado Avenue house which she in fact was never in, looking at D. in worried fashion but not speaking, as the latter explained how she came to live with us. "But I thought that you were dead, mother. I am sure I saw you dead; and I saw you buried, mother, or I would never have left you." Probably this recurrent dream is caused by fears which emerge

---

609. Evidently neither M. nor S. M. would have agreed with the psychologist who wrote a treatise on the subliminal mind in three words, "there is none", even if they had known anything about him. But neither had they any acquaintance with the works of psychologists who teach the doctrine of the subliminal mind; therefore, the frequent and varied statements of S. M. and M. in regard to the workings "underneath", though not couched in the technical verbiage of the professor's chair but in a sufficiently clear nomenclature of their own, are exceedingly significant.

610. More likely she had caught, at that moment, a glimpse of some cogitation of R. D. anent the existence or nature of the devil.



in the conscious mind of R. D. and are repressed as irrational, that she is allowing her affection for the dead mother to be in a degree effaced and supplanted by her affection for the new mother. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Jan. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Jan. 30.* R. D. was somewhat blue, probably being oppressed by the dream, but persisted until 9.05. M. too, was more restless than usual, probably a secondary effect from the same cause.

R. D. came asleep—that is, M. goes while awake, but the same instant that R. D. comes she is asleep, at 10.30, and I told her to dream about Houdan hens with their heads covered by beautiful balls of feathers, and I could see her smile brightly. *Jan. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Jan. 31.* This morning R. D. told me that she dreamed about having a flock of Houdans, "and they were so pretty, their heads balls of feathers." She thought that the dream was caused by her getting a new hen-coop yesterday.

At 9.55 a. m. R. D. went, and S. M. said that it was partly a slight headache lasting over from yesterday, and partly worrying over my bank balance being not so large as she had supposed it was—she looks after my accounts—which caused her departure.

The church cleaner brought my watch which had been left in the church, spoke of that and then went on with a long story of her having being accused of taking things from another church, ending with an incident about a diamond brooch. Mrs. P. heard the story and repeated what she remembered of it, in the presence of M. As the story was finished, I glanced at M., and she was staring into space as if immersed in thought. Immediately afterwards she fell asleep, and S. M. laughed and said, "She couldn't contain that story,—it went too fast for her. She was puzzling out the first part and never heard the last." When M. woke I said, "That was a funny story, wasn't it?" Her face twisted, and she asked, "What was it? (About the diamond brooch.)" Asa no. It was a watch—it was your watch." M. again took up the game of asking me for cheese and having me refuse it. She asks almost in a whisper, with uplifted finger and bewitchingly arch expression, I answer "No", smilingly, but with just a



suspicion of sternness, as that is part of the game, and she falls back on the cushion quivering with excitement, and hiding her face. At last I said "No" somewhat louder, though careful still to smile; she laughed hysterically and fell asleep, with her fingers clawing. S. M. said, "She enjoys that; it frightens yet delights her."

S. M. remarked, "I don't understand what makes the R. D. blue the last two days. She always used to be so cheerful. She would come home, find almost nothing to eat and no money to buy anything, but she always looked on the bright side, and would say, 'Never mind, mother, I'll get some money', and go off and get some chores to do and earn something. And now she has more than she ever had in her life, more than she ever dreamed of having. And she is usually so happy now. Why she should have been blue the last two days I don't see."

Later, M. became very restless in her sleep, flung her arms about, and finally thrust her finger in my ear and began twisting it about. This was exceedingly irritating to my nerves and I uttered an exclamation, as I withdrew the finger. S. M. asked me if M. had hurt me, and I curtly answered in the negative. She still questioned, and I said, "It is of no use to talk about it; it is over." S. M. replied gravely, "Well, I only wanted to know about it; it is of no use to lie about it." My nerves were still tingling, and I most foolishly spoke with impatience. "(For heaven's sake why do you say I lie?) But you said it was over, and I thought she must have hurt you." And then I completed the business by ripping out, "It did not hurt me, but made me nervous. I do not like to be told that I lie." At once the body shrank, and I knew that there would be an interval of silence, more or less prolonged. After a time I tried to get her to speak, but there was no answer. The body lay almost without movement for perhaps half an hour, turned over and remained still. Seemingly S. M. had "gone away." At last M. woke and at once put up her lip and waveringly whimpered, "The Real Doris." I attempted to soothe her without effect, and amidst incipient sobs R. D. came asleep at 11.25 and uttered several of the sobbing sounds. I suggested quiet slumber and happiness, and in fact the slumber was peaceful. *Jan. 30-31: 4 alt.: R. D.,*



22 h. 40 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m. Average daily total of R. D. during January, 1913, 21 h. 59 m.

Feb. 1. M. came at the stroke of 8 and called to me. I sat down beside her and she fell asleep. I could get no answer from S. M. Had she been gone all night? Or had she gone anew in the morning? Or was she there all the time, playing "possum"? Presently M. woke, whimpered a little and said, "Sleeping Margaret is gone." It will be remembered that long ago she suspected that there was "another S. D.", afterwards claimed to see in my mind the name "Sleeping Margaret", and after that tried on several occasions to surprise me into an admission that there is such a personage, although S. M. said that M. did not really believe that there was. I now asked " (What is Sleeping Margaret?) Somefin's gone ", she responded, and then attempted to begin the game of last night. Mrs. P. was about to shut the door of the room to keep noises out, but M. asked her not to, adding, apprehensively, "Bad man come. Bad man come. Who said there was bad man? Bad man come." I said, "There isn't any bad man ", and she instantly became reassured. "No. No bad man. No bad man *anywhere*, is there, babo? No bad man *anywhere*."

R. D. came at 8.55, said that she had slept well, and seemed cheerful, to my relief. A little before noon she returned from an errand to the stores and said, "I feel so strange today. I never felt like it, quite, in my life before; bewildered, as though I were falling to pieces—O, I can't explain it. (How long have you felt so?) All day. (Try to describe it further.) I can't—sort of lop-sided. Something as I felt when S. D. first left me for good,—and yet not the same. It doesn't make me blue or anything like that, yet I feel so queer. (As if you weren't all there?) Yes, that is it. (Anything as you felt some weeks ago, two or three times, for a few minutes?) No. (Well, as long as you feel that way be *very* careful when you are on the street.) Yes, I feel strange on the street, and I will be careful." [611]

There can be little doubt that S. M. was gone at least an hour last night, and has been gone all day. It is pretty certain from this that S. M. was right in saying that she can go away volun-

611. See page 1052, R. D.'s statement.



tarily. [612] Did she desire to teach me a lesson? In the meantime R. D. is more cheerful than she had been for two days previous! But on any theory of S. M.'s nature, there is danger of accident to R. D., which I must guard against the best I can. Once or twice again during the day she mentioned her peculiar feelings. When M. came in the evening, she declared that "S. M. has gone." I did not admit that there was such a being, but M. said, "You can't fool me. I'm no dummy, if I am a personality. . . I d'no why she went. I ain't 'sponsible; I never scratched her arms . . an' I didn't scratch her nose . . or her eye. That S. M. is a dibble. She went away mad. (How can you tell that?) By the way I feel. And the R. D. feels some as S. D. used to feel when I got mad and went away for a day. I never staid longer, though. Then S. D. got so confused she didn't know where she was goin'. And once a car hit her, and she sat right down on the fender. . . She'll be back. She'll have to, the D. couldn't stand it. . . She's below me. I never saw her,—she *must* be below me." M. was cheerful and winning as usual.

At 10.10 R. D. came asleep, received the customary psychic treatment, and slept well. *Jan. 31-Feb. 1: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 2. Sunday.* R. D. rose and came from her room before

---

612. If S. M. went away involuntarily it was because of psychical shock received in her own personality, as she was the only one who knew what I had said. But there had been crises in the case calculated to cause her far greater psychical shock, if she was at all subject to them, and she had remained, conscious, calm and ready to advise. Having noticed that generally M was sleeping profoundly at such times as S. M. went away, I had thought it possible, until I tested her capacity to go away at request and signal, that M's profound sleep automatically caused the condition which S. M. called "going away". These incidents, coupled with the fact that when they occurred while R. D. was out, the looks and feelings of the latter showing that some interior alteration had taken place, had already convinced me that S. M. spoke truly when she alleged her voluntary power in the matter. But it is worth while remarking that this evening M. was not sleeping quietly at the moment that S. M. went away, but rather the reverse. The profundity of M's sleep had not been at any time the causal agent, but S. M. had been accustomed to sensibly choose a time when conditions were most peaceful and assured from disturbance.



the regular time of waking her. She was cheerful and happy today also, though the strange feeling continued. In the evening I staid longer than usual at the church, to listen to an organ recital. On my return at 10.10, M. came, and at once informed me merrily "That S. M. was back awhile tonight. (How long?) 'Bout twenty minutes. (How do you know?) The R. D. felt so much better,—like she did before, you know. (When did that S. M. leave?) 'Bout half an hour ago." M.'s ability to tell how long R. D.'s return of normal feeling lasted and when it went is easily accounted for. I usually reached the house on Sunday evening at about 9.40, and R. D., not knowing that I was to stay longer this evening, would naturally be looking at the clock. Accustomed to my asking how long any novel experience lasted, she would have noticed that her return of normal feelings continued for about 20 minutes. Also, before our return she would have thought, "It is half an hour later than it usually is when they come in." And M., on coming, saw these thoughts passing "in review" in R. D.'s mind as she was going down. If S. M. did indeed go about half an hour before my arrival, I could see the meaning of that—she went just before I usually got back. That is, she still cherished a grudge, and did not wish to be here when I got back. M. laughingly repeated that S. M. is a "dibble", must be because she went away mad, and was staying so long. I asked " (Why do you call her Sleeping Margaret?) " Probably the name stuck in her memory from the time that she professed to see it in my mind and she had forgotten how she acquired it. But she answered, "Why, what else *can* she be? She isn't Sleeping Doris because she is gone. She can't be Sleeping Sick Doris, because there isn't any Sick Doris now. (But why do you call her Sleeping *Margaret*?) What else *can* she be? (Perhaps her name is Helen.)" M.'s eyes grew round as she exclaimed, "What, there ain't any more, are there?" Presently she said something about S. M.'s talking. " (Talking? When does she talk?) When I am asleep. (What makes you think so?) If she talked any other time I would know it, wouldn't I?"

M. rehearsed to Mrs. P. and me the substance of a letter written by R. D. to Dr. Walker, beginning at the superscription and



apparently proceeding in consecutive order. Mrs. P. asked what R. D. said about her feelings—M. had said, before the rehearsal began, that R. D. had described them,—and M. expostulated, "You wait, I ain't come to that yet." I think that, as in the case of "Nicodemus", she could remember the language only in its due order. Last night M. suddenly cried, "O babo, may I see the baby chicks? (But R. D. hasn't got them yet.) O, I thought she had them." R. D. sent for them this evening, and M. evidently did not wait to see the whole thought, but as soon as "baby chicks" came into view assumed that they were here. Tonight also, M. said, "The R. D. has 50 baby chicks. (No, she hasn't got them yet.)" M. waited a moment and said, "No, she sent for them last night. I wish she didn't give me her thoughts tail-end first." At 10.55 R. D. came for the night. *Feb. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Feb. 3.* M. came at the stroke of 8. She again laughingly expressed her opinion that S. M. is a "dibble." After she had been sleeping a little while it seemed to me that there was a suspicious something about the expression of the face. I asked the question which had been asked so many times since the evening of Jan. 31st without response, facial or other, "Are you here?", but now the corners of the mouth slightly curled upwards. I repeated the query with assurance, and now S. M. was compelled to admit that she was on deck. "But", I asked, "how was it that your coming was not announced by a jerk, as is commonly the case?" "Because I did not return naturally. I was just scouting around. I didn't mean that you should know that I was here, but I couldn't help smiling." We talked a little about the cause of her long trip, and she said, "You exasperated me. I don't think that personalities should live with *people*. (I suppose that you went to punish me?) That was what it was for. (Well, if it is any satisfaction to you, you succeeded. I worried considerably.)" S. M. seemed a trifle ashamed, or perhaps sorry for me. I continued, "(Wasn't it too bad to endanger R. D.?) You don't think that I wasn't watching, do you? I left her, to be sure, but I wasn't far off. I wouldn't cease to watch her. If she got into danger I would have returned. (You left her body?) Yes. (In what direction were you?) Direction?



(Yes. Below, or above, or in a tree, or where?) I certainly wasn't perched in a tree. If I am a 'dibble', as M. says, I suppose I must have been below. (But where were you? Aren't there any directions?) I don't think so. (Well, what about what M. calls you? Are you a 'dibble?') I don't think I am. (M. says that *she* used to go away for a day too.) That was not the same thing. She meant that she went under, that's all. (Did she know anything when she was 'under'? No. But she knew afterwards what had happened to S. D. when she was under, because she saw it in S. D.'s mind." Presently,—I do not know what started it—S. M. began more oracular statements about personalities. "If there are several personalities, each one represents some feature of the mind, some tint, of what the normal person would have been. The normal person is a mix-up of characteristics you see, and if there are any ugly ones, they may be represented in the personalities. The true person [613] is the highest, and it depends on the character of the person what kind of personalities there will be. If the normal person had unpleasant characteristics, then the more of them there were the more vicious the personalities will be. The D. was good-natured and conscientious, and so her personalities were better in disposition and so on,—you understand what I mean?—than they would have otherwise been. (Do you represent something in her mind?) Maybe I do",—hesitating—"I was thinking, rather, of S. D. and M. (You reasoned that out, about personalities?) No, I know."

Here M. woke, and in a moment began to bounce and exult, "O, the dibble has come back! Sleeping Margaret, the dibble, has come back!" I pretended surprise. "(Come back? What makes you think so?) By the way I feel. The dibble has come back!"

At breakfast R. D. remarked, "That bewildered feeling has gone; my head feels perfectly clear again." She came in the evening at 10.15. Her sleep is good every night, so far as I learn. *Feb. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Feb. 4.* R. D. was here until 9.20 p. m. M. then wanted some nut-cake, and sulked when told that there was none.

613. That is, the primary personality.



Offered some fruit-cake she exclaimed, "Nut-cake! Why didn't you give it to M. when she first wanted it?" I "caught on", and explained that I thought at first that there wasn't any. S. M. says that ordinary cake, if cut the same way that the nut-cake is served, M. would suppose and call nut-cake. R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Feb. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Feb. 5.* R. D. was here all day until I returned from an evening engagement, at 8.40. M. handed me a sheet whereon R. D. had written, at my request, her psychical experiences the first day after S. M. went away.

"On Saturday last I awoke with a feeling as though someone had struck me a hard blow on the head, making me feel bewildered and as if I would like to keep shaking my head to release it.

I went down town and started to cross the street, got part way across and suddenly everything took on a different appearance. There seemed to be objects passing and repassing me, but they were not like people, and yet were not animals. The ground seemed to go up and down and sometimes seemed to rock, but that did not worry me. What attracted my attention was what seemed to be a large bird swooping down and then flying up. After awhile everything took on its natural appearance, and I went on my way. It lasted, I should think, about two minutes.

In the afternoon I went into the yard and got half-way across it, when the same thing happened, but instead of seeing things pass and repass me, in this case flowers and trees seemed to be springing up in all directions, and I had a vague idea that if I did not move I should have a tree start under my feet.

On the same afternoon I went into the henyard and picked up a Rhode Island Red hen. All of a sudden I thought I had something horrible in my hands, but do not remember that I defined what it was, but try as I could to get away from it I could not; and then all around me were things,—not that I named them or thought what they were—which seemed to frighten and yet draw me to them. When I recovered I still had the hen, and it seemed to be very comfortable, so I could not have disturbed it." R. D. came at 9.50, but M. returned for a moment to remind me that I had forgotten to lock the back door of the room leading to the



yard, then vanished. *Feb. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 6.* It is a singular fact that though previous to the mountain climb of Dec. 16th she had needed two pills at least every other day for chronic constipation, she has not needed any since that date and event. R. D. was here all day to 8.40 p. m. again, and came at 10.05 p. m. *Feb. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Feb. 7.* I failed to wake early enough to wake R. D. at the usual time, and M. came at 8.25, R. D. at 9.15, and M. again at 8.45 p. m. I spoke to S. M. about the fact that this morning R. D. referred to a letter which I had received but spoken of only in the hearing of M. S. M. said that this was an instance of those momentary flashes from M., like those instances already in part recorded, where R. D. would automatically pronounce a name unknown to her but known to M., and then be nonplussed as to how she came to utter it or as to what it signified. S. M. gave a late instance. Someone called up on the 'phone and wished Mrs. P., asked for a certain datum which had been discussed before M. but not before R. D. For a moment the desired fact flashed into R. D.'s mind and she said, "O, I can tell you that." But the moment that she began a conscious attempt to tell it, the fact vanished, and she had to say, "No, I think I have forgotten. I'll ask mother." R. D. came for sleep at 10.30, and I suggested to her in her sleep that she would dream of "papa." The next morning she related a complicated dream in which I appeared as the principal character, though Mrs. P. was also there. *Feb. 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Feb. 8.* R. D. was sent away during breakfast by sensitive feelings, but M. seemed but slightly affected. M. asked for coffee, but did not seem to be inclined to drink it after it was prepared, and presently said, gravely, "I think we'll leave the coffee for the D. to drink—huh? (Yes, I think that will be best.) Yes, we'll leave the coffee for the D." I saw that she was liable to go to sleep, and supported her with my arm. Soon she was asleep, sitting with her head on my shoulder, and S. M. was saying, with pleased interest, "Did you see that? She didn't want the coffee! She is losing her fondness for it." R. D. came at



10 p. m. [614] *Feb. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 15 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Feb. 9. Sunday.* R. D. was here until 9.20 p. m., and came for the night at 10.25. *Feb. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Feb. 10.* At her request I woke R. D. at 7, in order that she might get ready for the arrival of a batch of day-old chicks which came about two hours later. She was very happy caring for them, and staid until 9.25 p. m.

In the evening I learned that R. D. had been cold in the afternoon, and asked S. M. why she had not built a fire. "The fire will not burn for her. (Not burn for her?) I mean that she does not understand how to build it. She puts the sticks close together; she doesn't understand about crossing them so that the fire can get through. (How do you know?) I know how S. D. did it. She learned how." It is a fact long familiar to me that R. D. does not seem to understand the art of building a fire. But here is S. M. who understands perfectly well. R. D. came at 11.15 p. m. *Feb. 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Feb. 11.* R. D. remained until 9.25 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.35. *Feb. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 12.* R. D. rose at 7 and staid until 9 in the evening. After a while M. told me in her childish dialect that R. D. went before she had gotten the chickens fixed for the night, and so would come awake tonight and perform the task before sleeping. Later M. said that she could see that R. D. was worrying underneath about the chickens, and that because R. D. was worrying she, M., would be able to go under and let R. D. come for awhile and do the work, and that she thought this would be best.

---

614. Formerly the time of an alternation was set down exactly if I had looked at a watch or clock at the very moment, otherwise, and with growing frequency, it put at the 5 or 0 nearest. But at this time, and thenceforward the practice was to set down the time at the nearest 5 or 0 in all cases. Even with this allowance it is interesting to observe how often the alternations came at the quarters of the hour; more frequently than might be supposed after this explanation, for they often came at one or another of the quarter-hour chimings of the clock. For example, the alternations from the morning of Feb. 8 to the evening of Feb. 9, were as follows: 9.15 a. m., 8.45 p. m., 10.30 p. m., 8.30 a. m., 8.45 a. m., 8.00 p. m. and 10.00 p. m.



At 9.45 therefore, M. "went under", and R. D. came with no appearance of surprise and said, "I must get my chickens ready", but afterwards remarked to Mrs. P., "I must have been worrying to come as I did." The task took only about 5 minutes, whereupon M. was back, and R. D. came finally at 10.40. *Feb. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Feb. 13.* A deal of bustle connected with getting ready for a guild booth at the Orange Show banished R. D. at 5.55 p. m. for 15 minutes. She came for the night at 10.05. *Feb. 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Feb. 14.* R. D. was here until 8.45 p. m. In the evening M. happened in the natural course of some incident to raise both arms above her head. Then her face changed, and, repeating the gesture, which is the first in one of her childhood movement songs, she sang it through, with the accompanying action. I asked, "(What made you sing that?) Because I did *that*", she said, repeating the initial gesture. The accidental use of some such word as "down" will still make her slip into the verbal automatism "It's all fallin' down." I can switch her from that easiest by running her upon the track of another automatism, "Hear little birdie." Once started on this she will twist her head around just as she did when she first uttered it, irrespectively of whether there is any bird in the room or not. After a few repetitions of "Do you hear little birdie, babo?", in a high, musical, cajoling voice, she ceases, because the first time she said this, in order to change my mood, she ceased when she found that I was cheerful.

Her "reading" is a mere vestigial performance. She seldom looks at individual words, but, unless she is looking at pictures, her eyes generally merely travel down the column, half closed, as if she were in a dreamy state. But she is aware when the article goes over to another page, for she still asks me to find the place. She still pretends to laugh at "a joke" that R. D. has read. And while she habitually does not really read, she has not lost the power to read, for I asked her to read one of the jokes that R. D. had read, and she did so in slow, hesitating fashion. It is to be suspected that she could not read an item that R. D. had not first read even so well as that, if at all. If I read her a joke which



R. D. has not first read, she watches me, and if I laugh, she also laughs in the forced manner which has no humor in it. If I do not laugh, she evinces no knowledge that the item is humorous.

S. M. remarked that R. D., stimulated by her chickens to wake and rise independently of assistance, usually at about 7.30, does so without reluctance, while formerly she dreaded rising. She thinks this another step in the forward journey.

At 10.10 p. m. R. D. came, but had to rise several times during the night, not being well. *Feb. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Feb. 15:* Consequently M. came this morning, but for only 15 minutes. R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Feb. 14-15: 2 alt. R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Feb. 16. Sunday.* R. D. was here until my return in the evening at 8.45. I came in very quietly, R. D., was reading; I spoke, and it was M. who looked up. S. M. afterwards said, "She did not hear you when you came in. She was not conscious of hearing you at all, as she went when you spoke. (When did you hear me?) I heard you on the porch and all the way in." On the other hand, according to S. M., "She has got so that she can interpret all the little cries of the chickens. She hears them sometimes when I don't, or at least when I haven't noticed it. She knows when one of them gets caught, or is in trouble, by the sound it makes, when they are hungry, etc. I don't know the distinction in their cries—what they mean." So while S. M. knows R. D.'s thoughts, knows for example what a chicken-cry means after R. D. has mentally interpreted it, it by no means follows that she has all R. D.'s mental powers.

Then S. M. and I conversed a little about herself. In order to fish I said, " (I wish I understood you better.) Well, I am not a spirit. (I don't intimate that you are. But what I want to know is how you know what happened, or have memories reaching back of, when you came. For I understand that you are going to tell me sometime what happened before you came.) Don't you know that a personality can go from one person to another? (No, I certainly do not.) Well, it can. I don't mean such a one as S. D. But M., for example, if she had become fully developed—a personality gets to be more like the



real person when fully developed [615]—if she had gone on and developed until she was out most of the time, and then had been suddenly forced out,—and you could have done it, though it would probably have ruined R. D.—she could have gone to some other person. (Well, I never heard of anything like that before. To what sort of a person would she have gone?) To some nervously weak person. (You reason this out?) No, I know it. (You know it from your experience?) I didn't say that."

R. D. came at 10.10 and I suggested her dreaming about me. She dreamed that I was making a chicken-coop for her, which it had been planned that I should do the next day. *Feb. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Feb. 17.* R. D. was out until 9.05 p. m. S. M. remarks that R. D. is getting over the tendency, inherited from S. D., of working on certain tasks at too great a speed and of continuing them too long at a time. The monthly period began today, painlessly. R. D. came at 10.40. *Feb. 16-17: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Feb. 18.* M. was here 5.35-5.50 p. m. To ascertain more of S. M.'s curious notions regarding the migratory powers of personalities, I asked " (You think that M. could have emigrated to someone else?) I don't think it, I know it, if she had become developed so as to be out most of the time (And could S. D.?) No, there was nothing to develop. She split off when R. D. was already grown; M. when R. D. was a baby. (But M. could have

---

615. Subsequently to recording S. M.'s statement, I find in Sidis' and Goodhart's "Multiple Personality" (page 384) that in the Felida X. case, where the secondary personality gradually consumed a greater and greater share of the conscious life until it nearly monopolized it, "it gradually changed as to mood or disposition, not presenting such a marked contrast to the primary state." Here is a confirmation, so far as a single historical case can confirm, of S. M.'s statement. How did S. M. know? Certainly not from reading about cases of dissociation,—not the slightest knowledge of any of the standard cases was ever possessed by any of the group, other than the very few points which I myself imparted in regard to the "Beauchamp case". Not from conversation,—as I have said, what I had remarked in their hearing was very little, and could not have included a point which I did not myself know; and it is certain from all the circumstances surrounding the case, that D. never had an acquaintance besides me who could and would have conversed with her upon the scientific aspects of dissociation.



migrated?) Yes, had she become developed to her highest point. (Why not earlier?) Because she was only a part of a mind then. Fully developed she would be a complete mind. Then if suddenly forced out, she would go to someone else. Of course one would not want to try the experiment. (Well, that is a new doctrine.) Is it? It is true, nevertheless. (Suppose I say that I cannot believe your statement?) I don't ask you to. The proof is coming when I identify myself. (Why is it necessary to wait?) Because it would not be well for you to learn what I am going to let you know, at this stage. It would mix you up, you would not be so well able to care for the case. (All right, take your time.) "

S. M. shows no desire to converse on the subject of herself, though she will answer up to the limit that she seems to have set for herself. Sometimes when the talk is general, with no intention on my part of testing her ideas, she will casually, and with every appearance of not noticing that she has done so, let drop a word or phrase which makes one mentally inquire, "How do you know that, if you do know it? How could you know it? Whence do you derive the calm assurance? What are you, anyway?" But she goes on, never reverting to the word or phrase, unless, as in a few recorded instances, I take it up and ask to have it explained, when she presents the subtle appearance of being conscious that she has dropped a stitch, appears a little hesitant and embarrassed, and seems to attempt to gloss the matter over, or to treat it with evasion. There never has been manifested by S. M. the slightest detectible desire to excite my wonder, admiration or curiosity. Never has she shown the slightest disposition to shape her expressed opinions and allegations after my notions. And if one should suppose that after all I am unconsciously suggesting ideas and leading her on, it is sufficient to point to her doctrine of migrating personalities, a doctrine, which I never heard of, never thought of, and do not believe. [616]

---

616. On Feb. 16, 1913, the following peculiarities of S. M. were noted:

"Sleeping Margaret,

(1) Is not suggestible, or at least is as free from suggestibility, seemingly, as anyone can be.

(2) Has no automatisms.

(3) Exhibits no phases of development or declension in her mentality,



In the evening M. wanted the newspaper which R. D. had not read, probably because R. D. had thought of reading it before she went. A long hunt was made for it, and M. came perilously near tears. At last it was found and M. said, "My wants are all applied." R. D. came at 10.40, and dreamed about *hunting for a newspaper*. According to my suggestion in her sleep that she sleep late tomorrow morning, she did so. *Feb. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Feb. 19.* R. D. rose at 8.15 and went at 2 p. m. of self-reproach because I told her that I thought she was drinking too much coffee—one cup a day is the maximum of what I consider safe for her, and none would be better. R. D. came at 10.30 p. m. *Feb. 18-19: men. per began; 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 40 m.*

*Feb. 20.* At noon I took R. D. to the Orange Show for one and a half hours, the quietest part of the day, but still she was made somewhat nervous. Mrs. P. was assisting the ladies in the booth, and did not get back until 10.30 p. m. M., whenever she woke, would inquire, "Is the mother los'?", speaking with tragic intensity, but her very excitement, according to S. M., kept her asleep most of the time. Once, after an interval of silence, I asked S. M. what she was thinking of, and she replied, "I am watching her thoughts. She is intent on the mother, alert to hear her come. She is much agitated about her." When Mrs. P. came, M. sprang up, clapped her hands, laughed loudly, and yelled again and again, "Here's the mor'r! Come here, mor'r." S. M. told me that I had better tell R. D. in her sleep to put on warmer underclothing, as she had changed to others too early. I did so, after R. D. came at 10.45. *Feb. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h. 20 m.*

*Feb. 21.* R. D. put on thicker underclothing, never suspecting except that her memory of old events and relations is not as clear as it formerly was. She explains this by saying "That is because I formerly had nothing to do when I wasn't watching their minds but to think of the past. Now I have you to talk to, and so don't think of past events so much."

(4) Undergoes no frights from trivial or imaginary causes, and exhibits no delusions aside from the subject of her own nature and origin with circumstances connected therewith, and the alleged migratory powers of personalities."



the source of the determination to do so. The bustle of the Orange Show affects her. R. D. came at 10.25. *Feb. 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Feb. 22.* The bustle of the Orange Show, Mrs. P. going in and out in a hurry,—many calls,—these affected R. D.'s nerves sadly, evincing itself in a facial expression reminiscent of a year ago, and a disposition to sit unoccupied for considerable periods, swinging one foot. Consequently the number of alternations increased. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *Feb. 21-22: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 40 m.; M., 3 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 23. Sunday.* M. came at 2.30, and R. D. returned at 3 and staid until 8.30, almost to a dot each time. She does not watch the clock, but it announces the quarters with a silvery chime.

M. reclined for a number of minutes with a look of intense concentration, finally she asked, "What of month is tomor'r? (The 24th.) Isn't it the 27th? (No, the 24th.) Didn't D. get her chickens on the 9th, and wasn't that Sunday? (Yes.) And isn't tomor'r the third Monday from then? (Yes.) Well, isn't three times 9 27? (Yes.) Well, explain it to me." I found that M. had the impression that there are nine days in a week. S. M. says that R. D. had been thinking when the 27th would be. But at least it looks as though some vestiges of M.'s power to reckon were left.

**M.'s Memory of Even Her Last Period out Fading.** M. seldom now shows active recollection of even her last previous period out, and gets nearly all her knowledge of the late past from what she sees in the mind of R. D. as it slowly goes down, and even that is evanescent.

I got M. to indulge today in a game of spelling, taking my turn at it. To her it was nothing but a game, not "testing", or she would probably not have permitted it. She can spell such words as "man", "cow", and "cat", but words like "calf", "house", and "church" are now beyond her, and she would shyly say, "No-o, babo, I can't 'pell that." When fully awake and speakingly glibly and with seeming intelligence, she can anytime be sent off on a verbal automatism. For example, say "The scissors have fallen down", and she goes off on "The bed is all



fallin' down", and repeats with increasing appearance of obsession until I divert her attention. Or, if she gets into a whimpering mood, now uncommon, but brought on sometimes after R. D. has been nervous and depressed, I can say, "Hear the pretty chicken"—a newer form of her expression "Hear the pretty birdie", and instantly her eyes will turn in the direction in which she turned when she *did* hear the chicken and first uttered the phrase, and she repeats it several times in exactly the same high, wheedling, childish tones. But it is curious to observe her as the automatism loses its force, suddenly alter her expression, stop and listen, and then, in her ordinary voice, say, "No, no chicken." Then she at once turns her attention to other matters.

She is exacting, following her impulses like a baby. "What for you got to eat?", she inquires, and as the catalog is rehearsed, rejects one article after another until one is mentioned that she wants. Very rarely she specifies some article independently, always, I think, something that R. D. had felt a desire for, and if that article is not in the house and cannot be obtained, unless her attention can be diverted—a difficult matter in this case—there is more or less trouble. If she wants the paper that I am reading she takes it from me without ceremony. She laughs, but is inexorable. Of course, I am too well trained to dissent. The nearest to a "tantrum" which she has had for a long while is to draw down the corners of her mouth and whimper without tears, and complain peevishly, when some article of food that she spontaneously announces that she wants is unobtainable. This happens very seldom. R. D. came for the night at 10.05. *Feb. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Feb. 24.* A loud noise brought M. in the morning. When R. D. came at night, at 9.35, it was awake, the second time that she has done so in months, and both times it was the auto-suggestion of an unfulfilled task in reference to the chickens which caused it, and in both cases, also, M. preannounced the event and the reason for it. Both times R. D. lay down and as I said "sleep!", her head waggled in the funny fashion which she automatically derived from M., and both times the wagging of the head surprised, almost startled R. D., who laughed, and said,



"What did I do that for?" *Feb. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Feb. 25.* R. D. went at 11.45. The weather is rainy, and that affects her spirits, perhaps an inheritance from S. D., to whom it used to give the fidgets.

I had a little spelling-game with M. She spelled "mat", "not", "dog", and several other small words which children are first taught. But when I gave out such words as "clock" and "chair", she would evade by saying "I don't feel for spelling clock (or chair)." I propounded "eye", and she was helpless. "No" she spelled, but when she was asked to spell "know,—to know anything", she spelled it the same way. I gave out "nose" and she said, ingratiatingly, "See pretty nose, babo?", putting her finger to her nose. When I persisted in asking how it was spelled she promptly went to sleep, and S. M. broke into almost uncontrollable laughter at the "See pretty nose." Afterwards I happened to raise my hand and look at it while M. held a magazine squarely interposed between us. Before she lowered the magazine she asked, "What for looking at your hand, babo?" Had the magazine not shut off the view a casual observer would have been sure that she saw the movement, though I have many times proved that she cannot see more than a foot away. But even a casual observer would not have contended that she could see through the magazine. There remains no solution but that she heard the air-currents and marvelously interpreted them. This sort of thing she is constantly doing. But she also detects changes in my expression when I am several feet distant. How? Is there a seeing underneath her blindness, the results of which bubble up into her consciousness? But beyond her limits she never shows signs of being aware of inanimate objects, unless they are familiar objects in their accustomed places, or are in motion. Can it be possible that my breathing undergoes subtle changes with the alterations in facial expression, and that she is able to interpret those changes? R. D. came for the night at 10.35. *Feb. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Feb. 26.* R. D. was out until 5.10 p. m., then from 5.15 to 8.55, and came for sleep at 10.25. *Feb. 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*



*Feb. 27.* R. D. was out until 7.30 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.25. *Feb. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Feb. 28.* R. D. was here until 8.55 p. m. M. looked at pictures in a paper, and in turning the leaves got the paper upside down. Pointing to a picture, she asked in bewilderment, "What's that?" I told her that it was upside down, but she did not understand. I reversed the paper. "Oh-o-oh'", she cried, as the picture became intelligible, "how did you do that? (I turned it around.) Do it again." I did it several times before she was satisfied, and still the process did not become intelligible to her, and she seemed to look upon me as a wonderworker. R. D. was here at 10.40 p. m. *Feb. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m. Average daily total of R. D. during February, 1913, 22 h. 4 m.*

*Mar. 1.* Owing to Mrs. P.'s not being well and speaking nervously, R. D. was perturbed, and had three departures. M. showed little effect from R. D.'s state of feeling. R. D. came at 10.25, and dreamed of the subject suggested to her in the beginning of her sleep. *Feb. 28-Mar. 1: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h.; M., 3 h. 45 m.*

*Mar. 2. Sunday.* R. D. was out all day to 9.05 p. m., came for the night at 10.20, and had a bad dream, almost a nightmare. *Mar. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Mar. 3.* I neglected to wake R. D. at the proper time, and she went at 8.15 a. m. She returned at 9 and remained exactly 14 hours, coming for sleep at 10.15. *Mar. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h.*

*Mar. 4.* R. D. remained until 9 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.20. She did not have so good a night as usual, probably because she was worrying about my grippy cold. *Mar. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Mar. 5.* The worry continuing, M. came at 9.30 a. m., R. D. was out from 9.50 a. m. to 8.45 p. m., and came at 10.15. She dreamed about fire, etc. *Mar. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Mar. 6.* M. came at exactly noon, since my illness continues and R. D. is still ill at ease about it. A doctor was to call to see me. M. said, "Let him come in here, I'll be as still as a mouse."



She sat on the lounge, apparently busily reading a paper, and paid no attention when he nodded in her direction, nor spoke while he was there,—indeed, she must have appeared odd, so engrossed was she in the paper. After he went she praised herself for a “splendid child”, and said, “I was pwetending to wead all ‘e time.”

R. D. came for the night at 9.50, and, in order to break up the series of bad dreams, I suggested dreaming of finding flowers in a mountain canon, and she dreamed this and other pleasant things. *Mar. 5-6: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Mar. 7.* M. is occasionally concerned about my illness, which is not relaxing, but is none the less exacting in demanding whatever she wants. In the evening I spoke about the light, meaning the electric light, and M. exclaimed, “I’s a light. (What do you mean? Who said so?) Somefin’ inside of me. (When?) O that was long ago, before you was D.’s papa. Somefin’ said inside of me that I is a light. I just thought of it.” Whatever the explanation of this utterance, the occult significance of which is obvious enough, it was made in all sincerity. [617] Incidentally it illustrates the fact that although M. is no longer aware that I was not always D.’s papa, for example, she is able to assert it when the fact is involved in a memory naturally evoked by association of ideas. Ask her who Ella is and she cannot tell, but if one of the sayings or events of the day calls forth an old incident in which Ella plays a part, she is able to relate glibly what Ella did and said. R. D. came at 9.25 p. m. *Mar. 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 5 m.; M., 3 h. 30 m.*

*Mar. 8.* R. D. was out until 1.05 p. m., and from 1.25 to 9. She came for sleep at 10.20. *Mar. 7-8: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Mar. 9. Sunday.* I am nearly well again, and R. D.’s spirits improved accordingly. She remained all day until 9 p. m., and came again at 10.40. *Mar. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Mar. 10.* All three of us took trolley to Highland, and had a long walk in search of wild flowers, which proved conspicuous

617. This should be taken in connection with what is recorded in Chapter XII.



by their absence. On her return the thyroid gland, which is habitually responsive to over-exertion and to emotional disturbance, was found to be much enlarged. The long walk and the disappointment caused her departure at 3.05 p. m. A desk which had been ordered for her, of a type which she had coveted for many years, arrived after R. D.'s return, and she flew to the shops to store it with paper, ink and other materials. A little later she announced that the brooding canary had hatched her eggs. It was the pleasure from these two causes, according to S. M., which next caused her to go, at 6.40. Out again in the evening and enjoying conversation with congenial callers, she went at 10.25, and had pains in the night from digestional disturbance. *Mar. 9-10: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Mar. 11.* In consequence of the indisposition, M. came in the morning. At 1.05 R. D. went from some cause which I forget, but which made her "too happy", according to M.

M. has a bag of very small pretzels which I keep in a closet. Generally, of late, she asks for three in the evening. Three halves are accepted without demur, though if I offer two whole ones she demands the third. If two are broken so as to form six pieces she is delighted, and in that case pretends that they are chocolate dates, and will cry, "O, six ploc'late dates! I am getting a lot!" R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Mar. 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Mar. 12.* There is some indigestion today, and M. asserted that she took six pills last night, but her eyes twinkled as she said it. S. M. says that M. cannot help this betraying signal when she fibs. Once only have I known M. to say, after a whopper, "Ain't I a liar!" R. D. came for the night at 9.50. *Mar. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Mar. 13.* R. D. was here to 5.40 p. m., from 5.55 to 9.05, and came for the night at 10. *Mar. 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Mar. 14.* R. D. was out all day to 8.25 p. m., and came again at 9.50. *Mar. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Mar. 15.* R. D. was out to 6.25 p. m., from 6.35 to 9.05, and came for sleep at 10.05. *Mar. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*



*Mar. 16. Sunday.* M. was brought in the morning by an accidental loud noise. R. D. came at night, at 9.35, and the monthly period began in the night. *Mar. 15-16: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Mar. 17.* R. D. was inclined to think that she "forgot" in the night, but was not sure. I thought it strange, if that were the case, that M. did not cry out, as she has been trained to do. When M. came for the second time, in the evening, she began looking at pictures, and suddenly cried out, precisely as though she were contradicting an assertion just made, "I didn't either! I didn't!" Asked what she meant, she said that she had just seen in R. D.'s mind that the latter thought that she (M.) had come in the night, whereas she had not. S. M. corroborated M. R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Mar. 16-17: men. per began; 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Mar. 18.* R. D. was out to 11.20 a. m., from just noon to 9.30 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.45. *Mar. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Mar. 19.* R. D. was here until 8.05 a. m., from 8.15 a. m., to 8.55 p. m., and returned for the night at 9.55. *Mar. 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Mar. 20.* R. D. was here all day up to 9.20 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.45. *Mar. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Mar. 21.* M. did not arrive until 7.30 p. m. Apart from the automatic writing, experiments in which are recorded in Chapter XII, M. has not written a word for many weeks, and S. M. thinks that she will never be able to write again. S. M. also called attention to the fact that M. gets tired from very light exertion. If she comes sitting up at the table she is apt within ten minutes to become querulous, and to call out, "Shut up!", "You greaser!", and the like, unless she is gotten to lie down and sleep. Her sense of property is not gone, though it is diminished. Mrs. P. gave her three imitation Easter chickens, and she was delighted, though she soon directed that they be put among her things, which she never asks to see. But afterwards Mrs. P. told R. D. that the proprietress of a store had playfully sent them to her, that is to R. D. Afterwards M. saw this in R. D.'s thoughts and was



irritated, declaring that she did not want R. D.'s things, and requiring that the chickens should be removed from her drawer. This was yesterday. This evening Mrs. P. gave M. two miniature hens. M. suspiciously asked, "Were they given to the R. D. first? . . . Did you pay for 'em? . . . Real money?" Assured on these points she concluded, "It's all right, then." Mrs. P. then handed her a couple of toy rabbits, and a similar series of questions was asked. Then the articles were put in her drawer, and will probably never be seen by her again, unless she adds another codicil to her will. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. For sometime she has slept better than ever, scarcely waking, until I wake her at about 8 a. m. *Mar. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Mar. 22.* M. first came at 7.45 p. m. While she was asleep Mrs. P. built a fire. M., waking, said "I heard the mother making a fire", at the same time gesturing in the direction of the window, which she was facing. "(Where?) There", pointing towards the window. "(No, she is on the other side. Don't you hear her?)" She listened a moment, looked embarrassed, and hastily exclaimed, "Hear pretty birdie, babo?" S. M. afterwards remarked, "She heard the mother when she was asleep, and was confused. It made her ashamed to be caught in a mistake." R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Mar. 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Mar. 23. Sunday.* R. D. wished to go to the early celebration of Communion in the church, but S. M. had steadily advised against permitting it, and I induced the former to give up the plan. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Mar. 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Mar. 24.* R. D. was here to 8 a. m. from 8.25 a. m. to 9 p. m., and came for sleep at 10. *Mar. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Mar. 25.* R. D. was out until 9.30 p. m., returning at 10.45. *Mar. 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Mar. 26.* M. was present for 5 minutes in the morning, and came at 9.05 at night. R. D. returned at 10.05. *Mar. 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Mar. 27.* R. D. was out until 8.50 p. m. A search that I made



for an error in the keeping of my accounts excited M., though apparently only a little, yet enough, probably, to account for her uncommonly long stay.

**M. Utterly Loses Ability to Write.** In the course of the evening she scribbled some meaningless marks at the top of a magazine leaf, and said that she was finishing her will. I told her that she had better put her name at the bottom, and she scrawled at the bottom of the leaf much as a baby will do, only there was a vague resemblance to writing. S. M. declares that M. believed that she was really writing, and added her own opinion that M. can no longer write. She went on, "And I don't believe that she can read any more. I can't see that she gets a word." R. D. came at 11.10 p. m. *Mar. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*Mar. 28.* R. D., here until 8.55 p. m., returned at 9.40. *Mar. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Mar. 29.* R. D., here until 9.20 p. m., and back for sleep at 10.20. *Mar. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Mar. 30. Sunday.* M. did not come until 9.30 p. m. At 6.45 p. m. Mrs. P. and I went to the adjoining city of Colton, and missed the intended car back, so that we arrived home at about 10. We found M. crying, as she had apparently been doing for some time. She said, "I was so lonesome! I have been here hours and hours, waiting for you. The R. D. cried and cried." S. M. told me that R. D. was somewhat disappointed when we did not arrive at the time she expected us, and promptly went, but did not cry. She felt enough disappointment, however, to set M. off. Even M.'s emotion was gentle, else R. D. would not have returned after M.'s crying, so early as 10.45. *Mar. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Mar. 31.* When R. D., instead of waiting to be awakened at 8, wakes earlier, it is generally because she has charged her mind with a plan to do something early in the morning. But sometimes her high resolves to wake early are in vain—she sleeps on.

**M. Ceases to be Able to Sing.** Twice in the evening M. indulged in some very melancholy chanting, of a species that I do not remember to have heard from her lips before. The first time I inquired what she was doing. "Singin'. Don't you know



singin'? (Oh, was that singing?) Yes. Don't you like my singin'? (Not very well.)" She had no appearance of "pretending." At the second outburst of this strange sort of song I suggested that she sing her old "pigeon song." She replied, "I don't think that I feel for singin' about the pigeons. (Then sing the 'frog song.') I don't think I feel for singin' the frog song. I damn sleepy." Several times of late she has uttered the word "damn", in the most innocent fashion. This puzzles S. M., who says that M., and of course R. D., never used to employ it. This evening S. M. said, "I don't think that she is able to sing any more."

R. D. came at 9.25 p. m. *Mar. 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 55 m. Average daily record of R. D. during March, 1913, 22 h. 17 m.*

*Apr. 1.* R. D. was here until 9.20 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.15. *Mar. 31-Apr. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Apr. 2.* R. D. was out until 6.30 p. m., and from 7 to 9. I tried to get M. to sing her little songs, but she made excuses, and finally whirled about and went to sleep. S. M. said, "She thought that she had better go to sleep if you were going to talk about singing. She isn't ready to admit that she can't sing any more. She won't do that until she has to." After M. woke I made a veiled allusion to her singing, and she began to say, in wheedling, infantile tones, "Hear pretty birdie, babo?" At 10.05 R. D. was here for the night. *Apr. 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Apr. 3.* R. D. was out until 8.45 p. m. Her spirits have been almost uniformly excellent for some time, due largely, I think, to the great improvement in the health of Mrs. P. She came for the night at 9.50. *Apr. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Apr. 4.* R. D., here to 8.20 p. m., back for the night at 9.20. *Apr. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Apr. 5.* R. D. was out until 6.05 p. m., was tired and went for 5 minutes, and finally came at 9.35. *Apr. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Apr. 6. Sunday.* R. D. was here until 9.05 p. m. It would, I imagine, be startling to a stranger to see R. D. come for the



night. Often M. will be laughing and chattering up to the very signal, which is the goodnight kiss which she gives me, when she doesn't forget it. In the same instant the tumult of sound breaks off abruptly and completely, and, as the mentality of M. ceases to control the muscles of the neck and R. D. comes asleep, the head rolls over to one side, and perfect silence and immobility succeed. I can hear the after-echoes of M.'s clatter and laughter in my brain, and even to this day the sudden transition sometimes gives me an uncanny feeling. R. D. came for the night at 10.25. *Apr. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Apr. 7.* All three of us took a walk of several miles in a hill-canon, but leisurely. R. D. went at 9.45 p. m., and returned at 10.40. *Apr. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Apr. 8.* M. first came at 8 p. m. She saw a small black spot on her sleeve, and exclaimed, "A bug! a bug!" For the sake of the experiment, I seemingly paid no attention. Nor did she appear to be speaking to me. She repeated the words, slowly, over and over, with growing intensity. Her eyes were riveted to the spot, and presented a strained, almost a hypnotized expression, and this and the tones gave warning. I said, "No, that is not a bug; it is only a spot on your dress", but the monotonous iteration went on. I drew the sleeve out of her range of vision, and her tones changed to relief, as she said, "Bug all gone", and the incident was over. R. D. came at 10.45 p. m. *Apr. 7-8 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 2 h. 45 m.*

*Apr. 9.* R. D. was out until 10.25 p. m., going just as Mrs. P. and I returned from Colton. She had not expected us earlier, and M. came in perfect humor. The latter handed me the book that R. D. had been reading, and asked me what R. D. had read. Certainly until very recently M. has always been able to tell what R. D. had just been reading. I pointed out the tale that I thought R. D. had been engaged upon and asked, "(Didn't she read this?) Asa know. Ah can't read that." Again S. M. gives it as her opinion that M. cannot read a word.

Furthermore, S. M. informed me that R. D. has cried the last two or three Sundays when left at home. "I think that you had better let her go to church in the forenoon now, but not in the evening, when M. might come. I think that she can stand it, if



she and Mother sit near the back, so that she can go out as soon as the sermon is over. At least it will be better than it will be to get melancholy. I am afraid of that. But tell her to go out directly after the sermon." R. D. came for sleep at 11.10. *Apr. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Apr. 10.* R. D. persisted until 8.50 p. m., and returned at 10.10. *Apr. 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Apr. 11.* R. D. was delighted when she learned that she could go to church service again, Sunday forenoons. Here until 9.15 p. m., she came for the night at 10.15. In the night she was taken violently ill, but endured the stomach pains for several hours without calling anyone. Then M. came and dutifully called out, though she herself did not seem to feel the pains much. Some medicine afforded help, and R. D. slept considerably, though in some pain. The illness was traced to some ham, of which R. D. and I ate, and which made us both sick. *Apr. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Apr. 12.* There was some illness today, which naturally proved an unstable one, M. coming in the morning, and four times thereafter. I asked M. if she is going to heaven when she leaves. "No. I would sting the Lord." R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Apr. 11-12: 10 alt.: R. D., 20 h.; M., 2 h. 55 m.*

*Apr. 13. Sunday.* R. D. is not over the effects of her illness, and I can perceive that she is worrying about me, and studying my face for any signs that I am concealing symptoms of my own illness. She was here until 5.25 p. m., and from 5.45 to 8.50. Owing to her illness she did not attempt to go to church..

**Marks of Declension in M. During Three Weeks.** S. M. remarks that M. has faded perceptibly to her during the last three weeks. The following four points represent the latest milestones marking M.'s retreat.

(1) Absolute cessation of the power to read. She still goes through the movements of reading, and really looks at pictures, with considerable enjoyment.

(2) Loss of the power to sing. This dates from several weeks ago. Asked to sing, she makes excuses, or tries to divert my mind, or seeks refuge in sleep. Sometimes the precipitancy with which she goes to sleep on the mention of singing is very amus-



ing. Once, while asleep, M. said archly, "Sing about pigeons, babo." S. M. declares that M. believes that whatever she has lost the power to do I also must be unable to do.

(3) Increased disrelish for hearing reading aloud. She will listen as if fascinated for a minute or two, but then, wearied by inability mentally to keep up, and even to understand many of the words, she demands that the reading shall stop, and becomes irritated if it continues a moment longer.

(4) An increasing tendency to keep up a running talk, or at least to make some remark every few seconds. Perhaps this is in compensation for her losing the ability to read. If I do not pay attention she is apt to get sensitive, her lip draws down pathetically, and she says, "Don't you like your Margaret to talk to you?"

When M. repeats R. D.'s thoughts or what R. D. has read, it is almost as though R. D. herself were speaking, M. knows perfectly well that she is echoing R. D.'s thoughts, and often says, "The R. D. thought (or 'thunk') that", or "The D. read that." Sometimes her attention is attracted in the midst of her fluent rehearsal, by some name of a person or place which she herself has forgotten, and she will pause to interject, "Who (or what) was that?" If I do not answer, she may say, for example, "Somebody that the R. D. knew." Again she may come to a character in the rehearsal whose name R. D. probably did not mentally utter, whereupon she will hesitate, and with an embarrassed half-laugh say, "some girl (or man), I don't know who." Then, when she begins to talk out her own thoughts, she instantly relapses into her own dialect of a small child.

She is very liable to be startled, when objects are unexpectedly intruded into her field of vision. A newspaper passed before her face will cause her to cry, "Somefin' hit me!", and generally to fall asleep. A finger pushed up before her eyes will startle her, and she will exclaim, "O, a big stick!"

Much of the time, S. M. declares, "M.'s mind is a blank", "she is not thinking." Yet she may be rehearsing R. D.'s thoughts glibly, but this may be automatic. S. M.'s criterion seems to be that she, S. M., is not able at such times to see any active thoughts on the part of M. Only occasionally is S. M.



now able to interpret such of M.'s utterances as may be puzzling to me, and this is the reason which she gives. Formerly S. M. seldom experienced any difficulty in interpreting M.'s thoughts and sayings. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Apr. 12-13: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Apr. 14.* The effect of the illness is still seen in M.'s coming in the morning and twice afterwards. R. D. came for the night at 9.45. *Apr. 13-14: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Apr. 15.* M. was out 6.40-7.10 p. m. and again from 9.15 until R. D.'s return for the night at 10.20. A tendency to wake at about 4 a. m., which has lately developed, was tonight broken up by suggestion. *Apr. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Apr. 16.* M. first came at 8 p. m. She pointed at some comic pictures which R. D. had been looking at and said "Do it." I found that she wanted me to read what was printed over the pictures. But she could not understand the humor of either pictures or text, and laughed only when I laughed, and then mechanically. R. D. came at 9.30. *Apr. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Apr. 17.* M. came in the morning. Not only does she amusingly dodge the subject of singing, even to seeking swift refuge in sleep, but she also hates to hear singing. No longer does she ask me to sing "Nicodemus", and if I persist in humming for a few moments she becomes querulous and threatens to wax tearful. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *Apr. 16-17: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Apr. 18.* I asked M. if something she had spoken of R. D. had been thinking about. "A-ah" (No) (Perhaps you saw it in her thoughts of yesterday.) No, the D. isn't a film. (A film?) She isn't a film. You can't unroll her." While M. was asleep I sneezed, and scattered quite a spray. M. ejaculated, "O, it's rainin'! There's a leak in the roof." Waking soon after she said, "O babo, it rained." R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Apr. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Apr. 19.* R. D. came at 11.50 p. m. *Apr. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Apr. 20. Sunday.* R. D. went to church this morning to her delight, and suffered no ill consequences.



M. came at 4.10, and while she was asleep I pressed her hand several times, bringing the automatic response at every pressure, "A-a-ah." But presently she became aware of a disturbance, and ejaculated, "O gee!", in a disgusted tone, followed by "Greaser!" By many and various tests I have demonstrated that M. cannot see more than 14 inches at most directly before her. And yet she is conscious of my expression at almost any distance. She says that she "feels it." Is it, after all, a form of telepathy? And sometimes some puzzling incident like the following takes place. Several letters fell from my pocket to the floor, not nearer than two and a half feet from her eyes. She leaned over and picked them up, without fumbling, and handed them to me. But all such incidents, so far as I can remember, occurred in reference to *moving* objects. The letters did not fall in a single heap. Can it be that she so correctly interpreted the sound of their striking the floor that she was thus able to locate them so directly? S. M. confesses that she does not know how M. does it. I asked M. herself, and she said, "It is instan—onst—how do you say it, babo? (Instinct?) *Instink?* Do I smell it?" Here she laughed so heartily that there came that tightening of the thyroid gland, and coughing, which often follow M.'s fits of laughter of late. She said it seemed as though some one had gripped her by the throat. There is absolutely no chance that M. is "fooling" about her limitation of vision. Hundreds of observations, casual and experimental, have demonstrated the facts. Ofttimes her inability to find an object, not more than two or three feet away, causes her annoyance and lamentation. Besides, she was for some time very loath to acknowledge her growing disability, as she is now her inability to read and to sing, and denied and concealed it until it became a kind of confidential secret between us two. Even now she will not admit in the presence of Mrs. P. any difficulty in regard to seeing. R. D. came at 9.35 p. m. *Apr. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Apr. 21.* All three went to Redlands, and walked leisurely about Smiley Heights. In the evening S. M. and I discussed the question why R. D. has had a headache after all her late long walks, save that to Sand Creek Canon which was longer than the



one of today. "At Sand Creek Canon", said S. M., "the R. D. ate only fruit, and ate it at intervals. Yesterday she ate biscuits, but ate nothing until nearly 2 p. m. I think it would be better for her to eat fruit, and not to wait too long—to eat it at intervals."

In the evening M. inadvertently admitted that she does not read any more, got embarrassed and tried to take it back, saying, "I can read; can't you see me turn over the pages? I am reading about a BIG BEAR." The article before her had no reference to a bear. Presently she assumed a confidential tone and said softly, "You don't really read, do you babo? You are just lookin', ain't you?" I admitted the impeachment and she was pleased and said, "So'y I; I just lookin' too, babo." But when Mrs. P. came in, she again declared that she was reading about a BIG BEAR. M. pointed to a picture of a baby, and admired it, as she always does pictures of babies. I said "yes, it is a hideous, beautiful baby", assuming a tone of sincere admiration. She repeated the sentence with satisfaction. I grew too bold, and remarked that it was as beautiful as a rhinoceros, forgetting that R. D. has lately talked about that animal. Whether M. recognizes the meaning of the word is doubtful, but she at least knew that it was not suitably chosen, for she shook her head and said, "No, not a rhinoceros." I hastily explained that I meant an ichneumon, and this was satisfactory, for she said "Yes", very contentedly. R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. *Apr. 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Apr. 22.* In consequence of the headache which lasted nearly all night, M. was here in the morning, as well as later in the day. R. D. talked spontaneously about her headache, but without the analytical thoroughness of S. M. The fact that she had eaten fruit at the walk which was not followed by headache seemed not to have occurred to her, but she did think that going without eating too long had something to do with it, since at home she is accustomed to eat a little between meals. "I wish I didn't have to, but you know that I have tried leaving off, and it didn't work well." At 9.25 R. D. came for the night. *Apr. 21-22: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Apr. 23.* R. D. was out until 9.20 p. m. and came for the night at 10.15. *Apr. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 55 m.*



*Apr. 24.* R. D., maintaining herself until 6.10 p. m., was here from 6.25 to 8.45, and came for the night at 9.45. *Apr. 23-24: 4 alt.: 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Apr. 25.* Here until 8.30 p. m., R. D. came for sleep at 9.35. *Apr. 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Apr. 26.* R. D. was out until 9.40 p. m. M. said that R. D. had to "hold on", while I was in another room with a caller. Later Mrs. P. remarked that the portieres were coming down. M. exclaimed, "The bed's all fallin' down." "O no", I responded. She repeated the exclamation, and I, to watch the operation of the automatism, said again, "O no." She squirmed a little, laughed nervously, and said again, "The bed's all fallin' down. (No, it isn't.)" She laughed without humor, and repeated the utterance. This went on for a while, M. hesitating and seeming to try to get away from the obsession, but ever yielding to it, until I feared it would be hard to break up, and said, "Hear the pretty lame chicken?" Several repetitions were required before the new impression got a hold on her, and then she repeated what I had said, seemed to reflect, and added, "No, it's way out-doors", and turned to her paper again. S. M. afterwards said, "She was embarrassed,—that is why she hesitated—but she couldn't stop." R. D. came at 10.30 p. m. *Apr. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Apr. 27. Sunday.* The morning church service had no bad effect. She is almost pathetically happy because of her ability to attend, and S. M. seems pleased that R. D. can do so without harm. M. has expressed no opinion. R. D. came at 10.30 p. m. *Apr. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h.*

*Apr. 28.* R. D. was out until 9 p. m., and came for the night at 10.05. *Apr. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Apr. 29.* In the morning she saw a strange cat kill one of her pullets. She "felt like forgetting", but said to herself, "I will not", and made up her mind to take the incident philosophically. She did some hard work during the day, and staid until a caller had gone in the evening as late as 10.10., M. coming happily.

**Marks of Progress in R. D. of Late.** Today R. D. expressed her pleasure at being able herself to recognize the improvement that she is making of late. I myself observe the fol-



lowing proofs of recently acquired strength in the primary personality. (1) Ability to attend morning church without harm, and with benefit, in that it increases her happiness. (2) Ability to withstand a shock like that of the tragic death of one of her feathered pets, and not "forget." (3) Ability to rise as early, in case of emergency, as 4.50 a. m., and not compensate for the loss of sleep by "forgetting" during the day. (4) Ability to withstand the aforesaid shock, lose sleep, have a very active day, "hold on" without more than the usual difficulty until a late hour, and after more than 24 hours out to yield to a good-humored M. (5) Ability to sleep well on the night following the attack of the cat upon her flock, in spite of her fear that it might be repeated.

S. M. says that it is a good thing for R. D. spontaneously to note her own improvement, and to be cheered thereby. "All that helps." R. D. came at 10.50 p. m. *Apr. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Apr. 30.* R. D. was out until 9 p. m., and came for sleep at 10.20. *Apr. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m. Average daily total of R. D. during April, 1913, 22 h. 39 m.*

*May 1.* R. D. was out until 8.50 p. m., except for about half a minute in the afternoon after being startled by the unexpected crack of a pistol, fired at a marauding cat in the back yard. She came for the night at 9.40. *Apr. 30.-May 1: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 50 m.*

*May 2.* When M. was out for the first time, in the evening, she cried, "A bug! a big bug!", as some insect flew into her face. S. M. says, "When a fly comes near her face it looks as large to her as a butterfly or a bird." The effect upon her of bringing my face swiftly near her own is rather similar to that upon S. D. in her last period. She also cries "do it again!" and laughs hysterically, delighted yet a little scared. R. D. came at 10.30 p. m. *May 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 10 m.; M., 40 m.*

*May 3.* R. D. was here until 8.05 p. m., and came again at 10.30. *May 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*May 4. Sunday.* R. D. attended church, staying until the end of the discourse. At night she came at 9.50. *May 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h.*



*May 5.* Preliminary work was done on a tooth by a dentist today, and a resultant toothache brought M. 4.25-4.55 p. m. M. came again at 8.50 and R. D. returned finally at 9.35. The tooth ached until about 11. *May 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*May 6.* R. D. staid until callers on me in another room had left the house at 9.40 p. m., and came for the night at 10.35. *May 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 55 m.*

*May 7.* In the afternoon I hunted for some time for two articles which are commonly kept in my study, and was hampered somewhat for the need of them, though I had no idea of blaming anyone for their absence. But presently M. came, and immediately broke out crying. I asked her what the trouble was, but it was a minute or two before she could find out from R. D.'s mind the cause of the feeling that had inclined R. D. to the tears which, repressed, had burst forth in M. She then explained, "The D. thinks it was her fault, for she cleaned up the room." With some difficulty I induced her to go into the dining-room and lie down on the couch there, and soon she seemed to become more cheerful. "I am not goin' to cwy any more, am I pabo? (Certainly not.) No, it was a silly thing for Margawet to cwy. But D. thought—", and here she began to cry again, and her emotion in a moment sent her off to sleep. It was strange, were I not accustomed to it, to see that mournful face, all drawn down after the fashion of a grieved child, change in a moment to an expression of utter amusement, [618] and to hear the "a-a-a" of lamentation switch off to ringing laughter. As the lamentation was of the most unmistakable type, accompanied by tears, so the laughter was genuine, almost uncontrollable, as S. M. exclaimed in *her* voice, unfailingly different from that of M, "O, she is too funny!" Presently M. woke, and soon the incident was repeated; she said, "I am not going to cwy any more. But the D. thought—a-a-a", and she was in tears and lamentations again, and again asleep within 15 seconds. Again transformation of face and voice and the laughter of S. M. Still a third time the whole incident

---

618. Not in the moment of going to sleep but five or ten seconds later. A short pause, during which M. got sufficiently somnolent, and suddenly the S. M. consciousness would leap in, as it were, and operate the machinery.



took place. Some 10 minutes later I experimented by saying, "(You won't cry any more.) No, I'm not going to cry any more. (No matter what R. D. thought.)" Her face changed—not to grief, that waited for the formula, but to what resembled the expression of introspection, she said, "D. thought—", and was in tears and wailing again. S. M. said, "She never gets any farther than 'D. thought',—she can't tell what she thought for she goes to sleep too soon."

There was a parish meeting at the house in the evening, and R. D. spent the evening with Mrs. K., whose company is such a tonic to her. She came for the night at 11.30. *May 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*May 8.* The monthly period began today, painlessly. In the evening she had to "hold on" to stay until I dismissed a visitor, and M. came a trifle cross, since R. D. became very tired, owing to staying to so late an hour last night, to her sickness, etc. R. D. returned at 10.30. *May 7-8: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 40 m.*

*May 9.* The dental work was completed this morning. She dreaded it, and as soon as she was seated in the chair and I took her hand, it was felt to be chilling rapidly, and shortly was icy cold. Outwardly she was calm, and in fact was hurt very little, though a headache resulted, which did not pass off until during the night. She came finally at 9.40 p. m. *May 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*May 10.* As we were all returning from an evening call, M. came just as we reached the veranda steps. When she was ensconced on the couch she exclaimed, "Mor-r, there's about the Convention in the paper—an article about the Convention. (What Convention?) Asa no. I don't know *what* Convention. The D. didn't think anything about *what* Convention; she just thought, 'There's a piece about the Convention for the mor'r to read.'" M. had a slightly affronted aspect in saying this. Several times of late, including this evening, M. while sleeping has said something like this, in a loud braggadocio voice, at the same time patting my cheek or hand: "This is MY babo. This isn't YOUR babo. This is MY BABO, not *your* babo." S. M. said that she could see enough of M.'s thought to know that she



was playing that she was talking with S. D. M. often, on waking, repeats what she has said while sleeping. At 10.55 p. m. R. D. arrived. *May 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*May 11. Sunday.* R. D. did not go to church, spontaneously realizing, as both S. M. and M. had previously done, that it would not be best. Cramps brought M. at 1.50 p. m. for 25 minutes. M. began to pat my hand very vigorously, and I stood it with forced calm. A trifle of the old fixed expression came over her features, her hand patted on, and then she looked distressed and appealed to me, "Babo, stop my hand." I held it gently, and the muscles worked on for a few moments and then became still.

S. M. told me that R. D. had taken literally something that Mrs. P. said in a Pickwickian sense. " (Hasn't she found out her mistake yet?) No. (How do you know that the mother didn't mean the words literally?) Because I noticed a little smile when she said it. (And R. D. didn't notice the smile?) No, she didn't notice." R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *May 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*May 12.* Remaining until 8.45 a. m., R. D. came at 10.05 for the night. *May 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*May 13.* Yesterday, on a mountain tramp, I lost a gold watch of old-fashioned make which R. D. had lent me. It had been given, really to M., a number of years ago. This morning I told R. D., and she took the news very philosophically, saying, "I won't think of it, so that the A Phase won't know it. [619] It was her watch; I never cared much about it. I would prefer a little one that I can pin on my dress." M. had not been out more than 10 minutes in the evening when, in the midst of talking, her face took on an introspective expression, and then she broke out into laughter, shaking with glee, and chortling until the tears came. So brokenly that I had difficulty in gathering the words, she explained, "O that Doris! She thunk 'I won't think anything about the watch and that A Phase won't know anything about it.' O ho-o-o-o! And I saw that she thunk that. If she hadn't thunk that I mightn't have known it!" She sobered down

---

619. I had instructed R. D. to eat whatever she craved before Phase A came, else the latter would take over her thought and demand the article. She had also learned that Phase A was getting less and less of her thought.



and continued, "I don't care about the old watch. I've thrown it out of the window often enough, and the S. D. has fetched it in again. I've broke it and she had it fixed most everywhere." S. M. afterwards remarked, "Just the same, it may be that her laughing at R. D. saved her from getting mad on her own account. It is very noticeable that M. is getting more and more subordinate to R. D.'s thoughts and wishes, less inclined to do things which are annoying to the latter. R. D. is pleased that she is now able to keep her room, which she has decorated with a new rug, curtains, etc., neat, since M. no longer throws things about, and is even careful about her clothes, generally speaking. R. D. came at 10.55 p. m. *May 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*May 14.* R. D. has a rule to brush her teeth every evening before the arrival of M. She has forgotten a few times, and each time M. has carried out R. D.'s intention, but so roughly, owing to the partial anæsthesia of the gums, lips, etc., that it has made R. D. suffer soreness of the gums. But M. meant well. R. D. came for the night at 9.35. [620] *May 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 50 m.*

*May 15.* R. D. has been thinking that she must have some new handkerchiefs, and regretting that she cannot have the fine lace-edged ones which M. long ago admired and seized, and which are kept in her drawer. Tonight M. said with gravity, and an air of philanthropy, "You may give the D. those hankchets, babo. She can have them. I think that will be better; don't you? 'Cause it's no use for her to buy some new ones when I have these. She can have them." [621] When R. D. got the news next morning she was pleased, and inquired greedily, "What else

---

620. Hereafter, since in the great majority of cases R. D. will maintain her personality uninterruptedly from the sleep of the night until the evening of the next day, mention will be made only of the time when she comes for the night, except on days when there are more than two alternations. Two alternations,—i. e., to M. and back to R. D.—always take place in the evening. Therefore on any day when the alternations are but two in number, the reader who is curious to know the moment of M.'s arrival has only to look at the summary for the day, and subtract the time that M. is out from the hour when R. D. came for the night.

621. In imagining the manner in which M. delivered this, or other utter-



am I allowed to have?" I was obliged to answer, "Nothing." At 10.55 R. D. was back for sleep. *May 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 25 m.; M., 55 m.*

*May 16.* The noise of something falling brought M. in the morning, still asleep, and she called "Babo! babo!" I went in, she said inquiringly, "Babo?", felt of my face and answered herself in satisfied accents, "It is my babo", and did not wake. In 25 minutes R. D. returned, and remained until the moment when a caller left in the evening.

I humorously asked S. M., "(What have you been doing to-day?) Not much of anything. (I suppose you do what R. D. does.) No. (Then what do *you* do?) I have something of my own to do. (Do you mean that?) I do. (Don't you feel more a part of R. D. than of other people?) No. (Then why do you use so many of her forms of speech?) Because I have associated with her so long. (Are you going to tell me sometime what you do?) I certainly am; never fear. And I think it will be soon. (Soon?) Yes, I think it will not be long, now."

Since R. D. fixed up her room so prettily, M. has paid it no attention. S. M. had expected that she would, but afterwards remarked, "It was too much trouble. She has gotten so that she dislikes to make the effort." R. D. came at 11.10 p. m. *May 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*May 17.* Two days ago constipation reappeared for the first time in many weeks, and through forgetfulness no medicine was taken for it until last night. Sore throat accompanied the other difficulty, and both are partly relieved today.

**M. Recognizes Only Little Children in Pictures.** In the evening M. looked at pictures, but all I could get her to say concerning them was "Boo'ful pictures." One represented a man, and, suspecting that she was beginning to lose comprehension of pictures I said, interrogatively, "(Nice doggies?)" "Yes", she said, "lovely doggies." S. M. afterwards said that she thought that all M. recognizes in a picture now is the figure of any baby that occurs in it. If so, it is an instance of the ruling passion

---

ances which meant the relinquishing of scruples which had governed her for years, one can hardly exaggerate the inflections and impressiveness of tone by which her earnestness was betokened.



strong in death, for M. before her decline set in was always very fond of little children. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *May 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*May 18. Sunday.* Since she did not feel well R. D. staid away from church. Lately R. D. had been thinking that if she went to bed at 9 p. m., perhaps she could rise early in the morning, as she wants to do and only seldom wakes to do. This is reflected in M.'s mind as a kind of law of the Medes and Persians that she must go to bed at that exact time. "Is it nine?", she asks with tragic intensity; "Must go to bed nine 'clock! Must go nine 'clock!" She can no longer interpret the striking of the clock, and it has been long since she could tell time by the position of the hands. Once Mrs. P. replied, "It is past nine", and M. kicked and screamed out as though a dreadful calamity had happened. I was compelled to tell her that the mother had made a mistake—it was not quite nine. I experimented with pictures tonight, with no response but "That's a boo'ful picture", or the like. Even a picture of a small boy did not seem to be recognized. It happened that none of the pictures shown contained babies. R. D. arrived at 9.40 p. m. Believing that the constipation would soon disappear in consequence of the remedy administered, and that the sore throat is a parasitical offshoot of that condition, of psychical origin, I told R. D. in her sleep that she would be well in the morning. *May 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 40 m.*

*May 19.* Sure enough, the sore throat, as well as the other condition, was entirely gone this morning, and her health and spirits continued excellent.

M. seems as glad to see me, when she comes in the evening, as though she had come back from a long journey, particularly when it is her first appearance for the day. S. M. referred to what I had whispered in the ear of R. D. after the latter was asleep, quoting it correctly. She has many times done this, but never save casually, for some particular reason. R. D. never has any waking recollection of what I say to her in her sleep. Often, too, S. M. tells me of sounds indicating occurrences in the night, of which R. D. is unconscious. At 9.45 R. D. came for the night. *May 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*May 20.* Mrs. P. went to Los Angeles today. M. was well



prepared for her absence in the evening, by seeing in R. D.'s mind several days ago what was to take place, so she did not yell "Mor'r los'!" R. D., all unconscious that M. retains the habit, has related that Phase A, when she entered her home in the old days and found her mother out, used to shout, "Mother's lost!", and even throw herself on the floor clamoring in the same terms. R. D. learned this, together with many other of M.'s sayings and doings, from hearing the remarks of others. R. D. came for the night at 9.55. *May 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*May 21.* The family took the morning train to Los Angeles. All three were to spend the night at the home of a maiden lady friend, occupying adjoining rooms. I spent the day at a Convention, the others sight-seeing. At 9.30 p. m. I found R. D. very tired, and with some headache. But M. carried out her promise to be very quiet, seeming to enjoy talking almost in whispers. R. D. came at 10.50 p. m. *May 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 10 m.; M., 45 m.*

*May 22.* M. came in the morning for 10 minutes. She appeared timid, probably because of the strangeness of the place. She slept and woke in rapid succession, frequently hiding her face and softly exclaiming when she heard the cries of fowls and dogs outside.

In the afternoon the three of us visited the beach, where the sight of the ocean, watching the gulls, and picking up shells, caused R. D. great pleasure. I took her home on the train, but Mrs. P. is to stay a week longer. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m., pretty tired. *May 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*May 23.* M. came at 7.45 a. m., and staid for 15 minutes. She herself said that she came because she was here yesterday. That is, her coming yesterday morning tended to make her come again at about the same hour. She did not like to find herself out in the morning, but chuckled and kicked out like a baby with delight to find herself in her own home and not in the strange house of yesterday. R. D. arrived for the night at 10.05. *May 22-23: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*May 24.* She is still a little within the penumbra of the excite-



ment of the Los Angeles trip, as shown by M.'s coming again this morning. The instant M. came, she exclaimed thrice, in loud dissatisfied tones, "No! No! No! (Why are you noing?) Because I am here. I don't want to be here." But I laughed, and her face broke out into smiles, and she chattered contentedly for the 10 minutes that she remained.

R. D. lay down in the evening and read a magazine, hoping to fall asleep and continue herself, but M. came. S. M. says that R. D. was too anxious to succeed. She returned at 9.35. *May 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*May 25. Sunday.* R. D. went to church with no bad effect. In the evening I asked S. M. " (You don't go away lately, do you?) No, except in the daytime, when the R. D. is here. (Have you done that?) Yes, a number of times during the last three weeks. (For how long a time?) Probably half an hour, on the average. (But I thought it made R. D. feel lonesome and strange.) It doesn't have so much effect now. This is a sign that she is growing stronger. (I wonder if the several times that I have seen her, after looking sunny and happy all day, suddenly take on a rather dumpy or gloomy expression, were the times when you were away.) I think so. You asked her afterwards what had been the matter. I had been away then." It is true; I did ask R. D. that. R. D. came at 9.55 p. m. *May 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*May 26.* M. was out for 15 minutes in the morning. At night R. D. came at 10.25. *May 25-26: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*May 27.* As soon as M. came at 8.55 p. m. I told her that it was almost nine o'clock. Several times she repeated, "Nine 'clock; mus' go t' bed", then trotted off to bed. I shall utilize this feeling of M. to the utmost. If she can be induced to sleep nearly all the time it may reduce her personality the more rapidly and shorten the time of her evening sojourn. At 9.30 R. D. was here for the night. *May 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 35 m.*

*May 28.* Again M. came just before 9 p. m., and on learning the time said anxiously, "Mus' go t' bed. Nine 'clock.", and was soon asleep.

R. D. came at 9.35 p. m. Probably it was the strong odor of



paint put on a floor today which made her sleep less and restlessly later on. I went and sat beside her and stroked her forehead to induce sleep, and for a little while she talked. She told about a certain Mrs. W. whom she said, "the Doris worked for." Astonished at this expression, and forgetting in my bewilderment that S. M. can talk only when M. is here asleep I blurted out "Is that you?" R. D. said, "What? (I was wondering if that were you or not when you said that.)" Of course she understood me to refer to M. She responded, "I don't know what made me say that, I am sure", and indeed, she seemed somewhat perplexed. The next evening S. M. said, "I could have punched you for breaking in before she finished. I wanted to hear the rest. Do you know what she was doing?" S. D. told you about Mrs. W., and R. D. was repeating one of S. D.'s phrases without knowing where she got it. S. D. always said, 'we' and 'our' to everyone, and people used to think it odd, and would ask, 'How many are there of you?' Sometimes she said 'the Doris', but not unless she forgot, except to you after you found out about the R. D." *May 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 40 m.*

*May 29.* R. D. is fixing up everything to surprise the mother on her return, and has enlisted me in the good work. At 9.15 p. m. M. came when I was not in the house. She told me on my return. "The D. wants to get kitchen and bath-room and the D.'s room painted while the mor'r is away, because those things make the mor'r nervous, and the D. doesn't like the mor'r to get nervous. And now they're done, and the mor'r won't get nervous." In a moment she was asleep, and S. M. said, in her so different voice, "What a funny M!" I inquired " (What have you been thinking about today?) O, partly my own thoughts and partly about the D. Of course I am interested in what she does, and then, I am watching her to take care of her. (To take care of her? How can you? If I were confined in a room and watched someone out-of-doors my watching wouldn't help any.) That is not equivalent. That is not at all a parallel case. I *can* help her. If she were in danger I could make her think what was necessary, and I have done it." R. D. arrived at 9.50 p. m. *May 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 35 m.*

*May 30.* Mrs. P. returned in the afternoon. M. was de-



lighted in the evening. Once as Mrs. P. was standing at a little distance M. said, "You needn't think I don't know that you are standing there, mor'r. I hear you." She refused to go to bed at nine o'clock, because the mother had come home and she wanted to celebrate the occasion. [622] R. D. came at 10 p. m. *May 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*May 31.* M. in the evening said, "M. isn't going to eat any more, is she—except pretzels and chocolate dates. (No, she doesn't want to.) No, I don't want to any more." True, for more than a week she has called for nothing to eat, and for very little for some time previous, although it had been her habit always to sing out "What you got to eat?", or to make some demand at once. There is one exception, and that is that she expects two or three tiny pretzels, either whole or broken into pieces, in which latter case she calls them chocolate dates. She never asks less than two and never more than three pretzels, and her demands for "chocolate dates" run from three to six equaling a pretzel and a half. If I give her one or two less or more than she asks for, depending on the measure of her requisition, she does not notice the variation, unless there is something in my manner which indicates it, and a very small sign is sufficient. M. went to bed at 9, and R. D. came at 9.25. *May 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. Average daily total of R. D. during May, 1913: 22 h. 50 m.*

*June 1. Sunday.* R. D. went to church in the forenoon. When M. came in the evening I said, "Five minutes after nine." M. became much agitated. She had demanded that her feet be

---

622. Speaking in personal terms, she wanted to be awake longer, but speaking in scientific terms the mother's coming excited her and thus delayed somnolency. In general it may be said that my influence acted on M. as a sedative, while that of Mrs. P. to a degree acted as a stimulant. I could enter the room where M. was sleeping without tending to wake her, but it was almost impossible for Mrs. P. to do so, however quietly, without her waking. As the presence of a person outside of the family had a stronger effect in the way of rousing her, the only thing to be explained is my own sedative influence, and this is easy to understand when the psychical *rapport* established between M. and R. D. on the one hand and myself on the other, resembling that between a hypnotic operator and his subject, is considered, together with the fact that the *rapport* was constantly being utilized by me to keep M. from developing occupations, and to induce sleep.



rubbed, and now she hammered her heels and clamored, "No, no! If 'tis nine 'clock I mus' go bed. I want my feet rubbed. Make it not nine 'clock." In vain I told her that it was all right, she need not go to bed, she reiterated that if it was nine o'clock she *must* go. So I told her that it was not nine, and her trouble passed off. S. M. was much amused by the incident. M. said "That D. has been thinkin' 'I hope that when the A Phase comes she won't want any h-a-am.'" This was uttered by M. with great sarcasm. She went on, "She ate the ham all up, and hoped the A Phase wouldn't want any *ham*. I don't want any. I am not going to eat any more, am I?" R. D. arrived at 9.50 p. m. *May 31-June 1: 2 alt.; R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 45 m.*

*June 2.* Mrs. P. has a cough, which disturbed R. D.'s sleep last night, so that M. came this morning at 7.15. I was to start on an automobile trip at 8, and had yet to dress for the trip and to eat breakfast. M. asked why I didn't get ready, but when I hopefully asked if she would let me leave her to get ready she chuckled and said "No." When M. slept S. M. showed her concern at the fix I was in, but could not predict when R. D. would return. It was 7.40 before that took place, and I had to hurry in order to get ready. The bustle made R. D. nervous, and she had a headache all day. I returned at 5 p. m., at 6.20 had to go to a banquet, and after that had a committee meeting. When M. came she was quiet and glum, affected by R. D.'s all-day poor spirits. Soon she asked if it was nine, and Mrs. P. told her it was ten minutes of nine. "Will it be nine 'clock when I get ready? (About five minutes of nine.) I don't know your ten minutes of nine and five minutes. *Ah* want to know if it nine 'clock or not nine 'clock." So I said, "(It is about nine o'clock.) O I must go to bed—nine 'clock", and she did so. R. D. came at 9.40, and Mrs. P.'s cough being better she slept well. *June 1-2: 4 alt.; R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*June 3.* M. asked for an apple tonight, saying naively that it would be good for R. D., and got it. But the reason was, according to S. M., that R. D. had wanted an apple and forgotten to eat it. At 9.15 I told M. that it was 9, and she went to bed. R. D. came at 9.35. *June 2-3: 2 alt.; R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 35 m.*

*June 4.* The monthly period began today. In the evening M.



ate another apple. I turned a magazine picture in her direction, and she showed pleasure as she recognized a baby in it. I showed a picture of men, and her face twisted as it often does when she is at a loss and does not like to acknowledge it. To help her out I said, without a smile, "Pretty doggies." She repeated with evident relief, "Pretty doggies! Nice doggies!", and added in her most wheedling tones, "Babo see pretty doggies?" I turned a large picture of a lady towards her, and she called this also a "doggy." R. D. came for the night at 8.35 and slept well. *June 3-4: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 30 m.*

*June 5.* She suffers no pain. In the evening M. was as cheerful as a grig, and went to bed in a few minutes. I asked S. M. what she had been thinking of today. "A little of everything. (Don't you get bored?) No, the world is too interesting. (M. gets bored.) But I am not M. (You are interested in what interests R. D.?) Not all. (Are you interested in things which do not interest her?) Yes, some. I have my own things to think of. (I don't know what your things are.) Well, you are not supposed to." R. D. arrived at 9.10. *June 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 30 m.*

*June 6.* This was a day of disaster, in one way the worst yet, in that it brought the most positive and unmistakable setback of R. D. and restrengthening of M. in the whole history of the cure. There were several accidents and mishaps of one sort and another, which got R. D. into a sadly nervous condition. Then at 9.15 a.m. she heard a sound like that of a person falling, then Mrs. P. calling "Doris! Doris!", and jumped to the conclusion that something dreadful had happened to me, and ran into the room with the mental picture prepared of finding me dying or something of the sort. As a matter of fact, the event was trivial, but Mrs. P. had needed assistance. M. came and threw herself on the lounge sobbing. I rushed in and for 15 minutes strove to check the unreasoning tears and sobs, which gradually ceased, and M. fell asleep. Then S. M. calmly said, "The R. D. got such a fright that it has caused the first real setback that she has had. (Do you mean that she has actually gone back?) Yes, she has gone back. I do not think it will take many days to get back where she was before, but cannot tell certainly. I believe, though, that it will not



take long." Catamenia stopped with the shock and did not resume until the next day, I learned from S. M. When M. woke she showed a little tendency to resume crying, but was soon won to good spirits, and showed no emotional reaction, unless in increased vivacity. She evinced no recollection of anything unusual, and never again alluded to the incident. S. M. warned me not to attempt to explain to R. D. the true nature of the cause of her fright. "It would only bring back the original feeling and cause her to cry—she will know that it is all right, that there was no harm done." So when R. D. came at 10.40 I simply said, "It is all right." She looked both confused and gloomy. At 11.45 M. returned in jolly mood, declared her intention of eating, sat down at the table and in lively fashion asked what there was to eat, and partook of a number of dishes, but complained that she got no enjoyment from them, that everything tasted "rotten." She left some articles of food unfinished in order to experiment with others. Then she gravely remarked that she thought she had better not eat again. R. D. came at 12.55 and remained until 7.25. M. demanded ice-cream. I asked if she would wait while I went to the store for some, and her face clouded. "Will anything get me? (No, the mother will stay right with you.) Well, you hurry like the dibble." I was not gone five minutes, but she shouted with joy on my return, as though I had been away for days. She ate all the ice-cream and two or three pretzels. R. D. came at 8.55 and her sleep was poor. *June 5-6: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 40 m.; M., 4 h. 5 m.*

*June 7.* M. came in the morning for 25 minutes, and R. D. staid until 8.05 p. m.

M. shows increased vivacity and strength of will. Only three pretzels contented her this evening. S. M. continues serene and unruffled, and discussed the situation coolly. "The R. D. experiences mental confusion to some extent again. She cannot keep her mind on one thing long. That is why she declined when you offered to read aloud. It may not be plain to you, though I should think that by this time it would be—it is perfectly clear to me—why a shock like this is more disastrous at this stage than it would have been earlier. As she progresses towards cure she will be more liable to harm from such causes, and you must be



very careful to protect her. (I cannot fully understand why it should be so. I suppose I am stupid.) In some ways I think you are stupid, though in others you understand the case wonderfully well. I am surprised that this is not clear to you. Don't you see that as M. goes it leaves more burden on the R. D., that she has never borne before—that, so to speak, she has to do the work of the other half, to fill out the vacant half? Then, when a shock comes, *she* has to sustain it; M can no longer help. But it tends to bring M. back some." Something was said about M.'s final disappearance, and S. M. said, "I shall go a day or two before M. does. [623] (You will?) Yes. (What if something should happen and that you should be needed?) I shall be in sight of her after that, until I know that she is safe. (You trust me, that I will do the best I can for her?) I trust you fully. (But something might happen long after, in spite of all my care.) I will always know how she is getting on. And if I am needed I shall come back. . . . There will be a period of rapid adjustment during the day or two after I am gone and before M. goes. The R. D. will experience a good deal of perturbation, and you will see it. But she will very quickly adjust herself. (Can I know just when you will go and M. is about to go? I would wish to watch her closely.) I will not leave you in any uncertainty. I will let you know just when I am to go. (And whatever is to be explained to me about you—will there be sufficient notice so that the matter may be thoroughly gone over?) There will be plenty of time. (You understand that mere assertion will not convince anybody. Did I understand that convincing proofs will be given?) Yes, there will be proofs. I do not say that they would convince everybody. There are people whom nothing could convince. But it will be convincing to reasonable people. . . . After R. D. is fully well she will be cheerful and happy; she will be able to remember and can study, as she so longs to do. It is of no use

---

623. The sequel will show that S. M. did not go before M. disappeared. But according to S. M., this was not because she was deceived in her foresight, but because, for what appeared to her good reasons, she changed her mind. She never wavered in her claim that she could have gone at the time predicted, or before that or at any time thereafter, if it had seemed best to her.



for her to attempt it now, it only discourages her. Now she is not independent. She depends on someone else. She formerly depended on M., and now she does on me. In a vague way which she is not fully conscious of, she feels that she is leaning on someone—that is me. The present confusion will soon wear off. . . I told you yesterday that it would be bad for R. D. to go to church tomorrow. I still think it will, but she is longing so much that I have come to the conclusion that you had better let her go. It will not hurt her so much as for her to mope and cry as she would do, I see. There is no danger that M. will come in the church. If the R. D. feels that she can't hold on through the service she will go out." R. D. came at 9.50 p. m., and slept much better than last night. *June 6-7: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*June 8. Sunday.* R. D. was out until 12.45 p. m., and went to church service, but it tired her, and she lapsed again in the afternoon. In the evening I returned to the house and entered while R. D. was telling a story to Mrs. P. M. came in the midst of a sentence, cutting short the story.

R. D. arrived for sleep at 10.15. In the night she heard her chickens squawking, and ran out to drive off a cat. I fear it is not well for her to sleep with "ear attuned"—to use S. M.'s own phrase—in order to hear the cries of hens. *June 7-8: 6 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*June 9.* M. came in the morning. M. says "wakeded" for *woke*, "bitted" or "bited" for *bitten*, "laughy" for *laughing*, "'nail" for *snail*, "michtake" for *mistake*, "diddy" for *didn't*, etc.

S. M. says that R. D.'s mental confusion is gradually clearing. Also that R. D. has been trying to study out what causes the renewal of confusion, has wondered whether it is caused by M. thinking at the same time that she herself does, and has tried to surprise M. at it, which of course is impossible. R. D. arrived for sleep at 7.55 p. m. *June 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*June 10.* R. D. was out all day, and active. In the evening there was a fête on the lawn, and I fetched her from a neighbor's after it was over, consequently M. did not come until 10.25 after



a record day, stimulated by the emergency. R. D. returned at 11.35, and had to shoo away caterwauling felines in the night. *June 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 26 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*June 11.* M. came at 12.20 p. m. Hearing Mrs. P. say that the grocer gave a reduction on ice-cream and that one gallon was returned, M. suggested, "Charge him full price for the gallon you send back." S. M. says, "M said that of herself; she would not have been capable of it a week ago." At 9.40 R. D. came for the night. *June 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*June 12.* The thyroid gland appears to be enlarged. M. continues about the same. R. D. came for the night at 9.05. *June 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*June 13.* R. D. came for sleep at 10.10. *June 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h.*

*June 14.* The throat is somewhat nearer normal. Every night now, M. eats about three pretzels and an apple. If I quiz her as to what a picture represents, unless there is a small child in it, she goes to sleep. S. M. says that this is to get away from the question, and it certainly appears so.

S. M. asked when I would begin preparing the records for publication, and spoke approvingly of inserting the pictures of M. and of S. D. in her last stages, but thought that the portrait of R. D. had better be omitted. I told her that I hoped to be able to enter as clear an account of herself [S. M.] as of the others, and she answered that I would be able, and added that I might begin questioning her now, only that her answer unaccompanied with the proof would be "mere assertion." " (Well, I will ask one question now. Are you a personality?) No. You knew that, didn't you? (*I am not in the witness box.*) Well, you knew that, or at least you did not know whether I am a personality or not." A pause ensued, and then she said, "I know a good many things which you do not think I know. (Things of this world or another?) All kinds. (You didn't know what happened at Mrs. M.'s) [624] No, I did not. I don't profess to know everything. But I knew that D. was coming to you before

624. Chapter XII, page 1273 seq. The question "Things of this world or another" looks like a leading one but really is not. It was itself following the lead of the automatic writing.



she or S. D. knew anything about your name even. If you had the diary that S. D. kept you would see your name written, before she ever knew about you. (How came she to write it?) The name came into her head. However, that is neither here nor there; it is only my say-so. But I will tell you another thing. I knew Hyslop before the D. or S. D. ever heard of you. (S. D. read about him?) [625] No, before they ever heard about him. (Knew about him?) No, knew him. (Knew him personally?) No, not to speak to him, but I knew him." All this was said in a calm and measured fashion, with absolutely no appearance of endeavoring to exploit herself, but rather with an air of holding herself in reserve. On my part, whenever anything of the above nature is said by me, it is said in a casual, matter-of-fact way, with the avoidance of any appearance of particular interest or curiosity or anxiety. As I have set down practically all that has ever been said between S. M. and me on the subject of her nature, while not a fortieth of the bulk of our conversations is reported, that subject has the superficial aspect in this record of prominence, whereas it was the reverse of prominent in the actual talk.

Here M. woke, and told me that R. D. would come awake, in order to do something in the chicken-yard. A moment later, at 10.15, R. D. came awake, and told me that she would have to go out, adding, "May I go to sleep myself?", that is, alone, without assistance. I replied, "Yes, and you will be asleep a half minute after you get into bed." S. M. afterwards told me that R. D. had time only partly to draw the clothes over her, before she was asleep. Half a minute means a shorter space to her than it does to me. *June 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*June 15. Sunday.* R. D. went to church in the forenoon, and M. a short time in the afternoon. R. D. came for the night at 9.20, but was wakened at 2.20 by the glow of a fire three squares away. We all went to the fire, and she slept without assistance directly after our return. *June 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 40 m.*

---

625. S. D. did try to read Dr. Hyslop's "Problems in Philosophy", with indifferent success. See page 270. This only shows that the name of the writer was known to S. M. previous to my acquaintance with the case.



*June 16.* In the evening M. spoke of my 'moking (smoking) and then, doubtless because she thought of the smell of the smoke, she slid upon the track of the old automatism, "You 'mell of lee-a-mun" [626] chanted in the curious manner that this was always delivered in. A pause, and she said, in her ordinary tones, "I mean 'moke." She tried again, apparently, to say "You smell of smoke", but again the words came in a sing-song, "You 'mell of lee-a-mun", and once more her tone altered as she said, "I mean 'moke." Here she fell asleep and S. M. remarked, "She could not say it." S. M. referred to R. D.'s love of going to fires when she was a child. "The kids would go no matter what time of night, and stay as long as they pleased. (Did you approve of D.'s going to midnight fires?) No. (Why didn't you prevent it?) How could I? (Well, what was the use of your "watching" her?) She didn't get hurt, did she? Some of the children sometimes did. (Did you have anything to do with that?) Certainly, that is what I was there for, wasn't it? (But how could you do it?) Different ways. I saw danger before she did, and sometimes I made her see it. (Why didn't you keep her at home?) That wasn't so easy; she was bound to go." At 9.50 R. D. came for the night. *June 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 55 m.*

*June 17.* M. in the evening found some money in my vest-pocket, and asked if she could have it. Deprecating her partial recovery of interest in money, I gently demurred, whereupon she made up queer little faces, and said many times, "Stingy! stingy!" S. M. afterwards remarked that I had witnessed exactly the way that M. used to do when, a dozen years ago, M. was denied something that she coveted. "But you saw that M. couldn't help laughing in the midst of it. I don't think that she can really get cross now." I asked, referring to the conversation of last night, how S. M. could know beforehand that D. was going to live with us, and yet herself be the last to favor it, and to like me, as she long ago told me was the case. "I did not mean that I knew beforehand that she was to *live* with you—I did not. I meant

---

626. This automatism had been started long before at a time when M. had smelled linament on my person.



that I knew she was to be cured by you. I did not favor her coming to live with you,—I don't know as I do yet. (Why?) Because she has been such a burden. (Don't you know she could not have gotten well any other way?) Perhaps not, but that made no difference. (What! you did not want her to get well?) Yes, if she lived, but I was not particularly anxious that she should live. (Just as lief she died?) Yes, I think so. (You mean that?) Certainly. (That seems strange.) Well, it made no difference. I have helped you get her well, haven't I? But I was the last to like you. (You did come to like me?) Yes, after I saw what you were trying to do for D. You are the only human being I ever did like—except D. herself. (What! didn't you like her mother?) No, I did not. I have told you that before. [627] (And no one else?) No, no other human being. Nor dogs nor cats—with a laugh. “(No being whatsoever?) No, no human being, nor dogs nor cats.” There was an almost imperceptible stress upon the word “human” in each case, and a subtle appearance of trying to cover the significance of that emphasis by adding “dogs and cats.” “(There might be beings other than human.) Yes, there might. And again, there mightn't.” Here we dropped the subject. R. D. came at 8.55 p. m. *June 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*June 18.* M. in the evening saw a small moth near her face on the wall, and cried with growing insistency, fixation of attention and excitement, “A bug! a bug!” I shooed the creature away, and it flew closely athwart her face. Crying “a bug! a bug!” she fell asleep. I had just returned from marrying a couple, and M. asked what had been given me. I replied “Ten cents.” M. received the reply in perfect good faith, and asked what I would do with it. If she abstracts a dozen coins from my pocket and I can, without attracting her attention, withdraw say all but three or four of them, she does not know the difference. Tonight she got several coins from my pocket and said that she wanted to keep them. Then she puzzled where to put them, groped for pockets in front of her dress, and cried in tones of astonishment, “Where are my pockets? I ain't got any pockets.” After she had fallen

627. This was true; I distinctly remembered hearing S. M. make the same assertion some time before.



asleep S. M. exclaimed in astonished accents, "Did you see that? She was looking for pockets where she has not worn pockets since D. was six years old." In M.'s perplexity I suggested that she put the coins in her drawer, which she has not seen for months. "Then I should have somefin' else to will away." I remarked that there were several things in the drawer already not mentioned in the will. The thought of them seemed to tire her, and she sighed, "I can't bother with them. I will give them all to you, babo, I can't bother with them." At last she got tired of holding the coins, gave them to me and promptly forgot about them. Today R. D. asked me for some pretzels from M.'s bag, and I gave them to her. Whereas a year or more ago M. would have come and protested on the spot, and a few months ago she would have been almost as indignant on afterwards seeing the occurrence in R. D.'s subliminal thoughts, tonight, when she suddenly caught sight in R. D.'s sinking consciousness of the thought that she had had, "I won't think about the pretzels, so that Phase A won't know that I have eaten them", M. laughed at R. D. as the "funny child" for thinking that she could fool Phase A that way, when "if she hadn't thought that perhaps I wouldn't have known that she ate 'em." But then M. added, with mock indignation, or perhaps the pale shadow of her former indignation, "I ain't going to support *her*." R. D. came at 10.25 p. m. *June 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h.; M., 30 m.*

*June 19.* M. came 11.40 a. m.-12.10 p. m. S. M. said there was no reason for her coming. "(But everything has a reason.) Well, this hadn't."

In the evening I took R. D. to a picture-show, which she enjoys when it is one which pleases her æsthetic and moral tastes, and which appears to benefit her. On our return M. came, and was about to lie down on the couch in the dining-room when she exclaimed, "But I ain't allowed to wear this dress", and made me "skidoo" until she changed it. This is an illustration of how subordinate she is getting to R. D.'s desires. At 9.30 R. D. came for the night. *June 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*June 20.* R. D. came for sleep at 9.10. *June 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 55 m.*



*June 21.* There is renewed trouble in the throat. S. M. almost never spontaneously begins a conversation about herself. Of course, sometimes in the train of conversation she makes an allusion to herself which is of a nature to arouse curiosity, but always in incidental and casual fashion. If I do not take it up she does not repeat it, or follow it with other allusions of the same character. There is absolutely no appearance of attempting to impress or mystify me. My own occasional attempts to elicit her views regarding herself, it may be worth while again to insist, are very infrequent compared with the introduction of other topics, and are purposely made as casual and colorless as possible, for, while S. M. seems to be as nearly non-suggestible as any most hard-headed person whom I know, I would avoid any just criticism of suggesting notions to her. I had about said "As soon talk of inducing a Darwin to change his matured opinions by subtle 'suggestion' as to think of altering those of S. M. by such means!" Repeatedly, for the purpose of experiment, I have in other matters opposed S. M.'s alleged "knowledge" by every means at my disposal, indirect and repeated suggestion, argument, irony, etc., but have always found her as calm and set as the rock of Gibraltar. In case she only expresses an "opinion", she is open to argument, and may or may not change it, as is the case with any reasonable person. Tonight I referred to her statement that a personality, when fully developed, may, if forced out of the brain where it is lodged, go to another "nervous person", a statement which she is well aware that I consider nonsense. She calmly repeated that this is true. "(That seems rather absurd, you know.) I don't know why. (All the scientists would disagree with you.) The scientists haven't found out everything. (But don't you know that they all would pronounce it absurd?) How should I know? She hasn't read any of them. I only read through her eyes. (Do you think that M. would have recognized a personality in another person?) Yes, I believe so. She was always looking for one. She thought that she had found one in that sick girl, you remember. [628] I believe the girl had one, but too undeveloped for her to get into communication with it.

---

628. See page 205 seq.



(How did M. recognize it?) How does an actor recognize another actor, as it were instinctively? (Would *you* recognize a personality in another person?) Yes, I *know* I would. (Are there many persons who have someone to help them as you say you help R. D.?) No. It is a pity that they have not—those who need them. (Why do they not?) Because usually they come to need them, not in childhood as D. did, but when they are grown and will not accept them. (Have you ever met one like yourself?) No, I never saw one on earth. But I have seen but a small part of the people on earth." There was no perceptible emphasis laid upon the words "on earth." I did not wish to ask if she had met any elsewhere than on earth, thinking this a too leading question. Presently she inquired, "What is your idea of Heaven? (I don't know much about Heaven. But so far as I have an idea, it is not of a literal city with jasper wall, or a place of golden harps and waving palm-branches. I have a notion that we shall emerge there just as we were when we left the earth, and that we shall progress indefinitely, if so disposed. My idea does not extend much farther.) I did not suppose that you had so sensible an idea of Heaven as that." Several times lately, when M. has fallen asleep and S. M. has remarked, "She is asleep", or, in case M. herself, after the preliminary waggle of the head, has said "I'm aleep" and S. M. with a smile has confirmed the statement by saying, "She is asleep", I have inquired, half in jest, " (Well, what have *you* been doing today?) " Tonight she answered "Nothing much. (But what?) O, I have been watching her, and have been occupied partly with my own affairs. (You have affairs of your own, apart from hers?) Certainly. (I wonder what they are.) They are my own concern." Once, not in connection with such a conversation, she remarked that much less of her time is now taken up in watching and helping R. D. than formerly, and explained the fact that she seems to have less accurate and detailed knowledge of events in R. D.'s late experience than used to be the case by saying that since she does not spend so much time in watching R. D. as she did, many little events slip by unnoticed. She declares that this is voluntary on her part, that she could, if it were worth while, watch as narrowly as ever, but that since there is no need of her doing so, she spends



more time on her own affairs. I do not wish to show curiosity at this stage, as to what those affairs are supposed to be. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *June 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*June 22. Sunday.* A very sore throat and the heat of the weather brought M. at 3.05 p. m. M. was troubled by the heat, but did not appear to feel soreness of the throat either in the afternoon or evening. R. D. came at 9.20, and suffered in the night from sore throat, headache and vomiting. *June 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*June 23.* M. was brought in the morning by the accidental slamming of a door. S. M. gave an opinion of the origin of D.'s cold in considerable detail, showing that she has been pondering on the events of the last few days in order to work out the problem. Afterwards I asked R. D. how she supposed that she caught her cold, and found that she had not the least idea. Sometimes, after S. M. has announced the cause of a matter I find that R. D. has also worked out the problem, though usually with less thoroughness. Sometimes R. D.'s theory differs from that of S. M., and may even be a more convincing one, though I am bound to say that this is seldom the case. Again, as in the instance just cited, R. D. does not succeed in evolving any theory at all, though S. M. has worked hers out in detail.

I handed M. a paper, calling attention to a large picture. She made her usual evasive replies, though the picture was upside down. She turned over the paper, page by page for a few minutes, and then asked me, in a sort of apologetic, timid tone if the paper was right side up. It illustrates the fact that one must make his deductions with caution to confess that I at first regarded this as proof that there was all the time some shadowy consciousness that the paper was inverted, whereas S. M. afterwards explained that M. knew from R. D.'s mind that there was a picture of a little child in it, and since she was not able to find it began to suspect the cause. While rubbing M.'s feet I fell into a rhythmical movement, and presently M. pronounced it "mechanical", but when asked what that meant, hesitated, grew embarrassed and answered "Dog." Here was the sporadic glimpsing of the right word, for which she could give no account



when called on to do so. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *June 22-23:* 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.

*June 24.* R. D. came at 9 p. m. *June 23-24:* 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.

*June 25.* The throat is nearly well. This evening M. saw a picture of four babies, and correctly stated their number. S. M. says that she can count to five, for she sees her counting on her fingers. S. M. was "away" for about 20 minutes today. At 9.05 R. D. arrived for the night. *June 24-25:* 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h.

*June 26.* While I was in the midst of reading aloud an amusing short tale in which she was interested, R. D. went at 7.55 a. m.

This morning I asked R. D. " (Did anything happen to you yesterday?) Yes. How did you know about it? (Tell me about it.) All of a sudden I felt so strange-like as I did out on the porch weeks ago, you remember. I wandered about as if I had lost something. (When did you last have that feeling before?) I think it was out on the porch." But S. M. went away several times in the interval, apparently without R. D. having the feeling, at least enough to remember it.

Of late R. D. has been wearing a thin night-robe with very short sleeves. M. has shown much dissatisfaction with it, and has worked to try and pull the sleeves down. Several times her bare arms attracted her attention, and she inquired with a mystified air, "Where pleeves?" Tonight it was chilly, so her thicker gown was brought M. While she was putting it on there suddenly began a series of delighted cries, and when I entered it was to find M. rejoicing because she had sleeves. Over and over she cried, "It's got pleeves!" Then she fell asleep from excitement, and S. M. showed amusement at M.'s rapture and remarked, "M. always wanted sleeves. When little she never had but one night-gown that had short sleeves, and she would pull and pull at them, trying to get them down.

Two or three times of late M.'s pretzels have unexpectedly given out, and M., without being cross, has longed and complained until I have been forced to go out in the evening and



purchase some. This evening I noticed that they were almost gone, and remarked laughingly, "I must get some pretzels or M. will howl." R. D. came at 9.15. She had two dreams into which M.'s thoughts roused by my remark of the evening found their way. The first was that the pretzels belonging to Phase A gave out and A raised a row. In the second I was afraid that the pretzels would become exhausted and sent her (R. D.) out for some. In the first dream only M. figured as a character, and in the second only R. D. *June 25-26: 4 alt: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*June 27.* R. D. asked me in the morning if I wanted her to get some pretzels and when I, surprised, inquired how she knew, she related her dreams. From previous experiences she had inferred that there was some basis of fact to them. In the afternoon she entered my study, where the bag of pretzels was, and took several. In a moment M. was there, saying as of old, "She mustn't take my pretzels", but there was no blaze of indignation in her voice, and her lips were smiling. I was a little alarmed, and asked, "(Why did you come?) I didn't come. The D. thought she had done wrong to take pretzels without asking you, and she got scared and dodged." M. ate several pretzels and went to sleep, announcing, "I'm aleep." I reminded S. M. that R. D. had several times felt sure that she could take from M.'s bag. "Yes, but she never ventured to do so without asking you first." M. woke and said, "But R. D. bought the pretzels with her own money. (Then they were really hers.) So they were, weren't they, babo? Wasn't she a foolish child?" R. D. was back within five minutes of her departure.

In the evening M. ate not only "chocolate dates", but also bread and jelly, and got Mrs. P. to make her some tea. Her eating more is a part of the "set-back", says S. M. M. was very jolly for a while, then threw herself into my lap and went to sleep. She put up her fingers, as she often does while sleeping, to feel the expression of my face, and finding that I was smiling chortled and plunged like a young filly. Again she put her fingers up, and this time I drew my features into an expression of sternness. At the instant that



the fingers came into contact with my lips she broke into a wail of anguish, so in the fraction of a second I altered my expression to a smile, and her joy became almost hysterical, though she did not wake. Later her fingers went up when I happened to be yawning, and the fingers entered my mouth. She looked flabbergasted, and shouted, "My babo's lost his head. The rest of him's here"—feeling my body, "but his head's gone. It's all hole." She woke, and started to say—since the sleeping impression is apt to continue for a moment after her waking,—“My babo's lost his head”, but changed it midway to “O, your head's there; where did it go to? I felt and there wasn't any head.” I think she really was mystified, and yet there must have been a feeling that the mystery had an explanation, else she would have yelled with agony. I told her it was almost 9 o'clock and she remonstrated, “Don't talk that way, babo.” But in the midst of talking and laughing, about two minutes later, she suddenly turned her face towards me and her expression changed to that of a crying child, as she wailed, “I want to go to my bed. I want to go to my bed!”. I quickly said, “Sleep!” and she was sleeping. S. M. laughed and said, “One would think that you had been keeping her from her bed. She feels tired.” R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *June 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*June 28.* A medicine which Dr. Walker prescribed for the enlarged thyroid gland, and which she has taken when she remembered to do so, appears to have brought on constipation again, with bleeding piles, after freedom from the latter for a year or more. On the whole I have thought it best to discontinue the medicine, on account of this unforeseen by-effect. R. D. arrived at 10.45 for the night. *June 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 40 m.; M., 50 m.*

*June 29. Sunday.* R. D. did not go to church today, on account of not feeling well. In the evening M. looked at a picture containing a little girl and a doll. She said “Pretty doll”, but pointed at the girl. “(Where?) This time she pointed at the doll, but after this she pointed now at one and now at the other as she repeated the exclamation. I made



up my mind that R. D. had looked at the picture, and this proved to be the case. Neither doll nor girl did she know independently, only babies can she detect in pictures. Everything else is a dog, [629] pronounced "doch", with the German ch. The monthly period began in the afternoon. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *June 28-29: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*June 30.* Last night was troubled by the various symptoms together with pelvic pains, and these continued today. M. came 12.35-1.00 p. m. R. D. arrived at 10.45 p. m. and had a poor night. *June 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m. Average daily record of R. D. during June, 1913, 22 h. 49 m.*

*July 1.* M. was on deck four times today, bearing witness by her presence to loss of sleep and pain.

M. is very sensitive to temperature. Oddly, she was subnormal in this respect before the cure of the case began, and for some time afterwards. Headache, menstrual cramps and other internal pains she seldom feels, but if they are very severe or long continued in the case of R. D., M. begins to share them, though in a much reduced degree. She appears now to be cutaneously sensitive, as tickling on the skin or the slightest surface scratching is detected by her. But she may be pricked with a pin, or pinched hard enough to bring a blue spot afterwards without consciousness that she is touched. I have discovered that M. is getting confused as to the location of several parts of her body, and even uncertain as to their names. She puzzled as to where her head was, but concluded that it was "on top." Her stomach she said was "at the middle." I began a game—so it seems to her—of locating different parts. "(Where are your feet?) At the other end—you are rubbing them." This gave me the idea that she would probably locate an organ by means of what is done by it or to it. "(Where is your mouth?) What's mouth? (What you talk with.) I talk with my

---

629. M.'s practice, at this period, of calling unrecognized features in pictures "dog" or "doggie", was borrowed from utterances of my own. See pages 1127 and 1134.



mouth",—evidently she was examining the process; "O, here's my mouth", she announced delightedly, pointing with her fingers. "(Where's your nose?)" She was at a loss. "Nose? nose? (What you smell with.)" She sniffed, and at the motion of the nostrils put her fingers to them and said, "Here's nose. (Where are your eyes?)" She now had less difficulty, and first pointed before her, in direct line of her vision, and then moved her finger backwards along the line of vision to a point near her eyes, but not pointing to them. "(Where are your ears?)" As I had expected, if my theory was correct, she was utterly non-plussed, even when assisted by the pointed, "(What you hear with)", as sound does not so readily suggest the organ of hearing. She was plainly embarrassed by her inability to answer, though she said, "In my head. (Where is your hand?)" She was holding my hand, and now she pointed to it, saying, "Why, here's my hand." Holding up her hand I asked "(What is this?) Why, my hand." This might suggest a confounding of *meum* and *tuum*, but more probably the error was connected with her shortness of vision. [630] Later Mrs. P. suggested administering hot wintergreen to help R. D., but M. would not take it. I asked Mrs. P. to prepare me some, and M. sung out, "The babo wants some wintergreen. I'll have some too, if the babo is going to. (Hot?) What you going to have? (I am going to have it hot.) Then I'll have it hot. I like what the babo likes", and she drank it willingly. But in the absence of direct suggestional efforts she inclines to follow R. D.'s tastes rather than mine, though at times she does not even yet always agree with R. D. This very evening she called for raspberry sauce, of which R. D. is very fond, but after one taste made a wry mouth and put down the dish, saying that the sauce was sour. Really it was sweet, though there was an underlying tart taste, too. Is there any remnant of taste remaining to her, or does she form such

630. A certain amount of confusion between *meum* and *tuum*, as respects M. and myself, was beginning to creep into M.'s mind, and was destined to increase. On April 21st she suspected that because she could not read I also was unable to do so, and later she often announced her sensations of heat or cold, and her wants, by referring them to me. See page 1202, etc.



judgments by smell? For the latter sense, though dull, is not obliterated. I incline to think the latter. I said to S. M. later, "(M. seems to be losing now.) Why certainly. Haven't you noticed it for several days past?" S. M. advised administering a sleeping powder, so it was given M. just before R. D. came for the night at 9.30. *June 30-July 1: 8 alt.: R. D., 18 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h. 50 m.*

*July 2.* M. was out in the morning, very sleepy from the effects of the powder. R. D. feels pretty well today. It seems that R. D. has lately listened to parts of "Il Trovatore", and S. M. asked me how the Miserere went. Forgetting M.'s antipathy to singing I began to hum it. In an instant M., asleep, cocked up her ear, then she began to snarl, and S. M. warned me to stop, lest M. should begin crying. Here we find a desire of S. M. vehemently opposed by M. R. D. came at 10 p. m., and her sleep was somewhat disturbed by the setting off of crackers in the street. *July 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*July 3.* R. D. started the day in excellent spirits, but later was made nervous by the noise of crackers. Several incidents happened to disturb her, such as finding that her chickens had gorged themselves at a barrel of feed, and that they had eaten of carrion that a neighbor had disposed of by the convenient process of flinging over into our yard. So at 5.35 M. came, affected to an unusual degree by R. D.'s feelings. She started to cry, was easily made to laugh, but for 20 minutes continued to whimper at intervals. I would say, "Hear pretty birdie", and instantly her features would change to the stereotyped infantile expression which accompanies that phrase, her head would turn in the direction of the bird's cage, and she would recite "Hear pretty birdie, babo?" in wheedling child-tones. Then as the spell passed away, the features would resume their mournful expression, and the whimpering rebegin, until she "felt" my smile, when she would laugh, and so on. R. D. had been at a neighbor's when the hens got into mischief, and she had rashly said that she wouldn't go away again. M. several times ejaculated in sarcastic tones, "Never goin' away from the house again!" When R. D. returned she had some headache.



R. D. came at 10.30 for the night, and I whispered in her ear as she slept that noises out on the street would not annoy her, for she would hardly hear them, but that she would hear sounds in the house just as usual. I told her that this would last all night and the next day, but that on the following day, July 5th, she would hear as usual. *July 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*July 4.* R. D., asked what sort of a night she had experienced, responded, "I slept all night. This morning I heard some crackers, and one louder than the rest, but they didn't bother me at all." She spoke in tones of gratified surprise. As a matter of fact, Mrs. P.'s sleep was considerably disturbed by crackers and guns. All day R. D. made no complaint and manifested no annoyance, and late in the afternoon remarked, "I think this is such a quiet place! There were no loud noises such as there always are in Pittsburgh on the Fourth of July." S. M. afterwards said, "You saved her from a great deal of nervousness and annoyance, and yourself from the trouble of M.'s coming. She thinks that the sounds were less than they really were, for all sounded muffled to her." She heard conversation, seemingly, as well as usual.

R. D. got a bag of marshmallows, and roguishly said, "Give the A Phase one when she comes. She always despised them." M. accepted the candy I offered her with delight, and I popped a marshmallow into her mouth without her seeing it. She fairly screamed, her face showing an agony of loathing, ejected the offensive morsel after several efforts, and shivered with nausea. Mrs. P. hastily brought her water, but she could not get over the shock for some time, declaring, as she has always done, that marshmallows were rotten, made out of dead horses, etc. [631] A half dozen times during the next half hour she broke out pathetically, "Don't ever give your baby marshmallows again, will you, babo? Because it makes baby Margaret sick. I am sick to my stomach. Don't *ever* give them to Margaret

---

631. Doubtless this was told her at an early age, according to the abominable practice of some persons who think it does not matter what sort of lies they tell children in order for their own amusement.



again, babo, will you?" And I faithfully promised that I would not.

S. M. expressed herself strongly on the subject of R. D.'s improvement during the last few days, saying that the effect of the fright is gone, and that she "is getting better by leaps and bounds", that she is "surprised at the self-possession she is acquiring", and that it seems wonderful that so much has been accomplished, considering how long M. has been with R. D. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *July 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*July 5.* Today there was little noise of crackers on the street, but what there was recovered its normal loudness to R. D.'s ears. This I learned from S. M. The weather is very hot, and R. D. laughingly remarked that when she looked at mother and saw how she was perspiring she herself became hot all over, which is no doubt literally true. At 10.15 R. D. came for the night. *July 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*July 6. Sunday.* R. D. went to church and did not notice the heat from which others suffered. Probably she was engrossed in the service, and neither noticed her own sensations nor paid attention to the signs of discomfort on the part of others. She came at night at 9.25. *July 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*July 7.* R. D. came at 10 p. m. *July 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 8.* Roused by the closing of windows, R. D. rose at a little past five, had a very active day, took a long automobile ride with friends in the evening, while Mrs. P. and I were absent, returned to the house at about 10, fell asleep and *remained herself* until our return 25 minutes later. This is an epochal event, and the more remarkable considering the early hour of her rising, and how busily she kept employed thereafter. M. was delighted, saying that "she would have slept all night", and S. M. agrees that if the house had remained quiet she probably would have done so. I asked myself aloud, as I was rubbing M.'s feet according to formula, "What time was it when R. D. came", really intending the



question for S. M., to be answered later. To my surprise M. responded, "Twenty-five minutes past ten. (How did you know?) I saw the time", but she looked puzzled as she said it. When S. M. could speak she said, "I made her do that. I can make her say anything." R. D. came at 11.25. *July 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 9.* It is very hot, and arrangements have been made for sleeping in the back yard, in couches placed under the trees. M. demurred, though not vigorously. It was the first time that M. had gone down steps for nearly a year, and she was apprehensive. The steps were only four in number. I said "Step down", and she came down with a jolt and cried, "Now,—easy!" The second step she managed better and laughed nervously. She was relieved when down, and cheerfully hopped into the couch. R. D. came at 9.25, but alas! she could not sleep; sounds disturbed her, a leaf fell on her face, and frightened her, and at midnight she gave it up and returned to her room. *July 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*July 10.* In consequence of loss of sleep last night M. came at 5.25 a. m., and she was here half an hour. The heat was intense and caused R. D. suffering, and M. complained of it on coming at 8 p. m. I began to fan her, and she watched the operation as though it were something extraordinary, at length exclaiming, "Let me do that." But at every attempt to fan, the article flew out of her hands. She tried again and again, but could not both retain hold and execute the fanning movement. She was pleased that she did not have to go down the steps again tonight. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *July 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 2 h. 20 m.*

*July 11.* The heat is accompanied by more humidity than is usual here, and R. D. is afflicted with "prickly heat."

R. D. came at 11.10 p. m. This was the third consecutive night that she had dreams of her old home. M. first told me the dream, in which "our mor'r—did the D. have a mor'r?—a fat lady", and "Trixie—who was Trixie?", and "an old drunk man", and "Dr. Prince", [632] were the chief char-

---

632. The form which my name took, "Dr. Prince", instead of "papa",



acters. The principal incident of the dream was the recurrent one of explaining to her mother that she did not know that she was dead when she went to Dr. P.'s to live. Afterwards R. D. herself spoke of her dreams and said, in answer to my question, that she was not conscious of reproaching herself for coming to us. S. M. says that of course R. D. cannot help missing some of her family, especially Ada's children. R. D. suggested that perhaps the dreams came from the fact that when thoughts of the family come to her she tries to throw them off. She lately sent money and arranged to have her mother's grave cared for, and said today, "I thought that perhaps I would not have the dreams so much, but I do." This remark seems significant to me, and tends to confirm my suspicion that there is somewhere in her mind a fear lest she should allow her affection for her new mother to push the memory of her own mother into the background. This would account for the dream. *July 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 12.* The long day yesterday, heat and bad dreams, made M. come thrice today. R. D. came for sleep at 9.55. *July 11-12: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*July 13. Sunday.* Today was cooler. M. came at 8 p. m., and was eating her little lunch as usual, lying on the couch, when, at 8.07, an odd, half-surprised expression came over her features and she said, "The R. D. is coming again. (How is that?) She wanted to see to her chickens before she forgot." R. D. came, and without any appearance of surprise whatever simply said, "I must see to the chickens." In response to my questions she told me that she tried to

---

shows that the dream harked back to an earlier period of consciousness, and leads to the suspicion that it was in part instigated by vague memories from S. D., since S. D. called me "Dr. Prince" until her mentality had far declined, while R. D. called me "papa" from the first of her living with us, and since S. D. did feel misgivings as to whether she ought to leave her father, "the old drunk man" of the dream, brutal though he was. But R. D.'s own fears lest she should in any degree forget her mother, if I am correct, mixed in, and dominated the dream so as to lay the chief emphasis upon the mother rather than the father. M., I am confident, did not know who was meant by "Dr. Prince".



stay until she could attend to the task. S. M. put it, "She was too tired; she went in and got a little rest, and then she came and did it." This is one of the many instances where R. D., having a purpose to do something, could not maintain her synthesis long enough to do so, but the inwardly registered resolve sufficed to bring her back after rest in order to fulfil it. R. D. was here less than five minutes. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *July 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*July 14.* In the evening I took her to a picture show, as I do about once a week, as this entertainment seems to benefit her. Speaking of a disreputable person I jestingly said that he ought to be cut into mincemeat, an expression which produced a disagreeable effect upon R. D. She came at 10.10, and dreamed that she saw a child cut into fragments by a train. She recognized the face of the child as that of one which she saw years ago, after it had been killed by a train, but it was not in fact mutilated. The image suggested by my gory remark mingled with an incident of experience which lent it plausibility. I omitted to mention that two days ago I advised R. D. not to drive away thoughts of her old home and the family as though these thoughts were criminal. The recurrent dream has not been repeated since. Perhaps her feeling at liberty to think about these things may have operated in the way I intended it should. *July 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 15.* R. D. came at 10 p. m. *July 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*July 16.* R. D. woke very early and could not go to sleep again, so M. came from 6.35 to 7.05. In the evening R. D. was cheerful to the point of gaiety. At about 9 she announced, "I am going to sleep myself tonight. I will go to bed at half-past nine and go right to sleep, myself." By this she meant that she would maintain herself without a M.-interval. She was very confident that she would succeed, and perhaps she might have done so but for an accident. Out of sheer gaiety of spirits she tossed a roll of cloth to Mrs. P. instead of carrying it to her, and the roll struck a



large lamp, overturned it and broke a piece or two from the shade besides knocking from the table and breaking a small dish. In an instant M. was standing there, her hands to her eyes, sobbing bitterly. She would not go to sleep until she had carefully gathered up some articles on the lounge that R. D. was particular about, weeping all the time. "My face is all wetty" she said, and I gave her a handkerchief. Mrs. P. and I strove to comfort her, and presently she slept but still sobbed. Waking, she ejaculated "The D. broke a lamp!" and burst out crying again. I quickly said, "Hear the pretty birdie", with the usual automatic response. Several times she slept for brief periods, and on each waking cried, "The D. broke a lamp!", her tears flowed afresh, and I sought to check the tide of emotion with the "birdie" dam. When once she was started laughing the battle was nearly won, but it was necessary for some time to divert her mind, to keep her from slumping back. As far as she in her own personality was concerned, she cared little about the lamp,—she had been wailing vicariously for R. D. But she did feel disgusted at being on deck when R. D. had hoped to stay all night, and was fearful lest she should have to stay until morning. Mrs. P. made light of the matter, remarking that a piece was broken out of the lamp before. Here M. told a curious story. It appears that S. D. was washing the lamp-shade one day, and fearing that she would let it fall gripped it so hard that she actually gripped a piece off. This put her into a state of perturbation. From the wrath that she had roused by accidents in other households she feared lest Mrs. P. would be angry and not let her come to the house any more—this was before I had begun to take notice of the case. So she skilfully glued the piece on, so that the break was almost invisible. Feeling that someone ought to tell Mrs. P., she tried to induce M. to do so, but M. refused. "We would have liked for there to have been another one to blame it on, but there wasn't, so nobody told her", concluded M. Long after, R. D. got back the memory of the incident, and told Mrs. P., "I broke that", but not until tonight did we learn that she broke it in the personality of S. D. After M. went to sleep, S. M., calm as a peaceful island amidst tur-



moil of the sea, regretted the accident only because it kept R. D. from realizing her resolve to maintain herself over night. "She would have done it, too. The time had come when, having sufficient strength and having made up her mind, she would have succeeded. You couldn't have made her do it, if you had tried, any more than you have done by encouraging her to believe that she could some time or soon. She would have thought that you were very anxious and that would have made her worry, and delayed it. She had to come to it spontaneously. The worst of it now is that she will probably be blue tomorrow, from the tendency to reproach herself. (Don't you suppose I can do something by way of suggestion tonight to help her?) Perhaps you can. It would be best to treat the matter as a joke." When, at 10.35, R. D. came asleep, I whispered with a chuckle, "That was nothing. Just a little piece or two out that can be mended. But it was a joke on you, wasn't it? But you will succeed soon, never fear. You are not going to mind it. Sleep, sleep soundly." At the first light chuckle of mine the sleeping girl laughed, and she kept up a ripple of laughter until my tone changed with "Sleep." *July 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; 1 h. 50 m.*

*July 17.* R. D. appears cheerful as a general thing, and though she has reproached herself, the cloud was lightened considerably, I am confident, by the psychic treatment of last night. Once she remarked how foolish she was to throw the roll of cloth, and I reminded her that we all have our accidents, and told her that she must not blame herself. She replied, "But I have been doing that all my life, and cannot get over it at once. I know that Dr. Walker said that I must get over it, and I really try, and don't do it nearly so much as I did." At noon, feeling the effects of last night's incident, she gave place to M., who soon broke out, "The D. broke a lamp!" and after a few repetitions her face began to take on the hypnotized look and her tone to become metallic, like that of a parrot, so I set to work and broke up the new automatism, by the "Hear pretty birdie" one, which



always terminates itself. [633] I found that M. knows about R. D.'s laughing while asleep, and asked her, " (What she doesn't know about that, does she?) I see her thoughts underneath, you greaser!—the thoughts that she keeps in the ice-box ", she replied, laughing. R. D. came for the night at 10.15. *July 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 18.* R. D. came at 9.05. *July 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 19.* There is still some effect perceptible from the accident of Wednesday night, though no "set-back." R. D. came for sleep at 9.05. *July 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*July 20. Sunday.* R. D. wanted to stay until the end of the church service, and Mrs. P. encouraged her, thinking that it would be well for her to attempt it. I only said that she must not think of it unless she felt no weariness at the close of the sermon. In the evening I found S. M. very much dissatisfied with what I had said. "I see how it will be after I am gone. The mother will suggest her going somewhere or doing something that I have told you she ought not do, and you will permit it, in spite of what I have warned you about the first year, and she will suffer in consequence. I wish that year were over!" In the afternoon R. D. got something out of M.'s drawer, since she "felt" that it would be all right. Meditating a design in reference to that drawer, then, still has power to stir M. in the subliminal depths to an emotional response, in this case favorable, which response rises into R. D.'s consciousness in the shape of an indefinable acquiescence. In the evening M. saw in R. D.'s thoughts clearly what had been done, but felt no displeasure—the only reaction was that she showed the first interest in the drawer that has been manifested for a long time, called for it and handled its contents, took apart the "nest of eggs" with

---

633. Days elapsed before the tendency to revert to this "cricket-chirp" wore off. Sometimes she would say, "DORIS BROKE A LAMP—and a dish", the final words being added in a less loud and lower-pitched tone, quite as if they were an unimportant after-thought. The explanation, according to S. M., is that M. knew that R. D. had not fancied the little ornamental dish.



cries of delight, and had me read her about five letters from her friends. She remembered some of the articles, but others, including the book of devotions, she had forgotten completely. She was very weary when through looking over the contents of the drawer. R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. She has not had a self-reproaching dream since I told her to think freely of the old home. *July 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*July 21.* M. came, 2.10-2.35 p. m. I tested her memory, and found that she has forgotten much since the last test. She remembers nothing of R. D.'s babyhood or of the school days, nothing of the sewing for pay. "No, the D. never went to school", she declared, "the D. never worked. (What did she do?) Just played." It is doubtful if the word "work" means anything to her now, while she would naturally retain comprehension of the word "play" as more pertinent in connection with her own individuality. I doubt not that M. would still tell stories about the babyhood, school days, etc., if the same came up in the way of association of ideas, but otherwise these and many more memories of by-gone days have departed.

S. M. and I discussed the change which has gradually taken place in the mechanism of M.'s learning the thoughts and doings of R. D. while the latter is out. [634] I asked,

634.

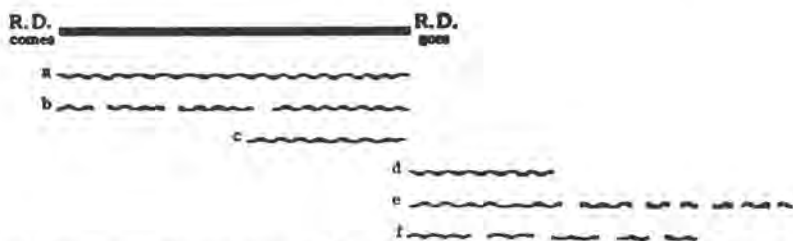


Diagram Illustrating Stages of Devolution in the Process of the Passage of Thoughts from Real Doris to Margaret.

The thick straight line at the top stands for the consciousness of R. D., supraliminal. The wavy lines represent thoughts in the consciousness of M. derived from R. D., that is, M.'s knowledge of what R. D. thought when she was out. The streams of consciousness are supposed to travel from left to right. The unbroken and broken lines, a, b, c, d, e, f, stand for successive



"(Can you explain this?)" S. M. without hesitation began to expound the reason, and while her verbiage was somewhat obscure, I understood her meaning to be about as follows. In the old days, when M. was co-conscious subliminally all the time that R. D. was out, she subtracted so much from R. D.'s conscious life. That is, the effect was to make R. D.'s consciousness dimmer, as it were, more or less troubled and confused, in degree corresponding to the extent to which M. was interested in what was going on in R. D.'s mind, and herself active. Then, as M. gradually ceased to be co-conscious while R. D. was out, the latter became so much the

stages in the devolution of M.'s power to discern the thoughts of R. D. Each in turn is to be considered in relation with the top line representing the supraliminal R. D. consciousness. At the point that this line ceases R. D. has become subliminal and M. has "come out", *i. e.*, become supraliminal. The lines a, b and c, being under the R. D. line, mean that at these stages M., being subliminal, saw R. D.'s thoughts during their first occurrence in the mind of supraliminal R. D. The lines d, e and f, being beyond the R. D. line, mean that at these stages M., being supraliminal, saw thoughts of R. D.'s supraliminal period as they were being "reviewed" in the mind of subliminal R. D. Of course there were no sudden transitions from one stage to another, but these shaded into each other.

*Stage a.* That in which the case was found in January, 1911, had been for many years, and continued to be until the middle of May. M., subliminal, had the power to "watch", *i. e.*, see the thoughts of R. D., supraliminal, continuously.

*Stage b.* This began about the middle of March, 1911. [See page 433.] M. lost the power to watch continuously. Hiatuses began to occur, corresponding with the periods when R. D. was freshest in vigor and happiest in spirits.

*Stage c.* M. had almost lost the power to watch, but came near the surface when R. D. was exhausted with maintaining her synthesis, and a few minutes before it dissolved was able to gather knowledge regarding such of the previous day's experiences and thoughts, usually the more striking and vivid, as passed in review in R. D.'s memory. This stage was in progress in August, 1911. [See pages 669, 671.]

*Stage d.* This began in January, 1912. [See page 872.] M. had now ceased to gather thoughts from R. D. a few minutes before the latter went, but did so during the first few minutes after she herself had become supraliminal, and while R. D. was rapidly "going down". R. D. in this stage had become the dominant personal factor, and her thoughts were, so to speak, pushed up into M.'s consciousness by her own activity.

*Stage e.* Later R. D. seemed to go down more slowly, and at some date M. would for half an hour occasionally get sight of happenings and impressions of the day from the now more psychically abounding R. D. After the gradually lengthening period during which this intermittent process continued, R. D. would seem to have descended to such a depth that M. saw nothing more. This stage was in its beginning in May, 1912. [See page 946.]

*Stage f.* By December, 1913, it was found that the period following the departure of R. D. during which M. glimpsed the thoughts of the former



more clear and free in her mentality, more and more nearly sole proprietor of her conscious life. Then M. began, during *her* periods of being out, to become aware of R. D.'s thoughts for a short time after the latter had gone beneath the threshold, that is, R. D. was beginning to encroach upon M.'s consciousness while the latter was out, being for a little while "near the surface", as though reluctant to go down. Now M. was the one to have her consciousness shaved thinner, as it were. Then as time went on, the period during which R. D. after giving place to M. remained near the surface lengthened, that is, she left less and less of M.'s time entirely to her. Even at this writing, during the last portion of a long stay by M., few or none of R. D.'s thoughts bubble up to her, showing that R. D. has sunk lower down. [635] As in the days of M.'s greatest development it was a bad state of things that M. should be vigorously thinking underneath during R. D.'s conscious periods, so it is now a good thing that R. D. should be thinking underneath during M.'s periods out.

It is a curious fact that R. D.'s memories of years gone by are not so clear now as they were, say twelve months ago. S. M. cannot understand this and is somewhat troubled by it. [636] But it appears to me that the reason may at least be plausibly surmised. Formerly R. D.'s field of consciousness, even at the most favorable moment, was sure to contain

---

was shortening, and that the glimpses were fewer and farther between. This was not due to any reversal of the process so far as R. D. was concerned, for she lingered nearer the surface than ever before, but was owing to the growing decay of the M. complex. She was failing in her power to perceive what was pushed up more continuously than hitherto, and even doubted, at times, the reality of what she did perceive.

The actuality of the above delineated stages was demonstrated by hundreds of observations, samples of which are set forth in the record. The explanation of them is derived in part from the naive intuitional utterances of M., but mostly from the ever-consistent declarations of S. M., who professed to be an immediate witness of that which she described. I have chosen to employ much of her own terminology, such as "going down", "coming near the surface", "watch", "review", etc. The arrangement of the whole scheme in systematic order is my work.

635. She was now in stage *c* of the process, while stage *f* was yet to come.

636. This rings true. The reason would not declare itself to immediate introspection.



elements which were either psychic activities of M. surging up from below, or the result of them in the way of emotional shadings, intellectual obscurations, etc. But now the psychic activities of M. manifested in R. D.'s successive fields of consciousness, and the modifications resulting from them, have largely disappeared. In a sense, R. D.'s *identity* is changing, and it seems intelligible on that account that her memories of that former state, when she had not the same integrity of being, should be somewhat clouded.

While R. D. takes to all the details of poultry-culture, the development and printing of photographs, and the pressing of flowers, with a high degree of dexterity and skill, she has yet shown no desire to paint. "I wonder if I ever will be able to do it again!", she exclaims, rather pathetically. [637] She does excellent needle-work, and is a skilful embroiderer, but comes short of the exquisite work produced by S. D. Set her to a task of studying and thus far it has had the effect of producing weariness, but let her spontaneously study, without thinking that she is studying, as books on poultry, and she learns rapidly and without resultant nervousness. R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *July 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*July 22.* R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *July 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 23.* I asked R. D. if she had not felt better the last few days. "Yes, how did you know? I have felt freer." I surmised as much from the fact that M. has been losing memories lately. S. M., asked if S. D. used to dream incidents from the past life of R. D. before the death of the mother, replied that she thought not. At 9.05 R. D. came for sleep. *July 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 50 m.*

*July 24.* R. D. ate two apples in the afternoon. In the evening M. demanded two apples, and could not be persuaded

---

637. When S. D.'s hysteria-fiction in regard to painting exploits was set before her consciousness so that she realized its nature, as fully as *she* was capable of doing, she resolved that she never would, and she never did, paint again. Did R. D. take over from S. D. a subliminal repulsion to painting? She has not to this date (May, 1915) made any efforts in that direction.



that one was enough. Afterwards, while asleep, she complained, "My 'tomach is too full. Babo, take some out!" Waking, she asked if I didn't know better than to let her have two apples. "One is enough for a little girl; you should have taken the other away from Margaret. (I was afraid that you would be cross.) Well, I'm cross now, so what's the diffy?" At 9.15 p. m. R. D. was here. *July 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*July 25.* R. D. went at 9.20 p. m., just after returning from a call with Mrs. P., and was back at 10.10. *July 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h., 5 m.; M., 50 m.*

*July 26.* The monthly period began today, with some pain, probably in consequence of a cold. R. D. came at 9 p. m., but had a bad night, from both pain and noise in a neighboring house. *July 25-26: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*July 27. Sunday.* She staid at home today. M. was here 1-2.15 p. m., 5.5-5.50, and 8.10-9.10, good-natured as usual. R. D., coming at 9.10 p. m., was given a sleeping-powder. *July 26-27: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 3 h.*

*July 28.* R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *July 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*July 29.* In the evening we all went to a moving-picture exhibition. There was the most graphic depiction of a battle that I ever saw. I marked that R. D.'s emotions were being powerfully affected, and tried to get her to close her eyes or turn them aside, but she did not seem to be able to do so, and stared in fascinated horror, while her palms dripped water. M. came just before we had reached the steps leading to the piazza of our residence. She had great trouble with her feet, especially in mounting the steps. I had to tell her when to lift her feet, and half lift her, the feet stumbled so. M. said, "It wasn't good for the D. to see those pictures. . . . That comes from our mother." That is, Mrs. F. had a horror of war, particularly because her husband learned to drink while in the army. Either the effect upon R. D. was pre-natal, or due to her mother telling her about how she loathed the war, or both. R. D. came at 10.50



for the night. Her dreams were colored by the pictures of battle which she had seen, as were thoughts the next day. *July 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*July 30.* I noted some time ago [638] the gradual appearance of German traces in M.'s speech. For the last three days she has been pronouncing *apple* like the German "*apfel*." S. M. says, "M. did not talk with any German accent when a tot. Her mother could understand but not speak German, and M. disliked her father too much to take after him. But later, when M. was about five or six, she used to go into the stable to see the horses, and the stablemen were mostly German. Here M. picked up German words and pronunciations. Later she discarded these. [639] M., it appears, is going back along the path of her development.

M., especially since she lost her sense of taste, chews her food insufficiently, but it is noticeable that she masticates pretzels better than anything else. S. M. explains this by remarking, "That is because she likes the crunching noise they make."

Today a bed for R. D. was prepared on the back porch, to see if she can sleep there, as she cannot under the trees. As Mrs. P. and I were to be out in the evening, she told us not to hurry home, as she would go to bed and be all right. She did go to bed, went to sleep and remained herself until our return at 10.05. Returning at 10.35, she slept poorly, either from nervousness at being out of doors, or because she had worked too hard in her enthusiasm, during the day. *July 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 30 m.*

*July 31.* The poor sleep of last night, itself probably the result of over-exertion, produced the inevitable effect of bringing M. more today. M. was out 2.40-3.35 p. m., and 8.30-9.30. Catamenia, which had ceased, resumed. R. D. does not feel well, but M.'s spirits are unaffected.

S. M., who used to be, in regard not only to current but also to past conditions, quick and positive in her replies, is

---

638. See page 1055.

639. That is, when she went to school. See page 1055.



now, as she frankly warns me, uncertain in regard to many former incidents and relations. She explains that formerly she was all the time studying situations and conditions, but now "I have put all that off on you." R. D., coming at 9.30 p. m., was given a sleeping-powder. *July 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h.; M., 1 h. 55 m. Average daily record of R. D. during July, 1913, 22 h. 30 m.*

*Aug. 1.* R. D. feels better than yesterday, though not quite up to par. At 10.20 M. came, as amiable as possible, and remained lying throughout her stay. A caller came for me, and M. said, "I'll be just as good and quiet." No sound was heard from the room where she was during the twenty minutes that I was obliged to be absent—a most unusual period for M. to be left alone. She held a book before her eyes all this time, S. M. reports, and finally became absorbed in the notion that I had "gone for good." When I returned she gurgled with delight, and made movements of the arms and legs, and it would seem, as S. M. says, of every muscle of her body, something like a baby when in an ecstatic mood, and quickly fell asleep from sheer emotion. Waking soon, she continued her manifestations of joy, exclaiming, "I thought you were losted." I notice that M., who long fused her memories of Aunt Louise and Grandmother, now remembers neither. Sometimes she sees some thought regarding one or the other in the mind of R. D. "going down", and repeats it as one would a fairy tale, but it gets no root in her own consciousness. In the afternoon M. came again. She seemed lethargic, and a minute after her arrival exclaimed, in a surprised manner, "I'm here again! (Didn't you know it before?) I just thunk it."

Not having seen any evidence that S. M. had "been away" lately, I asked her if she had and received a negative reply. In answer to another inquiry she asserted that her going away or refraining therefrom had no relation to R. D.'s improving health. I resumed my reading, but soon observed that M., who is usually a pretty *active* sleeper, twisting or otherwise moving her body, or doing something with her hands, or talking, or turning her head, etc., with no long intermissions, was lying perfectly motionless, but for the barely



perceptible rise and fall of the chest from gentle breathing. For about 12 minutes I kept silent watch, and there was not the tiniest other movement from the head to the feet,—she might almost have been a figure of wax. It was evident that S. M. had gone away. A noise was heard in the next room, and the jerk announcing S. M.'s return and the waking of M. were almost simultaneous. When M. was asleep again I asked " (What happened?) I went away. (Why did you, so soon after I spoke about your trips?) That made me think of it." [640] She says that she was conscious throughout her being away, and of the disturbance which caused her to return, and that both the going and the coming as always, were voluntary.

S. M. declared that this had been a good day for R. D. I reasoned that it could not have been, since she had been constipated, had headache, was "dumpy", evidently felt the effects of Wednesday's overwork, had given way to M. twice during the daytime, and had had a short day,—that it must have been an uncommonly bad day for her, and I certainly meant what I said. But her conviction could not be shaken. "It is a good day for her." I laughed. "I am not joking; it really is. (How?) She is doing mending that she could not do without this rest. She is not resting merely from the overwork, though that has made her stay away longer, but she is resting from the progress that M. had made in going. She has to catch up, and is mending as she rests. I'll bet that she goes to sleep herself tonight, and tomorrow night too. (Well, if she does that I will agree with you.) Well, I think that she will." [641] M. got impatient at R. D.'s long delay, declared that "life is a bore", and started to whimper, but was caused to laugh by diverting devices and

---

640. This is one of the many instances that indicate that the "going away"—whatever that is—is voluntary. And it is something real, a profound psychical displacement of some sort, announcing itself not only by S. M.'s statements, but also by effects upon M.'s slumber, and by effects upon the feelings of M. or R. D., whichever was out and awake at the time it occurred. Instances of these effects have been plentifully given in the record.

641. But R. D. did not maintain herself that night, the following night, or any night for months to follow. Still, it must be remembered that S. M.



slept again. I remarked to S. M., "(You don't advise me much about the case lately.) Because you don't need it. She is getting along all right. (Do you think that she will be well in a couple of years?) A couple of years! Yes, long before that. You had better not say anything like that to the R. D. (No, I surely won't. But you thought that she would be well by last Christmas.) I thought she would be well by the Christmas before that. (Yes, that is true. So you can't tell anything about it.) But M. is so far gone now that she can't last any such time as two years." R. D. returned at 3.05. And she did not stay at night. M. was out again from 8.30 to 9.45. *July 31.-Aug. 1: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h.; M., 4 h. 15 m.*

*Aug. 2.* R. D. came at 9.25 p. m. *Aug. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Aug. 3. Sunday.* The constipation was at last broken up very effectually, so that R. D. could not go to church, and M. came at 3.20 p. m. for ten minutes.

**M. Reaches Deepening of Sinister-Lateral Tactile Anæsthesia.** I find that M. can feel, or at least detect, a light tickling on the right foot, but not on the left, the experiments being made when M. was holding a paper in such position that she could not have seen her feet even had her sight been normal. S. M. seemed puzzled to know how M. could detect this tickling. She herself knew what I was doing only by M.'s reactions. But she did profess to know that the lateral difference in the regard mentioned began about two months ago. M. still does not notice a pinch or the prick of a pin on either side of her body.

In the evening R. D. went to sleep and maintained herself until my return. I remarked to S. M. that R. D. seemed to succeed in doing this best when I was absent, and jesting said that perhaps I had better stay away an entire night. She responded, "R. D. could go to sleep herself while you

---

did not profess, as she many times reminded me, to be an infallible prophet of the future in regard to the case. But her predictions in this regard were certainly much more frequently prescient than those of the most learned and watchful outside observer could have been.



are here if she went to bed early enough, but she does not feel like it. When you went away, the mother went to bed, and R. D. did not feel like sitting up alone. Don't you worry. She will come to it at the proper time. (But I wouldn't prophesy for a few days.) There now! I think that a good many things I have predicted came true. (Well, her condition was not favorable to the prophecy.) I think it was favorable. I hardly see yet why she didn't stay. It was the headache, I suppose." R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. *Aug. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Aug. 4.* R. D. came at 9.05 p. m. *Aug. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Aug. 5.* Troubled by constipation again. In the evening I took her for a brisk walk, and after three minutes of it the thyroid gland swelled, and we had to moderate the pace. M. came just before we reached the house, and had to be helped up the steps. But the walk did good. Pills are taken when there is need. At 9 p. m. R. D. was back. *Aug. 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Aug. 6.* R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Aug. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Aug. 7.* This morning R. D. said, "O, I am getting to feel so much better. The last two days my head has been getting clearer, and lighter some way. I would know that I was getting well if you didn't tell me so, by my feelings." And I do not think that I have ever seen her express quite the same exuberance of spirits which has marked the last two days. It was not for weeks, perhaps months, after her cure commenced that R. D. began to express impatience for her full recovery. After that she did so with growing frequency. "The more I get", she says, "the more I want." And of course it is well that this should be so, and it is a part of the inward propulsion towards normality. We went to a picture-show in the evening. R. D. came for sleep at 10.05. *Aug. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h.; M., 50 m.*

*Aug. 8.* **M. Reaches Complete Sinister-Lateral Tactile Anæsthesia.** The surface anæsthesia on the left side, in the case of M., has become more profound during the last few days, and seems now to be complete. It has not been spoken



of in her hearing, but tonight she seemed to be conscious of it, rubbed her left foot, and said, "Babo, rub that foot, it's numb." The same condition was found to exist on the surface of the left hand and arm, and when I, unperceived, felt from left to right across her chin she did not notice it until my finger crossed the median line. As I was rubbing her left foot she cried, "Are you rubbin'? Let me hear you rubbin'." . You are rubbin'! I can hear your rubbin'." But when I rubbed the couch she still exclaimed, "I can hear you rubbin'", with the same satisfaction. M. has surface anæsthesia to a considerable degree on the right side, but it seems to be complete on the left side. As already stated, there is general anæsthesia to pricks and pinches, also muscular anæsthesia, also a degree of anæsthesia of the internal organs, so that she does not experience headache, abdominal pains, etc., which R. D. has just been undergoing, or feels them in smaller measure.

At 9.30 R. D. arrived for the night. She generally sleeps well, and averages at least ten hours of sleep, besides which M. averages perhaps half an hour of sleep for the day. *Aug. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Aug. 9.* R. D. continues to remark how well and clear of brain she feels. In the evening R. D. was grieved by some remark which she heard, but it is noticeable that she is getting more able to endure the little frictions which are so common in this world. When M. came in the evening she told me what R. D. had heard said. Her own demeanor was somewhat affected, and later she looked sourly at me, and several times ejaculated "Greaser!", as though I had been the author of the unfortunate remark. This was her last word to me before R. D. came. In the course of her hour she sent me to the kitchen for something, and I turned on the electric light. As I returned she said, "Diddy you make the light out?" This is the first time that I have heard her use this Teutonism. "Machtest du das Licht aus" is the German phraseology. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Aug. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Aug. 10. Sunday.* M. was on deck 6-6.30 p. m. Supper being ready before R. D.'s return, Mrs. P. sat down to the table,



but M. was afraid that she would eat everything up and R. D. have nothing, so ordered her to wait. "Doris los'!" she would cry, "Come along, Doris! Doris! Doris! Babo ring the bell for her. Supper's ready!!" Her face was wreathed with smiles, yet she was sincerely anxious for R. D.'s return. She had to wait, however, for ten minutes.

**M. Loses Ability to Recognize Anything in a Picture.** For a number of nights I have noticed that M., as she turns over the pages of magazines in imitation of my reading, has never exultantly called out "Pretty baby!" Tonight I showed her a large picture of an infant, which lately would have caused her to cry, "Aw! what a cute little baby!", and she said only, "Dog! dog!" Later I showed her the picture of a negro baby, saying "See little negro baby." She took the magazine, looked at the picture long and seriously, her features twisting as they will when she is baffled, then returned it, shaking her head and saying, "No, no nigger baby. Dog! dog!" Then she no longer recognizes anything in pictures! S. M. says, "A picture is only a blur to her." Note that the rapid deepening of anæsthesia on the left side, and the dropping out of recognition of babies in pictures synchronized with the improvement in R. D.'s feelings and mental state.

M. told of R. D.'s fondness for pretzels, a bag of which she keeps on hand. "Ev'y time the D. feels tired she eaty a pretzel. She feels bored and she go eaty a pretzel. She couldn't get any farther in letter to Dr. Brashear—she go eaty a pretzel, and come back and finish letter. She feel tired sewing and she go eaty a pretzel. Then she goes back and sews. That's a fierce child. Ev'y time she eaty a pretzel—just a piece of pretzel—she breaky them into pieces. Such a crazy Doris!" She got Mrs. P. and me chuckling by the inimitable drollery of her manner. Whenever we laughed she broke out into a ripple or peal of laughter, and yet I observe that her laughing is mostly an echo of our own. R. D. came at 8.45 p. m.. Aug. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.

Aug. 11. In the evening R. D. and Mrs. P. went to a picture show. After M. came she laughed and laughed about



a funny picture that R. D. had seen, and said, "Wasn't that funny? The man looking through the hole was so funny!" R. D.'s amusement was reflected in M. R. D. came at 9.45 asleep as usual. *Aug. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 25 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Aug. 12.* I asked R. D. to write a short statement of her feelings during the last days, when she has seemed so exuberantly happy. This is what she wrote. "August 12th, 1913. About a week ago I began to feel very much better. The confusion of mind entirely disappeared. [642] I have felt clearer and more at ease than ever before in my life. It seemed as though one had been trying to do a difficult problem and suddenly it all came clear. My mind seems to be lighter, and I can think quicker and clearer than ever before."

In the evening I went to the picture show and took R. D. with me, and she saw it a second time with enjoyment. M. came when we were half-way up the steps to the house. Again this evening she laughed at the funny pictures that she saw in R. D.'s mind. As she lay on the lounge I put my hand under her left elbow and joggled her arm up and down. "My hand's movin'!" she cried hysterically, and I had some trouble to stop the nervous laughter. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Aug. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 25 m.*

*Aug. 13.* I stopped rubbing M.'s foot and rubbed the couch cover instead. She pricked up her ears, and asked, "Is my shoe on? That isn't my foot you are rubbin'." I changed to the foot and she said "That's my foot." Rubbing the couch cover was resumed and she broke out, "O, our foot's made of leather" and actually began to cry, whereupon I told her that I had rubbed her dress over her foot. Her fears were allayed, but she querulously ordered me not to rub her dress any more. [643]

---

642. It seemed to her, by comparison with past experience, that her mind could not be clearer. But improvement was yet to come.

643. M. did not on the evening of Aug. 8th detect the difference, when I ceased rubbing the foot and began rubbing the couch cover instead, the reason probably being that then her attention was taken up by the novelty of the absence of surface sensation on the left side. She had become used to this by the 13th, and her auditory hyperæsthesia made its customary announcements to her consciousness.



S. M. says that one large factor in bringing about R. D.'s splendid condition of the last week has been the marked improvement in Mrs. P.'s health. I arranged with S. M. that at some convenient time tomorrow afternoon she should go away, at the signal from me, "Do you remember what is the evening star?" R. D. came for sleep at 9.15 p. m. *Aug. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Aug. 14.* In the morning I spoke to R. D. about banging against my chair when she passes it, a thing which has always grated on my nerves. Again, after lunch she collided with it, and I asked her to be careful. My manner was kindly, but it appears that she had tried to be careful, and self-reproach sent her away, but M. came as jolly as usual. In the afternoon, as we were sitting on the piazza, I gave the signal agreed upon with S. M., by asking R. D. if she remembered which is the evening star. R. D. was reading at the time, and there was little change in her demeanor, except that she turned her chair a little more in my direction, and more frequently addressed me or read short bits aloud. In the evening S. M. said that she was gone about ten minutes, and remarked, "I could tell by her feelings after I got back that she was not conscious of any change. She has gotten too strong for that." The truth is, I think, that though she was not conscious of the change yet she vaguely felt it.

M. in the evening exclaimed "Wasn't that funny?", then the look of amusement faded, she looked blank, and asked, "What was funny, babo?" She had forgotten what started the exclamation on the 11th, and even when I reminded her, "The man looking through a hole", she said, "Asa, no." R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Aug. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Aug. 15.* Nothing has occurred to impair R. D.'s clearer intellectuality and heightened happiness. Also she appears more womanly and her voice has developed a new and richer timbre. R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Aug. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Aug. 16.* R. D. was back for the night at 9.20. *Aug. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*



*Aug. 17. Sunday.* R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Aug. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Aug. 18.* R. D. arrived at 9.25 p. m. *Aug. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Aug. 19.* We attended a picture show, and R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Aug. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Aug. 20.* R. D.'s happy frame has continued, and her brain has become clearer, since she, in good faith, wrote that it was perfectly clear. She came for the night at 9.20. In the night a strange cat walked over her bed, and frightened her so that M. came for 15 minutes. *Aug. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Aug. 21.* R. D. became grieved at a remark just after supper, and sat down on the porch in the dark. At 7.40 M. came, without a particle of the wounded feeling, but a little more fidgety than usual. After a while she said, "That D. is a crazy child. She cried today, out on the porch." M. gave no indication that she knew the cause of the crying, and the term "today" would imply that she did not realize that the crying took place only a few minutes before her own arrival. R. D. arrived for sleep at 8.55 p. m. *Aug. 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Aug. 22.* The same cat came three times and prowled over her bed last night. She would not call me, and lost some sleep. In consequence she did not feel so well this morning and M. came 10.50-11.20 a. m. In the evening, as M. went to her room to dress for the night, she said, "Babo, you must tell the D. that she must put on her nightgown and kimono before I come. 'Cause I *can't*. I can't find where my head and hands go in—I hunt and hunt and it tires me, and I tear my nightdress—I don't mean to but I can't help it—and I bump into things and 'most fall. I 'most falled last night, babo. You must get her to do it, 'cause I'm getting too far gone, and it's too hard." I assured and assured her that I would, for she was almost crying. When she emerged from her room she was whimpering because she had torn her nightgown. "I 'most falled, and I grabbed here to keep from falling, and I tore it and it diddy do any good, either. The D. *must* do it. When she goes to walk you tell her to hold on



until she has put her nightgown on." I promised to do so and she soon forgot her troubles.

R. D. has lately received a portrait of Dr. Walker, and has written asking Dr. Brashear to send his. She seems not to remember Dr. Hyslop very well, but M.'s emulation was roused and she demanded that I write to him for his photograph. "I want it to give to the D.", she said, and authorized me to promise that she would give him her doll Billy if he would comply. When the letter was done she pretended to read it as she lay on the couch, and during the process I inquired "You reading it?" S. M. rightly inferred that I was addressing her, and wigwagged "yes" by moving the right foot. M., who naturally held the sheet so that it cut off the view of the feet, even if her sight extended so far, answered, "Yes, babo, I ready it." "All of it?", I asked, and the left foot signalled "no", while M. responded, "Yes, I ready all the letter." As a matter of fact, of course M. could read nothing, and her eyes passed over the letter in so wandering a fashion that S. M. says she could read but scraps here and there. M. announced, "I ready about a dog, a little brown dog." [644] Of course there was nothing about a dog in the letter. M. looked at only one side of the sheet, and the request for the photograph was on the other side. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *Aug. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Aug. 23.* R. D. came at 8.45 p. m. *Aug. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Aug. 24. Sunday.* The monthly period began today, with considerable pain. Consequently M. came thrice. In the evening I wanted to administer some wintergreen while M. was here. Mrs. P. had put about a tablespoonful of whiskey in the bottle, and M. has a horror of whiskey, and refused to

---

644. Note the reappearance of the word "dog", this time in connection, not with a picture unintelligible to her, but with a letter which she could not decipher. As already shown, the connection between the word and non-comprehended pictures had been artificially established in her mind. See further extension of the term to subjects of mental difficulty on page 1145, and note 629.



take it. I said that I would burn off the whiskey and went through a pantomime of doing so, and M. was satisfied and took the medicine willingly. R. D. came for sleep at 8.40. *Aug. 23-24: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 3 h. 5 m.*

*Aug. 25.* M. was here 9.55-10.25 a. m., 2.40-3.35 p. m., and 8.50-9.55 p. m. M. might not have come in the afternoon had I not gotten some lime in my eye in whitewashing, badly inflaming it. R. D. blamed herself for getting me to do the job. When I am sick or in pain and R. D. is troubled about it, and M. also, the latter always becomes more troublesome and exacting.

I asked S. M. if R. D. hears what I say to her now directly after she has gone to sleep. She replied that she thought not, but would take notice and see. "(Haven't you taken notice?) No. (Why not?) I have been busy with my own affairs. (I don't see what you could have had to be busy about.) If you were going away, wouldn't you be making preparations? (Is that what you are doing?) Certainly."

We went to a picture-show in the evening, and when after return R. D. had, according to directions, put on her nightgown and kimono, M. came. R. D. returned for the night at 9.55. *Aug. 24-25: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 30 m.*

*Aug. 26.* Her sickness continues, my eye is still in bad shape, and the weather is very hot, as it has been for several days, and so M. was here thrice, in morning, afternoon and evening.

I asked M. to tell me a story, to see if her powers of invention survive to any extent. She began, "There was a little dog—and—and—he went to see his mother—(Go on.)" After a long pause she began anew, "There was a little dog, and his mother—(Go on. Where was his mother?) In Hebben. (How could the little dog go to see her, then?) He died. (Well, go on.) And the little dog had a Margaret, and—and—and—the Margaret made the Doris go, and mother said", and she quoted a jesting remark which Mrs. P. had made relative to M.'s being out so much. "(The Doris? I thought it was a dog that had the Margaret.)"



A long pause ensued. " (Well, go on. What happened?) And the little dog ate the chickens all up. The M. made the D. eat the chickens all up." This was the end of the story. R. D. was back at 9.40 p. m. *Aug. 25-26: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Aug. 27.* R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Aug. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Aug. 28.* R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Aug. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 30 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Aug. 29.* A gentleman long known to me in the East, Mr. Carey, came today for a visit. M. had been told what arrangements would be made for her, that when R. D. felt in the evening that she would soon "forget" she would go to her room and get ready for the night, that M. would then lie down on her couch on the back porch, where I would sit beside her until R. D. came. In the evening we all, including the visitor, sat on the front piazza, and presently I perceived that R. D. looked tired, and wondered that she did not go in. I supposed that I had acquainted her with the plan, but I had forgotten to do so, and she was perplexed what to do, fearing that if she should forget, M. would call out. Consequently she had held on strenuously until she felt that her power to do so was exhausted, whereupon she went into the house. I soon followed and M. signalled her arrival by waving her hands. M. sadly tired by the labor of arraying herself for the night, had to be taken out a back door, down the steps, and up the steps of another porch where her couch was, to avoid observation. It was pretty hard work, and I had almost to carry her. R. D. came at 9.40, asleep as is the general rule. *Aug. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Aug. 30.* R. D. felt the effects of "holding on" last night, and went at 10.55 a. m., going to her room as she felt the change impending. I remained with M. about an hour and then was called away. Soon after a woman called D.'s name over the backyard fence, and R. D. subliminally heard the voice, and came forth. R. D. staid until after a picture-show, but M. again had to do the work of getting ready for the night. R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. *Aug. 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*



*Aug. 31. Sunday.* R. D. states that for several days she has felt unusually tired as night approaches. M. said this evening, "The D. is getting well so fast that it makes her feel sick." S. M. says that M. is right about the cause but that the feeling is not that of sickness, but of weariness. I asked R. D. today if her head felt as clear as ever, and she replied, "It feels *too* clear—it seems to me that I think too much." R. D. was here for the night at 9.50 *Aug. 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. Average daily record of R. D. during August, 1913, 22 h. 42 m.*

*Sept. 1.* A letter from Dr. Hyslop came and R. D. asked if she could see it. I was obliged to answer "no", since it contained remarks concerning S. M. Afterwards of course M. demanded to see the letter, and her eyes wandered over it, as she remarked that it was "most about dogs." When M. next slept I told S. M. that I had not intended that *she* should read the letter. "I did not know that you objected, or I could have refrained from reading. Why didn't you make a signal to me? I would have understood." I laughingly said, "(Now, confess that you have curiosity.) Yes, I have; much more than R. D. has. Nevertheless I would not have read any of the letter if you had asked me not to. (Well, now that you have read what Dr. Hyslop said about you, what do you think of his suggestion that you may have lost your identity?) His suggestion is quite mistaken. I know who I am. (And I am to know about you?) I never promised that everything about myself is to be told. It is not to satisfy your curiosity, but to complete your case. (Yes, but to complete the case you should give proofs, not mere assertions.) They will be given. But I have told you that it is not I but another that is to give the proof." R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Aug. 31-Sept. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Sept. 2.* M., in a room next the one where Mr. Carey is, can hardly be restrained from sometimes calling out in her customary fashion, and it is probable that this evening he heard and wondered at the tones, and singular words, "feety", "tocky" (for stockings), etc. Mrs. P. and I and S. M. have concluded that it is best to initiate him into the



secret, as he is entirely trustworthy. R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Sept. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h.; M., 1 h.*

*Sept. 3.* We all took a trip to Waterman's Canon, and spent most of the day there. She enjoyed the trip very much, but was pretty tired, causing S. M. to advise that we abstain from all-day picnics hereafter, until a year has elapsed after M.'s disappearance.

In the evening I informed M. that I had told Mr. C. about her. She refused to come into the room where he was. I suspected that she was aware that he was within hearing, as she seemed somewhat stimulated in the manner that she has always been affected by the presence of visitors. At 8.55 p. m. R. D. came. *Sept. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 45 m.*

*Sept. 4.* The throat showed that the thyroid gland was enlarged in consequence of the prolonged trip of yesterday, and M. came at 11.55 a. m., staying 40 minutes. In the evening we all went to a picture-show, and R. D.'s efforts to "hold on" until she reached her own room were in vain,—M. came as soon as we reached the house. M. now lay down on the dining-room couch, and required her feet rubbed as usual. She never spontaneously addressed a remark to Mr. C., but talked about him as freely as if he were not present, denominating him a "nigger", a "Jew" and a "dago", in allusion to his dark complexion, though on being questioned she did not know what any of these terms meant. She slept and S. M. talked. M. woke and I demonstrated to Mr. C. her anæsthesia when I could do so without her knowledge, as it would offend her to have her disabilities exhibited. I also played the game of thrusting my face close to hers, and she seemed to forget the presence of the stranger in the emotion which this always produces. Pleasure is mingled with a thrill almost of terror, she holds up her hands in baby-fashion as S. D. used to do in her last stage, as if to ward off danger, laughter rumbles in her throat, and she exclaims "Do it again." She did not wish to go to bed until 10.30 approached. S. M. afterwards said that I need not fear that M. would be developed by staying out longer, as the presence of a guest undoubtedly causes her to do. She asserted that at the stage that the case has reached it makes no difference



to R. D.'s progress whether M. is out one or two hours. "If M. is out longer, R. D gets so much more rest, and is not hindered in her progress in any way."

I told S. M. that I had been under the impression that the writing with the planchette was the first automatic writing which had been produced under M.'s hand, forgetting that back in July, 1915, she unconsciously wrote with a pencil a few sentences which purported to be from her mother. [645] "(You scouted them, and said that they were nonsense.) You must take what I said in those days with allowance; I was not ready then to admit about myself, you know. (Do you then think that the message came from Mrs. Fischer?) I do not now remember the incident, but I certainly think it came from her. I wish now that I had not talked that way, and confused your record."

S. M. tells me that she has taken notice, and R. D. does still hear what I say to her in her sleep, and it helps her still. This was evidenced last night. R. D. had forgotten to shut the henhouse door. The rule in such cases had been that R. D., having her mind charged with an unfulfilled task, would come awake and say that she must go and perform it. S. M. told me that the door was open, and added, "She is so tired that she will not wake when she comes, but she will wake and go out later. You do it when M. wakes, and when R. D. comes whisper to it that it is done." This I did, and the scheme worked; R. D. did not afterwards rise. R. D. came for the night at 10.50. *Sept. 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Sept. 5.* Another result of the too long picnic is abdominal swelling to a degree not experienced before for months, and it still persists. In the evening M. addressed Mr. C. only two or three times, and refused to say good-night to him as I suggested that she should do when she retired. None of her peculiarities were affected by his being present. At times her attention was so absorbed that she apparently forgot that he was there, though at other times she was perfectly aware of him. I tested her sight for Mr. C.'s benefit. If I

---

645. See Chapter XII, pages 1269 seq.



held up an object just outside her range of vision, she would put out her hand and ascertain its nature by feeling of it, being aware of its location, as I surmise, by means of the current of air set in motion by my act of lifting it impinging upon her eyes and lips. But if I pointed to some object lately placed on the wall at no great distance, she seemed to be unable even to follow the direction indicated, looked vaguely about and answered, "Asa no." I addressed S. M. and received answering signals by means of the feet, but it was hard to do this without attracting M.'s attention, in which case I would have to explain that I was thinking aloud. At last she got disgusted with my "crazy talk" and it had to cease. Touches on the skin of the right foot, hand, etc., were detected, but not on the left side. When the finger was drawn lightly across forehead or chin from left to right, carefully outside of the visual angle, it was detected the moment it passed the median line. Once she caught sight of the finger, and sitting up, began to "test" me. Seizing my ear she challenged, "Can you feel that?" While her attention was thus taken up by "tests" I repeatedly swept my finger entirely across forehead and chin without her being aware of it, and also turned my face towards Mr. C. and said several times in an ordinary voice, "Her attention is so absorbed that she cannot feel what I am doing. She does not hear me." Had she heard what I said experience shows that she would have been indignant, and denied it. The moment she was answered, however, her attention was released, and she would become conscious of a touch on the right cheek, for example, and cry "a bug! a bug!"; for one of her frequent fancies, when she imperfectly sees something near her face, or becomes conscious of a mysterious touch, is that "a bug" is there. In the midst of the experiments her head fell forward and she was asleep. We conversed with the calm S. M., in the intervals of M.'s slumbers, with occasional interruptions from M. asleep, which, however, are much less frequent than they used to be. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Sept. 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Sept. 6.* There is still abdominal distention. M. was at the helm 12.50 a. m.-2.05 p. m. S. M. admits that Mr. C.'s



presence stimulates M. to talk, and relate reminiscences—though no doubt I am largely responsible from my desire that he shall get a good view and understanding of the case—but insists that this does no harm. “M. doesn’t want to go to sleep so soon at night, but it makes no difference now; M. is going every day. The R. D. has not felt well since the day at Waterman’s Canon, but the effects will soon pass away, so there is nothing to worry about.” In the evening Mr. C. took us to a picture-show, and M. came just as we reached the house, at 8.55. R. D. came at 9.55. *Sept. 5-6: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m.*

*Sept. 7. Sunday.* R. D.’s feelings were unintentionally wounded and M. came and sobbed. She was out, 8-8.50 a. m., 1.05-2.40 p. m. and 8.55-10.20 p. m. The abdomen is swollen to a degree that actually pains her, and the voice is hoarse from the enlargement of the thyroid gland.

After church in the evening Mr. C. reached the house first, and was told by M. to run and inform me that she had come. When I entered she laughed “Ho! Ho!” so loudly that she might have been heard on the sidewalk, and patted my face very forceably indeed.

M.’s speech becomes less childish in two cases:

(1) When she is attempting what may be called a direct quotation of the thoughts which she perceives in R. D.’s mind, as the latter is “going down.” In this case there is little difference between her locution and that of R. D., and for the very reason that she is simply quoting from R. D.

(2) When she is reciting old reminiscences, more or less automatically. Her speech is then about intermediate between that of the first case, that is, R. D.’s speech, and her own ordinary locution; the same, apparently, that it was before her decadence began. The reason probably is that she is, so to speak, quoting from her former self, *i. e.*, automatically reciting the stories in her old way.

But when she is talking in her own individual present character, discussing current happenings, or even indirectly telling what R. D. thought, her modes of speech resemble those of a child of six. The tendency to return to the German accent which she had partially taken on at that age con-



tinues. For example, she pronounces *whistle* "vistle." R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Sept. 6-7: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h. 50 m.*

*Sept. 8.* She is feeling much better, and the swelling of throat and abdomen is decreasing. R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Sept. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Sept. 9.* The physical difficulties have gone, and she is feeling very well. R. D. came for sleep at 9.55. *Sept. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Sept. 10.* In the evening M. suddenly exclaimed "O, there's a present for me on the table!", and explained that R. D. had "just thunk it." It proved to be a slab of chocolate candy. "But I mustn't eat it tonight. She thinks that she has eaten enough of ploc'late candy, and if I eat it now it won't be good for us. Put it away, babo." R. D. was here at 10.10 p. m. *Sept. 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Sept. 11.* This evening M. directed me to bring the candy. "I'll take as much as I want of it." Fearing that she would eat it all I suggested bringing half, but she demanded all. She broke the slab in two, handed me the pieces, and said, "You eat one piece, babo, and give the other to the mor'r. That's how much I want it." Nor did she afterwards manifest any regret at having given the candy away. At 10.20 p. m. R. D. came. *Sept. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Sept. 12.* R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Sept. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 13.* R. D. came at 8.55 p. m. *Sept. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h., 20 m.*

*Sept. 14. Sunday.* Today R. D. asked if she could not begin to go to church in the evening also, saying that it bored her to stay in the house alone. But I would make no promise, and afterwards S. M. declared that it would be injudicious for her to attempt it.

The weather was very hot, and M. came in the afternoon. As she lay on the lounge she suddenly pricked up her ears and said that Mr. Carey, who has been absent about three



days, and whose return was expected but not today, was coming. This was before he had reached the steps to the veranda, and a long hall-way intervened between the front door and the room where she was. It was impossible to see him. She recognized his steps at that distance, and though so recent an acquaintance! In the evening Mrs. P. and I returned from Colton to find R. D., who had had to "hold on", sitting on the piazza. M. instantly came, and at once went to bed, to my surprise. The explanation came when she said, "The D. thunk 'I wish the A Phase would go to bed when she comes, and not lie on the lounge and eat water-melon and things that dirty my clothes. I can't keep my clothes clean because of the A Phase.'" M. added, with touching sincerity, "And so I went to bed. 'Cause ah don't want to dirty the D.'s things, do I babo? Margaret wants to be good. Margaret don't want to do anything that the D. doesn't like, does Margaret?" I remarked to S. M. that it was a pity that R. D. did not every night think the things which would properly influence M. "Yes, for M. will do whatever R. D. thinks she wishes that M. would do. (I might suggest it to her.) I don't know how that would work; M. might think that she was being taken advantage of, if R. D. thought of your having suggested it, too. [646]

---

646. Here are extracts from a letter written by R. D. on Sept. 14th to Dr. Walker:

"It seems as though I am living in a dream. I am getting well so fast! My mind is clearer than when I last wrote, and I enjoy life more than I ever did. \* \* \* \* When I was a child the circus came each year to ———, about three squares from my home. The grounds were on the river bank. The A Phase did not like the parade and I did. I would leave home to see it, get about half way there and she would come and run home. After she got home I would come and start again to see the parade, much to the amusement of my mother, who could not understand why we did not keep on instead of running home. Once the A Phase worked on the ground and was given a free ticket. I came while the performance was going on. There were three rings, and I wanted to see them all at once, thinking the ones I was missing were the better. I got so excited that A Phase came. The seat we had was on the top and it hadn't any back, of course. If you looked back you could see down on the ground, which seemed a long way off. A Phase went down and out and demanded a chair, much to the amusement of everyone. Not being able to get it, she went home and told mother, who repeated to someone else after I came, and that is how I found out about it. That was the first and last time that I went to one."



R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. *Sept. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 15.* In the evening I read to M. a letter received from the secretary of Dr. Hyslop, acknowledging the receipt of the doll "Bill", which M. had sent as a reward for the gift of his photograph. The letter stated that Dr. Hyslop was in England, but would be very much pleased when he returned and saw "Bill." M.'s face, during the reading, was a study in child delight. Over and over she exclaimed, "Jim will like Bill, won't he, babo?" There were a number of ladies in the house, and I told M. to be quiet, but she several times forgot and cackled out. In her excitement she forgot who the letter was from, then asked where Jim is, where England is, etc. She listened to the reading of the letter a second time with as much pleasure as the first. Several times her excitement sent her to sleep. When the guests left, M. went to the bathroom, and soon a cry of alarm was heard, "Babo, I forgot and locked the door." I went to the door and said, "Turn the key", but she only twisted the knob. The locking of the door was automatic, the attempt to unlock it was a conscious act. She was fast becoming hysterical, when I tapped on the keyhole, and said, "Turn this." She now grasped the key, and after several trials got the door open, and bounced out, shaking with excitement, fell into my arms, and fell asleep standing. S. M. afterwards said, "You did just the right thing in tapping opposite the key. I don't know what else would have answered. She was getting very scared." At 10.25 p. m. R. D. came. *Sept. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Sept. 16.* In the morning I was lethargic from the effects of a powder taken last night. This seemed to disturb R. D., and M. came 8.35-8.55 a. m. Later in the day R. D. said, "I am getting happier all the time; if I get any happier I shall burst." She came for the night at 9.10. *Sept. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Sept. 17.* In consequence of taking medicine she had pain, which brought M., 1.40-2.25 p. m. She was, as usual, charmingly amiable. She announced that she would "go wight to bed tonight, 'cause the D. is going to get me a



present this afternoon; she think that she would give me a present for goin' *wight* to bed. (Why didn't you go right to bed last night? She thought that she wanted you to go right to bed then.) Because she didn't think it *wight*. She think that you told it to her." This was said without a particle of ill-will towards me. " (Well, I didn't tell her to-day, or about the present; it is her own idea.) I know it; that's why I'm goin' to do it." R. D. brought from the store a beautiful little doll, and asked me to give it to Phase A. M. came at 8.35 and asked for one pretzel and the doll. "Now this," she said, "is goin' to Dr. Wacker." Then she called for an apple, and popped into bed, R. D. having already put on nightrobe and kimono, and ate the apple while asleep. In only 12 minutes, the shortest evening interval yet, she woke and announced that R. D. was at hand. It was 8.45 p. m.

One disquieting symptom for the last week or two, however, has been that R. D. turns and tosses very much in her sleep, as I learn from S. M. This may be merely incident to the rapid decadence of M., and doubtless will pass away in its turn. Sleep was poor tonight, on account of the bed not having been made properly. *Sept. 16-17: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Sept. 18.* In consequence of the poor sleep M. came, 2.05-3.15 p. m. Mrs. P. was expecting the ladies of a Guild to come at any time, and suggested that M. go to her room. But M., who is now governed mostly by R. D.'s thoughts and wishes, said, "But the D. just came out because it's hot there," and looked helplessly confused. Mrs. P. continued a little worried by the Guild contingency and M. began to ask, "What's Guild?" I tried to explain, but she could not seem to get the idea. As S. M. says, she only felt that for some mysterious reason the mother wanted to get rid of her, she could not tell why. She slept and woke, slept and woke, and still the "Guild" troubled her, and she reiterated her queries as to what it was. Her state of disquietude and perplexity undoubtedly delayed the coming of R. D. When at length I succeeded in making her cheerful, she said, "Just as soon as ah stopped worrying about Guild the D. come", and



sure enough, the R. D. came a moment later. But before the Guild matter arose M. dictated a letter to Dr. Walker. [647]

True to her promise M. went to bed at once on coming in the evening, because "the D. thunk it", but since, to use her own language, "the D. didn't think how long I was to peep", she took an apple and pretzel to bed with her, woke presently and ate them, then heralded R. D., who arrived at 9.20 p. m. *Sept. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Sept. 19.* Today R. D. fixed the bed in some way so that it would be more comfortable. S. M. says that because she (as M. and S. D.) used nearly always to sleep in uncomfortable places, and since living with us has been accustomed to comfort in this respect, any sudden return to discomfort in her sleeping arrangements brings back associations of the old time and makes her mentally, as well as physically, unquiet.

Again M. went "wight to peep", because "the D. thunk

---

647. M.'s letter, literally as dictated, with interlarded comments, follows:

"Pittsfield, (any State)

March 6, (any year,—I don't know year)

Dear Dr. Wacker:

Margaret say she 'most gone. This is the last letter you ever 'spect to get. Jim sent me his picture, 'cause I asked for it, a-a-and because he did I sent him a nice baby-doll named after you—young Bill. A-a-a-and the Doris boughty me 'nother Bill for goin' right to bed and goin' right to peep. (Now don't ask me to repeat it, 'cause I can't—it too hard to wemember.) Doris just love your picture, so I am sending you Bill for the picture. (O gee! letter writin's hard, ain't it!) I'm on the wight road now. If you happen to see a piece of wibbon or anything (this ain't askin', papo) all wight. Hoping to hear from you up in 'e 'ky,

Yours in spir't,

MARGARET

(Now the debble I'm not goin' to wite any more letters to anybody.)"

She fell asleep the moment the last words were uttered.

She said "any state" in response to my question, "What state?" and the next interpolation was in answer to the query, "What year?" The words, "I'm on the right road now" she had seen in the mind of R. D., who had uttered them earlier in the day, meaning that the discovery that she could influence M.'s conduct by her own wishes indicated the right road to pursue. After the letter was concluded I asked M. if she was going to sign her name, and she made a curious scrawl, which S. M. says that M. really believed was her signature.



it." R. D. came at 9.25. At about 1 a. m. she was awakened by shouts of "fire!", which gave her quite a fright for fear that our house was burning. We all rose, to see a large building near by in flames, and presently there came sounds as of a battle, from the explosion of thousands of cartridges stored in the building. She was much excited, but did not forget. *Sept. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 20 m.*

*Sept. 20.* But in consequence of the excitement of last night, M. came, 12.15-1 p. m. R. D. came for the night at 9.15, and another fire roused her and she was up about an hour watching it, but not with so much excitement as last night. *Sept. 19-20: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Sept. 21. Sunday.* R. D. wished to go to church, though the monthly period had begun, and I consented with misgiving. In service she was assailed by a pain, and M. came for a moment, did not see Mrs. P., but simply heard my voice. R. D., almost instantly returning, was alarmed lest M. had betrayed herself, but seeing Mrs. P. placidly smiling concluded that all was well. M. came again in the afternoon, and R. D. finally arrived for the night at 10 p. m.. *Sept. 20-21: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 55 m.; M., 3 h. 50 m.*

*Sept. 22.* R. D. remarked, "I forgot to think that Phase A should go to bed for two days." And she forgot today, consequently M. sat up awhile again. R. D. came at 9 p. m. *Sept. 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Sept. 23.* I went on an all-day trip in the mountains with two mineralogist friends, searching for a rare species, and lost the train I had intended to return on, so telephoned that I would arrive about 10.45. R. D. "held on" until my feet sounded on the porch. R. D. returned at 11.35. *Sept. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 45 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Sept. 24.* In consequence of holding on last night in her condition of health, R. D. lapsed early, 6.50 p. m., and came back at 8.30. Of late, says S. M., R. D. has felt timid about going into the house, when necessary, in the night. She is still sleeping on the back porch. S. M. advised the removal of the fear by suggestion. I began to attempt this tonight, with



immediate good results. *Sept. 23-24: 2 alt.; R. D., 19 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 25.* M. told me delightedly in the evening that R. D. never felt so well as today. "She thinks she feels as well as anybody can feel, and then she feel ber'r. She clearer in mind today than ever before, and feel ber'r. She getting ber'r ver' fast now. She'll tell you herself tomorrow." S. M. intimated that *she* was helping in the process. I remarked that R. D. was forgetting to think that M. should go to bed at once, and S. M. replied, "She will think that again at the proper time. She is doing just right. (How does she know what is just right?) By instinct, I guess. And I am responsible partly, perhaps. (You mean that you influence her?) Yes, I do some now. (How?) That is hard to say. (By thinking?) In part. (And how otherwise?) I can hardly tell—I do not fully understand, myself." After R. D. came asleep at 9.10 I told her that I had performed an uncompleted task of hers, then continued psychic treatment in opposition to her night fears. *Sept. 24-25: 2 alt.; R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 26.* I learned from R. D., but not until I questioned her, that she felt better yesterday than ever before. Struggling to express it, she said, "It is as if still more of the burden had rolled off, or as if I had been sick and had got better and were noticing things that I didn't know before." After a picture-show M. promptly came. She more frequently of late asks such questions as "What's Guild?", "What's *objection* mean?", but no explanation makes her understand. I learn that R. D. went into the house last night with no thought of being timid. She returned for the night at 9.35. *Sept. 25-26: 2 alt.; R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Sept. 27.* M. was out in the evening uncommonly long, but slept the most of the time. S. M. explained that R. D. was tired from her rapid improvement and that M. was resting her. R. D. returned for sleep at 9.30. *Sept. 26-27: 2 alt.; R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Sept. 28. Sunday.* I came home in the evening with a headache, and as I rubbed M.'s feet she became conscious of something different and asked, "What's mar'r [matter]"—I



told her that I had a little headache—"You tired", she said sympathetically, and seemed to forget about it. But some minutes afterwards she suddenly sat up and swiftly touched my forehead and ran her fingers along my lips. It was done as quickly and lightly as the brushing of a butterfly's wing. I did not at the instant comprehend, and asked "What made you do that?" She did not reply and I repeated the inquiry. Her head fell over and she was asleep as she sat. The voice of S. M. was now heard saying, "She felt of your forehead and lips to see if you were cross. She was not quite satisfied. She was afraid that she had done something. (What made her go to sleep so suddenly?) She was embarrassed by your question." When M. woke she gurgled happily, and later asked, "You weren't mad, were you, babo? (No indeed, what made you think so?) You 'melled (smelled) mad." S. M. afterwards explained this astonishing expression, "She was not near enough to see your face, yet became conscious of your expression, she doesn't know how. That is what she was trying to express."

It is my intention to buy a small ranch near the city before long, and make my home there, retaining an office in the rectory, and going to it nearly every day. S. M. remarked "When you get your ranch I shan't be here to see it." Half jestingly, and half to see what she would say I replied, "(But you say that when you are away from R. D. you are conscious what she is doing. Couldn't you know when I go on the ranch?) Maybe I could", and the tone was such as I have heard when she was veiling her thought. ("You will be somewhere then, won't you?) I suppose so. (Don't you know whether you will be or not?) I certainly shall be." There was a pause, then she said, "Would you like for me to talk to you then? I don't mean through D.'s lips. (Through D. in some way?) No, not through her at all. (How then?) Talk *myself*. (I certainly would like for you to do it if you can.) Wouldn't it frighten you? (It might make me start at first, but that is all. Shall you be able to do it?) Maybe I will. (By all means do, then.) If D. had not been frightened she could have talked with her mother when she saw her in the henyard." I was astonished at such a



statement. S. M. knows perfectly well that I consider the two experiences in the henyard as subjective hallucinations due to emotion. "Do you mean that the mother was really there?) That was really her mother. (And R. D. was frightened?) She was spellbound. You know that S. D. heard the mother speak once, don't you? (I heard that she used to see the mother, or at least have a feeling that she was walking beside her. I had forgotten that she heard her speak. What did she say?) Only 'Doris'." R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *Sept. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Sept. 29.* R. D. is still in splendid spirits. We went to a picture-show, as S. M. still reports that the effect is good, when the program is well-selected. M. was busily talking tonight when she suddenly stopped, glared into space and ejaculated "A bug! a bug!" I saw no bug, and said so. "He went up on his string." I looked in vain for the spider and asked "(Where do you see him?) It was when you were in the kitchen. I just thought of it." It was about ten minutes earlier that I went into the kitchen. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Sept. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Sept. 30.* In the evening S. M. remarked, as she often has done, that she wished that I could see what goes on inside, especially the psychical changes which are taking place as D. gets better. I asked her to describe them. "I can't do it; there is no English that I know to express it. It is like a picture-show, yet it isn't. I say that I see her thoughts, and yet it is not seeing as you understand the word. I cannot express it. . . . When she was beginning to get better many terrifying and disagreeable recollections would come up, both from the experiences of S. D. come back to her and from her own childhood. These would trouble her and impede her recovery. Those same recollections will flit up now, but it is curious to see the difference. Now they are only the ghosts of what they were, and flit by without troubling her or hindering her improvement." R. D. came at 11 p. m. *Sept. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 25 m.; M., 55 m.*  
*Average daily record of R. D. during September, 1913, 22 h. 45 m.*

*Oct. 1.* I started at 6 a. m. on a mountain trip and did



not return until 10.45 p. m. R. D. had to hold on pretty hard to stay until then. She seems instinctively to feel that she should stay until my return, and M. says it is well that she does, "for I should be yellin' and cryin' if I had to wait long." R. D. came at 11.40. *Sept. 30-Oct. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Oct. 2.* It was to be expected that three long days for R. D., aggregating 71 h. 40 m., with only 1 h. 50 m. of intervening Margaret-rest, would be followed by the reaction of an uncommonly short day, broken by comings of M., and it so proved. R. D. came for sleep at 9.50 p. m. *Oct. 1-2: 6 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 45 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Oct. 3.* R. D. shows the effects of "holding on" Wednesday evening. She came for the night at 8.55. *Oct. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Oct. 4.* Mrs. P. and I got to discussing a question with considerable zeal, though in good humor. Suddenly, M. came, at 9.25 a. m. As I was hurried in my work I was not rejoiced to see her and involuntarily betrayed that fact. M. pathetically said, "M. can't help it, papo." [648] There was something unusual in her movements besides, as though she were groping. Presently she proposed dictating a letter to Dr. Brashear, and did so, [649] being roused by the fact

---

. 648. M. was now beginning to return to her former pronunciation of "papo" instead of "babo", and thereafter the Teutonisms tended gradually to disappear. This seems to indicate that in her retreat along the track of her development she was now, so to speak, passing backwards through the period when she picked up the German pronunciations, and dropping them as she approached its beginning.

649. Letter dictated by M., Oct. 4, 1913:

"March 10, 1619.  
Pittsfield.

Dear Dr. Brashear:

This is the Margaret writing to you. The Doris got your picture yesterday, and she was tickled to pieces. I am going to send you a Bill for the picture, called after Dr. Wacker. The Doris is getty better fast and wishes I was gone. She is going to get your picture framed today. Ain't I the lucky child, she says. Her bulb is growin' now. Papo made a new fence for the Doris and the Doris is just tickled with it, 'cause she can see her chickies all the time now. She picky up one chicky and hug it, and another chicky gets as mad and wants to be hugged. Mother bought a box of appels, and the Doris can have more than one appel to eat a day. The Doris has planted a garden, and gosh! she expected things to be up the next day—she



that R. D. had just received his photograph. M. says that she will send a letter to Dr. Hyslop "when he gets back",—that is, returns from England, "And then I'm not goin' to write *any* more letters to *anybody*."

**M. Reaches Final Blindness.** When M. went to sleep S. M. remarked that "D. could never stand arguing back and forth. It gets on her nerves." Then she informed me that "M. cannot see at all today. The R. D. has some headache and it may have something to do with that." But the fact remains that a new phenomenon has appeared. Headache or not, M. has never been blind before. Only a day or two ago S. M. observed, "I doubt if M. loses much more. Probably she will continue to seem much as she is now, only gradually cease to come." [650] Probably this blindness is only temporary. [651] But when M. came again, at noon, she was still unable to see, asking me to feed her the pie which she said the mother had saved for her. It seemed to make no difference to her spirits, or to cause her even surprise. She could tell when the spoon was approaching her lips, declaring that she could hear it. Is the slight air-current caused by the movement of the spoon really audible to her, or does she feel it upon her lips? I judge that her statement is literally correct, for even a small object moving towards her at a

---

was looky for them. The Margaret is going to buy her papo a nice Bill (m-m!) and 'prise him (now!) The Doris likes Dr. Wacker's picture too, and Jim's. I sent a Bill to Dr. Wacker and to Jim. If Dr. Brashear wants his Bill to go and see Dr. Wacker's Bill he can take his Bill to call on Dr. Wacker's. When you come out here, please bring some ice-cream for the Doris, 'cause I won't be here. (Gosh darn it! He never come when I's here.) The Doris so happy these days she most busted.

Goo'by

(Her supposed signature appended.) "

It should be noted that the letter revolves almost entirely around Doris, whereas, in her letters to Dr. Brashear, etc., a year earlier, she had much to say about her own concerns. S. M. did not want the letter to go out until "gosh" should be expurgated from it.

650. So far as mental manifestations of M. were concerned S. M. proved to be right; there was not much change, though M. may have become three or six months younger.

651. This conjecture is retained as originally written, but M. continued to be blind until her end.



moderate speed and at any angle is soon detected. The noon appearance of M. lasted only about 5 minutes. S. M. was inclined in the evening to think that M. saw a little, but later changed her view, reporting that M. had to hunt for some time for the nightgown which I had placed on a chair, telling her where it was.

R. D. came at 9.10 for the night. Not only has psychic treatment cured her of her fears of entering the house in the night-time, but also it has cured her late habit of tossing and turning. Indeed, the practice of telling her to "sleep quietly until morning" may have been a little overdone as S. M. reports that she has slept without turning over once in the night. *Oct. 3-4: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Oct. 5. Sunday.* M. was out 2.15-2.50, 5.55-6.05, and 9-9.55 p. m. Every time she was blind, though she admitted the fact but once, and that not while Mrs. P. was present. At the moment of each arrival she put her hands tightly over her eyes, and pressed her fingers upon the closed lids hard. I had difficulty in getting the hands away and persuading her to keep them away. I asked why she did this and she answered, "So I can *see*." S. M. says that M. meant *feel*, but I think it doubtful if M.'s meaning was as definite as either term would imply. Probably, missing normal sight-æsthesia, she pressed the eyes in an instinctive effort to produce æsthesia of some sort. S. M. declares that she herself can still see when M. is out, she judges about as far as M. formerly saw. It now looks as though the change in M. might be destined to permanence.

When R. D. comes after a day-period of M., for a moment her face is expressionless, uncomprehending; her eyes rove about as if seeking to discover where she is. Only an instant, then comprehension comes, she smiles, and perhaps the smile fades as she regretfully says, "I forgot again." Everyone has experienced the after-effect, like an echo in the brain, that ensues when a noise, heard for some time, suddenly ceases. I experience something of this upon the sudden cessation of M.'s strident, tomboyish and often vociferous voice, followed by the so much softer, more calm and even voice of R. D.



In the evening, R. D. slept much of the time while Mrs. P. and I were gone, and went in her sleep on the opening of the door. She came for the night at 9.55. *Oct. 4-5: 6 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

**Oct. 6. R. D.'s Sight Improves Simultaneously with M.'s Becoming Blind.** In the afternoon R. D. said, "I have some news for you. I can see better than I ever could before in my life." She went on, "I supposed that my sight was perfect, but it couldn't have been. I can see things clearer; it seems as though a film had gone from before my eyes. I think I can see farther, though I am not quite sure of that. [652] I asked if the change came on slowly and she responded, "No, it came on Saturday." Her improvement in vision, then, exactly synchronizes with M.'s entire loss of it!

I failed to record that about ten days ago S. M. said that some four days earlier she went away from 1 to about 5 p. m., and added, "Didn't you notice how often that afternoon the R. D. would come into the room where you were and flutter about a moment, then go out? She felt a little lonesome without knowing it. It is just the remnant of the feeling that she used to have when I left her." R. D. arrived for the night at 9.25. *Oct. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 45 m.*

**Oct. 7.** R. D. went, on returning from a picture-show, before she had time to get ready for the night. M. grumbled much, and on the way to her room collided heavily with a door, and began to whimper, but stopped when I told her that she was not hurt, saying trustfully, "Wasn't I hurt, papo?" R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Oct. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 45 m.*

**Oct. 8.** In the afternoon R. D. went to my closet, where M.'s bag of pretzels is kept, and took some without any preliminary question of me, and then explained, "I know I can get pretzels here now, for I feel not a tremor when I come near the bag." I asked how long this had been the case, "About a week." And I would say that it was about a week ago that M. with serious emphasis said, "It's all right

---

652. The next day R. D. announced that she had been testing herself and was now sure that she could see farther.



for the D. to eaty my pretzels, isn't it, papo? (Yes.) 'Cause I eaty hers, don't I? (Yes, it is only fair.) Yes, I sink it is on'y fair. Yes, she can eaty my pretzels; it don't make any dif'fence. No use worrying about sings, is there, papo? (No.) No, I don't sink so. Don't much of anysing make any dif'fence."

M., sightless as she is, held up a paper and turned it over, going through the motions of reading it. I asked, "(What are you reading about?) A dog. (What did the dog do?) The dog bumped into a man. (What made him bump into the man?)" She seemed to think hard, then said, "Because he couldn't see. (Couldn't see?) No, that's why. And he doubled his hand all up. (Doubled his hand up?) Yes, he doubled his hand all up when he wan into the door." Even as M., after her conscious memory of certain stories read and personal adventures had gone, would nevertheless, when she supposed that she was inventing a tale, dive down into her subliminal memories of these readings and experiences for the materials out of which to construct it, so now in imagining the dog's adventures she gravitated from her first gleam of invention in making the dog bump into a man to picturing the bump as against a door, which her own was last night, and caused it to "double his hand", as in her own case, with no sense of incongruity.

#### **M. Reaches Complete Dexter-Lateral Tactile Anæsthesia.**

Tonight, for the first time, I discovered that M.'s right side has achieved the same surface anæsthesia that her left side reached some days ago. [653] This first appeared from the fact that she lost the pretzels lying on her chest, though her right hand several times touched them. I placed them in her hand, but she still called for them. I told her they were in her hand, but she stoutly asserted, "No, ain't." I put the

---

653. From the first deepening of anæsthesia in M. she was conscious of light, tickling touches on certain areas, especially the soles of the feet. But the total surface anæsthesia which was noted at an early stage of the cure, by Dr. Walker, Dr. Hyslop and others besides myself, later partly disappeared, and now, at this late stage, came on again. But there were either minor periods of fluctuation in this respect, or else she learned to employ to a small extent some mysterious sixth sense.



pretzel between her lips and she cried, "I've found it—in my mouth."

Though blind, M. makes a journey to the bathroom or her own room, by the customary route, if no obstructions are in the way, like a half-closed door, pretty well, and can also accomplish successfully a new route through the room *provided the R. D. has just before her departure walked along that path.* R. D. came at 8.15 p. m. Oct. 7-8: R. D., 20 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.

Oct. 9. R. D. was out in the evening until Mrs. P. and I returned from a reception. I started M. on a story about the dog, giving her a memory-cue. "(Did the dog lose a pretzel?)" M. thought awhile, then seemed to visualize the dog's adventure. "Yes, papo, he couldn't find his pretzel anywhere. (Didn't he find it?) Yes, he found it after a while. (Where?) In his *mouth*." S. M. says that M. has no idea that she is modeling the dog's adventures after her own.

S. M. asked, "If I should come back after the R. D. is well, to see if all is right, how could I make it known to you? It would have to be when the R. D. is asleep. (Could you do it when the R. D. is here?) Yes. (Could you move her limbs now, when she is asleep?) Yes, I think so. (You never told me that before.) It was never necessary. (Could you do it when she is awake?) No, she is too strong for me then." Thereupon we began to devise a code of signals. [654] R. D. arrived at 9.50 p. m. Oct. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h; M., 35 m.

Oct. 10. At 11.20 R. D. entered my room, and altered at once to M., who lisped, "The D. came in for support", and added, "that's what she calls it." She also expressed the opinion that R. D. was wearing something too tight around the waist. It is very noticeable that constriction of any part

---

654. It would be a waste of space to describe the elaborate system of signals which was devised, as it never came into use, since S. M. discovered, when M. was nearly gone, that she could talk through the lips of the sleeping R. D.



of her body, particularly about the waist, has bad effects, tending to produce headache, constipation, ennui, etc.

As M. lay on the lounge I purposely grinned in exaggerated fashion, my purpose being to ascertain if in spite of her entire blindness she is able to detect my expression, as she could earlier do beyond the limits of her vision. At once she laughed delightedly. I drew down the corners of my mouth, and instantly her fingers went up and brushed my lips, whereupon she broke out into lamentation. I laughed and reassured her, repeatedly she implored me, "Don't make snoots at your Margaret, when Margaret can't see. Don't make snoots, papo; Margaret can't see. Your baby don't like snoots." [655] I am convinced that M. can ascertain my expression apart from all normal means.

Yesterday I asked S. M. to observe how far she herself could see when M. is out. Today I carried on a curious conversation with her and M. at the same time. Holding up my hand I would say, apparently to M., "Can you see that?" and M. would answer in her more usual evasive way, "Yes, I can see", while S. M. signalled *her* reply with one foot or the other. I found thus, and by direct reply of S. M. after M. was asleep, that the former can see much farther than M. could before her blindness came on, certainly as far as 8 feet. R. D. came for sleep at 9 p. m. *Oct. 9-10: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 5 m.*

*Oct. 11.* At 11.55 a. m. the wind slammed some doors and R. D., startled, ran a needle into her thumb. M. came for 10 minutes. Again R. D. took a vacation in the afternoon. She came at night at 9.15. *Oct. 10-11: 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 12. Sunday.* R. D. was absent 2.55-3.10 p. m., and came for the night at 10.15. *Oct. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Oct. 13.* R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Oct. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

---

655. Jan. 28, 1915. I have just learned, through R. D.'s reminiscencing, that when she was little her mother used to make little faces to amuse her. R. D. liked it, but M. would say, "Don't make snoots at your baby".



*Oct. 14.* S. M. says that she went away about 4 hours in the afternoon, during which time I saw R. D. but little. M. was here 12.05-12.40 p. m. R. D. came at 10.05 p. m.

*Oct. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Oct. 15.* R. D. came at night at 10.20. *Oct. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Oct. 16.* M. was here 15 minutes in the morning. In the afternoon I noticed that R. D. looked a trifle peculiar, and when I spoke to her she smiled with the old V shape of the under-lip which is so seldom seen now. I asked if she did not feel well and she replied, "I have that feeling as though something were gone, again." She could not describe the feeling except by kindred expressions, "I feel a little lonesome," "I feel as though I missed something." The feeling began a few minutes after 1 and ceased on the stroke of 6. Of course I knew, before I made inquiry of S. M., that the latter had gone away. R. D. arrived for the night at 9.20. *Oct. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Oct. 17.* R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Oct. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Oct. 18.* When R. D. woke she had "that feeling," but I did not note the V-shaped lip, though she looked a bit woe-begone. The strange mental sensation continued until about 1 p. m., the R. D. informed me, and afterwards S. M. reported that she was away from 6 a. m. to 1. p. m. M. was here three times today.

In the evening, as M. lay down on her couch on the back porch, the moon shone brightly in her face. She can tell when there is a bright light, and she urged me to put the light out. I told her that it was the moon in the sky, but she did not seem to understand. S. M. says that M. knows, in a dim, reminiscent way, when I say that the moon is in the sky, that it is different from an electric light, and that it is something which she knew, but that she cannot realize what it is. As a matter of fact, tonight M. asked me if the moon is a person. At 9 p. m. R. D. arrived. *Oct. 17-18: 6 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 35 m.; M., 2 h. 35 m.*

*Oct. 19. Sunday.* R. D. reported that she had "that feel-



ing" for about twenty minutes in the forenoon, and afterwards S. M. said that she had been away. M. was here in the morning, probably because of the time of the month.

I tested S. M. in mental arithmetic, without telling her that I was going to compare her, in this respect, with R. D. She spontaneously said, "I think that I am better at this than the R. D.,—she never was good at mental arithmetic." Such easy problems as  $16 \times 5$ ,  $13 \times 4$ ,  $164 \div 4$ ,  $34 - 13$ , she solved readily, making only one error in half a dozen cases. Later I put a similar but different series to R. D., ending with a harder one,  $34 \times 13$ . R. D. also made one error, but I think took less time than S. M. had done, and answered the last question before I had mentally solved it. Afterwards S. M. expressed her surprise, saying, "She is better at figures than I thought. I know she was poor in mental arithmetic at school. Perhaps her practice in keeping accounts during the last year has helped her."

M. suddenly perceived a thought in R. D.'s mind, and said, "O what a funny child! That D. thunk 'I eaty so many pretzels. I'll think I ate only two.' She thinky she fool the A Phase. And I never would a known it if she hadn't thunk that! I don't care how many she eaty." R. D. came at 9.25. She had bad cramps, and the period began. *Oct. 18-19: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Oct. 20.* M. was out 10.55-11.25 a. m., 1.50-3 and 9.10-9.55 p. m. There was no pain today, but some mental depression, showing itself both in R. D. and M. R. D. came at 9.55 and slept well. *Oct. 19-20: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 25 m.*

*Oct. 21.* M. was out 5.30-6 and 7.55-9.15 p. m., was somewhat querulous, wanting something to eat which she could not describe and which we could not find. R. D. returned at 9.15 p. m. *Oct. 20-21: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 50 m.*

*Oct. 22.* This morning R. D. came to me and asked how it was that she often found herself going directly to the spot where the A Phase had put an article, as hairpins under a cushion, for example. She said that she did not remember the location, but seemed to go to it as by instinct. "The A



Phase for a while put things, when she undressed, where I put them, but for the last two or three months she puts them in places of her own. It is about that length of time that I have been going right to the places. (Does that tendency increase or decrease?) It increases." This seems to me another proof that R. D. is encroaching more and more upon M.'s territory, is thinking more vigorously underneath while M. is out, after the fashion of the dreaming which we fail to remember, and, as it were keeps shaving the M. sections thinner.

In the evening M. again gave some uneasiness by protracted teasing for something to eat which she could not name. The next day it was found that R. D. had longed for a certain article for two days. She ate it, and M. complained no more. R. D. arrived at 9.50 p. m. *Oct. 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 10 m.; M., 25 m.*

*Oct. 23.* R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Oct. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Oct. 24.* R. D. arrived at night, 10.05. *Oct. 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 20 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Oct. 25.* R. D. came for sleep at 9.45 *Oct. 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Oct. 26. Sunday.* Mr. Carey, who is now working in Colton, came today, and M. would hardly say a word to him. R. D. came for the night at 10.15. *Oct. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Oct. 27.* Yesterday was an exceedingly busy day for me, and today I was preparing two addresses for delivery this evening, so I was tired and abstracted; this preyed on R. D.'s spirits. Also a letter came from Dr. Hyslop addressed to Margaret, which fact rather disgusted her. M.'s coming at 5.15 before my writing was finished perturbed me somewhat, and my worry was reflected in M.'s demeanor. She bemoaned her presence, and wished for R. D.'s return, which did not help to bring it about. I asked if she did not wish to hear "Jim's" letter, but she showed no interest and declared that he was a "bad man." A good deal of effort to make myself cheerful under the circumstances was finally



successful in partly restoring M.'s good humor, and at 6.15 R. D. came. At 9.45, some time after I had returned, M. came, and soon announced, as a fresh discovery from R. D.'s mind, that there was a letter from Jim, and showed much pleasure. While I was reading it to her she was in ecstasies, and after it was through clamored that it was "a nice letter." The question whether Jim was not a bad man met with an indignant negative. I found that in her altered mood she had no recollection of having come in the afternoon. R. D. came at 10.25 p. m. *Oct. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Oct. 28.* R. D. came at 9.15 p. m. *Oct. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Oct. 29.* On Monday, at her own desire, R. D. took charge of buying the food for the household and preparing it for the table, beside her poultry and other tasks. She wants to see if she can bring the expenses down to a certain monthly figure. So far, she seems to enjoy it, and so long as she enjoys them, and no farther, responsibilities prove to be good for her.

Tonight M. seemed confused between her "meum" and "tuum." She was cold as she lay on the dining-room lounge, and stated feelingly that "the papo" was cold. I put an article of clothing over her, and she soon declared that I was warm. She supposed that it was a blanket that I had placed over her, and presently announced with comical surprise, "This blanky has a pocket!" Then she found a sleeve, and cried with an air of sudden enlightenment, "This is a coaty." Afterwards she whimpered at something, and I speedily got her to laughing, whereupon she was sure that "papo been cryin'." This took place twice. R. D. came at 8.40 p. m. *Oct. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Oct. 30.* R. D. went 9 minutes after my return to the house, having been out 25 h. She was at the moment showing me a typographical error in a paper, and laughing at its ludicrous character. She exclaimed, "What a dreadful mis—", when, in the middle of the word her head jerked, and in an oddly-contrasting, muffled, lifeless voice, M. automatic-



ally concluded' it, "take." R. D. returned at 10.10 p. m. *Oct. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h.; M., 30 m.*

*Oct. 31.* This evening Hallowe'en horns brayed in the street, and M. a number of times exclaimed, "Baby cryin', pabo, baby cryin'", both when she was awake and when she was asleep, and every time with more anxious concern of tone. S. M. said, "She thinks that there must be something serious the matter, the baby cries so long." Therefore R. D.'s coming was delayed until the horns ceased to be heard. She arrived at 9.40. *Oct. 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m. Average daily record of R. D. during October, 1913, 22 h. 41 m.*

*Nov. 1.* M. said this evening, "The D. doesn't know why she feels so much better, she knows I am goin' but she doesn't know why that makes her feel better. But I know. I used to be thinkin' all the time when she was here. 'Then there'd be us two thinkin' together, and that made her mind cloudy.'" She pronounced the word something like "ploudy." "But now I'm not thinkin' when she's here, and her mind's clear. But now she's thinkin' down beneath when I'm here. (What effect does that have on you?) I can't think so well. She's squeezin' me. She's squeezin' me out, babo. (You don't care do you?) No, I don't care how fast she squeezey me." This is a valuable independent endorsement from the standpoint of the consciousness of M. of an opinion already expressed by me in this record. [656] R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Oct. 31-Nov. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Nov. 2. Sunday.* M. came at 4.50 p. m. She described how "the mor'r" choked over a hot stuffed pepper yesterday, while a friend, Mr. Jay Wellington, was lunching with us, and how "the mor'r would look at Mr. W. and bust out laughin', and Mr. W. would look at the mor'r and bust out laughin'", and "the mor'r would giggle fierce, like a school-girl." Mrs. P. and I became almost convulsed by the drollery of the exaggerated account of what took place. M. is a true *enfant terrible*. Nor has M. lost entirely her capacity for making jokes. I said something about buying a ranch before I am

656. See note 634.



dead, meaning that I did not mean to delay the purchase unduly, and M. broke in, "When you're dead you'll have your own ranch all right." R. D. was here at 5.45, and came for the night at 9.35. *Nov. 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Nov. 3.* Today R. D. said, "I feel as though Phase A were gone. (Do you feel better today?) Yes, better than I ever have. It doesn't seem as though I could feel better than I do now. But I have thought that a number of times before, and still I get better. (How do you feel?) It is hard to describe. My mind is so clear—and I feel lighter, all over, somehow." R. D. returned at 10.10 p. m. *Nov. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Nov. 4.* R. D. came for the night at 10.20. *Nov. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Nov. 5.* M. got into a mood of saying "Nice papo, to take such good care of the Margaret, when the Margaret can't see" and it got to be a kind of a chant, sometimes altered to "Nice M., to take such good care of the papo when the papo can't see." Sometimes M. will ask me if she has a paper right-side up, but she gets it right-side up a greater percentage of times than can be due to accident. Either she has some way, other than sight, of guessing usually right, or there is something down deeper that influences, not infallibly, her choice of position. One night S. M. related something that she saw in a paper when M. was holding it. I asked for further particulars, but she could not finish the account, because, she said, "M. slapped the paper over too soon." R. D. came for sleep at 10.20. *Nov. 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. M., 1 h.*

*Nov. 6.* I returned to the house in the evening, and M. came just as I tapped at the hasped door. I could see her through the glass panels, as she felt her way along the wall through the long hall, and came slowly to the door. Guided by my tapping opposite the hasp she lifted it and let me in. R. D. came at 11 p. m. *Nov. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D. 23 h. 45 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Nov. 7.* R. D. wished to go tonight to a big entertainment in the Opera House gotten up by Mr. Wellington so much that I did not dare to thwart her, yet was afraid of the



effects. S. M. shared my apprehensions, but not to the same extent. "She is stronger now. But it will do her no good." The great size of the crowd, and the vociferous applause, added to my fears. Going home she said, "I guess I shan't sleep well tonight." M. showed no effects of the previous excitement.

R. D. came at 12.25 a. m. I took special pains to whisper in her sleeping ear that she would sleep well all night, and she slept almost without waking. *Nov. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 35 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Nov. 8.* There have been many callers, much 'phoning and bustle in the house for several days, and the same continued today. It is a proof of her accession of energy that R. D. stood it all so well, and maintained such good spirits. Once she "held on" hard, for fear that the persons coming in would find M. It had been better for her to have told me, and then gone to her room, given way and rested. It will be quieter in the house hereafter. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Nov. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 55 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Nov. 9. Sunday.* Last night M. advised me not to let R. D. go to church today. S. M. was not quite so sure, but was inclined to think on the whole that M. was right. R. D. was a little reluctant, but patiently complied. When I reached home at 12.30 p. m., she said, "I forgot, while I was standing by the stove watching the tomatoes cooking in the frying-pan, and when I came they were all burned up." My blood ran cold. "(Where were you when you came?) In the same place, by the stove. (Do you know how long you forgot?) No, I guess about 10 minutes." Then she added in tones almost of disgust, "She stood there and let the tomatoes burn up; didn't do anything at all." M. did not come again until 9.10 p. m., when she immediately cried out, "Something smelly! It's awful smelly, papo!", and seemed to be within the penumbra of the sensations which she was experiencing at the moment when she departed in the forenoon. But this soon passed away, and to my question what she did when she came her reply was, "Just stood still. Stood right there just as my pabo said I must. I never moved." Asked how long she was there she answered, "Six hours." When S. M.



could speak she remarked that the experience of standing by the stove in a blind state while the cooking burned seemed dangerous, but "I would not have let her get afire. You need not fear, I can assure you that." S. M. asserted that M. was out nearly 20 minutes. "I remember that it struck a quarter past eleven just after M. came, and after R. D. had returned and worked in the kitchen a little while putting some more tomatoes on to cook, she went into the dining-room and saw that it was then 20 minutes to twelve." Afterwards I questioned R. D. and heard from her that it was 20 minutes to twelve a few minutes after she came back, but she did not know when she forgot; it was perhaps 10 minutes earlier. Compare the declarations of the three, absolutely consistent with their several characters and viewpoints.

(1) M., who now has no conception of time, or terms that express time, and who no longer knows the significance of the striking of the clock, says that she was out "six hours."

(2) R. D., who could not know of the striking of the clock at a quarter past eleven, because M. was then out, is only able to report that it was 20 minutes to twelve a few minutes after she came.

(3) S. M. who is ever conscious, reports the striking of the clock when M. was out, and the time when R. D. glanced at it. R. D. came for the night at 9.50. *Nov. 8-9: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Nov. 10.* It is an agreeable surprise that the Friday night affair at the Opera House had so little ill effect. At the same time R. D. spontaneously recognizes that it will be best for her to avoid such a strain as it involved. She came at night, 10.30. *Nov. 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Nov. 11.* The new responsibilities which R. D. chose to assume two weeks ago, with the success which she is achieving in household economies, give her pleasurable zest and so are beneficial. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Nov. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Nov. 12.* R. D. came at 9.35 p. m. *Nov. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Nov. 13.* At 6.15 p. m., sensitive to some remark, R. D.



went, the first time for weeks that such a cause has led to her lapsing. M. felt for my hand and asked for it, and immediately after she had grasped it R. D. was back. Probably 30 seconds measured her absence. At 10.40 R. D. was here. *Nov. 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Nov. 14.* R. D. has determined to put her brass bedstead on the porch, in place of the couch, for greater comfort. M. said that R. D. was going to make covers to hang over the head and the feet to protect them from the weather. I remarked that it would be better to wind the brass with strips of cloth, and after S. M. got to talking a little was said regarding the two methods. R. D. came at 9.55 p. m. *Nov. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Nov. 15.* Today R. D. wound the bedstead in the manner which I had suggested, yet I had not mentioned the plan to her. I asked how she came by it, and she answered substantially, "I don't know. It came to me this morning and the thought of you connected with it. (Did it seem as though I had told you?) No, I did not think of it in that way, and yet it did not seem to be my own idea, and I somehow connected you with it." Afterwards S. M., asked for her opinion, gave it to the effect that M. did not, by hard thinking or otherwise, force the idea up into R. D.'s consciousness, but rather that R. D. is getting to be so close below the surface when M. is out that, in this instance, she herself in a manner heard what I said. At 9.20 R. D. came for the night. *Nov. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Nov. 16. Sunday.* R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Nov. 15-16: men. per. began (?); 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Nov. 17.* Mrs. P. made some cocoa, and M. asked for some in a most winsome, child-like way. I warned her that it was hot, so she undertook to dip out with a spoon. Sometimes she got some, sometimes she brought the spoon back to her lips without a particle of liquid in it. After several ineffectual dips she said, "Margaret not getty any cocoa." So I assisted the blind creature. R. D. was here for the night at 9.40. *Nov. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 45 m.*



*Nov. 18.* R. D. came at 9.10 p. m. *Nov. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Nov. 19.* R. D. came at 11.10 p. m. *Nov. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h. 25 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Nov. 20.* R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. *Nov. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Nov. 21.* Some time ago I gave M. a bit of pretzel after she had eaten her tiny three and an "*appel*"—at this stage her almost invariable order—and she was mightily pleased, roaring out big ha-has, with wide-open mouth and delighted eyes. Several times afterwards I did the same, with identical results. Then, after some evenings had elapsed without my doing so, M. suggested that I "*'urprise*" her with a piece of pretzel. Although prepared for it, when I put it into her hands she broke out into the same paroxysm of joy, ending "*Margaret loves to be 'urprised. Margaret loves 'urprise!*" Every night or two since I have surprised her, with the same reaction. R. D. came at 10.20 p. m. *Nov. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Nov. 22.* R. D. came at 8.55 p. m. *Nov. 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Nov. 23. Sunday.* As soon as M. came in the evening she cried, "I want what the D. had! I want what the D. had! (What did she have?) I d'know. She didn't thunk that. She only thunk it was good. It was awful good!", and she made the indescribable sound by which she expresses gustatory excellence. Various dishes were named in vain, and finally we thought it might be fried liver, of which R. D. had partaken. M. did not seem to know what fried liver was, but was inclined to think that this might be the desired article. But when her fingers touched it she shuddered, and said that it did not feel like that to the R. D. Then wafers were suggested, and M. joyfully declared that wafers were what she wanted, but it came to her that R. D. had put them away, M. could not tell where, for neither had that been "thunk." Regretfully M. gave up the hope of having any tonight. S. M. says that R. D. can now completely govern M.'s choice of food, if she will. At 9.45 p. m. R. D. came. *Nov. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 55 m.*



*Nov. 24.* On my return from a lecture in the evening M. began to say, "No bread! No bread!", in the most melancholy, yet humorous fashion. She explained that R. D. had not been able to make bread today, and went on "No bread! No bread!" I diverted her mind for a time, but she returned to the cricket-chirp again and again. At 9.55 p. m. R. D. was here. *Nov. 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Nov. 25.* Once this evening M. broke out with her "No bread," but I quickly turned her attention to something of interest to her, and broke up the automatism. S. M. remarked, "The R. D. need not have feared at night if she had known that there was someone here watching and protecting her. (But what could you do in case of danger?) I would rouse her. (Could you do it?) Certainly I could. (You used to think that you could rouse her only through M.) Well, it would have been easier to wake M. But now I think that I could have roused R. D. if I had tried. Of course in the old days M. only slept at night." R. D. was here at 9.30 p. m. *Nov. 24-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Nov. 26.* A circular came inviting me to a University of California affair, my expenses to be defrayed for a week. R. D. urged me to go, forgetting, so far as she realizes, the dependence of M. I asked her to think of me as intending to go. When M. came she shouted, "The D. thunk about your goin' away for a week. (Isn't that a good plan?) But she thinky that you wouldn't go!" The second "thunk" accounted for M.'s receiving the first so happily, the fact being that the two came to her blended. S. M. remarks that it is very fortunate that R. D. has so happy a nature. "Otherwise you would have a miserable time with M. at this stage. She has so little to do now, that if R. D. were despondent M. would be complaining, crying, an awful nuisance." At 9.35 R. D. was here for the night. *Nov. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Nov. 27.* R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Nov. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Nov. 28.* R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. *Nov. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*



Nov. 29. A night or two ago M. was gaily rehearsing R. D.'s thoughts today relative to an old incident, the particulars of which I knew. I asked M., when her tale was ended, about another feature, that presumably R. D. had not rehearsed in her mind. M. rolled up her eyes, corrugated her forehead, and twisted her neck, in the effort to recall. She succeeded in resurrecting the particular called for, but added in pathetic tones, "It give M. a pain in the head to thinky." I experimented in the same way tonight with the same result, including the complaint that the thinking gave her a pain. I asked where the pain was, and she took my hand and placed it first against the *left* temple, then at the base of the brain.

Again R. D. is feeling heavy and weary towards night. M. announces that she has found out why. "The R. D. is getty better fast lately. (How do you know that?) The M. is goin'. The M. can feel she is goin'." It was not until afterwards that S. M. made statements confirming this. A new spurt of improvement has been in progress, and consequently, as has happened after every such spurt has gone on for some days, R. D. feels the burden of her added mental activity and control of the whole bodily machine, and wearies towards the close of the day. S. M. says, "Before that, for some time M. was going very slowly, yet I could see that she was shrinking within; it was not perceptible outside."

For a long time M. has not asked to be "held," has not asked to be kissed or been kissed, and has not kissed the mother or me, though as affectionate in speech as ever. She says that she wants no presents on Christmas, but wants R. D. to have what would have been given to her. Nevertheless, she does desire that a particular doll shall be bought, because R. D., who never had a purchased doll when a child, is thinking that she will buy that particular one, which she admires for its beauty, dress it and set it on her bureau. She said this when Mr. Carey was present, and he asked if he should not buy it. She assented, and told him it would cost a quarter. R. D. thought. He took out a quarter, and she directed him to keep it carefully. He said that if he lost that, he would take another quarter, but she answered gravely, "No,



no 'nother quarter. Must be that quarter." Afterwards she asked me appealingly, "The M. didn't ask him to give her a doll, *did* she, papo. (No.) No, the M. didn't ask him. He offered to, didn't he?" The next time she saw him she asked if he had the quarter, and he showed it to her by putting it in her hand. "Is it the same quarter? (The very same.) Well, don't you lose it. And it may cost more than a quarter, I don't know. (Well, you let me know.) Yes, I'll let you know." [657]

R. D. said today, as I was poking into her memories, that one of the things that would bring M. when she was little was for her mother to tell her [R. D.] that she had a surprise for her. [658] M. would immediately come, and enjoyed the surprises exceedingly, and would often give the mother a surprise by presenting her with some trifle. [659] R. D.

---

657. Several days later, R. D. discovered that this particular doll would cost more than she was willing to pay. Thereupon M. decided that she did not want it. She then asked Mr. Carey if he still had that quarter, and on his affirmative reply said, "Well, you can throw it away". She saw no other conceivable use for it.

658. See page 1208 for an example of this passion for surprises on M.'s part. Also page 1216, etc. As in the case mentioned in note 608, a great many of M.'s characteristic reactions and spontaneous ways had their origin in the particulars of her intercourse with her mother. That mother, who must have been sorely puzzled by the childish and wayward moods, as they must have seemed to her, which came over her at other times tractable, and at all times loving daughter, employed all sorts of expedients to amuse and control what was really the Margaret factor, though R. D. enjoyed them too. The most loving of her children, though seemingly the most erratic, now impishly roguish or winsomely affectionate as a baby, now more womanly grave or smiling, Doris was her favorite, and between the two existed a rare and singular intimacy. Even up to the day of her death the mother had occasion to employ the arts that she had learned, for M. was out much of the time when with her, and M. continued a child. They would hide and find things together, they would tell each other invented secrets with all ceremony of caution, they would play odd invented games, in which no one else was to share. When M., for example, told me the secret about the fairies in a whisper, and with uplifted finger and impressive countenance bade me to be careful and never mention it to Mrs. P., no doubt I was looking at the very expression, and manner, and gesture, of her mother long years before.

659. The question has been asked, "How could R. D. know so much about what M. did and said, since she had no memories of the M. state? As



knows nothing about M.'s present fondness for being "urprised." A few nights ago M. discovered a new game. She was loosening her waist, and I happened to see that she was about to tear a hook off, and sprang to rescue it. She laughed loudly, and many times repeated the movement, crying, "I'm goin' to tear it open." Her laughter continued until it brought on paroxysmal coughing, probably from its affecting the thyroid gland. Every evening since, she has started the game again, with similar hilarious results. S. M. said that she was carrying it too far and I must check it by ceasing to pay attention. I did so tonight, and M. disappointedly said, "You ain't playing it right, papo." Tonight, also, M. got mixed in attempting to go to the bath-room, but when I faced her in the right direction she proceeded without further difficulty. She ejaculated, with exactly R. D.'s pronunciation, "I lost my sense of location", then added, in her own tones, and with an expression of bewilderment, "What's that?" Afterwards I learned that R. D. today jokingly said to a little girl of about two years, who was wandering from the path, "Have you lost your sense of location?" R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Nov. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

a reasoning creature, and one possessing ears, how would it have been possible for her not to know? If she came to consciousness and found her face scratched and her possessions flung out of the window, she would be likely from her long experience to infer that she had offended M. and been punished, and a little reflection would tell her what she had been doing just before she "forgot", of a nature to rouse the ebullition of fury. If, even at the age of twenty-two, she found herself hugging a doll, or rigged out in a strange costume, it would require no magical powers to infer that as M. she was a child with imaginative instincts. In difficult situations she could "fish" to find what she had been saying and doing, and often she did not need to fish. The mother would continue a conversation begun with M., and its nature would be soon apparent. Her brothers and sisters would tease and taunt her on account of behavior that she could not remember. She would hear her mother, when she was small, telling friends anecdotes of her less startling sayings and acts. In her school days her friend Ella, full of glee because of some astonishing outbreak of M., could be steered by R. D. into telling the whole story of what had occurred, without the slightest notion that she was imparting news. By these and similar means she picked up a thousand incidents of her life as M., the while that ten thousand remained to her unknown.



*Nov. 30. Sunday.* Contemporaneously with R. D.'s last spurt forward, M.'s eyes have begun to water and sting. The water streams down so that I have to wipe it away. Last night S. M. suggested that perhaps M. staring at a paper in imitation of me, is straining the eyes. So, when M. came in the evening for the second time today, she was induced not to "read", when she learned that I would not either. But still her eyes watered, and she said that they pained her. I shaded them for a while with my hand, and when I took it away she exclaimed, "Ouch! that hurt. (What, this?)"—shading her eyes again. "No." I took away the hand. "(This?) Ouch! Yes." She seems to have come to a stage where the eyes belong still less to *her*. Though she cannot see, artificial light, at least, hurts the eyes when she is out. So a screen was placed between her and the electric light, and the eyes watered no more. She slept this evening earlier and more than she has done for months, probably because of inducing her not to fix her attention on the barren effort to "read."

As before stated, M. tells my expression, never that of any other person, almost infallibly; by silent facial changes I can in a moment move her to laughter or hysterical tears. Also, she usually, though by no means always, manages to get a book or paper right-side up. One would think from these two facts that there must be a seeing under her blindness. S. M. denies that *she* has anything to do with it, yet she may. On the one hand, while M. has got to know certain routes through the rooms, and the location of objects which have a fixed place, like an ordinary blind person, yet on the other hand she is sometimes entirely at sea, runs into things and hurts herself rather severely, or would if she were not so anæsthetic. R. D. came at 10.25 p. m. *Nov. 29-30: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 2 h. 15 m. Average daily record of R. D. during November, 1913, 22 h. 58 m.*

*Dec. 1.* R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Nov. 30-Dec. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 2.* Tonight I neglected to shade M.'s eyes, and presently she put her hand before her face, saying, "Papo's eyes hurt. M. keep light out of papo's eyes." Her air was of



serious concern. I shaded her eyes and she said, "Papo's eyes don't hurt now." Several times when she was cold she has pronounced me so, and when I have covered her said, "Papo not cold now." S. M. says that M. is in earnest. Tonight, after sleeping on the lounge, she complained of her eyes, and I found them running profusely. Only a few minutes of exposure to the light are sufficient to cause this excess of secretion. When R. D. is out, the eyes are not at all affected in such manner.

M. asks, "What's henhouse? The D. thinky of henhouse. What's that noise—a train? What's train?", etc. R. D. came for the night at 9.20. *Dec. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Dec. 4.* R. D. came for sleep at 10.05. Some time in the night I was in the midst of a graphic and interesting dream, when suddenly there was interjected into it my name "Walter", thrilling in its distinctness, which instantly shattered the dream and woke me. I woke Mrs. P. and asked her "Did you hear anything?", and she answered "No." I at once rose and passed through the dining-room and to the rear of the kitchen, and looked through the screen-door upon the sleeping R. D., who lay there quietly. Mrs. P. and I now sleep on the front porch, near the dining-room door, about 25 feet from R. D., with the intervening doors open. I returned to my couch greatly puzzled, and even endeavored to construct a theory that the barking of a dog, which I heard afterwards, transformed itself into the word "Walter", though this seemed very unlikely, since it sounded so thrillingly distinct. [660] *Dec. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h.*

---

660. I faithfully recorded the attempt to explain the phenomenon by the notion that it was an illusion resulting from the barking of a dog, but really, this appears to be an example of that perverse ingenuity, floundering in the depths of the unreasonable, which is not uncommon. I did indeed hear a dog barking in the distance a little while after I awoke, but do not know that it barked before. But of course I have hundreds of times heard barking in the night, sometimes waking and oftener not, and have heard thousands of miscellaneous sounds likewise, but never before in my life have I heard a voice, breaking in upon a dream and waking me, for which I could not readily



*Dec. 5.* The moment that M. fell asleep S. M. laughed and said, "It was I whom you heard last night. I tried for the first time to see if I could speak while R. D. slept without waking her. [661] You know I said I was going to." This is true, though I omitted to record it. "I began by saying, 'Papa' softly, I spoke louder and louder and she paid no attention, then I said 'Walter' because that is a good, round word, and finally I spoke it loudly. But I really was not trying to make you hear, and was sorry when I heard you get up, to think that I had disturbed you. But I have proved that I can talk without the R. D. being disturbed by it. When I come back after she is well I shall be able to talk to you." I asked her to try to make me hear again. "I will but not tonight,—I should be afraid of disturbing her if I talk two nights in succession. And of course I don't know if you will hear another time, though I don't see why you shouldn't." I do not understand how she made me hear at such a distance, [662] and why it did not wake Mrs. P., who hears so much better than I. Query: did she make me hear by normal utterance, or did she speak to me "herself", as she some time ago intimated that she would try to do—

---

account, and especially no barking has ever transformed itself into the startlingly distinct pronunciation of my name. The voice seemed to issue from my immediate vicinity.

661. S. M. did not mean that she *had never* talked during R. D.'s sleep before, for she had done so in the old days before she and M. were "separated" (see page 476); but that this was the first time that she had done so under the altered conditions. Let it be remembered that M. herself had now for a long time ceased to speak during R. D.'s sleep, for she had long since ceased even to watch. In the meantime, too, R. D. had waxed greatly in the vigor of her own personality. In the absence of experiment, S. M. might well have doubted her ability to speak during R. D.'s sleep, in the changed state of affairs.

662. I am somewhat deaf, not so that one who is beside me need to raise his voice, but enough so that at the distance of 25 feet, with two intervening rooms, it is practically impossible for me to understand articulation. Besides, I am such a sound sleeper that it is very difficult for sounds to wake me, even a thunder-storm generally failing to do so. Mrs. P. not only hears much better, but she is also a lighter sleeper, being often awakened by sounds which leave me quietly slumbering.



[663] that is, not through R. D.'s lips? [664] *Dec. 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Dec. 6.* R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Dec. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Dec. 7. Sunday.* R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. S. M. said that she talked last night, still experimenting in her new-found power, but did not call out. *Dec. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Dec. 8.* From about the time that M.'s eyes began to be sensitive to the light, she changed her evening orders from three pretzels and an apple to two pretzels and no apple. Once she has asked to be surprised with an extra piece of pretzel, and once I gave her one while she was asleep, eliciting the same glad exclamations, "O ho, ho, ho! M.'s got 'urprise. M. *love* to be 'urprised! M. just *love* to be 'urprised!" R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. *Dec. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Dec. 9.* M. was voluble in her reports of what R. D. "thunk," this evening. Once she started; "The D. doesn't want you to touch that fine wood back of 'tove, 'cause she savin' it for breket... What! You can't eat *wood* for breket, papo! But the D. thunk it.... M. can't under'tand that." Her face took on an expression of deep perplexity, and her eyes rolled, as she seemed to be searching for an explanation. She went on, "But the D. *thunk* it." Here the strain of her bewilderment sent her to sleep, and S. M. burst out laughing. "Well, that is interesting. The R. D. couldn't have thought that out very clearly; something has been omitted." I asked S. M. if M. saw thoughts actually going on in R. D.'s mind below the surface. "Certainly, she

---

663. See page 1190.

664. This query was set down in my contemporaneous notes, not because probable, but out of sheer despair of accounting for the phenomenon. About ten nights later, according to her story, S. M. tried again to make me hear, but failed. In the meantime, however, Mrs. P., to secure the head of the couch better against rain, turned it in the other direction, causing my ears to be about 5½ feet farther away; also a cold has further affected my hearing, so that there is no *particular* reason for denying that S. M. did as she claims.



sees them as one might a picture-show. Matters of the day are reviewing, just as they review in your mind when you are asleep. You can't stop the machinery of the mind. When R. D. comes asleep she will carry on her thoughts right from the point where they were when M. left." M. went to sleep with a handkerchief in her hand, but presently thrust it into mine. S. M. used her volition to take the handkerchief and wipe what she would term M.'s nose. M. broke out in her sleep in surprised tones, "Somebody's wiped the M.'s nose!" Then S. M. said in her very different tones, "I wouldn't have done that if I had supposed that she would notice." Again M. spoke, "Nose didn't need wipe, papo." S. M. said, "There! she thinks that you did it." R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Dec. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Dec. 10.* R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *Dec. 9-10: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Dec. 11.* Mrs. P. felt cold in the evening, and M. exclaimed, "The mor's a cold women [sic.] What's women?" She seems not to know the meaning of even the names "cat" and "dog", though she may use the words in rehearsing one of her old stories, now very infrequent. Phrases come glibly to her lips, followed by "What's—", with the repetition of some substantive or other word, or she will say, "The D. think it." R. D. came for the night at 10.50 p. m. *Dec. 10-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Dec. 12.* Months ago I attempted to read history to R. D., and, though she was mildly interested, it wearied her. I tried the experiment again today, and not only did she take a lively interest, but she was not at all tired by listening. She said that it was fascinating as a story, and deplored that history was taught to her in school in so dull a manner. She returned for the night at 9.50. *Dec. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 13.* R. D. staid late at Mrs. K.'s, and on her return M. appeared and grumbled because R. D. did not return earlier, then keeled forward until her forehead rested on the couch—asleep. Waking, she called R. D. a "greaser." R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Dec. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. M., 50 m.*



*Dec. 14. Sunday.* R. D. came at 10.35 p. m. *Dec. 13-14:* 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h.

*Dec. 15.* The period began today. When Mrs. P. and I returned to the house at 11 p. m., R. D. came to open the door and put her hand on the hasp, and M. lifted it. R. D. came for sleep at 11.40, but a light in the kitchen disturbed her and brought M. for 5 minutes, at 11.45. *Dec. 14-15: men. per. began;* 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 25 m.; M., 40 m.

*Dec. 16.* Last night, when I surprised M. by giving her a supplementary bit of pretzel, her laugh seemed to me forced and languid. But R. D. herself has lately seemed not to care so much for pretzels. Tonight M. asked me not to "urprise" her any more, saying that it hurt her throat to "laughy." R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. *Dec. 15-16: 4 alt.: R. D.,* 20 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.

*Dec. 17.* M. again begged me not to "urprise" her any more, and seemed about to cry, when I afterwards suggested giving her a surprise. As she has done for several nights, she asked for but one pretzel, and ate nothing else. But she wanted an orange to *hold*, and did hold it, without eating it.

I asked S. M. if she could wonder, since she herself declared that she had deceived me earlier in relation to her identity, that I was not sure that she was not deceiving me now. [665] She answered, with no appearance of pique, "I don't care what you think about it now; you have only to wait for the proof, which will surely come. I will not certainly say that it will come before M. goes, but if not it will after, for I shall surely come back." Again S. M. said, "I told you that M. would probably, after she goes, return a few times at the menstrual period. I am inclined now to think that when she goes she will go for good, as R. D. has so little trouble at those times." [666]

R. D. returned asleep at 9.30. I whispered, "Dream of

665. The main object in asking such questions was to test S. M.'s mental reactions. Of course I kept in mind the initial probabilities in regard to her claim, at least had it stood alone, though why S. M. should have had dreams and delusions as to matters which I could not test, while she always talked so sanely and sagaciously as to matters which I could test, is puzzling.

666. And this later conclusion was correct.



your chickens—of hatching them out in the incubator." A smile flitted over her lips. She actually dreamed of hatching full-grown hens in the incubator, and that neither she nor I was surprised. Note that (1) my saying, "Dream of your chickens" would naturally start her dreaming of the full-grown ones which she has at present as that is her usual term for hens, while she terms chicks "baby chickens"; (2) once thus started she proceeded to follow the rest of the instructions, resulting in full-grown chickens coming forth from the incubator; (3) she introduced me into the dream, probably because I was the one who suggested it. *Dec. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Dec. 18.* M. said, "Somebody pwedict frost—what's pwedict frost?" She fell asleep holding my hand, which she often does, especially since she became blind. I uttered some remark about R. D. which pleased S. M., who pressed my hand. There was a brief pause, then M., still asleep, chuckled and squeezed my hand tumultuously. Evidently she thought that I had pressed her hand. R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Dec. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Dec. 19.* R. D. asked me if she couldn't look through M.'s drawer, as there might be articles there that she could use. I told her that she must wait until I could ask. But M.'s answer was, "Have you forgotten my will? I can't let people have things now,—what would become of my will? And she would take things that I have given to other folks." M.'s point of view seemed reasonable. Tests tonight proved that M. can designate with her finger her nose, eyes and mouth, but not her hair, forehead or chin. Her mouth and nose are connected with existing activities, her eyes are sensitive to the light, while hair, forehead and chin *do* nothing, and have no feeling. I asked, "(Where are your feet?) Down there; the papo's rubbin' 'em." She could locate the feet, because something was being done to them. But she seemed unable to locate her hand, though she held mine up, and said, "This is the papo's hand." R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Dec. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 20.* The eyelids have become red and swollen, causing R. D. pain. Dr. Boone was called in, and pronounced it



the result of eye-strain. Undoubtedly the eye-strain occurs when, occasionally, through inadvertance, M.'s eyes are left for a few minutes unscreened from the light. Tonight the blind M. put her foot in contact with the stove and burned it, but not badly. [667] At 9.40 R. D. came. *Dec. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Dec. 21. Sunday.* R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. *Dec. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Dec. 22.* At 7.05 p. m., R. D. accidentally pinched her finger severely, and M. came. M. was doubtful whether or not R. D. would return, but after about 20 minutes of waiting gave up, and determined that her shoes should be removed and her feet rubbed. One shoe was off when she exclaimed hurriedly, "Put shoe on—put shoe on! the D. is here", and sure enough, as soon as the shoe was on R. D. came. Tonight I gave M. a pretty little doll, and she was delighted with it. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *Dec. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Dec. 23.* I got from S. M. the positive statement that when M. tormented S. D. in the old days, pulling out hair, etc., she was awake. Sometimes she scratched while asleep but the most of her mischief was performed awake. R. D. came at 10.55 p. m. *Dec. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Dec. 24.* When M. came in the evening, she demanded that all the presents by members of the family to one another should be placed on the table, and tumultuously began to make room for them by sweeping everything off, books, dishes, etc., the breakables being rescued with difficulty. Then for three or four minutes she was in excitement, handling things and feeling them over to "see them." She called for her doll and rejoiced over that, then without warning except the words "M. tired" fell over asleep. She would have fallen to the floor had she not been caught. She slept a few minutes, while S. M. commented quietly on the excite-

---

667. M. was also partly anæsthetic to direct contact with a heated surface, though sensitive to the temperature of the atmosphere!



ment, and then went to bed, tired out. R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Dec. 23-24: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 25.* R. D. was rather piqued because she could not have been the one to see the packages opened first, and said, "I am glad she won't be here next Christmas." She spent part of the day by invitation with a neighbor, not knowing that there would be present 18 children and several adults, so became quite nervous, and for the first time for many weeks the swollen abdomen was in evidence, and the thyroid gland affected. So M. came at 5.35 p. m., and was on deck for twenty minutes, reflecting R. D.'s excitement by loud tones, nervous laughter, and the patting automatism. At first she said that she could not see much in R. D.'s mind. "It's all a jumble of children and candy and pwesents and all sorts of sings." But later she seemed to get hold of threads better. Occasionally she seemed to forget her doll, and would say mournfully, "M. didn't get any pwesent." When reminded of the doll she would respond joyfully, but soon return to the disappointed exclamation, but with only shadowy emotion. A year ago, had R. D. neglected M.'s request to dress the doll, she would have been displeased, and blamed me, but now she makes excuses for the delinquent. She said very seriously, "I guess the D. will get over being 'cited tomor'r, so she can dwess my baby doll, don't you sink so mor'r?"

Tonight I deliberately set M. on the track of an old, disused cricket-chirp. I related an incident, closing, "and the bed fell down." Instantly she began, "The bed's broken down... The bed's all broken *down*... The beds all broken *down*." I tried to divert her attention by saying "Hear pretty birdie?" and with difficulty got her attention enough so that she repeated it, but back she went to the sing-song sentence. She laughed nervously, and her eyes rolled, as though she were conscious that something was wrong, but she could not stop. I put her to sleep, but still she murmured, "The bed's all broken down" at wider intervals, but unceasingly. When she woke I put her doll into her hands, and her ecstasy over this interrupted the current sufficiently to stop the obsession. Several times she said,



"M. is glad Chwistmas is over. Tires M." R. D. came for the night at 10.20. *Dec. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Dec. 26.* R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Dec. 25-26: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Dec. 27.* M. still thinks I am the papo of the whole family. "You are the mor'r's papo." But I believe that she understands it just as she would "You are the mother's Walter." "Papo" is to her but a name. M. shows great fondness for her new doll. S. M.'s attention is attracted by this fact, and R. D.'s also, the latter from the fact that she finds it on the couch, covered up as if in bed, in the morning. At 9.40 p. m. R. D. came. *Dec. 26-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Dec. 28. Sunday.* R. D. ate something which disagreed with her, and was rather sick in the afternoon; M. came at 8.30, and felt no inconvenience. For two or three days M.'s manner has showed a change, her speech is slow, her voice velvety with curious inflections, her manner sluggish. As such changes whether permanent or not, usually betoken a spurt of improvement in R. D., I suspect that one is in progress now. R. D. returned for the night at 9.30. *Dec. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Dec. 29.* Sure enough, R. D. spontaneously remarked that she feels "freer and lighter" today than ever before. M. came in the evening tired, but note that R. D. had not gone away tired—M. was tired for herself. Almost at once she went to bed without the usual preliminaries. Sometimes M. says "See the moon, papo? M. sees the moon." But immediately afterwards she is as likely as not to ask, "What's moon?" Tonight she uttered the former sentences, at the same time turning her head in the direction that R. D. lately had to look when she woke in the early night and glanced at the moon,—but there was no moon in the sky tonight. I replied "(No, I don't see it.) Can't you see, papo?"—with much feeling—"Well, never mind, M. can't see either. (I thought you said you could see the moon.) M. was only fooling. M. can't see the moon or anysing. Never mind, papo. (We don't care, do we?) No, we don't care." S. M.



asked if I heard a yell last night. A woman shouted at about 1 o'clock, "Jim, where are you." S. M. added, "I was surprised that R. D. didn't wake, but she didn't seem to notice it." R. D. arrived at 9.30 p. m. *Dec. 28-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Dec. 30.* Tonight M. called for an "oranch"—her invariable pronunciation of the word orange—and said, "M. would have gone to bed right off if the D. had eaten her oranch. M. didn't want an oranch. M. was tired. M. is tired all time now." But R. D. was not tired when she went. Does this mark a new stage—M. being tired for *herself*? M. is unaware that there is a small gash on my cheek, which looks rather badly. Had she known of it she would certainly have talked about it. I have pooh-poohed about it to R. D., so that she probably has thought little about it. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Dec. 29-30: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Dec. 31.* M. again asked for an "oranch." S. M. says that R. D. has seen oranges at the neighbor's, where she has spent a part of the last three evenings, and while she has not consciously thought of wanting one it must be that the desire for an orange was formed "underneath", and that M. gets that. M. said tonight, "Why doesn't she grab an oranch? I would." M. has forgotten about her doll, and shows less desire to have her feet rubbed. There is an increasing tendency to add *y* to words. She saw in R. D.'s mind her intention, thwarted by too early departure, to lay out some clothing, and told me where to go to get a "waisty" and "skirty" and "petticoaty", also "pippers" [slippers] and "'tockies." She added, "The D. will 'preciate it", then looked puzzled and asked, "What will the D. be? What did M. say? (That the D. would appreciate it.) Yes, the D. will", she said with satisfaction. I have wanted M. to put on cloth slippers when the feet-rubbing is over, and she has been unwilling. But the other night she called for them. "The D. washy her feety. M. must keep feety clean." Since then I have been able to persuade her to put on the slippers by appealing to her desire to keep the feet clean. There has been for some months an increasing tendency for



M. to speak of herself in the third person, and she does that now almost exclusively. M. told me that R. D. would come awake and thirsty, and she did and called for water. Then I said, "Sleep fine." Her head waggled, and she asked in surprise, "What made my head do that?" She caught the waggle, a motor-automatism, from M., and now the thought of going to sleep set it in play so soon that she noticed it. Usually the waggle and the going to sleep are simultaneous. At 10.25 R. D. came for the night. *Dec. 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m. Average daily record of R. D. for December, 1913, 22 h. 59 m.*

*Jan. 1, 1914.* This evening M. was sitting on the couch with one foot under her, when she appealed to me to take off her shoes. I removed one, and directed her to give me the other foot, knowing from previous experience what would happen, but wishing Mr. Carey, who was present, to see it. She appeared puzzled, and said, "No other foot. (Yes—where is it?) *Here it is*", lifting the foot from which the shoe had just been taken. "(No, the other foot.)" She was now plainly embarrassed, and after various answers, such as "No other foot", "Foot's los'", "Other foot's dead", etc., I said, "(No, it is under you.) No, cushy's under me", slapping the edge of the cushion. "(Yes, and your other foot's under you.) No, other's foot's dead. (No, pull it out.)" She actually put her hand in her nightgown to search for the foot, but I checked her. Here, as I persisted in questioning her, she fell asleep. S. M. says that her going to sleep under such circumstances is partly voluntary, to get out of an embarrassing position, as she knows that there is something that she ought to know, but is partly the effect of excitement. While she was asleep I moved the toe of her protruding shoe, and she cried, "Why, *here's footy*" She woke, and tugged at the foot to get it out, and seemed to be getting seriously alarmed, when I raised her to her feet and the foot came down. She was greatly relieved, crying, as she stooped and caressed the foot, "Dear footy! M. thought she had los' you." R. D. was here at 10.05 p. m. *Dec. 31-Jan. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 50 m.*



*Jan. 2.* R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Jan. 1-2: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Jan. 3.* R. D. came at 10.35 p. m. *Jan. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Jan. 4. Sunday.* R. D. came at 9.55. *Jan. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Jan. 5.* R. D. heard from Mrs. P. that the A Phase had said that we could not have eggs for breakfast because she, R. D., had sold them all, and remarked that Phase A told whoppers. Tonight M. said, "The D. think that Mrs. B. was goin' to buy all she had left. But she diddy think that Mrs. B. diddy buy them. How was M. to know that, when the D. diddy think it?" R. D. came for the night at 10.05. *Jan. 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Jan. 6.* S. M. thinks that M. will be gone by the end of March, but I doubt it. R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Jan. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Jan. 7.* R. D. here at 9.50 p. m. *Jan. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 40 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Jan. 8.* R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. *Jan. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Jan. 9.* For several days she has had soreness in the back, which today became shooting pains. Dr. Boone was called and pronounced it lumbago, and prescribed treatment. The severe pains caused a day of many alternations, once the usual thing but now a novelty. [668] Once M. was uttering a sentence while departing and R. D. caught the final word and asked, "What was that? Was I saying something? (Yes.) Was it 'hanny'? I seemed to catch that." It was. M. cannot properly distinguish between the terms used to express temperature, being as likely to say it is "wearm" (warm) when it is cold, and "coit" (cold) when it is warm as to use the correct terms. For awhile she seemed able to revive her recollection of the proper meaning of the terms when her attention was called, and would say, "not wearm-coit, but coit-coit," but of late may insist that she is "wearm" or

---

668. From sleep to sleep, Jan. 8-9, R. D. was here as follows: 9.45 p. m.-2.10 a. m.; 3.10-7.55, 8.55-11.50, 12.15-2.50 p. m., 3-4.45, 5.20-8.45.



"wearm-coit" when she is really uncomfortable from cold, but I find that I can still find out the facts by asking, "Are you cold in the way you are when you are close to the stove?"; she will answer with relief, yes or no. While M. was sleeping, she grasped and sipped from a glass of water, cutting up S. M.'s sentences, to her mild disgust. R. D. came at 10.05 p. m. *Jan. 8-9: 12 alt.: R. D., 19 h. 50 m.; M., 4 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 10.* A little better. M. also feels the sharp pains, but apparently no others. Towards evening the sharp pains were gone. At 9.50 p. m. R. D. was here. *Jan. 9-10: men. per. began; 6 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 45 m.*

*Jan. 11. Sunday.* The conjunction of lumbago with the beginning of the monthly period and with my having a very bad cold was primarily responsible for the nearest approach to a "tantrum" which M. has had for a long time. Because of headache pains I involuntarily frowned while answering her, at least she declared that I did, blind as she is, and she refused for a time to have her feet rubbed, called me "Greaser", and sulked. Mr. Carey's presence made no difference. When M. slept S. M. reproached me for losing my caution, "You must control your face or take the consequences." I had at least the satisfaction of telling S. M. that she was mistaken in her formerly expressed opinion that M. could not longer get angry. M.'s mood lightened but little before R. D. came, and the latter showed the effect in her gloomy expression. When M. came for the last time the independence of S. M. of the moods of the others was manifested, for as soon as she spoke a smile broke out like sunshine from dark clouds, and though she reproved me it was with perfect good nature. M. now got over her sulkiness, and after she was asleep responded to my coughing, "If papo don't stop coughing, papo will have to take some hot lard." Instantly S. M. followed with low tones indicative of astonishment, "Good heavens! did you hear that? Well, I declare! M. is repeating what her mother said to her when she was about four years of age—I remember it well. M. was pretending to cough, and her mother said to her playfully, 'If Doris doesn't stop coughing Doris will have to take



some hot lard.' That is what she used to give her when she had a cold, and she hated it. And M. didn't say 'coughy' in her way, but 'coughing', as the mother said it. Well, if that isn't curious!" R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Jan. 10-11: men. per. began; 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 h.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Jan. 12.* Her general condition made R. D. very sensitive, and a well-intended remark by Mr. Carey grieved her, so that she became very gloomy. At 11.25 a. m. M. came, and the tears kept oozing from her eyes all the time she was here. She seemed to be good-natured, but could only occasionally smile. Once she said, "It isn't M. that's crying, it's the R. D. that's crying, bapo." On her return R. D. seemed no more cheerful, and again M. came with tears trickling, and still she said it was R. D. crying underneath. Once she asked "Where's our mor'r? (Right there by the table.) I mean our own mor'r." Evidently R. D. had been longing for her mother. When R. D. came at 10.50 p. m. I tried to suggest happy thoughts to her in her sleep, but with little effect. She cried a good deal during the night. *Jan. 11-12: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 3 h. 5 m.*

*Jan. 13.* R. D.'s back was still better and her spirits were improved, though not up to par. S. M. says that when R. D. is sick and blue some of the old feelings of S. D. come to her in the form of restlessness which she does not understand, a vague desire to go.

In the evening M. had a series of sneezes as I was rubbing her cold feet. Between sneezes she remonstrated, "O bapo! ... Bapo! ... Bapo. Bapo, stop that!, and finally, "Bapo, stop that! Don't make a fool of M.", and went to sleep. S. M. laughed and said that M. thought that I caused the sneezes by pulling her feet or something of the sort. R. D. came for the night at 10.25. *Jan. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Jan. 14.* R. D.'s spirits were better though not perfect. I find that her mind is a little confused again, indicating a slight setback. When M. came in the evening she said that she thought R. D. had a backache, though she admitted that she had not seen any thoughts about it. When she was asleep S. M. said that a pin was grazing her back, and that



M. was conscious that something was wrong, though she could not feel what it was. M. said that R. D. on the night that she cried so much wished and wished that her mother would speak to her and comfort her. I asked S. M. if this was true and she assented. I remarked that if her mother really appeared to her in the henyard this would seem to have been a good time to come again. S. M. responded, "I do not know, of course, why she did not—there was something wrong in the conditions I suppose. Perhaps it was because if she had made D. hear she would have scared her, alone in the night. I think she would certainly have been frightened. A spirit never desires to frighten one. (Don't spirits ever frighten people?) Yes, sometimes, when the case is urgent, for example. (Dr. Hyslop said that you may have lost the knowledge of your identity, and you have said that you know who you are. Have you a name?) I have. (A real name, not an invented one?) Yes." S. M. spontaneously remarked that if R. D. had been taken in hand early she might have developed into a remarkable psychic, and that even now she could be developed. (Wouldn't it injure her?) It would do no harm if she could be gotten past the first stages of development. It might make her nervous, sitting and waiting and keeping her mind from fixing on topics. Perhaps later it could be done." Again S. M. said, "I was practising talking last night, when R. D. was asleep. I probably talked too long and too loud, and it is different in a closed room. [669] At any rate, D. woke and thought, 'Papa and mamma must be talking pretty loud out there.' She must have heard something. But she would get used to it so it would not disturb her." R. D. came for the night at 10.15 *Jan. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 50 m.*

*Jan. 15.* R. D. had a bad cold and headache and her back was worse. At 5.10 p. m. M. came. Her condition got so bad that it was necessary to have a doctor despite M.'s presence. Dr. Boone being unable to be out in the evening on

---

669. For several nights, contrary to custom, she had been sleeping in the house.



account of his age and health, I got Dr. Owen. M. had promised to be very careful, and as a matter-of-fact M. guarded her speech to the point of saying very little, and answering mainly by repeating so much of the doctor's words as would do for a reply. For example, "(Does your head ache?) My head aches. (Is your throat sore?) My throat sore." Thus she avoided "heady" and certain other peculiarities of speech and pronunciation, and whatever oddities remained were disguised by her hoarseness. It was not until midnight that the headache subsided sufficiently for R. D. to return for the night. *Jan. 14-15: 4 alt.: R. D., 17 h. 35 m.; M., 8 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 16.* She was abed all day, nevertheless R. D. remained until 9.20 p. m. She returned at 11 p. m. *Jan. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 40 m.*

*Jan. 17.* Still abed, but feeling some better. R. D. came for the night at 10.10 p. m. *Jan. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 18. Sunday.* Still abed. Dr. Owen visited her and directed her to come to his office each day for a time. M. was here 4.05-5.30 p. m. R. D. came for the night at 10.15. *Jan. 17-18: 4 alt.: R. D., 20 h. 25 m.; M., 3 h. 40 m.*

*Jan. 19.* Up today but not well. R. D. came for the night at 10.10. *Jan. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 35 m.*

*Jan. 20.* I took R. D. to the doctor's. She came for sleep at 9.55 p. m. *Jan. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Jan. 21.* Much better. Went to the doctor's. Came for the night at 10.50. *Jan. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Jan. 22.* Not yet well, though improving; sleep not good, and tendency again to be timid at night. R. D. came at 10 p. m. Suggestion pretty nearly killed the timidity tonight. *Jan. 21-22: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Jan. 23.* Still better. Mr. Carey came for the last time before returning to Connecticut. I impressed upon M. that it was a special occasion, and she sat up until he went. She was very voluble about the journey across the desert which we took, it appearing that this afternoon R. D. was talking about it to a girl friend. S. M. said, "and what she talked about was passing in review down in her mind. It is so



with you, papa, and with everyone." M. whispered to me to ask Mr. C. for the quarter which had been dedicated for the doll which M. had decided not to have bought. When Mr. C. rose to go M.'s face illuminated with sly merriment and she said, "Now, papo!" I duly preferred the request, and she said "Thanks" for the quarter. I asked her to say goodbye and shake hands, but she declined, though she graciously said, "Goo'by! Skidoo!" [670] R. D. came at 10.50 p. m. *Jan. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Jan. 24.* There are still backache and spells of not feeling well otherwise, sore throat, etc. M. was here 5.45-6.05 p. m. R. D. remarked that Phase A must be getting very nice as she finds her clothes every morning neatly piled up together. Soon after M. came in the evening she said, "M. is a nice child. The D. thinks M. a good child, to take care of her clothes," and she laughed and seemed much pleased by R. D.'s compliment. In leaving the room tonight in full light, M. walked directly upon a closed door, slammed against it, bumped her nose, and almost cried. A little later I saved her from another concussion, in the hallway. S. M. thinks that this is a mark of further decadence in M. that she blunders in familiar routes. R. D. has a bad scar from a burn made by M.'s standing in contact with a hot stove, the heat of which she did not seem to feel.

S. M. says that today *she* can feel with the tips of her fingers, for the first time so far as she knows. R. D. was back for the night at 10.25. *Jan. 23-24: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Jan. 25. Sunday.* M. was here 4.40-6 p. m. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *Jan. 24-25: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 5 m.; M., 2 h. 45 m.*

*Jan. 26.* Today I told Dr. Owen in confidence the secret of D.'s dissociation. He remarked that he had noticed the child-likeness of demeanor at his first interview, when M. was the one to be out.

I asked S. M. if she recollected whether S. D.'s vision narrowed before it began to shorten, as happened afterwards

---

670. M. promptly forgot Mr. Carey. She never mentioned him again.



in the case of M., and she said that she believed it did. I feel sure of it from my recollection of how, when my face was withdrawn a little to one side, S. D. would look vacantly straight before her, no longer understanding my words but ejaculating, "Noise! noise!" S. M. advised that I tell R. D. not to drink coffee unless she eats something at the same time, saying that she has for several mornings taken only a cup of coffee for breakfast. Several times when I have said something which S. M. regards as inane she has playfully slapped my hand or dug me with her elbow. Always there has ensued a brief pause, perhaps of five seconds, as though it took a little time to rouse M. slightly from her depths of slumber, then her characteristic chuckle has been heard, and she has repeated the movement, but in a more convulsive, childish manner. S. M. then generally laughs and says something like, "She thinks *you* did that." [671] M. was here 12.10-12.45 and 3.30-3.45 p. m. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Jan. 25-26: 6 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 2 h. 10 m.*

*Jan. 27.* M. made a morning appearance at 6.40—a rare thing now—and was ecstatic because R. D. felt so much better and slept so well last night. Ere long R. D. was back, in her normal spirits again. I delivered the caution about the coffee, and she defended herself, saying that she had drunk coffee alone but twice, and that she wished that the A Phase would not report such things about her. I asked why she accused the A Phase, and she replied, "She must have. I was alone when I drank the coffee." R. D. came at 10.30 for the night. *Jan. 26-27: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 1 h. 55 m.*

*Jan. 28.* R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. At 2.10 a. m. M. called, and was found fairly quivering with vicarious delight. "She was so excited", M. said over and over, after explaining that the chickens were beginning to hatch in the incubator. R. D. was back in just half an hour. *Jan. 27-28: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Jan. 29.* As evening approached R. D. announced that she felt that she could sleep tonight without M. intervening,

---

671. As time went on, the interval before M.'s reaction tended to increase, and the vigor of the reaction itself to decrease.



if I would sit beside her and hold her hand at the moment of her going to sleep. [672] But working over her chickens kept her up until 10.15, and when she called me in it occurred to her that her window was not up, and the slight delay of raising it jarred the delicate balance between R. D. and M., and the latter came. At 10.45 R. D. returned for the night, and sadly asked, "Did I forget?" *Jan. 28-29: 2 alt.: 24 h. 35 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Jan. 30. R. D. First Maintains Herself without an Evening Interval.* D. felt splendidly today. In the evening she was ready to repeat the attempt, got everything ready, lay down and called me. I sat beside her and held her hand and said softly, "Good-night. You are going to sleep now." Her eyelids closed. "Sleep well—sleep nearly all night. All is safe. You will sleep all night", etc. In a couple of minutes I left her, *and she staid all night in her primary personality!* *Jan. 29-30: 0 alt.: R. D.*

*Jan. 31. And all the next day, until 9 p. m.!* A new era in the case has been reached. She felt splendidly all day, was very busy, and got somewhat tired, though not apparently more than usual after so much activity. She started out to repeat the achievement, but it was too much. While in the bath-room she felt herself going, hurriedly unlocked the door, when M. came and turned the knob, and cried "Papo!" She was confused and frightened, affected, doubtless, by R.

---

672. It is a familiar fact that many psychoneurotic persons seem to derive strength from other particular persons. Whether this is to be explained by auto-suggestion arising from the knowledge that such particular persons have been instrumental in their progress toward health, or by the supposition that there is a psychic force which flows from the stronger person to the weaker, I shall not pretend to determine. In 1911, if we went along a street well thronged by people, R. D. would feel M. near and save herself from lapsing by taking my arm, or grasping the sleeve of my coat. Almost up to the time of M.'s final disappearance, she would sometimes come into the room where I was and hover about for a minute or two, perhaps without speaking or particularly attracting my notice, and S. M. would afterward explain that she did it in order to maintain herself. But she used such crutches only as she actually needed them, being disposed to rely upon her own powers to the fullest extent possible, and with the disappearance of M. won normal independence.



D.'s sudden fear. She seemed lethargic, announced without the elation that I had expected, "The D. went to sleep herself," but did not seem to comprehend that in consequence she herself had been away longer than usual. After she fell asleep she repeated, now in jubilant tones followed by squeaky laughter, "The D. went to sleep herself." S. M. laughed and said, "It has got through at last. She didn't half comprehend at first." Again and again M. repeated that glad sentence in her sleep, and after she woke, but said little else. R. D. came at 10.30 p. m. *Jan. 30-31: 2 alt.: R. D., 46 h. 15 m.; M., 1 h. 30 m. Average daily record of R. D. for January, 1914, 22 h. 16 m.*

*Feb. 1. Sunday.* S. M. remarked that as Sunday is always a harder day for R. D., she would probably not be able to stay tonight, and so it proved. M. was again lethargic, talking little, for a couple of minutes going through the pantomime of reading a paper, then sleeping, waking and smiling languidly with little speech, sleeping again, etc. R. D. came for the night at 10.10. *Jan. 31-Feb. 1: 2 alt.: R. D. 22 h. 40 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Feb. 2.* S. M. says that R. D., having seen a man who resembled her father, dreamed of Mr. F., and experienced repulsion and fear, but that his face suddenly changed in the dream to mine. She was puzzled and said, "But it surely was not you who first came in." And Dr. Prince responded, "Yes, it was I." S. M. commented, "The changing of Mr. F. to you in the dream shows that the idea of Mr. F.'s being her father is being pushed out, and dominated by the idea that you are her father." Going at 9.05 p. m., R. D. came again at 9.45 as the result of the auto-suggestion of a duty unfulfilled in regard to the chickens, went at 10.25, and came for the night at 10.45. *Feb. 1-2: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Feb. 3.* Every night since R. D.'s epochal achievement M. has come as it were wobbly, uncertain in her movements. Tonight she came in the hall as R. D. was about to enter the living-room, and cried out to me in some alarm, not knowing where she was. R. D. came at 10.15 p. m. *Feb. 2-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h.*



*Feb. 4.* Perhaps the reason that R. D. has not repeated her feat is that she is perturbed over the fact that her chickens are dying like flies. M. came in the hall again tonight and was again confused as to her location. She ran into objects after coming into the light. Tonight she remarked, "Papo is going to lose his M. soon. (What makes you think so?) M. feels it." She never, I think, says "I" any more, but always "Margaret."

This evening we went to a picture-show, and among the films was one depicting the actions of a drunken man, with tragic details. Coming at 9.55 R. D. slept badly, woke, thought she heard someone coming up stairs, fancied that she heard creaky sounds, etc. Finally a door slammed, she called to me several times then rose to come, when M. came out and called again just before I reached her. The latter was not frightened, because I was with her. M. departed after a stay of 25 minutes, and then R. D. came in from the porch and slept on the lounge. The next day she spoke of hating the "drunk" pictures, and it flashed over me that these were what caused her dreams and illusions last night—the pictures brought back obscure feelings and fears associated with her father in the days when S. D. used to listen for his tread coming up the creaking stairs. It is the remains of the fear that S. D. used so dramatically to express, somnambulically, at our house. *Feb. 3-4: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 5.* Owing to weariness from last night, R. D. went at 7.35 p. m., but returned at 8.15, staid until 9 and came for the night at 9.45. *Feb. 4-5: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h. 25 m.*

*Feb. 6.* I have wanted Dr. Owen to have a glimpse of the case. R. D. does not know this. S. M. was opposed, but as she saw that I desired it said, "Have him if you want him. But I shall go away. What is the use of having anyone now, when M. is reduced to what she is? It would not be convincing." On the contrary M., who has seen Dr. O. once, is childishly curious to see him again, not insistent but just amusingly declaring, "M.'s froat's sore. O, how M.'s



back aches! Send for Dr. Owen." R. D. returned for the night at 9.45. *Feb. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Feb. 7.* This evening M. asked "When's next week? (Tomorrow begins next week.) Well, next week is when the M. will go." Several times S. M. has expressed the opinion that M. would go in February, even going so far as to say that she *knew* she would. Also, she said yesterday that I might expect almost anytime to get the "proof" concerning herself. Tonight I got a chance to ask S. M. some questions while M. was awake without their being noticed by the latter, and received answers, yes or no, by means of the feet. When M. was asleep S. M. said, "The R. D. was thinking that something would be next week; that is how M. came to use the term. She means *very soon* by it. She has no conception of what the expression means." Several times M. has said, with great enjoyment, "The papo will ask 'W-h-e-r-e i-s M-a-r-g-a-r-e-t?', and there won't be any 'M. to answer.'" Later she asked, "What will the papo say?" I repeated her words in her own fashion, and she was immensely pleased, and prompted me, "And what won't there be?" I had to go through the formula repeatedly. [673] R. D. came at 10.10 p. m. *Feb. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Feb. 8. Sunday.* The "Where's Margaret" formula was required several times tonight. R. D. came at 10.40 for the night. *Feb. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 9.* Almost every day R. D. remarks how happy she is, and she certainly appears so. At 8.35 R. D. came while in the dining-room, and soon went to bed and to sleep by herself. This is something new; she is winning independence. *Feb. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 10 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Feb. 10.* The period began today. In the evening, by arrangement, Dr. Owen came, talked with R. D. about 20 minutes, and saw M. come and cover her face with her hands until her shyness was overcome. M. called for her drawer for the first time for months and began to show and talk about her treasures. Most

673. It was M.'s delight, on a number of subsequent evenings, to start this little game of her own initiative and play it through with me.



of the articles she knew the moment she touched them, others she had to feel carefully over before she could recognize them, and other articles—mostly little books and pictures, she was evidently unable to determine, though she evaded the betrayal of the fact that she cannot see by passing over the latter swiftly and talking of something else. She was also baffled by a small metal cat. When I called it an elephant she showed relief, but said "M. doesn't like elephant." S. M., whose objections I had overcome, talked in M.'s sleep. After the visit Dr. O. said that he was struck by the sudden transition when M. came, cutting a sentence of R. D.'s in two. He was inclined to think that M. saw, misled by the extraordinary hyperæsthesia, etc., which enables her to tell where most objects are. The doctor left at about 10.30, and M. showed that she was wearied by the excitement of having company. R. D. returned 11.05-11.10 to do a chore which was registered in her brain, and finally returned at 11.30. *Feb. 9-10: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h.; M., 2 h. 30 m.*

*Feb. 11.* R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Feb. 10-11: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Feb. 12.* Catamenia was painless throughout, and there was no visible depression of spirits. R. D. came for the night at 9.30. *Feb. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 45 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Feb. 13.* Sensitive to a criticism of mine R. D. went 6.15-6.40 p. m., and came for the night at 9.30. *Feb. 12-13: 4 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 14.* In the evening, M., who was having her feet rubbed, sat up with lightning rapidity, and with her eyes staring, shouted "Fire! fire!" Mrs. P. had not heard the fire alarm, and did not believe it had sounded, but on opening the door flames were discerned only a square away. M. remarked that R. D. was missing it, when R. D. flashed out. We all went to the fire, and on our return R. D. expressed the opinion that she could remain tonight, but this was unlikely after the excitement, and M. came for an hour yet. R. D. arrived at 9.40 p. m. *Feb. 13-14: 4 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 15. Sunday.* R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Feb. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 5 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Feb. 16.* S. M. says that she has forgotten many details of the



former workings and relations of the personalities. "I have turned my attention from those things. What is the use of my keeping them in mind? D.'s past life is nothing to me now." She says casually, "if I were a human being." I don't know if she means that she is not a human being in the sense of not having a body of her own, or that she never was one, or what, and I forbear to inquire, being still afraid of suggesting notions to this rarely unsuggestible sphinx. R. D. arrived at 10.15 p. m. *Feb. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Feb. 17.* Calmly confident in the afternoon that she was going to "stay" this evening, when the evening came R. D. seemed to have no doubt about it, though she remained up until 10. She said that she knew by the way she felt. And she did stay, and slept better than usual.

*Feb. 18.* M. did not come until 8.50 p. m., after R. D. had been in possession of the citadel for 46 h. 35 m. M. did not seem to be conscious that R. D.'s staying last night meant that she herself had been away longer than usual, even after I questioned her. S. M. says, "Time is nothing to her. She comes and goes, that is all she knows. The R. D. did not make it a matter of much thought that she did not forget last night, so M. does not realize." My eye was badly picked by a hen today. M. seriously asserted, rolling down the lid of her eye, that a hen had picked it. Even after I reminded her that it was my eye that was picked, so that she corrected herself for the moment, soon she was back to the original impression.

Tonight S. M. referred to an article in the last "Churchman", being reminded of it by a remark of mine, stated that it was written by the Bishop of Mexico, and gave an outline of the article. Her statement of it was nearly correct, except that she thought the Bishop endorsed a story which he related whereas he gave it as a sample of what is believed in Mexico. I asked when R. D. read the article. "She didn't read it. She was reading another article. (You read one article while she was reading another?) Yes,—that is, I got the most of it. I did not read it all. (I wasn't aware that you could do that.) Well, I didn't know that I could do quite that before." The next morning, by the most casual mode of inquiry possible I learned from R. D. that she had read an



article on the other side of the page from that by Bishop Aves, and a little above. I read aloud the article by the Bishop, and she listened with ordinary interest and no sign of recognition. Then I asked directly if she had read it before. She said "no", and inquired with curiosity what made me ask what she had read and not read. I did not tell her, but made some excuse. R. D. came for the night at 10.05. *Feb. 16-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 46 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 15 m.*

*Feb. 19.* There was a party at the rectory in the evening, so R. D. staid at a neighbor's until nearly 10.30. She had been expecting to stay herself tonight, so when M. came I probably looked a trifle disappointed. M. detected it, and asked in touching fashion, "You are not cross with your M. are you, papo? She can't help coming." She again said that a hen had picked her eye. R. D. came at 11.30 p. m. *Feb. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 25 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Feb. 20.* In the afternoon I took R. D. to the Orange Show. She had expected to stay several hours, but as I expected, was soon tired by the crowd, and we came away in about an hour and a half. R. D. arrived for the night at 11. *Feb. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 30 m.*

*Feb. 21.* For the third time R. D. went to sleep for the night without a M.-interval.

*Feb. 22, Sunday.* **S. M. Gains Control of the Muscles Against M.'s Will.** M. came at 8.55 p. m. While I was rubbing her icy feet S. M. suddenly reminded me of her existence by shutting the feet together and holding my hand fast. M. became conscious of it and began to laugh more and more excitedly, shouting, "Mor-r! Mor-r! see my feety! my feety! My feety's holdin' the papo's hanny!" The hysterical coughing that takes place when M. laughs too excitedly began, I suppose from affection of the thyroid gland, and the feet relaxed. Afterwards S. M. said, "I did not mean to excite her that way." This incident illustrates the fact which I have discovered, that M. has been getting incapable and is now incapable, of controlling the muscles against the will of S. M., a reversal of the former rule. Tonight for the first time I spoke of it to S. M. and she said, "Yes, she



has lost power so that she can't prevent me. I think I could control her hand now."

S. M. says that usually she does not take pains to read herself when R. D. is reading, since it is easier to see the matter in R. D.'s mind. "With M. it is different. She cannot read, and if she keeps her eyes still enough I can read some when she is looking at a paper. Sometimes I look when R. D. is reading to see if there is anything which interests me more than the article that she is engaged on. There hasn't been lately." At 10.05 p. m. R. D. came. *Feb. 20-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 45 h. 55 m.; M., 1 h. 10 m.*

*Feb. 23.* R. D. staid tonight.

*Feb. 24.* And tonight! Another record. R. D. maintained herself over two nights.

*Feb. 25.* She was here until 8.55 p. m. A record of 70 h. 50 m.! The end must be near. M. appeared not much different than usual, except that she quoted less of R. D.'s thoughts. She seemed to know that R. D. had been out for some time, but not to realize that this involved a longer absence on her part. She was soon tired and slept. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Feb. 22-25: 2 alt.: R. D., 70 h. 50 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Feb. 26.* **S. M. Begins to Speak during the Sleep of R. D.** [674] No M.-interval tonight. On this and the two previous nights when R. D. remained, S. M. conversed with me during R. D.'s sleep, these being the first occasions when I have been a witness of S. M.'s newly-discovered power. Previously she had been of the opinion that R. D. had better sleep for half an hour before she talked, to insure that R. D. should be soundly asleep. But on each of these three nights S. M. called to me only a few minutes after R. D. had fallen asleep, saying that she was sleeping soundly. On the first night she halted the experiment after a couple of minutes, saying that as R. D. was not used to this it might disturb her. The following nights we talked a little longer. Tonight she said, "She is very sound asleep. She is conscious that you are here but it does not disturb her." I raised the window, and S. M. said, "She listened a little then." Presently she

---

674. Before she was "separated" from M. she used to do this (see page 476), but never after that until this date.



added, "I am going away soon, and shall not be back until near morning."

*Feb. 27.* At 9.25 p. m. M. came, very amiable, and slept all but a few minutes. S. M. informed me that she was away all night and today up to about 4 p. m. I think that this is her longest absence except the time that she became offended with me. "Perhaps the R. D. would have staid tonight if I had not gone. She feels it a little yet." R. D. returned for the night at 10.15. *Feb. 25-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 47 h. 35 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Feb. 28.* R. D. staid tonight. *Average daily record of R. D. for February, 1914, 23 h. 6 m.*

*Mar. 1. Sunday.* R. D. went at 9.25 and returned at 10.30 p. m. *Feb. 27-Mar. 1: 2 alt.: R. D., 47 h. 10 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Mar. 2.* R. D. staid tonight. In the day she heard a drum beat in the street. Tonight she had a series of dreams about the Revolutionary war, saw three battles, Gen. Washington, etc.

*Mar. 3.* R. D. departed at 8.50 p. m. and returned at 9.40. *Mar. 1-3: 2 alt.: R. D., 46 h. 20 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Mar. 4.* R. D. came at 9.55 p. m. *Mar. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 50 m.; M., 25 m.*

*Mar. 5.* R. D. staid tonight.

*Mar. 6.* Staid again.

*Mar. 7.* R. D. startled me this morning by asking, "Does Phase A go away sometimes? (Why do you ask such a question?) Because sometimes I feel more alone than at others. Night before last I felt that way—lonely—as if part of me had gone. I felt so every time I woke during the night. I am more timid then." I prevaricated by telling her that probably Phase A went farther below the surface at such times. R. D. continued, "Do you remember I told you how I felt, once when we were on the piazza? It is the same feeling, only I don't have it so strongly now, I think." Of course I knew that it was S. M.'s absence that she felt.

**R. D. Maintains Herself over Four Nights.** R. D. staid *again* tonight! This establishes still another record. She said that she would read in bed, and asked me to come in and say good-night at 10.15. Somehow, for me to talk to her for a moment, just before she goes to sleep, seems to give her strength. But I



no longer remain until she is asleep, as she feels that it is better for her to go to sleep of her own motion. More and more she wins independence, and seems fully disposed of her own accord to use all that she wins. But tonight, when I entered her room, it was dark, and S. M. said that R. D. had become tired and gone to sleep about half an hour before. S. M. admitted that she was away night before last, and says that she is away much of the time in the day, of late. She stated that she is making preparations for the "proof." "It will come just before M. goes, or possibly a little after. I will tell you when the time is come." She also said, "Last night to see what she would do I smacked her lips loudly once, the way the kids do. [675] You should have seen her; she turned her head this way and that and listened, then she settled down."

*Mar. 8. Sunday.* R. D. was here to 9.10 p. m. Four nights and four days! M. came with a sort of gurgling chuckle, prolonged, and burrowed her head under my chin for awhile, as though she were timid. She did not ask to have her feet rubbed, but said that she was tired and wanted to go to bed, so when she was ready I went in and sat by her. She seemed not to notice the presence of Mrs. P. Later, when the latter was in an adjoining room, with the door open, getting ready for bed, M. woke and said, "Somebody in next room! (The mother.) No, the mor'r dead." And to every affirmation of mine she would respond, "The mor'r's dead." Mrs. P. now spoke, and M. gleefully exclaimed "That's the mor'r. The mor'r not dead." She slept again and S. M. and I talked. M. chanced to put her fingers to her lips while S. M. was finishing a sentence, and at once woke and said, "Papo, what did M.'s lips say? M.'s lips were saying something. . . I guess M. must have talked in her sleep." S. M. afterwards said, "M. pretty nearly caught me that time. I did not notice that she had put her fingers on her lips until I was done speaking." R. D. came for the night at 10.05. *Mar. 5-8: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 95 h. 15 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Mar. 9.* R. D. came at 10 p. m. *Mar. 8-9: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 25 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Mar. 10.* R. D. staid tonight.

---

675. Meaning twin children near by, of whom D. is fond.



*Mar. 11.* We started at 7.30 a. m. for Los Angeles, and got home at about 10.30 p. m. R. D. thought that she could maintain herself, but M. came, with a vigorous snap of the head. The trouble is that any agreeable novelty like this trip excites her; she enjoys it with such emotion that it is almost as potent to produce an alternation as are disagreeable emotions. But there is this difference, that while pleasurable excitement on the part of R. D. is nearly as likely to bring M. as is grief, self-reproach or wounded feelings, the former has a tendency to weaken the hold of M., to rob her of something of her vigor and quality, painful emotion has not. R. D. came at 11.25 p. m. *Mar. 9-11: 2 alt.: R. D., 48 h. 30 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Mar. 12.* R. D. went just as I returned from a meeting of the Medical Society, and returned at 11.40 p. m. *Mar. 11-12: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 50 m.; M., 25 m.*

*Mar. 13.* R. D. came at 9.40 p. m. *Mar. 12-13: 2 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 25 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Mar. 14.* For a week or ten days M. has not asked to have her feet rubbed, but has gone to bed and to sleep within a few minutes after arrival. She comes, looks at me in a half-asleep way, with lips parted and smiling like an infant, sometimes chuckling, or saying some phrase, like "Hullo papo!" over and over. She quotes but little from R. D.'s thoughts—perhaps more from lack of energy to look into them than from inability to do so, at any rate she often answers questions in the shortest and most general way, without taking the trouble to explain or modify them as she would have done but lately. Thus, Mrs. P. jokingly asked her if she enjoyed her ride today—R. D. had a ride in an automobile—and she replied "yes." Asked if she rode she replied "no." Mrs. P. jokingly asked if she was interested in her brother Michael, [676] and she answered in gurgling, infantile fashion, "M. ain't got any brudder", and repeated this several times, as if amused. S. M. has remarked that she does not see why R. D. doesn't stay in the evening of late, but I presume that the excitement of the Los Angeles trip and the rapid shrink-

---

676. Referring to Michael Haitsch, the amnesic subject, whom we were at this period inviting to our house so often that he almost seemed to be a member of the family.



ing of M., imposing more burden on R. D., account for this. R. D. came at 9.20 p. m. *Mar. 13-14: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 50 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Mar. 15. Sunday.* At 9.05 p. m. M. came repeating many times, in the same infantile-giggly voice, with eyes half shut, "M. ain't got any brudder." She was, as always now, amiability personified. She is seldom awake more than ten minutes. S. M. thinks that R. D. will probably succeed in maintaining herself tomorrow night, that she has been having more laid on her in consequence of M.'s enfeeblement, but that she is stronger today,—has caught up, as it were. S. M. added, "It is a surprise to me that M. holds on, for there is really almost nothing to her." I asked M. tonight, "(Is M. going?) Yes, M. will soon be gone. (Is M. willing to go?) Yes, M. wants to go. (I won't forget M.) No, the papo must wemember M. You must keep M.'s dollies to wemember M. by. Don't let the D. lend the big dolly Margaret, 'cause that's M.'s dolly, and papo must keep it for M." R. D. came at 9.35 p. m. *Mar. 14-15: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 45 m.; M., 30 m.*

*Mar. 16.* But R. D. did not stay tonight. Perhaps M. is continuing to "slump" so fast that fresh burdens are constantly laid on R. D. M. came chuckling "M. ain't got any brudder", but was asleep within ten minutes. R. D. came at 9.45 p. m. *Mar. 15-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 30 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Mar. 17.* Again M. came chuckling "M. ain't got any brudder, mudder", while Mrs. P. was in the room, returning to the earlier form, "M. ain't got any brudder", as soon as Mrs. P. stepped out. This is the first time she has been heard to say "mudder." Does it mean that as a child she pronounced the word "mudder", before she called it "mor'r", and that she has now retraced her course to the period of the earlier pronunciation? A few days ago M. would also certainly have pronounced the word brother "bror'r." R. D. arrived at 10.05 p. m. *Mar. 16-17: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 15 m.*

*Mar. 18.* M. came with the ejaculations which have become an automatism. She prattled only a little besides. Callers came for ten minutes, and M. said, "Get M. a magazine and she will be good." I did so and she held it gravely up before her blind



eyes. When I returned she was asleep and S. M. said that she fell asleep almost as soon as I left the room. M., on waking, did not remember for what cause I had left her. R. D. came at 10.45 p. m. *Mar. 17-18: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Mar. 19.* I inferred from M.'s very rapid declension since the Los Angeles trip that R. D. must feel "freer" than ever. I asked her, "Do you feel any different of late?" She replied as was expected, that she did. "I feel freer and lighter, and I am happier than ever. (How long have you felt that way?) About a week."

M. came with the now customary verbal automatism, often repeated. I left her to undress, and when I got back she said, "M. didn't touch the incubator. [677] (Of course you didn't.) M. wanted to. But M. didn't touch it." She seemed quite proud of her achievement in resisting the temptation. R. D. arrived for the night at 10.30. *Mar. 18-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 10 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Mar. 20.* M. came with the ejaculations, "M. ain't got any brudder." I at once took her to her room, but could not at once find the electric bulb, which is attached to a cord. M. got from R. D.'s mind where it was, and informed me, "it's come down", and this instantly roused the old automatism, and it came forth, "it has all fallen down—it has all fallen—" but in a flash I interposed " (M. likes her dolly?) Yes, M. likes her dolly—M.'s dolly is all fallen down—it's all— (M.'s dolly is sitting up all right now, isn't it)." [678] The spell began to break, her voice changed from its monotony, her features showed relief, and she said, "Yes, the dolly's sittin' up, she isn't all fallen down, is she, papo?" I rapidly led her mind to other matters, and she fell asleep, whereupon S. M. congratulated me on my "bright idea." As M. slept, she tossed her hand, and it fell on her nightgown, which I always direct her attention to so that she will know where it is when she is ready to put it on. She felt of it carefully, then chuckled, "M.'s nightgown." I put a pencil on her chest. She

677. For greater ease of watching it, R. D. had the incubator in her room.

678. M. had a little while before seen in R. D.'s mind that one of her dolls was reclining at an apparently uncomfortable angle, and had made me "sit her up".



took it up, felt it over while her face twisted in its curious fashion of expressing her puzzlement, and handed it to me, saying, "M. will give it to the papo. Papo can have it", her intonations implying infinite benevolence. S. M. laughed until she choked, and said "She doesn't know what it is." This is a mark of declension, certainly. The same happened when I put a dime on her chest. I substituted a handkerchief, and directed her hand to it. She misjudged from the feeling of it what it was, for she said, "M.'s nightgown. Let it lie." A comb, with some hair in it, was laid on her chest. As soon as her fingers touched the hair a look of intense disgust swept over her face, she shuddered and dropped the comb with an "ugh." S. M. said, "she trembled from head to foot." M. always abominated the touch of wool or hair. At 9.50 p. m. R. D. was here. *Mar. 19-20: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Mar. 21.* M. tonight said that she cannot see any of R. D.'s thoughts any more, except when R. D. has hoped that she would do something. At least that is what she tried to tell me, according to S. M.'s interpretation—M. could not tell it intelligibly.

S. M. says that she has not been away for a number of days—that she has thought it best not, since R. D. "is perturbed about something", she is not sure what, but it may be it is pity for Michael Haitich, the man who has lost his memory. Today R. D. said that she did not see why Michael could not have his meals here, but tonight S. M. opposed the suggestion, saying that this would be bad for R. D., who sympathizes with him too much. R. D. planned that we should all go on a mountain picnic on Monday, but S. M. disapproves of that also. R. D. returned for the night at 9.25. *Mar. 20-21: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 1 h. 5 m.*

*Mar. 22. Sunday.* R. D. came at 9.30 p. m. *Mar. 21-22: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 20 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Mar. 23.* This is the first time for a week that M. did not come saying "I ain't got any brudder." R. D. came at 9 p. m. *Mar. 22-23: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 30 m.*

*Mar. 24.* R. D. staid tonight. She has gotten her balance again, then, after M.'s shrinkage.

*Mar. 25.* Staid tonight also.

*Mar. 26.* And tonight also.



*Mar. 27.* Michael Haitsh was in this evening. At about 9 p. m. R. D. came in and reminded me that I had told him that he should go to bed by 9. But I wanted to finish the subject that we were discussing, not thinking that she might have some ulterior object in saying that. At 9.10 Mrs. P. reported that I was wanted. I found M. just a bit sulky and impatient with me—her rendering of R. D.'s feeling that I ought to have understood her, no doubt. Soon M. slept, and S. M. remarked, "D. would have staid tonight and made another record if you had come out. She had to get a little support. (I am a stupid lobster.) Yes, I think you are, sometimes." I remarked that I utterly forgot to go in and talk to her, S. M., the last nights when R. D. remained. "I made up my mind the first night that you didn't care to talk, and the next two nights I went away, so it would have done no good to come then." S. M. hit me with her elbow after I made some teasing remark. An interval of a few seconds, and the movement was repeated with an indescribably different impact, and M.'s childish and delighted laugh, so different from the laugh of S. M. was heard. "She thinks that you did it." I took the arm and made her elbow thump me, but there was no response. "That isn't the same to her", said S. M. R. D. came at 9.35 p. m. *Mar. 23-27: 2 alt.: R. D., 96 h. 10 m.; M., 25 m.*

*Mar. 28.* R. D. staid tonight.

*Mar. 29. Sunday.* R. D. cannot seem to survive Sunday. Going at 9.30 she returned at 10.10. *Mar. 27-29: 2 alt.: R. D., 47 h. 55 m.; M., 40 m.*

*Mar. 30.* R. D. staid tonight.

*Mar. 31.* And tonight. *Average daily record of R. D. during March, 1914, 23 h. 28 m.*

*Apr. 1.* And tonight.

*Apr. 2.* R. D. staid until 9.30, it being the beginning of the monthly period. M. was like a small, affectionate child, and seemingly more helpless than ever. R. D. returned at 10.30 p. m. *Mar. 29-Apr. 2: men. per. began; 2 alt.: R. D., 95 h. 20 m.; M., 1 h.*

*Apr. 3.* M. came at 8.30 a. m., the first time, I believe, for seven weeks that she has appeared in the morning. Disappointment caused it, a second big lot of eggs having produced but four



chickens, which she gave a sitting hen, that crushed two of them this morning. She reported the latter fact to me, and went to her room. Curiously it was not until exactly 8.30, some minutes later, that the alternation occurred. R. D. was crying when she went, and M. came crying and explaining that she could not help it, that it was R. D. who started it. In fact, M. did not seem to have any individual feeling about the matter at all, but would smile and joke in her babyish fashion amid her tears and sobs, which were now automatic. When R. D. returned at 9 exactly, she of course had a headache, which lasted until she had taken an automobile ride in the afternoon. R. D. came at night at 9.25.

*Apr. 2-3: 4 alt.: R. D., 21 h. 35 m.; M., 1 h. 20 m.*

*Apr. 4.* One of M.'s expressions this evening was "Papo kicky his footy." She seems to know next to nothing of R. D.'s thoughts of the day. R. D. came at 9.50 p. m. *Apr. 3-4: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h. 35 m.; M., 50 m.*

*Apr. 5. Sunday.* R. D. came at 10.40 p. m. *Apr. 4-5: 2 alt.: R. D., 24 h. 5 m.; M., 45 m.*

*Apr. 6.* R. D. returned at 9.45 p. m. *Apr. 5-6: 2 alt.: R. D., 22 h. 30 m.; M., 35 m.*

*Apr. 7.* R. D. came at 9.25 p. m. *Apr. 6-7: 2 alt.: R. D., 23 h.; M., 40 m.*

*Apr. 8.* M. is awake but a few minutes each night. She sometimes eats an apple or an orange, never anything else, and usually finishes this while sleeping. R. D. came for the night at 11. *Apr. 7-8: 2 alt.: R. D., 25 h.; M., 35 m.*

*Apr. 9.* S. M. has reproved me several times lately for my manner, which she says sometimes indicates irritation. The fact is that my public work is heavy at this season, and I am tired and abstracted, and have no doubt that my nerves are somewhat unstrung, though of course it is my duty to control all betrayal of the fact. I suspect that this may have had an effect upon R. D.'s spirits, and hindered her from maintaining herself at night, though she appears in the main cheerful, and often remarks how happy she is. Tonight R. D. resumed the practice of reading in bed, just before it is time for her to sleep. In fact I suggested it, as I had noticed that she seemed more likely to maintain herself when she did so, partly because she does not then have to



undertake the task of undressing at the critical time when psychic forces are trembling in the balance. I went in to say goodnight, she uttered about two sentences, then her head fell over on one side, the neck muscles limp as if released by a spring. Instantly the voice of S. M. exclaimed, "She is asleep. Why, how suddenly she fell asleep!", as frankly surprised as I was, though there was a period when she fell asleep with the same suddenness, but not, I think, with that limpness of the muscles of the neck. If R. D. should fall asleep unobserved by me, and if it were dark so that I could not see the face, nevertheless I would know, although S. M. continued uninterruptedly a sentence left off by R. D., just when the transition came, by the difference in the quality of the voices. I do not say that a stranger could. R. D. staid tonight.

*Apr. 10.* And tonight. Her falling asleep was exactly like that of last night. S. M. said, "I *think* M. has gone. (What! gone for good?) Yes, I think so—it seems to me that she has. (What makes you think so?) I don't know—but it seems to me that she isn't here. (But if she has, won't she come back when R. D. is sick?) Well, she may for a while. . . I am going away tonight, and shall be gone for a week. (Suppose something should happen to R. D.?) In that case, of course, I should return. But I don't think anything will happen. (You are not forgetting your promise about the proof?) No, that is why I am going. (To get ready for the giving of the proof?) Yes. (You feel sure that it will be given?) Pretty sure. . . Now don't think I am weakening. (I began to think you were.) It is that one can't be absolutely sure of anything." It is curious to see R. D., whose custom it is to turn over several times before she gets finally settled in the business of sleeping, "flop over", as S. M. calls it; her face away from me, and S. M. twist the head around in order that I may hear her better. Usually she takes these gyrations as a matter of course, but tonight she seemed almost irritated. "There she goes, flopping over. It's a nuisance, when I am talking with you." This is a sample of the little interferences that S. M. is subject to in her converse, another being the yawn that R. D. often indulges in, which will cut S. M. off until it is over.



*Apr. 11.* In the morning R. D. said, "I have that curious feeling that you know of, that I've had before, as though I had lost something, as though something were lacking. I had it when I woke last night." Towards night I questioned her, and she said that she had the feeling still. I remarked that perhaps it was because M. had "slipped another cog." Later she said that she knew she would stay tonight, that she did not feel the A Phase at all. And she did, and fell asleep suddenly again, and I could elicit no response from S. M.

*Apr. 12. -Easter Sunday.* This is the hardest day of the year for me except Christmas, in my public work. I would have thought it certain that R. D., who has never yet maintained herself over Sunday, could not do so today, since she was concerned about me. She went to church in the morning and staid through the discourse. Afterwards she told me, "I had the old feeling of being nervous in a crowd, that I have not had for a long time." This might be because there was an unusual crowd, but more likely it was largely because S. M. was not there to aid her. The "missing" feeling continued today. [679] She says that last night she had many dreams of losing things, and searching for them. No M. appeared tonight and the dreams of losing things and hunting for them were continued. Particularly she dreamed that she herself was lost.

*Apr. 13.* R. D. staid tonight.

*Apr. 14.* And tonight.

*Apr. 15.* She still has the psychical sensation of something being missing, though it is not troublesome to any marked degree. She says, "It is as if one had been wearing a wrap for a long while and left it off—don't need it, and yet feels that it is gone." R. D. remained tonight. No sign of S. M.

*Apr. 16. R. D. Maintains Herself Over Eight Nights.* R. D. went to bed at 9.30 p. m. and began to read. At 10.05 I went in, according to direction, and said goodnight, she fell asleep almost immediately, and directly after there came a jerk, the eyes opened, and it was M. The latter murmured several times, "It's the papo. It's the papo", in baby accents. "(Who is it?) It's the Margaret. It's the Margaret. (How long have you been

---

679. See pages 1049 seq., 1052.



gone?) Just a day." Little else was said. She chuckled a little, kicked out her feet, and went to sleep. Then S. M. spoke, "She is asleep. Here I am. (When did you come?) Just before M. did. (Is that why M. came?) No, I came because I knew that she was coming. I had to come back then." She asserts that she has partly made her preparations, and that at the proper time I will know what she has been doing. She remarked, "D. missed me", and appeared to be conscious of some things that had happened to R. D. during the week, though she was ignorant of others. Another record was established today, R. D. had maintained her individuality for nearly eight days and nights! R. D. came at 11 p. m. *Apr. 8-16: 2 alt.: R. D., 191 h. 5 m.; M., 55 m.*

*Apr. 17.* S. M. must have gone away before R. D. woke in the night, as I heard nothing about any change in her sensations. She has the lost feeling today. R. D. staid tonight.

*Apr. 18.* And again tonight.

*Apr. 19. Sunday.* The lost feeling left R. D. this forenoon. She says that she has felt "cranky" all day, she doesn't know why, though this is but little evident to the outside observer.

M. came at 8.50 p. m. She was amiable and rather lethargic, saying "It's Margaret", and a few other simple sentences, and laughing gently, before falling asleep. [680]

S. M. stated that she went away immediately after R. D. went to sleep on Thursday night, and got back this morning, "because she needed me." Asked if she had finished her "preparation", she said, with a laugh "No, I get interrupted too often. I shall go away again tonight." *Apr. 16-19: 2 alt.: R. D., 69 h. 50 m.; M., 35 m. Average daily record of R. D., March 31-Apr. 19, 1914, 23 h. 32 m.*

680. April 19th, 1914, is a great day in the calendar of D.'s life, for it is the day on which all breaks in the continuity of her consciousness ceased. It would have been well if every word and act of this, M.'s last appearance, could have been recorded, but the chronicler had not the gift of prophecy, and did not dream at the time that she would never be seen again. One has a foolish feeling of regret that her "dying hour" could not have been recognized, and some words of good-bye said. And though, to echo the familiar saying, "we would not wish her back", yet so strong was the impression of individuality produced by this winsome child-personality that one misses her as he would a little daughter who has died out of the family, and experiences an emotion not unmingled with pain as he reflects that "Margaret" will be seen no more.



## CHAPTER XI.

### TENTH PERIOD: NORMAL CONSCIOUSNESS.

DORIS RESTORED TO CONTINUOUS CONSCIOUSNESS WITH BRIEF APPEARANCES OF SLEEPING MARGARET AS CO-CONSCIOUSNESS.

April 19, 1914—.

*Apr. 20.* R. D. staid tonight.

*Apr. 21.* And tonight.

*Apr. 22.* And tonight. R. D. says that she sometimes absent-mindedly starts to look for something that she thinks she has mislaid, and finds that it is the lost feeling that started her. Usually she forgets it, when she is busy. She has had the feeling since Sunday night.

*Apr. 23-26.* M. has not put in an appearance.

*Apr. 27.* R. D. worked too hard and was very tired in the afternoon. The lost feeling was gone for a while.

*Apr. 28.* R. D. is still on deck.

*Apr. 29.* The monthly period began, and R. D. worked very industriously, but she felt well, and even in better spirits than usual. She never has been so buoyant at this time. And M. did not come.

Immediately after I said goodnight, the voice of S. M. was heard, "She is asleep. (You are away a good deal.) Yes, I am still making preparations. (It takes a lot.) Yes, it certainly does for what I am going to show you. .. I came back last night, before you went to bed, and called to you as you went through the hall, but you didn't hear me. I might yell my head off. (Was that what made her wake, feeling as if she had been called?) Yes, that was it... I wonder what she is so uneasy with her feet for? .. I guess they are caught in the covers. .. I am going away now. Goodnight."



*May 1.* No M. yet! This evening S. M. talked mostly of the remarkably good spirits of R. D., remarkable even for her, which she has maintained for some time. I found that S. M. knew before my mention of it that I listened at the door on Wednesday night to see if she, S. M., would speak. She said, and I am confident that it is true, that R. D. was asleep and did not know that I listened. But she also asserted that she herself was "away" at the time, "but", she added, "I know some things that happen."

*May 2.* I asked R. D. when the "lost feeling" last disappeared. She did not remember, but it was several days ago. This tends to corroborate S. M.'s statement that she went away on the last two nights soon after I left the room, while R. D. was asleep. [681]

From the first of May S. M. came every night, usually she said, just before R. D. went to sleep, and spoke immediately after. We commonly talk about five minutes. She says that she generally stays about one hour. We discuss the probability that M. is gone. S. M. does not certainly know that this is the case, but sees no sign of her presence, and argues from various tests, Sundays, the sick time, one or two brief periods of worry, etc., that M. must be gone.

As May 13th, when the Diocesan Convention began its session, approached, I was surprised to hear D. spontaneously say that it would be all right, so far as she is concerned, for me to be gone over night and to stay the two days. This is surely another sign that M. is gone! I have never been able to absent myself over night for more than three years. And no untoward incident resulted from my absence this time; she was cheerful and happy, and slept well both nights, for I was actually absent two. Some sign of protest would surely have bubbled up from M., had she been subliminally conscious of my intention. S. M. says that *she* stayed with D. all the time I was gone, night and day. As usual, it did not occur to D. to mention that the lost feel-

---

681. From this time, since it had become highly probable that M. had finally gone, and since the data requiring record became scanty, the daily record closed, and only occasional notes were made.



ing disappeared, but casual inquiry developed that this was the case, from the morning of my going until the morning after my return.

S. M. says that the proof may be expected soon. "It may be almost any time now." The first night that a new lot of eggs was put into the incubator and D. would have to rise twice in the night, S. M. announced that she should stay all night. Every night she comes and talks a little while after D. falls asleep, which the latter does with a slight preliminary waggle of the head, a relic of a motor automatism set up by M. Often D. is asleep within two seconds after she has said goodnight, and immediately the calm, even voice of S. M. is heard, saying "She is asleep." S. M. is seldom here in the daytime, but one day, about May 20th, according to her testimony, she was here nearly all day. There did not seem to be any reason arising from external circumstances or from D.'s feelings, why this should have been, as the events of the day flowed smoothly and D. was well and as sunny as usual. Nor did S. M. claim that there was any reason, except her own will. She declared that she had watched me considerably during the day. Now as I was writing in my room the most of the day with the door generally shut, I naturally remarked, "(But D. didn't come in very often, and then only for brief stays.) I watched you sometimes when she didn't."

Three ladies, who are accustomed to be with D. a good deal, have separately remarked that she "looks different" the last few weeks. "Your face is changing", said one, "and you look so *well*." And this is true.

One evening the "proof" was mentioned, and S. M. laughed and said, "(I know what you think—that it will never come. (Well, of course I am not sure it will, but I am open to conviction.) That is all right. I would rather that you would be that way than to be credulous. But the proof will come. (Do you think it will be proof to others?) Yes, if anything ever was. (Won't it wake her?) No, I guess not. Mind, I don't know how it is to come—by writing, voice or how."

On May 25th, while Mrs. P. and I were gone, word came



to the house of the terrible condition that a certain parishioner was in. The emergency demanded that something be done at once, and I could not be reached. D. went hither and thither, arranging in most capable manner, for about four hours, and got excited and weary. And yet M. did not come! Liquor-drinking had something to do with the emergency referred to, and the next night D. had a succession of the terrible dreams about her old liquor-cursed home. Every sound of the night, footfalls, creaking, etc., started these dreams afresh. The next day the monthly period was brought on prematurely. That night S. M. remarked what a proof this was of M.'s actual departure, and added, "Everything that D. dreamed really happened. (Does she know that?) No, she doesn't suspect it. What she got back from S. D. about those things she has forgotten. But it was a terrible night! I woke her three times. (How did you do it?) By exerting myself. (But how?) I don't know, it is hard to explain. I shook her from inside. (Were you here during those four hours when she was hurrying about?) No, I was not in her. But I watched her part of the time. (Watched her but was not in her?) Yes, I would have come had she needed me."

Note that R. D. is here continuously now. Her psychical existence is uninterrupted, and her consciousness is unclouded and undisturbed. S. M.'s comings are not alternations, not the coming uppermost of another personality, whatever else they may be. The occasional periods when the waking D. does not have the "lost feeling" coincide with the periods when S. M. says that she is present. Sometimes S. M., sometimes D., makes the announcement first. When S. M. is speaking at night, I can observe evidences that D. is present, asleep. On April 26th, S. M. advised that I administer wintergreen. I brought it, talked with S. M. for awhile, then softly called, "Doris." She turned her head as her sleeping attention was caught, and listened, and as I repeated the word woke, and asked "Is it midnight?" She had been asleep only ten minutes, as S. M. well knew. The yawns which cut S. M. off in the midst of a sentence, the turning over and away from me, to S. M.'s annoyance, and all sorts



of incidents which one cannot stop to describe, testify that R. D. is conscious and exercising her own will, though asleep, at the moment when S. M. is conversing. S. M. is superadded to R. D., just as in the days of M.'s sleeping she was superadded to M., their manifestations intermingling,—not only appearing in turn, but often actually blending, interfering with each other.

*May 30.* Just after she fell asleep she felt my lips with her fingers. I smiled and she chuckled and kicked out her feet. Several times these little kicks have occurred when, after she fell asleep, I laid my hand on her head. Never, before the middle of last month did R. D., asleep or awake, feel of my lips as if to determine my expression or kick out her feet; these acts, however, were highly characteristic of M. It is quite evident, then, that though M. has ceased to alternate, she has a vestigial existence subliminally, whether with remains of self-consciousness or not it is impossible to say. Even when D. is awake, especially when nervous or excited, there is a peculiar note in her laugh, or a shaping of the features, or some other trait momentarily appearing, which is strongly reminiscent of M.

*June 9.* No change. S. M. comes every evening after D. has fallen asleep and talks a few minutes. Twice she has asked me to read her a letter that I wrote or received. Yesterday I went to see a piece of land, with view of buying it. In the evening S. M. asked me to tell her what was done and my views as to purchase, although all this had been fully talked over in D.'s presence. "I know only a part, from D.'s point of view. (And what is D.'s point of view?) Never mind that. Tell me about it." Again she said, "I was the last to love you, but even *I* love you now. Don't you regard *that* as a compliment? (Why do you love me?) Because you are so good to D." S. M. shows no change in mentality, except the fading of certain old memories, as already stated and explained.

*June 18.* I remarked to S. M.—though the subject is seldom mentioned—" (I am getting very doubtful about that proof ever coming.) " She laughed and said, "I think I like you all the better for that. But it makes no difference; it



will come." She said that when she used to say that it would come just before or just after M.'s departure she did not know that she would herself come back after M. went. "I am still coming, am I not? And there is time enough." She asserts that she could go away at any time and not return. "But you want me to come, don't you?"

*June 22.* Several days ago D. had stomach trouble come, probably from eating interdicted cheese, and it continued two or three days, and affected her sleep and nervous condition. On Saturday she hurried to get a sewing job done before Sunday, and, unknown to me, became absorbed in it somewhat in the old fashion of S. D., and with a mental reaction also somewhat similar, that is she became irritable and snappish—which is most rare for her. Afterwards she realized that she had done unwisely to allow herself to drift into that eddy of absorption in sewing, and spontaneously promised never to do so again. That night, as she fell asleep, her fingers clutched in the old fashion, but only several times. S. M. discussed the incident, saying that D. did the worst thing she could have done, bringing back the old S. D. feelings associated with abnormal fits of sewing. "I was alarmed", added S. M., who further asserted that she was with D. during the whole period when she was not well. [682] There were dream reactions: (1) From the illness: she dreamed that her father scolded and struck at her. (2) From the sewing-spasm: she dreamed that Phase A ran

---

682. The superficial appearance in this and similar isolated instances was that S. M.'s presence was the automatic result of D.'s state of health and feeling. But (1) Her own steady declaration was that she came and went voluntarily, and that she was nearly always present when D. was ill or worried, etc., because at such times D. needed her. (2) Very often during periods of best health and highest enjoyment S. M. was nevertheless present, according not only to her own declaration but also according to the testimony of the feelings of D., of which the latter knew not the meaning. (3) Sometimes S. M. "went away" for brief periods when D. was far from being at her best pitch of health or spirits. (4) Often S. M. went or returned according to her own previous announcement. (5) In a number of cases she went at a time previously indicated by me, for experimental purposes. (6) Once she went away and was gone for several days on account of becoming individually offended with me, during which time neither R. D. nor M. ex-



away and wandered about a long time in Pittsburgh, and that she, R. D., was worried, fearing that I would be alarmed at her absence.

S. M. has warned me to forbid D.'s riding her bicycle on the business streets, saying it is not safe.

*June 23.* S. M. claims to have spoken to me this afternoon, [683] while I was in my study in the front part of the house and D. was in the henyard back of it, about 80 feet away, and that I turned my head. She said, "I guess it did not get to your consciousness. . . I don't know how to regulate the voice." I certainly was not conscious of hearing anything out of common. S. M. went on, "You were writing today when I spoke to you. (What did you say?) That I was going away. . . Will you be in your study between 4 and 5 o'clock tomorrow afternoon? (Yes.) I will try it again, and see if I can make you hear. Then I am going away for about two days,—shall not be back at all for that time. I have some work to do."

*June 24.* At 4.30 p. m. D. started on a ride to see the place which I have just contracted to buy, and before that was at a neighbor's, talking about poultry. In the evening S. M. spoke and without asking me if I had heard anything told me that she had come to explain her failure. "I tried but did not succeed. You see her being at X.'s, and then going on the ride, interfered." I gathered from her subsequent remarks, though not sure that my understanding is correct, that there is supposed to be some kind of a dependence upon the organism of D. to produce the intended voice, and that she must be in a quiescent state and not too far away. But it was distinctly stated that the voice is not to be produced by D.'s vocal organs, and indeed it would be impossible for me to hear a yell from the back yard, though the doors of my study were open instead of closed, as they were yesterday. The interesting point is that S. M. had a plan which D. un-

---

perienced any kindred feeling, though there were other curious psychological effects. This case has been set down in detail, beginning with page 1091, and the allegations under the first five headings are amply illustrated in the daily record.

683. See fuller account in Chapter XII, page 1325.



wittingly defeated by counter-arrangements. It might be said that if S. M. could inspire D. somehow to make the counter-arrangements these would furnish a handy excuse for the failure, but it would have been easier for S. M. not to have announced the plan at all. She says she will try again.

*June 25.* No S. M. present tonight. As soon as D. fell asleep her hands dropped like lead, and she lay inert.

*June 26.* S. M. spoke as soon as D. was asleep, and said that she had been gone since night before last. As has often happened before, she said after three or four minutes of conversation, "I guess you had better go now. She appears a little uneasy."

*July 4.* This morning D. was awakened by the noises on the street, celebrating the day. I went in and said, "Now go to sleep", and simply stroked her brow twice, and she was asleep. Her slumber continued excellent for an hour and a half.

This evening S. M. announced that she would try to make me hear on Sunday evening, while I am in my study and D. is asleep two rooms distant. To my queries whether I should be waiting expectant, or might be reading or dozing, she answered that it would make no difference.

*July 6. Monday.* I waited last night in my study, but heard nothing. Tonight S. M. asked me if I heard, and when I responded in the negative she said that she tried to make me hear. "I think I will have to do as I did before, speak when you are asleep some time when you are not expecting it. (Do you see me when you are trying to make me hear?) Not then, no."

Usually my conversation with S. M. is of the most commonplace character, about D., current matters, our plans, etc.

*July 18.* Some time during last night, I should say about 3 a. m., I was dreaming about S. M. This was unusual, and yet not strange, as Mrs. P. and I happened to talk about her just before going to sleep. However, nothing was said about S. M.'s promise to give evidence of any sort, and I had no expectation nor thought of anything out of common occurring. I dreamed that D. was lying asleep, and that S. M. opened her eyes and raised herself so as to lean on her elbow, and so



remained, looking at me. I was just asking her if this would not be bad for D., when the word "WALTER" suddenly broke upon my ear. As in the former instance, it did not fit in with or attach itself to the dream; it did not, for example, seem to issue from the lips of S. M. That is, it acted contrary to the general rule when a voice or noise is heard by a dreamer. It was an irruption into the current of the dream, and recognized to be such in the first instant. The voice was not so ringingly loud and clear as the voice heard on the former occasion, when it sounded as though spoken into my very ear, nevertheless it was just as unmistakable, in its distinct articulation. It sounded as though about four feet away, to the right of and a little above me. These latter impressions have little value. The instant that the voice sounded, the dream was shattered, and I awoke. So far as one's impressions under such circumstances are worth anything I was wide awake in a fraction of a second. That is, the reception of the powerful impression of hearing my name, "Walter", and my waking, seemed as nearly simultaneous as two consecutive events could be. Mrs. P. was asleep; I woke her and said, "I heard the voice again", I will add that as I was dozing off later I had the impression of hearing a voice again—sufficiently so that I roused and lay awake for some minutes. It seemed farther away, that is was much fainter, and there was such a contrast between the thrillingly-distinct utterance which first woke me and the echo-like quality of the second, if there was a second, that I cannot be sure that the later experience was not an after-effect of the former.

Now let us canvass the theories which might be proposed by an outsider.

1. *Mrs. P. was fooling me.* But

(a) Mrs. P. is not that kind of a woman.

(b) The voice came from the direction opposite to that where Mrs. P. lay.

(c) Mrs. P. did not know that within two weeks S. M. had announced her intention of trying to make me hear while asleep. It had not been mentioned to a soul, and Mrs. P. could not have seen the record.



2. *Mrs. P. spoke my name in her sleep.*

(a) I have never heard her talk in her sleep a half dozen times in 29 years.

(b) The last time that she has been known to talk in her sleep was years ago.

(c) The three or four times that I have known her to talk in her sleep she merely mumbled indistinctly—hardly a word could be caught. But the word last night was uttered in startlingly audible and distinct tones.

(d) The voice seemed to come from the other side.

3. *The word was uttered by the lips of the girl in her room, and I heard it where I lay.*

(a) I slept under a canvas roof in the open air, back of a densely leaved weeping-mulberry tree, some 40 feet from the windows of D.'s room. My hearing is imperfect, and I could not have heard her from her room unless she had screamed.

(b) If she had called out loudly, it is incredible that it would not have awakened Mrs. P., who hears better, is a lighter sleeper than I am, and much more curious about night sounds. Twice the same night Mrs. P. wakened me by rising upon her elbow to listen to sounds in the street which I could not hear at all. I wake easily when my body vibrates, as when Mrs. P. sits up to listen, but sleep through most noises, even that of a thunder-storm. Yet I heard this voice very distinctly, and was instantly wide awake, while she heard nothing, and did not wake until I roused her.

(c) The voice appeared to come from the direction opposite to the house.

4. *The girl, in normal or abnormal state, actually came to my side and uttered the word.*

(a) Passing over the answers to this based upon the character of D. and her ignorance of S. M.'s utterance on the one hand, and the limitations which exist in S. M.'s control over the body, I reply first that we have the insuperable difficulty that any sound loud enough to awake me would certainly have awakened Mrs. P.



(b) I woke instantly, and swept my eye around. The light was sufficient to see clearly around the bed, and no one was in sight.

(c) I woke Mrs. P. and told her what I had heard before anyone could have regained the house. Her hearing is acute, but she heard no sound.

Theory 1 would require in Mrs. P., in order to make it likely, the knowledge of certain facts which was not hers, and to make it possible, a nature which she does not possess.

Theory 2 is contradicted by the experiences of 29 years, and by the position which Mrs. P. occupied.

Theory 3 and theory 4 are contrary to the external facts, as related to myself and Mrs. P., and also to the internal facts, that is, the nature, powers, knowledge, etc., of D. and S. M. D. is incapable of deceit or practical joking, and would not know the relevancy of such a trick even if she were capable of performing it. S. M. has never raised the body of D. from the bed, and if she could rise, would have had to navigate it with eyes shut down steps and among obstructions.

Afterwards S. M. told me that she was not responsible for the voice this time, and was ignorant of the source of it. "But," she said, "I can't tell what somebody else may have done."

(*Written August 27.*) The weeks have gone by with little novel in them. Only once or twice has S. M. been away, since the last record, more than 24 hours at a time. Then, according to her own testimony, she went to renew her efforts to give me "the proof."

About the first of August we removed to a small ranch which I have bought, just within the city limits but nearly two miles away. Here D. is to develop her chicken business. Having studied in books, taken a correspondence course of the University of California, etc., and practised successfully with a small flock during the last two years, she faces the undertaking with cheerful confidence. Occasion-



ally she visits poultry-ranches in this and surrounding towns. She takes full charge of making the plans and is full of enthusiasm.

S. M. also takes an interest in the plans, but evidently mostly because she is interested in D., the person who makes them. Some things S. M. seems to be interested in of her own individuality, but not this. In fact she expresses disgust on account of some details of the care of poultry, particularly of sick fowls, and once remarked that *she* could not do it, while R. D. has never manifested any distaste for these tasks.

Usually D. retires from 8.30 to 9 p. m., reads awhile and then goes to sleep. I still come in on the pretext of bidding her goodnight, in order to talk to S. M. R. D. goes to sleep within one or two minutes afterwards. Her head still waggles just as she falls asleep, and, except for the few nights when S. M. is away, the voice of the latter is heard. We seldom talk more than five minutes, and she seldom shows a disposition to talk about any but ordinary matters. She manifests no desire to rouse wonder or curiosity, and never has. If I say that I guess she is a personality, she will answer in a joking way, "Maybe I am", but if I ask her seriously whether she doesn't know that she is, she answers steadfastly, "I am not." She says that she usually stays about an hour after I have left, sometimes later, but seldom past midnight. If R. D. is sick, S. M. is usually on hand, but not always throughout the physical depression. Sometimes S. M. comes in the daytime when there is no illness, and when R. D. is in excellent spirits. There is every appearance, therefore, of the truth of S. M.'s statement, that she comes voluntarily, that while she usually comes when R. D. is in trouble of any sort, it is because she is then needed, but that she also comes when she is not needed, simply because she wants to. There is a striking absence of that appearance of being a reaction-equivalent, which was so noticeable in S. D. and M.

Dr. Hyslop is anxious that I shall take D. to New York, in order to try psychical research experiments with her for the sitter. The idea of the trip is pleasing to her, though I do not think that she takes any particular interest in the



proposed experiments. But since it is not possible to leave Mrs. P. to take care of the chickens, etc., alone, I was obliged to write Dr. H. and explain that I feared it would be impossible. S. M. was much more interested in the project than D., and some evenings after I wrote suddenly remarked, "I have a scheme." It was that D. should go alone to New York. "She would be perfectly safe—she is not a baby, she can take care of herself, there is only one change of cars—Chicago—besides, am I not with her? (Can you take care of her?) Haven't I done so in the past?" She urged the plan, and ended, "You think it over." The next night we talked over the matter and I told S. M. that I thought it practicable. The day following this, after dinner, R. D. came to me and said, "Papa, why couldn't I go to New York by myself? You could take care of the hens. (Do you think that you could go safely?) Why certainly I could. I will only have to change cars at Chicago, and I can take care of myself." I told her that I was inclined to think the plan a good one, and asked "(When did it occur to you?) Today. It came to me how silly it would be to spoil the experiments just because you can't go." That evening S. M. said that she had attempted several times since she first mentioned the plan to bring it to D.'s mind. (Did you bring the details, such as that there will be but one change of cars, to her mind?) No, but those are what would naturally suggest themselves." On inquiry I learned that S. M.'s last effort to make the plan of going alone emerge in D.'s mind was made the evening before, not later than midnight. So it took more than ten hours for it to finally emerge. I wrote the following day to Dr. H., and told him the plan, with certain conditions regarding her care after arrival.

On the night of August 25th, a little after midnight, D. was awakened by a voice calling, "Doris! Doris!" [684]

---

684. More than two years before this she had adopted a new name, and Doris had been made her middle name. For nearly two years she had been addressed as Doris by no one. She has become thoroughly accustomed to her new name. But S. M. has never learned to call her by that name, and to the date of this writing uses the old one, while I steadily use the other, in our conversations.



She wondered if it was I calling her and asked "Did you speak, papa?" but got no reply. She found the covers entirely off from the bed, and as it was a very chilly night she was cold. The next evening S. M. said, "I had to call her. She was getting so cold. (Why didn't you lean over and pick the clothes up?) How could I? (You can write and do other things without her waking.) Yes, things like that. But if I made her body make such a movement as bending out of the bed to the floor, she would be frightened. She might think that someone had come in and was pulling her out of bed. I couldn't do that."

Also, on the evening of August 24th, I said to S. M. that previously to D.'s going to New York she, S. M., ought to make some statement about herself, otherwise, should the experiments with the psychic, Mrs. Chenoweth, develop anything about her, and should her own after-statements coincide, people would say that she borrowed them from the Chenoweth records. S. M. at once said, "Tomorrow evening bring some paper and a pencil, and I will write something." On the evening of August 25th, therefore, S. M. wrote the following in the darkness, while D.'s body was fully recumbent.

"I am a spirit, so-called by people who live on the earth. I do not know whether I have a name or not. I only know that I was sent by someone higher to guard Doris when she was three years old.

"There are lots of guards like me but they do not stay with the people they guard. I never knew one that did.

"I was trying to prove who I was by trying to get your father to write through the planchette board but failed to get it done.

Sleeping Margaret."

When finished, S. M. said, "There, you may believe as much of that as you like, and you may question me about it if you want to." But D. had retired late, so I told S. M. that I would not talk much about the statement tonight. She



replied dryly, yet without pique, "All right. You needn't talk about it at all, so far as I am concerned. It is only my say-so anyway, without the proof." I did, however, ask her if she meant that she had formerly lived in a body on the earth. She replied, "Not so far as I know. (How far back can you remember?) I know nothing about years. (A long time, or not?) It seems long to me. But it seems long since I came to D., too."

*Sept. 13.* I record a dream solely because it furnishes a contrast, in several particulars, to the experiences already given. I seemed to be on an unknown road, carrying certain articles, when I heard a voice faintly in the distance, and wondered if I was being called. Then the voice sounded nearer, "Here! here! here! heyah!", as nearly as I can represent it, the "here's" being very rapidly uttered, and ending with, "Don't you hear me?" I woke instantly, but not fully and widely, as on the former occasions, and in a drowsy state said to myself, "It sounded like father's voice." Waking more fully I put away this impression as an illusion, and after a little time went to sleep again. Now note the contrasts with the former experiences:

(1) The voice was not startlingly and convincingly clear and actual, though distinct and unusually impressive as being part of a dream. (2) It was a part of the dream, coherent with the rest of it, and not interjected into it as a foreign and distracting element. Though I woke at once, it was not with every sense alert in an instant, searching in my surroundings for the cause of the impression.

Towards the end of September, D. had toothache, which troubled her at first by spells, and then continuously. We saw a dentist twice, and he made a careful examination, and decided that there was an ulcer forming in one of the gums. He said that she would have to wait until it came to a head, when he would lance it. He also warned her that it would become very painful. It certainly looked as though he were right, for a red spot on the gum is the usual indication. She naturally dreaded the prospect, and I found that S. M. was concerned for her sake, that evening. The next forenoon the aching had mysteriously disappeared, and never returned,



and the appearance of a forming ulcer also disappeared. D. reported that the tooth had ceased to ache, and that day and several times thereafter spoke of it with great relief and some wonder. But the evening of the day of the disappearance S. M. said to me, "You know her toothache went today. I did that. (How did you do it?) I don't know that I can tell how, exactly. (But tell something about it.) Well, I did it by willing it and by touching the tooth. (You touched it? How?) Through her fingers." It certainly would have been more convincing if S. M. had proclaimed her intention beforehand, as we all know the capricious nature of toothache, but will somebody tell me what became of that ulcer? D. returned to have the tooth filled, and the dentist's expression of surprise at the unexpected condition of things was more eloquent than his words.

D. will start the last of this month for New York, Dr. H. having approved of the plan suggested. She determined to go on the 26th, Monday, wrote that she would do so, and for two weeks no other date was suggested. But S. M. began to discuss with me the advisability, on certain grounds, of her starting on Saturday instead of Monday, and ended by convincing me that her judgment was correct. S. M. urged me to advise D. to that effect. I forgot for several days to do so, and R. D. continued to make her plans to go on Monday. Finally, last evening, I suggested to D. that she had perhaps better start on Saturday. Her looks were proof that she had never thought of the consideration which made Saturday a preferable date, and asked me why. After I had explained she agreed that it would be better to change the day, but was certainly not impressed with the reasons to the extent that S. M. and I were.

*Oct. 24.* D. started for New York this morning. She and I had to spend the night away from the ranch house, in order to lose no time in taking an automobile to the station in Colton, where she was to take the 5.15 a. m. train. She slept in one house and I in another nearly opposite. Both were to rise at 4, and her host arranged with the telephone central to ring at that hour. I overslept, and was awakened by D. at 4.15. She said that she was wakened by hearing a



voice saying, "Doris! Doris! wake!", woke, and immediately afterwards the 'phone rang. Of course it was S. M. who called her, as she afterwards stated to Dr. Hyslop.

All that is necessary to say respecting the three months of D.'s absence is to be found in a supplementary volume, edited by Dr. Hyslop.

D. returned from the East on the evening of January 15, 1915, in splendid spirits, and seemingly unwearied by her journey. No reaction followed, and she continued to seem in even better health and more exuberant spirits than when she went away.

S. M. resumed conversations with me, beginning on the night of the return. She is unchanged. Her views regarding herself, expressed before the journey, have unaltered, and she jokes about her being D.'s "Subliminal", without, however, any appearance of irritation at the imputation. I am neutral.

Several mornings after the return, as I endeavored to wake D., according to her own previous request, S. M. spoke to me, advising that D. be allowed to sleep longer, since a noise had disturbed her in the night. S. M. said that she herself had come, not because she had to, but because she wanted to.

S. M. was relating how, one night when Dr. H. was conversing with her, D. sat up in bed and braided her hair. In telling this S. M. made an illustrative gesture, raising the head slightly, and putting a hand to the hair. Then the hands began putting the combs deeper into the hair, and S. M. said, "There! *she* is doing that. She thinks that she wanted to fix her hair." This is something after the fashion that M. used to continue a movement begun by S. M., before the anæsthesia became too profound.

*Feb. 8, 1915.* Never since D. came home has she found it necessary for me to go out and say goodnight to her, nor has she suggested it. But I learn that she goes to sleep the instant that her head touches the pillow. As she now knows about S. M. it is no secret that I go in after she is asleep for a short talk with that enigmatic personage. Her sleep is profound, and it was never so hard waking her, perhaps be-



cause she is making up for the fatigue of the early rising and many journeys which were necessary when she was gone. After she has been abed for 9 or 10 hours, I may conscientiously try to follow her instructions, and waken her at 6.30. She may, after repeated calls, show signs of rousing, but then she turns over, burrows her head in the pillows, and with a waggle of the head is soundly asleep again, and so I leave her.

S. M. was here in the daytime considerably after the return, but by this date this has mostly ceased. And there surely did not seem to be any change in D.'s health or spirits to cause a different subliminal reaction. Usually S. M. comes at about the time D. is to go to sleep, now, though sometimes earlier, and according to her she goes about an hour later, according to the former practice.



## CHAPTER XII.

### RECORD OF AUTOMATIC WRITING.

#### FIRST AUTOMATIC WRITING BY MARGARET.

In the evening of July 13, 1911, M. was reading, being at the time in a half reclining attitude. Knowing how absorbed she often gets, and desiring to test in such a condition how far her consciousness would ignore sensory stimuli, I put a pencil into her hand. Her fingers closed around it, but she was apparently unconscious that she was holding it. A blank book was placed upon her lap, and still her eyes intently followed the lines of the page that she was reading. I lifted her hand and lowered it upon the book; she did not look up or evince any knowledge of what had been done. I had no expectation of what was to follow. The pencil began to write. It wrote: "Doris Doris Doris Fischer."

Here M. stirred uneasily, and I withdrew the book. She discovered the pencil in her hand, threw it down, and whimpered in childish fashion, as though something had disturbed her, she knew not what. Soon after she went to sleep, I put the pencil in her hand, and placed it upon the book, and the pencil wrote: "Mama need not worry about Doris."

I questioned S. M. and she professed not to know that anything had been written, and said that M. had not been thinking. She also remarked that the "mama" must refer to Mrs. Fischer, as M. never calls Mrs. P. by this title. [685] The pencil, in the meantime, had begun to move on, and wrote:

"I will not worry about you Doris is safe with Dr. Prince Mr. Fischer will not dare to hurt her."

I questioned S. M. again, and again she emphatically asserted that she had not even been conscious that writing was going on.

---

685. S. M. seemed to have no thought but that the writing proceeded from M., although saying that M. had not been thinking. Still, she may have thought more than she was at that time willing to admit.



"She did not think anything. She did not move her wrist, did she? And it did not seem to be up against anything." S. M. seemed genuinely puzzled to account for M.'s ability to write when in a condition which did not enable her [S. M.] to detect any thoughts. As soon as the sentence was written the pencil fell. Presently M. woke. The book was not before her and she appeared to be ignorant that anything had happened during her nap. When M. went to sleep again, I replaced the pencil and book, and S. M. was now alive to what I was doing, though when the writing recommenced she said that she could not detect it because M. was not thinking, and the motion of the fingers and wrist was too slight. She remarked that when M. wrote out the romance of her birth while asleep she was thinking what she wrote, "but now she is not thinking." While S. M. was saying this the writing went on without interruption.

"Be careful of Doris when she is better for there is some of her people who are planning to hurt her." [686]

S. M. remarked that she guessed it must be some nonsense, "like that romance." I now read her all that had been thus far written. "O nonsense!", she exclaimed, "none of her people would dare. They might annoy her, but they wouldn't dare to hurt her." M. fell asleep again, and the pencil and book were replaced. There now came: "We are going away soon. We want to go home."

S. M. said, "She will be awfully mad if she finds out what she has been doing when she wakes." The pencil resumed: "We are going away soon. We want to go home."

In talking with me half an hour before she went to sleep M.

---

686. It is very likely that this statement was true; it was certainly true in March. The father, revengeful because D. had left him, threatened that he would strike her down if he met her in the street, and also roused one of his daughters and her family to send me veiled threats which involved myself, Mrs. P. and D., intimating that an unnamed complaint was to be laid before the Bishop of the diocese. They were promptly invited to see the Bishop without delay, but never did so. Another daughter opposed this malicious folly, but whether the design, whatever it was, was finally abandoned before July it is impossible to say. But neither R. D. nor any of the personalities had been told a word about these threats, or ever were, except that they were intimated to S. M. long afterwards.



had said that she was beginning to go away, and that she wanted to visit her old home before she went: The pencil having fallen was replaced and it wrote. "She isn't dead."

Hereupon the following conversation took place, the questions [here placed in parentheses] being uttered by me, and the answers written by the pencil in the hand of M.

(Who?) Mama  
(Who is writing?) Me  
(Who is me?) Me  
(Is it Margaret?) No  
(Is it Sick Doris?) No  
(Is it Real Doris?) Yes  
(Real Doris is writing?) Yes

[S. M. interposed: "The R. D. used to say that a good deal to herself,—'She isn't dead.' But the R. D. couldn't have written that. How could she?"]

The writing went on. "She will not see him." [The *w* in *will* made like *v*]

[Here came over M.'s body the peculiar placidity which announced that S. M. had gone away. Only the writing hand moved. And afterwards S. M. placed the moment of her going at this point.]

(Who will not see whom?) No  
(She will not see him? Who will not?) Emma [687]  
(Whom?) [No reply.]

[When afterwards the above was read to S. M. she commented: "Probably this refers to something away back. I don't know what she means or who is writing. I think it is old thoughts. It's just her hand. If she knew that she was doing that she would be mad."]

While I puzzled over the problem the pencil went on: "Don't let us go over to Prince's today." [Comment by S. M. afterwards, "That sounds like M."]

---

687. The Christian name of D.'s mother.



I remained silent to see if anything more would be written unprompted. Presently the pencil went on:

I dont think she will come tonight  
 (Why won't she come?) Because we want to go home  
 (Who writes this?) me  
 (Who is me?) me  
 (Is it Margaret?) no  
 (Somebody outside of R. D.?) no  
 (Somebody inside of R. D.?) me  
 (A spirit?) no

[No sooner was the last *no* written than somebody or something in the girl was amused, and laughed. S. M. came back suddenly, and said that she had best not go away again for a time. "Something hurt me. Did she laugh? . . . Well, that hurt me." M. soon woke, but as on the signs of her being about to do so the pencil and book had been removed, she evinced neither then nor ever afterwards any particle of knowledge of what had occurred.] [688]

---

688. Assuming for the moment—of course there is nothing evidential contained—that any part of this series of sentences was really from the spirit of D.'s mother, we might analyze and appraise the series as follows: (1) "Doris Doris Doris Fischer" was the subconscious writing by M. of D.'s name. What many people do half-consciously, when abstractedly holding a pencil, M. did quite unconsciously. (2) "Mama need not worry about Doris." Here the mother, finding the subliminal machinery in working condition and at her disposal, slipped through a message. Or perhaps it is not a really intended *message*, but her thoughts of satisfaction because of D.'s new-found safety, which get through. (3) The same may be said of "I will not worry about you. Doris is safe with Dr. Prince. Mr. Fischer will not dare to hurt her". (4) If up to this point it is only the mother's passionate *thoughts* which are transmitted, now there is the appearance, at least, of a conscious attempt to give me a message of utility. "Be careful of Doris when she is better for there are some of her people who are planning to hurt her." If so, either the mother has now said all she wishes, or her power to maintain her hold of the to her novel conditions of communication is exhausted. (5) "We are going away soon. We want to go home." These are plainly subliminal reflections of M.'s conscious thoughts earlier in the evening. (6) Many evidences are to be found in the daily record that the fissure between the primary personality, R. D., and the secondary personality,



## AUTOMATIC WRITING BY MRS. MONTAGUE.

No after experiment at all resembling what has been related was tried with M. for more than a year, when the automatic writing was recalled to my mind by a somewhat peculiar experience in another house. About the middle of September, 1912, Mrs. P. and I called on a lady whom I will call Mrs. Montague. We had known this lady casually from the time that we settled in the Western city about three and a half months before, but had had but little conversation with her hitherto, and this was our first call. I noticed a planchette on the table, and asked her if she had been experimenting with it. She said that she and others had several times amused themselves with it, but that all they ever had gotten was "yes", "no" and once "Bill." Let me here say that Mrs. M. did not know that we were going to call on her, and that my noticing the planchette in the room and my subsequent proposal were not suggested by word or look on her part. Laughingly I said, "Suppose we try our luck." She assented and we each placed a hand upon it. Almost immediately the instrument began to move, though Mrs. M. did not seem to notice it at first, as she kept up a conversation with Mrs. P., not appearing

---

M., to limit the observation to them, extended down into subliminal strata. The sentence "She isn't dead" is one belonging to the experience of R. D. and not M., according to the testimony of S. M., and the statement of that subliminal which wrote it, in answer to my question, was that she was R. D. (7) What "she will not see him" means, though farther on "she" is said to be the mother, or who or what wrote either that or the word "Emma", I will not attempt even to guess. (8) *But*, "Don't let us go over to Prince's today", is evidently from M., dreaming, as it were, of those days when she used to urge S. D. not to go over to the house belonging then, not to "papo", but to Dr. Prince. (9) "I don't think she will come tonight", and "Because we want to go home", probably represent memories of M. of the early days of adoption, when M. and S. D. used to have longings for, together with fears of, the old home, which, while they continued, constituted an emotional condition unfavorable to the emergence of the primary personality.

If on grounds afterward found, it should be assumed that the apparently spiritistic sentences are really such, the series, short and of slight importance in other respects as it is, illustrates with singular clearness the doctrine that the subliminal mechanism is the vehicle by which extraneous intelligences communicate, and that to such extent as the extraneous intelligences fail to utilize it, the subliminal machinery grinds out its own material.



to be interested in the experiment more than to desire to oblige. Not until the first writing was almost finished did she glance at the board. For myself, I had never seen writing done by a planchette, and had no expectation that any would be produced in this instance, unless through the conscious efforts of one of us. But this is what was written. "W M Prince your father W M Prince." These were the correct initials of my father, who died some years ago. How did they come to be correctly given?

(1) Mrs. Montague could never have heard of my father apart from information received directly or indirectly from a member of my immediate family. He lived and died in private life some 3,500 miles distant from San Bernardino. It would be an absurd supposition that she wrote to ascertain his initials, even had she known the obscure spot of my origin, for she could not know that I was to call and pry out the planchette unless she had prophetic powers fully as occult as the theory that we are now endeavoring to avoid if possible.

(2) My wife and I had certainly never mentioned my father to Mrs. Montague. Our conversations with her had hitherto been brief and casual. Doris had not yet spoken to her at all, had not even met her.

(3) During the three months and a half that we had been in this place I am satisfied that I had never mentioned my father to anyone, much less his initials. I interrogated myself on the day that the writing appeared, and was satisfied with this conclusion. Mrs. P. was sure that she had never done so, and I do not think that it would occur to my adopted daughter to speak of him, much less to give his name. Even had it been done, how many people would remember such information casually given about a stranger in whom they had no reason to feel an interest, and especially how likely was anyone to carry to another uninterested person the information that my father's name was W. M. Prince? And why should this useless bit of data make any impression upon the mind of the person to whom it was, by the complicated hypothesis, carried? But I return to the first point in this paragraph. I do not believe that, aside from relating the incident of the planchette writing to several persons, in confidence, I have named my father outside of my family in the two years that have since elapsed.



(4) But unless Mrs. Montague learned my father's name by one of the means suggested above, the phenomenon of its appearance is explainable only on the hypotheses of telepathy or spirit communication. I will only remark that if telepathy, whatever that is as a process, filched the name from my mind it did not get it from my conscious thought, for I immediately interrogated my memory, when I saw the name written, and knew that I had not been consciously thinking of him.

Several questions were asked by me, and answered yes or no, but the record of these has been lost or mislaid. [689] But the name W. M. Prince was written four times more, the initials W. M. P. once, and the uncompleted sentence (if it be correctly deciphered) "My name is " was written, besides several isolated W.'s. Nothing else appeared, save scrawls.

A few days after the foregoing [690] I called at the house of Mrs. Montague to try another experiment with the planchette, [691] and kept an exact record, which is here given in full.

Present, Mrs. M., W. F. P.; both with hands on the board.

(Is anyone here?) Yes.

(What is the name?) W M Prince

(Was that second message the other day? My name is W. M. Prince?) Yes.

---

689. The original is retained.

690. The date was not set down. I had no expectation at that time of making any scientific study of such matters.

691. The contempt which many psychologists feel for this instrument is deserving of a deeper contempt, if that were a politic mode of dealing with it. Regarded simply as a convenient means of tapping the subconscious mind, it is as dignified in itself as any of the forms of apparatus employed in the psychological laboratory, and only prejudice has hindered its employment. Did I feel the need of any authority but that of common-sense to vindicate the use of it for the purposes of experiment, I would find it in this utterance of Professor William James. "It [automatic writing] is unquestionably a field from which a rich harvest of instruction may be hoped. \* \* \* I regret that the appeal to experiment with the planchette, which was made at the public meeting in the spring of 1887, was followed by insignificant results. Planchettes may be obtained at the toy-shops, or (at cost) by writing to the Secretary of the Society; and, possibly, the remainder of this paper may lead to a little wider trial amongst associates and members." (Prof. James in *Proceedings of the Am. Soc. for Psychical Research*, Vol. I, No. 4, page 548.)



(Is there anyone of our family on the other side?) Yes.

(Is it difficult under these new conditions to give names?)

No.

(I would be glad if the name of that other one could be given.)

W M Prince

[Change of control.]

Elizabeth [Mrs. Montague. "That was my mother's name."]

(Is Elizabeth here?) Yes.

(What relation to Mrs. Montague?) Mother.

(What message have you for your daughter?) My return.

(Do you mean that this is your return to your daughter?)

Yes.

(Have you been on that side long?) Yes.

(Can you see us as you write?) No.

(Does it weary you writing?) No. (Does it require effort which wearies after a while?) No.

(Can you think clearly as you write?) Yes.

(Is my father there now?) Yes.

(Will father answer a question?) Yes.

[I had expected that the next answer would be from the purported spirit of my father. But the same communicator went on.]

(Can you tell who the last person you saw on earth was?)

Yes.

(Who was it?) Nurse Roscoe [First word read "Miss", second unread.]

(Is it my father writing?) No.

(Is it Elizabeth?) Yes.

(Name again?) Roscoe

[Mrs. M. "Roscoe's mother was with her when she died."]

(Is the word Mrs.?) No.

(Was Miss Roscoe there when you passed out?) No.

(Mrs. M. "Is it Roscoe Kahn?) Yes.

[Mrs. M. "That is her sister's only child. He wasn't there."]

(Is that "Miss"?) No.

(What is that word?) Nurse.



(Mrs. M. "Does that mean that you saw the nurse and Roscoe's mother?) Yes. [Correct.]

[Here something was written with Mrs. M.'s hand alone on the board.]

(W. F. P. Is that something that we haven't had yet?) Yes. [It could not be read.]

(Can you write with both of our hands on better?) No.

(Rather that Mrs. M. alone should?) Yes.

[Thereafter Mrs. M. alone had her hand on the planchette.]

(Rather that she should ask questions?) No.

(Will my father write after a little?) Yes.

(Do you wish to write longer first?) No.

[Change of control.]

(Will my father now write? Do you remember who the last person you looked at was?) Yes.

(Who was it?) [Not read.]

(First letter?) M

(Second?) i

(Is that Minnie?)

Yes. [Answer incorrect, though the name has a certain remote relevance which it is best not to record at this time.]

(A person in your room when you passed out?) Yes.

(A person on this side?) Yes.

(What relation to you?) None.

(Nurse?) No.

(Did you talk with her toward the last?) Yes.

(Is it my father, W. M. Prince who writes this?) Yes.

(Was your passing out easy?) No. [Correct.]

(Can you tell me how you suffered?) No.

(I would be glad to be convinced that it is my father. I am bothered about that Minnie? Can I get any light on her in any way?) Yes.

(Was she young?) No.

(Are you sure of the name Minnie?) Yes.

(Was she a neighbor?) Yes. [Every answer would be incorrect as applied to the Minnie I had in mind. There was an adjacent neighbor whose name was almost this, but she was not present in the room when he died.]



(Do you remember into whose eyes you were looking at the very last?) No.

(Is there any fact that occurs to you to convince me that this is my father?) Yes.

(State it.) \* \* [Not deciphered.]

[Change of communicator at about this point. *Elizabeth.*]

(Do we impede the writing by not knowing how to put our hands on right?) No.

[Mrs. M. mentally asks, as she afterwards states.] (Is this Elizabeth?) Yes.

(Mrs. M. Do you wish to give a message?) Yes.

(Mrs. M. Is his father here?) No.

(Mrs. M. What is the message?) You must [last word unread.]

(W. F. P. Please repeat, after "You must.")

(Last syllable "lope"?) [After several trials.] Yes.

(Develope?) Yes.

(Will it injure your daughter's health?) No.

(Why did my father go away? Weak?) Yes.

(Is he with you now?) Yes.

(Do you write with the help of another on that side?) Yes.

(Do you call that one anything?) Yes

(Is it getting time to stop?) Yes.

(Is this the way for her to develop?) No.

(Will you tell us hereafter how?) Yes.

(Can we have a sitting next week?) Yes.

(Good-bye, and write your initial.) Goodbye E

As it proved, circumstances prevented my having any more sittings with Mrs. Montague, and these two developed little besides the name of my father which was evidential.

#### SERIES OF SITTINGS WITH MARGARET AS PSYCHIC.

*Sept. 30, 1912.* Unable to pursue experiments with Mrs. Montague, I procured a planchette, which alas! had no wheels, but only round headed tacks driven into the legs, and proceeded to ascertain whether the thing would move for me. Several hours of patient waiting, distributed over a number of evenings, produced not a single wiggle. Once, merely to give an opportunity



for future test—as I believe in giving every hypothesis a fair chance—I barely whispered the words (no one being within possible hearing) “Look up Robert Hyslop to help you”, having in mind the statement of “Elizabeth” that my father was weak, and thinking that Dr. Hyslop’s father, if the matter purporting to come from him, published by the American Society for Psychical Research, is at all genuine, should be a skilled communicator. I mention this because it has a possible relevancy to one part of the developments tonight, after I had determined to try an experiment with M.

I got the clumsy instrument, with which it is almost impossible to make more than a straight line even by consciously pushing it, and told M. that people put their fingers on it, and it sometimes writes of itself. I asked her to try it with me, and she consented, evidently thinking it some kind of a game. At first she pressed her fingers on it so hard as to force the pencil up through the socket, but by degrees I got her accustomed to a light pressure. Here Mrs. P. came and added her hand to those of M. and myself. I then asked, “Is anyone here?” M. exclaimed, “Anyone? I’m here. What do you mean?” I explained, “It’s a way we talk to make the board write.” M. took it all as a great joke, and would say, “Hurry up, there. Get a move on you!” etc. Presently I noticed little jerks, but nothing effectual was produced. I now proposed aloud a code for yes and no, as it seemed hopeless to expect, with so hard-moving an instrument, any writing. *Yes* was to be indicated by an upward line, *no* by a downward one. I did not take down my questions—it would have been very difficult to do this, as my attention had to be given so largely to the control of the irrepressible M. But I remember most of them, and was particularly careful not to give any information respecting the Montague sittings, regarding which neither R. D., M. nor S. M. had heard a word, and also not to indicate by inflection, emphasis or otherwise that any particular answer was expected. As it proved that the board would not write words, questions had to be framed so that they could be answered by yes and no.

(Is anyone here?) Yes.



(Is there difficulty in writing?) Yes.

(Cannot you write with this board?) No.

(Could you if I got a board with wheels?) Yes.

(Will you do so if I get one?) Yes.

(Do you desire to do so?) Yes.

[To ascertain if M. or Mrs. P. was the psychic I had the former remove her hand.]

(Is this combination all right?) [No movement. I now had Mrs. P. remove her hand, and M. put hers on.]

(Is this all right?) Yes.

(Will it work with Mrs. Prince and Margaret?) No.

[At first M. had repeatedly said "The mother is pushing it", which the latter denied doing. Now Mrs. P. said, "I can't be pushing it now; it is one of you", and M. several times accused me of doing so. I certainly was not pushing it consciously, and am equally confident, from careful study of her manner and her hand, that M. was not.]

(Could I develop so as to be able to work the board alone?)

[No movement.]

[Note that no code-sign for any word but *yes* and *no* had yet been adopted.]

(Could Mrs. Prince develop so as to do it? [No movement.]

(Will it hurt M. to do this?) No.

(Can she do it as well as that other one a short time ago?)

No.

(Are you the one who wrote me at that time?) Yes.

(Have you written through that lady since?) Yes.

(Do you remember telling me about the last one you saw?

Are you sure that you were right?) [Brief pause.] Yes.

(Was that person a relative of yours?) No.

(Was the person old?) Yes.

(A neighbor?) Yes. [692]

(Have you seen Robert Hyslop?) Yes.

[M., who had been chattering, asking what I asked such crazy questions for, what they meant, etc., now ejaculated, "Robert! You mean Jim Hyslop, don't you?"]

---

692. Note that the last three answers correspond with those given at the Mrs. M. sitting. See page 1277.



(Do you know about the light in Virginia?) Yes.

(Could you write through her?) Yes.

(Could you write to me, if I sent something you used to have for the light to hold?) No.

(Couldn't you unless I were there?) No.

(Are you weak?) Yes.

[Change of control probably occurred here.]

(Please make a mark when I reach the first letter of your last name.)

[Here I went over the alphabet, fully expecting no mark until P. should be reached, but I recited a little too fast, and could not be sure if E or F was indicated. The sequel implied that it was F.]

(Give the first letter of your first name.)

(E was indicated, and I thought of Elizabeth, of the second Montague sitting.)

(Are you the same one that was writing the first night?) No.

["Ah!", I thought, "it is surely Elizabeth."]

(Are you the other one that wrote not long ago?) No.

(Are you a relative of mine?) No.

(Are you a relative of the other one who was with me a few days ago?) No.

(Are you a relative of the other one whose hand is on the board now?) Yes.

(Give the first letter of your last name.) [E was given by the alphabet method.]

(That is the first letter of your last name?) No.

(Give the first letter of your first name.) E.

(Give the first letter of your last name.) F.

[Doris's mother's name was Emma Fischer.]

(Have you ever written through Margaret before?) Yes.

(This year?) No.

(Last year?) Yes.

(Do you know the month?) Yes.

(January?) No.

(March?) No.

(May?) No.

(July?) Yes.



(What day? Third?) No.

(Sixth?) No.

(Tenth?) [No movement.]

(Thirteenth?) [No movement.]

(Have you forgotten?) Yes. [The date was July 13, 1911.]

(Have you written through her at other times?) No.

(Did you write all that was written at that time?) No.

(Did you write more than one sentence?) No. [693]

(Will not this hurt Margaret?) No.

Nevertheless I stopped here, as her hands were dripping with sweat. She did not seem to realize what the writing was about, and remarked disgustedly that it was "crazy stuff", etc., and was soon asleep. S. M. claimed that while she heard part she did not pay much attention, being engaged most of the time in thinking about R. D.'s plans in regard to her hens. Of course one is at liberty to doubt that, and her statement that she did not notice what initials were given, nor have any idea of who was purporting to communicate. M. made no remark indicating that she knew that her mother was referred to; and I cannot imagine her concealing her recognition of that fact. The writing of July 13th, 1911, had been referred to by me earlier in the evening when S. M. was talking, and I had made a light remark that a sentence in it looked a bit spooky. S. M. professed to have forgotten the earlier writing—it had not been mentioned, probably for a year—and appeared to be as much in the dark as ever regarding its *modus operandi*. But on the other hand the day of the month, the 13th, when that writing had been done, was mentioned by me several times in the evening's conversation, so that if S. M. was caus-

---

693. The appearance was that several sentences originated with her. Yet on entirely independent grounds I had surmised that only one sentence was a conscious and intended message. See note 698. But it will be the conservative course to assume that the answer was based upon the statement made by me to S. M. earlier in the evening. Still, we ought to be fair even to the spiritistic hypothesis, instead of making every possible alternative for accounting for this detail or that conclusive against it, as so many irrationally do. Even a disembodied spirit would be excusable for bolstering up its memories by the statements of others, as embodied spirits so often do, sometimes to their betrayal.



ally related to this evening's work, there seems no reason why the day of the month should not have been given. Unless, indeed, S. M. is playing a *very* deep game. But the answers apparently coming from my father corresponded, so far as they went, with those given at the Mrs. Montague sittings, of which S. M. knew nothing. If M. fished my mind by telepathy, then she did what she never accomplished before save when she watched my eyes or lips, and she did neither tonight, but was absorbed by the "game." And I had not thought of D.'s mother after we took up the planchette until the initials E. F. were recognized. My mind was fully occupied by the expectation that the initials W. M. P. would be given.

*Second Sitting with Margaret, Oct. 1, 1912.*

Present, W. F. P., Mrs. P.

(Is anyone here?) Yes.

(Give initial of first name, when I reach it.) E.

(Give initial of last name.) F.

(Are you glad that I have sent for a proper board?) Yes.

[It had not yet arrived.]

(Do you worry about Doris now?) No.

(For 'I don't know', or 'I can't answer', make a horizontal mark.)

(Have you just gone to the other side?) No.

(Could you state the year if I should name it?) [Pause.] Yes.

(I am going to name the years from 1900.) [At 1906 the board moved.]

(You approve of the present arrangements as regards Doris?) Yes.

(Did she happen to come to us?) No.

(Was it someone on this side that was the means of her coming?) No.

(Was it someone on the other side?) Yes.

(Were you the means?) No.

(Did I understand correctly?) Yes.

(Was it someone I knew of?) Yes.

(Was it someone I personally knew?) Yes.



(Was it the first one who communicated with me?) No. [I meant the first purported communicator at the house of Mrs. Montague, but it must be admitted that I might have been understood to refer to the communicator of the writing of July 13, 1911.]

(Was it one of my personal family?) Yes.

(A female?) No.

(An old person?) I don't know. [R. D. and S. M. knew approximately, at least, the age of my father.]

(Have you met the person?) [Answer not recorded.]

(Can you give the first letter of the first name, if I call the alphabet?) Yes. [W indicated.]

(Is this the W. who first communicated with me at the other light a few days ago?) [No reply.]

(If you mean you don't know, make a horizontal line. [No reply.]

(If you mean you can't explain, the same line.) [Horizontal line made.]

(Do you know who communicated with me at the other light?) No.

(Do you know the first letter of the middle name of that one?) No. [The question might easily have seemed superfluous to the communicator, since it apparently asked for the first letter of the middle name of the person whom she had said was to her unknown. It was carelessly worded, since I meant to refer to the W.]

(Can you spell out that first name?) No.

(Do you know what relation he is to me?) Yes.

(Uncle?) No.

(Brother?) No.

(Grandfather?) No.

(Father?) Yes.

(Do you know Margaret?) No.

(Do you know who is meant by Bridget?) Yes. [694]

(We call her Margaret now. Did you understand who she was when you were on this side?) Yes.

---

694. It will be remembered that the mother had often heard her daughter call herself "Bridget". It was not until the cure of the case began that the



(Do you know in what way D. is different from most girls?)  
No.

(Did you know on this side that she was different?) Yes.

(You mean that you know that she is different, but not in what way?) [No reply.]

(You understand the question?) Yes.

(Are you getting weary?) No.

(You know that she is different?) Yes.

(Do you know anything about Sick Doris?) No.

(Do you think that D. is going to get entirely well?) No.  
[695]

(Has she got better since with us?) Yes.

(Will Margaret go and leave Doris?) No.

(Did anyone ever plan to hurt Doris?) Yes.

(Will you give the first letter of the first name of that person?) [No reply.]

(I mean if I call the alphabet?) Yes.

[The alphabet was called and J was indicated.]

name "Margaret" was adopted by the child personality. Of course the answer does not imply that the mother knew that "Bridget" designated a *personality*. The same is true of the answer to the bungling question, "Did you understand who she was when you were on this side?"

695. This answer was a surprise to me, though I do not know why one should assume that a spirit must infallibly know the future. But the most interesting feature is that it is difficult to see how the answer could have come from the subliminal mind, by "unconscious cerebration", or any other process. It did not represent the opinion of R. D., or M., or S. M., nor did it represent the opinion of myself or Mrs. P. All the talk was to the contrary. The same may be said of the answer to the question, "Will Margaret go and leave Doris". I firmly expected Margaret to go and never intimated the possibility of the contrary, R. D. believed it, S. M. believed it, and M. firmly believed it herself. But the answer is explainable on the theory of its spirit source. On that assumption, it does not appear that at this time or afterward, at the time of the Boston sittings, or in the still later home sittings, the mother grasped the explanation of the phenomena that had puzzled her in the case of her daughter, *i. e.*, the scientific fact of dissociation. So my question may have surprised her as much as the answer surprised me, and not understanding clearly what I meant, but perhaps surmising that I intended to inquire if the girl was going to die, she knew no answer to make but no. The writer is neither here nor in similar situations in these later notes, announcing personal convictions, but simply dealing fairly with the probabilities or even the plausibilities of the argument.



- (Is J. living?) Yes.  
 (Will you know when he passes over?) Yes.  
 (First letter of last name of that person?) F. [696]  
 (Will you be able to tell us when he has gone?) Yes.  
 (Does this hurt Margaret?) No.  
 (Will this hurt Doris in any way?) No.  
 (Can you help Doris?) Yes.  
 (Is W. there?) Yes.  
 (Suppose that W. now writes, and after he is tired you again. Are you willing?) [No response.]  
 (The question can't be answered by yes or no?) No.  
 (Is it better that you should keep on writing now?) Yes.  
 (Will W. write later in the evening?) I don't know. [Indicated by horizontal line.]  
 (Doesn't he wish to?) [Horizontal line.]  
 (Do you know whom I mean by W?) Yes.  
 (Do you know him?) No.  
 (Is he there?) [Long pause.] Yes.  
 (Will you try to find out if he will write later, yes or no?) Yes.  
 (Find out?) [Pause, then horizontal line.]  
 (Meaning 'don't know?') [No movement.]  
 (Meaning can't find out?) Yes.  
 (I like to have you write, but would like to hear from him also. Now we will go on. Are we taking the right course to get Doris well?) [Horizontal line.]  
 (The same one writing as at the beginning of the evening?) Yes.  
 (Is there something you would like to say if we had the proper board?) Yes.  
 (Any other way you could write tonight but this?) [Horizontal line.]  
 (If I put the pencil in Margaret's hand will you try to write?) Yes.  
 [M. yelled, "Is that so?", and refused to take the pencil. M. was induced to put her hand on the board alone, and it falteringly jerked in an apparent effort to write. M. took her

---

696. J. F. were the initials of her father.



hand off, but was persuaded to replace it. The writing grew a little better, but M.'s touch was too light and capricious. Several capital E's can possibly be discerned. Then came what looks like "am." M. cried, "It's movin'! It's movin'. Am I pushin' it?", and took her hand off. The hand being replaced, "Walter" was unmistakably written. I now added my hand to the board.] [697]

(Same one writing as all the evening?) Yes.

(Was it you that wrote with Margaret alone?) No.

(Can that one keep on writing with both of our hands on?)

No.

(Do you know what was written by Margaret's hand alone?)

Yes.

(If the first letter of that last word written by M.'s hand alone was M., answer yes?) [No movement.]

(If W., answer yes.) Yes.

(Ask him to communicate a while.) [No movement.]

(Can't he write?) [Horizontal line.]

[M.'s hand being left on the board alone, writing began. She shrieked excitedly, "Am I movin' it? Am I movin' it? It's movin'." She took her hand away, with an expression of dislike. The writing was undeciphered at the time, conjectured to be "Prince", but proved to be "Lelia", the first name of Mrs. P. Both M. and I put a hand on.]

(Was that written by W.?) Yes.

(Continuation of what he was writing before?) [Answer not recorded.]

(Can you give the first letter written the last time?) No.

(I mean the first letter of the last word he wrote.) Yes.

[The alphabet was called, and L indicated. I had expected P.]

---

697. I ought to have learned by this time to keep my hand off the board when the spirit of my father was purporting to write, as it was evident that this communicator sought occasion to write under her hand alone, whether for the sake of better evidential quality, or for whatever reason. Nor need the amateur quality of some of the questions be pointed out, as this is sufficiently evident. But I was having my hands full keeping the irrepressible Margaret in working condition, and in keeping the record, so that I could give but a fraction of attention to the framing of the questions.



(Could you spell out the rest of the word?) No.

(Sure the first letter was L?) Yes.

(I wish W. would communicate.) [No answer.]

(Is there something you wish to say first?) Yes.

(Is it a short message which could be spelled out?) Yes.

(Shall we do it that way?) Yes.

(Are you ready?) Yes. D-e-a-t-h b-y b-l-o-w n-o-t b-y  
p-n-e-u-m-o-n-i-a.

(End of message?) Yes.

(Will you give your first name by the same way?) E-m-m-a.

[Here we had stopped, and I was clearing away the things, when M., who was playing with the board, called out, "It's movin'." Her hand continuing alone on the board, "Lelia" was plainly written.]

(Is that 'Lelia'?) Yes.

(Same one communicating?) No.

(Can you spell out your name by the same way we have just used?) W-a-l-t-e-r

(Can you spell out your middle name?) [No answer.]

(First letter of it?) [No answer.]

(Are you there?) [No answer.]

[M.'s hand being on, "Lelia" was again written. I added my hand.]

(Do you wish Lelia to put her hand on?) [No answer.]

(Have you a message for her?) Yes.

(Give it by the spelling method?) [No answer.]

(Do you wish to write it by M.'s hand alone?) [No answer.]

(Are you here?) [No answer.]

[M.'s hand was left on the board alone.]

Lelia.

(Try to write the message to Lelia.) [Result undecipherable.]

(Will you spell that out?) Yes.

t-h-e- g-i-r-l

Here M. took her hand off, and as she was evidently very tired, her palms dripping with sweat, I thought it time to stop, and remarked, "We will get the rest of it another time." It is observable that the purported spirit of my father could or would



write words only when M.'s hand alone was on the board, and seemed to seek occasion to do so, when I was busy writing down my questions to "Emma" and her answers. If M.'s hand happened then to rest on the planchette, it would surprise her by "movin'." On the other hand, "Emma" answered only when both of us were touching the instrument, whether from preference, or because then only was the way clear for her, through the failure of "Walter" to utilize the opportunity.

*Sitting of Oct. 2, 1912.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P., present.

[Hands of M. and Mrs. P on board.]

(Is anyone here?) [No answer. My hand was substituted for that of Mrs. P.]

(Is anyone here?) Yes.

(Is it the one who wrote words through M.'s hand last night?) Yes.

(Will you write by M.'s hand alone?) [No reply.]

(Shall we go on this way, Margaret and I?) [The board hitched, and seemed to express hesitation.]

(This girl and I?) Yes.

(Do you know whom I mean by Margaret?) Yes.

(Do you wish to complete the message of last night?) [No answer.]

(Did you not leave one unfinished last night?) [698] No.

(Do you remember the last two words you wrote?) Yes.

(Did it express all you wished to say?) Yes.

(Did you expect me to understand what was meant by those two words?) Yes.

(Will you write them again, by Margaret?) [No answer.]

(Couldn't you answer yes or no?) [No answer.]

(Are you there still?) Yes.

(What girl is meant? Doris?) Yes.

(Isn't there something else to be added?) [No answer.]

---

698. Referring to "the girl" phrase which was persistently put forward by the communicator, until he managed to express his intention (pages 1295-1296). It appears that "the girl" meant was Sleeping Margaret.



(Do you know the girl?) No.

(Do you know about the girl?) Yes.

(Have you known her long?) [Horizontal line.]

(Did you know about her as early as Lelia did?) Yes.

(Earlier?) Yes. [699]

(Did you have anything to do with her meeting Lelia?)

[Horizontal line.]

[Attempts were made to get the horizontal line explained, but with no result.]

(Something you wish to say about the girl?) [No answer.]

(Are you there?) Yes.

(Do you feel weak?) Yes.

(Is there a message which you will spell out?) [No answer.]

(Have you met Robert Hyslop?) Yes. [700]

(Was it long ago?) [Horizontal line.]

(Don't remember?) No.

[Somewhere about here there was a change of control.]

(Did you learn of him through anyone?) [No answer.]

(Anyone here?) [Asked several times.] Yes. [701]

(Is it W?) No.

(Have I been asking a number of questions of the wrong person?) Yes.

(Was it W who answered the first question about Robert Hyslop?) [Horizontal line, probably indicating "I don't know."]

(Is this the other communicator of last night?) No.

(Can you write your first name if I call the alphabet?) Yes.

[Failure.]

(Are our fingers on too hard?) Yes.

[Fault rectified and alphabet called.]

G-r-a-c-e [702]

699. This would agree with the purported Mrs. Fischer (pages 1283-4) so far as it goes. But she said that he was the means of D.'s coming to us, while he does not answer yes or no, and the purport of his answer is indeterminate.

700. See pages 1279-1280.

701. There had been a change of communicator, perhaps at the question, "Was it long ago?"

702. S. M. afterward said that the only Grace known to Doris whom she



(Whole of first name?) Yes.

(Someone I know?) No.

(Someone Lelia knows?) No.

(Someone Doris knows?) Yes.

(Will you give the last name?) [No answer.]

(Are you there?) [No answer.]

[Change of Communicator.]

(Anyone there?) [No answer.]

[M.'s hand on alone. Attempts to get decipherable writing fail. My hand added.]

[Change of Communicator, *Mrs. Fischer.*]

(Is the one who tried to write there?) No.

(Have you written before this evening?) No.

(Did you write last night?) Yes.

(Any particular message—one more than another?) [No answer.]

(Did Doris ever suspect the truth of what you said last night?) No. [703]

---

(S. M.) remembered was one Grace N., whom D. corresponded with a short time after Grace and her mother removed from the city. But she thought that if this Grace had died D. would have heard of it. The next day I casually asked R. D. if she knew anyone named Grace, and she said that she knew several, but none of them intimately. In the forenoon of Oct. 8th, R. D. mentioned that she had a dream the preceding night, that a girl whom she used to go to school with was dead. I inquired with a languid show of interest who the girl was and learned that it was a Lizzie T., about D.'s age, and married. According to the dream, this Lizzie had died, leaving an infant child. I got R. D. to talk about the girl, and presently it came out that she was frequently called Grace, since this was her middle name. I am sure that R. D. did not remember my question of Oct. 3d at the time that she was telling about this Grace. Lizzie Grace T. was a strong and healthy girl, and when I smilingly suggested that perhaps she was really dead, R. D. pooh-poohed the suggestion, both on this account and on account of the absurdity of believing dreams. Up to this date letters of inquiry have not been successful in eliciting the facts.

703. She has not heard what was asserted to the date of this writing, Feb. 27, 1915.



- (Can you give the hour of the day when it happened?) Yes.  
 (In the forenoon?) No.  
 (In the afternoon of the same day you went out?) No.  
 (In the daytime?) Yes.  
 (The day before?) [No answer.]  
 (Did you pass out in the daytime?) No.  
 (Did it happen the day before the night when you passed out?) Yes.  
 (Confusion in answers caused by the fact that the day ends at midnight?) Yes.  
 (In afternoon before passing out?) Yes.  
 (Between 12 and 1 o'clock?) No.  
 (1 and 2?) No.  
 (2 and 3?) No.  
 (3 and 4?) No.  
 (4 and 5?) No.  
 (5 and 6?) Yes.  
 (Anyone but you two present?) No.  
 (On either side?) No.  
 (Chest?) No.  
 (Back?) Yes.  
 (Midway of back?) [No answer.]  
 (You remember where on the back?) [704]  
 (Once only?) [No answer.]  
 (Communicator here?) Yes.

704. S. M. scouted the statement that the mother died from a blow, bringing forward various arguments. (a) No one ever thought of such a thing. (b) Mrs. F. was run down, had got heated and also had got wet. The reason she was run down was partly this. R. D. had told a dream which she had on Sunday night, a week before her mother's death,—a dream of seeing her mother wrapped in a white sheet or blanket,—and this had scared Trixie so that she would not let the mother go to bed, night after night. (c) A doctor diagnosed the disease as pneumonia and said that Mrs. F. would not live an hour. He then left, and Mrs. F. lived until 2 a. m. (d) Trixie would have known. (e) R. D. prepared the body for burial and saw no bruise.

The points made by S. M. are of varying force. That marked *a* is of no value, and *d* has but little force, as the act need not have been done in the room where Trixie was. Also she might have known and not told out of fear of her father. As to *e* I am told that a blow could conceivably have produced an internal injury, such as paralysis of the vasor-motor system, without leaving exterior marks discernible by a layman, or that a fall in conse-



(Anything in relation to that which you will spell out?) No.  
[M.'s hand alone on board. A mark or two resulted. My hand added.]

(Hand on too hard?) No.

(Hand should be on harder?) No.

(Will you try to write?) Yes. [Failure.]

(Is the trouble with the board?) Yes.

(Do you know why W. did not stay longer?) No.

(Have you met Robert Hyslop?) No. [705]

[Attempt to write, indecipherable.] [706]

(Were you able to complete what you wished?) Yes.

(Did you think we would be able to read that?) No.

(Attempting to write anything?) Yes.

(Will you try it again?) No.

---

quence of the blow might have caused the head to strike with fatal force upon the floor, without exterior trace.

I submitted the case, hypothetically described, to the judgment of five physicians, separately, stating all the known facts regarding the condition preceding the seizure by illness, the symptoms, etc., and asked the question, "Could the cause of death have been pneumonia?" Three of the doctors answered unreservedly in the negative, and one said, "Not unless the patient was an alcoholic, when it might possibly have been pneumonia, though even then unlikely". But Mrs. F. loathed the very thought of alcoholic drinks, and never used them. One only of the five physicians thought that the death, taking all the facts into view, might have been from pneumonia, and he did not support his opinion by any data. A second hypothetical question was then asked, "Taking all the circumstances already stated into consideration, could the death have resulted from a heavy blow inflicted upon any portion of the back?" The first four answered in the affirmative, the fourth adding the suggestion that if the person fell and struck her head with violence that would be a more likely cause of the demise. The fifth admitted the possibility of a fatal result from the hypothetical blow within so few hours.

705. It may possibly be significant, in view of what is stated on pages 1280, 1290, that the purported spirit of my father steadily maintained that he had met Robert Hyslop, while Mrs. F. said that she had not met him. See pages 1280, 1290. I am not aware that any of the personalities had ever heard of Robert Hyslop.

706. At this point M., who had been laughing and prattling so that I could hardly write down the questions and answers, got the idea that I was "cross", or at least feared that I was, and the "game" palled upon her. While I was asking the final ineffectual questions she said, "I am a little tired, papo".



[Several more questions were asked without answers.]

*Sitting of Oct. 3, 1912, 8.15 p. m.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P. [707]

(Is anyone here?) Yes.

(One who came last night?) Yes.

(Can you give your name by the alphabet method?) Yes.

(First name?) Yes.

W-a- [At this point, M.'s hand being on the board, it began to write.]

(Was that t-e-r?) No.

("The"?) Yes.

(Is there something to follow that?) Yes.

[M.'s hand alone being on, writing began. I have to keep M. from taking her hand off at every time that the board hesitates.]

T-h-e g-i-r-l-

(Does that mean that Margaret is to write alone?) No.

[M.'s hand on board, it wrote] Doris or Ma [First word only read.]

(First word was 'Doris'?) Yes.

(More than one word followed?) Yes.

---

707. This sitting lasted from about 7.30 to about 11.00 p. m., the communicator being insistent on continuing, and declaring that M. would not be hurt. But one communicator professed to come, and one subject seemed to occupy his attention, "the girl", being "the one who guards", who must be identified with S. M. He distinctly claims that she is a spirit, and that when she "goes away" she returns to the spirit side. In spite of difficulties caused by the defective board and by misunderstanding on my part, progress was made, the writing improved, and the marks for *yes* and *no* became stronger. Much of the time that M.'s hand was alone on the board she was laughing and talking and looking straight at me. She would cry, "It's movin'! It's movin'!" and would often ask, "Am I pushin' it?" I had much difficulty in making her keep her hand on until a message was finished,—she tended to take it off at any momentary pause. She did not appear to understand the sense of any written communication, though she several times helped me to identify letters. "It looks so much like a kid's writing!" she said. When a response was made to a question of mine, she would often take it in a childish sense, and ejaculate, "Is that so? Huh!" Or she would say, "What a question to ask of a board!" "Ask a board questions!" "It's a crazy game", etc.



(Will you spell out the second word?) Yes. o-r-l-m-a-r-g-a-

(Is it 'or Margaret?') Yes.

(Did I mistake that you meant l when you meant m?) Yes.

(Have you some message about Doris or Margaret?) Yes.

(You know the difference between Doris and Margaret?)

No.

(You understand that Doris and Margaret are just two names for the same girl?) Yes.

(But you don't understand the difference between them?)

No.

(Do you know about her improving under our care?) No.

(Do you approve of our caring for her?) Yes.

(Is there any way by which you can help us in caring for her after we get into better communication?) Yes.

(Are you interested in the case?) Yes.

(Does the message you wish to give have to do with that?)

No.

(Can you write it by Margaret's hand?) [Horizontal line.]

(Shall we spell it out?) Yes.

T-h-e-r-e- i-s- o-n-e- w-h-o- b-e-l-o-n-g-s- t-o- t-h-i-s- s-i-d-  
t-h-r-o-u-g-h- w-h-o- [m] I c-a-n- c-o-m-m-u-n-i-c-a-t-e-  
W-a-l-t-e-r-

(Is e in 'side' left out?) Yes.

[Several questions were asked without response. M. was so excitable that they were not gotten down.]

(Is anyone here?) Yes.

(Same one who was here before and spelled out that message?) Yes.

(By this side do you mean the earth side?) No.

(Mean that you are communicating through that one?) No.

(One you intend to communicate through?) Yes.

(Anyone I have heard of?) Yes.

(Anyone I have known personally?) Yes.

(Related to me?) No.

(Can you give the name by the spelling method?) Yes.

t-h-e- g-i-r-l-

(Is that all?) Yes.

(Do you mean Doris?) No.

(Did you not mean Doris by 'the girl' last night?) No.



(Didn't you say so last night?) Yes.

(You said what you didn't mean last night?) No.

(Have I made a mistake in setting down some answer?) No.

(Is the girl you speak of the same as the girl of last night?)

Yes.

(Can your meaning be made clear so that I can understand it?) Yes.

(Did you mean M. last night and Real Doris tonight?) No.

(Is 'the girl' the one whom you can communicate through?)

Yes.

(And she is on your side?) [Horizontal line.]

(That mean 'I don't know'?) No. [708]

(Can't be answered by yes or no?) Yes.

(Will you spell the girl's name?) Yes. T-h-e- o-n-e- t-h-a-t  
g-u-a-r-d-s- t-h-e- s-l-e-e-p- o-f- D-o-r-i-s-

(That the end of the message?) Yes.

[Here the board under M.'s hand, began to write.]

(Is that a question?) [A downward mark, indicating "no",  
made, then an upward one, indicating "yes."]

(First answer a mistake? Answer is yes?) Yes.

(Is it, 'Is that Doris?') Yes.

(You wish to know if the girl whose hand is on here is  
Doris?) Yes.

(Before I answer that—you don't see her?) No.

(Do you ever see Doris?) Yes.

(Would you expect to see Doris, if she were here writing?)  
No.

(While you communicate, you don't see those you com-  
municate with?) Yes.

(You wish me to answer your question?) Yes.

(It can't be answered yes or no. It is Doris's *body*. Do you  
understand what that means?) No.

(Don't you know that she changes sometimes?) Yes.

(Do you understand why?) Yes.

---

708. Since he could write only a word or two at a time, the horizontal line may have expressed the difficulty of answering by *yes* or *no* so as to be understood. He had said that she (S. M.) *belonged* to the other side, but she actually was on this side.



(That sometimes she is Doris and sometimes Margaret?)  
Yes.

(Did you wish to know which she is tonight?) Yes.

(She is Margaret. Does that answer your question?) Yes.

[M. laughs and yells as the board, under her hand, writes.]

Didn't you know she belonged here

(Is the last word 'here'?) Yes.

(Refers to Margaret?) No.

(To Doris?) Yes.

(No, I did not. You mean on your side?) Yes.

(Is she there now?) No.

(I don't understand. You mean that she is going there soon.)

No. [Movement very vehement.]

(I want to know in what sense she belongs on your side. Can you write it? ... Spell it out?) [No reply to either question.]

(Mean that you can communicate through Real Doris?) No. [vigorous.]

(I want to be sure. *Doris* belongs on your side?) Yes.

(Does Margaret belong on that side? [Long horizontal line.]

(Mean that you don't know?) Yes.

(Can you explain how Doris belongs on your side?) [Horizontal line.]

(Mean that you don't know?) Yes.

(What way shall we take,—my asking questions?) Yes.

(Do you mean that Margaret belongs there?) No.

(Mean that you own Doris on that side?) Yes.

(Is this the same communicator that has been here all the evening?) Yes.

(Is that about Doris belonging there fully explained now?)  
No.

[Here, for some reason, M. gave a loud hoot.]

(Did you hear that?) Yes.

(Did you think it was Doris?) No.

(Do you know of any way to make it plainer?) Yes.

[Board writes with M.'s hand on alone.] Don't you watch her? [Not read at once.] [709]

709. "Don't you watch her?" seems to refer back to my statement that I did not know that she belonged on the other side. It seems like a question



- (First word 'don't?') Yes.  
 (Is it a question?) Yes.  
 (Second word 'you?') Yes.  
 (Third 'work?') No.  
 ('Walk?') No.  
 ('Know?') No.  
 (Shall we spell it out?) Yes. w-a-t-c-h-  
 (Last word 'her?') Yes.  
 (That a question?) Yes.  
 (Not a command?) Yes.  
 (You mean it is both?) Yes.  
 (You mean while she writing—Margaret?) No.  
 (Was that all you wrote?) Yes.  
 ('Don't you watch her?') Yes.  
 (You mean the way I did today?) No.  
 (Doris is meant?) Yes.  
 (I am not to watch her?) No—Yes.  
 (You don't mean that I am not to watch her?) No.  
 (Is it a question?) Yes.  
 (Or command?) No.  
 (I made a mistake in getting 'yes' to the question if it is a command?) Yes.  
 (You mean watch her health?) No.  
 (I try to watch her, but don't understand. Can I get it better?) No.  
 (Is it time to stop?) No.  
 (Can you tell if this hurts Margaret or not?) Yes.  
 [M.'s hand on alone, result not immediately deciphered.]  
 the one that guards is watching.  
 (Is that anything like 'We don't feel you watching?') No.  
 (Any word right?) Yes.  
 ('Watching' right?) Yes.  
 (Word before that 'you?') No.  
 ('Is?') Yes.  
 (Is it 'the one that guards is watching?') Yes.  
 [M.'s hand on, writes.] to see if M is tired

of surprise, as if communicator meant, "Why, don't you watch her, don't you know who it is who guards her, and have you not already suspected what that one is?"



(Is the one through whom you say you can communicate the one who guards?) Yes.

(Are you communicating through her now?) Yes.

(I understood you to say earlier in the evening that you were not communicating through her then. Was that right?) [Horizontal line.]

(You don't know, does that mean?) Yes.

(Same communicator as all the evening?) Yes.

(That is right, you don't know?) No.

(Some other meaning of the horizontal line?) No.

(I have something wrong?) Yes.

(Were you communicating through the one who guards earlier in the evening?) No.

(Are you doing so now?) No.

(Is that where my mistake was?) Yes.

(But you could communicate better through that one?) Yes.

(Will you be able to do so later?) Yes.

(Has the one who guards a name?) No.

(Was she ever on earth?) Yes.

(I mean in the body?) Yes.

(And has no name?) Yes.

(Mean that the person had no name?) [No answer.] [710]

(Had the person a name in the body?) Yes.

(Doesn't she have the same name now?) No.

(Do you know the person's name on earth?) Yes.

[M.'s hand on; board writes.] I can't give it [Not read]

(Is that the name?) No.

(Is it anything like 'I carry well'?) No. (Is *well* there?)

No. (Is last letter M?) No. (Is first word 'is'?) No.

('I'?) Yes. (Next 'can'?) No.

('Can't'?) Yes. ('Give it'?) Yes.

(You mean you don't know it?) No.

(You mean you are not allowed to give it?) Yes.

(Will you be allowed to sometime?) Yes.

---

710. The bungling form of the question made categorical answer ambiguous. *Yes* might be taken by me to mean that she had a name, while *no* might indicate that communicator did not mean that the guard had no name. In several other places there was difficulty, I suspect from the same cause, the squinting form of the inquiries.



(Hasn't the time come to stop?) No.

(I think we should stop; soon.) No. [vigorously.]

(Is there something else you want especially to say?) Yes.

(Please write the subject of what you wish to say.) [The board, under M.'s hand, writes.] The one who guards

(How she guards?) No.

(The one who guards Doris?) Yes. [I put M.'s hand on the board, and it writes] She is not willing to [711] [M.'s hand on; board writes.] She has known all along

(The one who guards has?) Yes.

(You mean has known Doris all along?) No.

[M.'s hand on board, writes.] When she leaves you to guard Doris she comes to this side she will deny this

(The one that guards her will deny this?) Yes.

(Is it a good guardian?) Yes.

[*Sotto voce.*] (What does she lie about it for?)

[M.'s hand on board; writes.] her duty is to guard

(Why does she deny it?) [M.'s hand on board.] Your minds are not ready to receive the truth

(I think we had best stop now, and take this up again.) Yes.

[I put my hand on the board alone.]

(Try to make one mark through me.) [No result. M.'s hand added.]

(Could I develop?) No. [M.'s hand on alone, writes.] The girl was sent for that.

(Do you mean in order to help me to communicate?) Yes.

*Sitting on Oct. 5, 1912.*

Margaret, W. F. P. and Mrs. P. present.

(If anyone is here, write initial of name.) [M.'s hand on alone.] W

(Do you wish to speak of a particular subject?) No.

(Do you understand what we nowadays are trying to prove?) Yes.

(That the question of identity is the main thing?) Yes.

---

711. This apparently means that "the one who guards" was not willing that her real name should be revealed. Yet it may mean that she was not willing to reveal her nature and office.



(When we get into easier communication you will be able to prove your identity?) Yes.

(You know what the theories of the skeptics are?) Yes.  
[712]

(Is there anyone there whom I am much interested in?) Yes.

(Anyone in particular whom I am interested in?) No. [713]

(Do you know that one point in the message through the other light which I do not understand?) [No answer.]

(You don't understand?) No.

(Know what I mean by the other light?) Yes.

(Remember the question about the last one you saw before going out?) [No answer.]

(You don't understand?) [No answer.]

(Are you there?) [No answer. Interval.]

(Are you there?) [No answer. Interval.]

(Anyone there?) Yes.

(Same communicator?) No.

(Would you be able to write the initial letter of your name?) No.

(Can we spell the first name?) Yes. E-m-m-a

(Any particular message?) No.

(Do you know the last communicator?) Yes.

(Personally, I mean?) No.

(Do you know why he left off so soon?) Yes.

Explain in a word or two by spelling.) H-e-i-s- w-e-a-k-

(Is that all?) No. b-o-a-r-d- d-o-e-s- n-o-t- w-o-r-k- e-a-s-y-

(All?) No.

(All?) Yes.

(Does Margaret need to bear on so hard?) No.

(Does her bearing on so hard interfere?) Yes.

(Did Trixie know?) [714] Yes. [M. here shouted, "I know that name. That was our Trixie."]

(She never told?) No.

---

712. If he had really met Robert Hyslop he might have learned this from him.

713. I think that the answer was correct, in the sense that I had no particular person in mind.

714. Meaning about the blow.



- (You know what the cause was said to be?) Yes.  
 (You were injured internally?) [Horizontal mark.]  
 (Meaning 'I don't know'?) Yes.  
 (Do you know the one who guards?) Yes.  
 (You know what was said last night?) No.  
 (Do you know whose hand is on the board?) Yes.  
 (One person?) No. [Both M. and I had a hand on.]  
 (Does it give you pleasure to come back?) [Horizontal mark.]  
 (Meaning you don't know?) Yes.  
 (Can you think clearly as you write?) Yes.  
 (The best way of continuing will be by a good board?) Yes.  
 (Have you ever come this way before?) Yes.  
 (I mean before you used this particular board?) [Horizontal line.]  
 (Mean that you don't know?) No.  
 (Yes meant?) No.  
 (Mean you can't answer yes or no?) Yes.  
 (Have you communicated anywhere else but in this city?)  
 No.  
 (Have you in any place but here?) Yes.  
 (Sure of that?) Yes.  
 (More than once?) No.  
 (I was there?) Yes.  
 (Quite sure?) Yes.  
 (Remember how many were present?) Yes.  
 (State by counting method?) Yes. [I counted to 4 and a mark was made.] Four. [715]

715. I had already written in my notes upon this sitting, "I know nothing to which this could apply", when it occurred to me that possibly I did. Perhaps a year before this I had discovered in a blank book of mine lying on my desk the single word "Emma", written with a downward slant, and in a curious, jiggling script looking as though it were written by a person with eyes shut; in fact, it was almost a duplicate of the word as written in one place in this series of sittings. I had inquired both of M. and of R. D., and neither could tell me how the word came to be there. There is no doubt that it was produced by the hand of the girl, and its characteristics are such that I had long been convinced that it was written automatically. It is possible that the reference is to the writing of the name on this occasion. Not knowing when it was produced, I of course do not know whether there were four persons present at the time or not.



(Remember if the light was old or young?) [Horizontal line.]

(Didn't you see her?) No.

(Did you know when Doris came to us?) Yes.

(Did you bring it about?) Yes. [716]

(Is it E who is writing?) Yes.

(Anything you want to say at this point?) No.

(Am I convinced of your identity?) No.

(Do you blame me for that?) No.

(You will try later to convince me?) Yes.

(You believe that you can do so?) Yes.

(Do you know that facts unknown to Doris are the best evidence?) Yes.

(And if unknown to me but provable, all the better?) Yes.

(Is there anyone else who wishes to communicate after you are through?) No.

(Is Doris going to get well?) No.

(Will she get better than she now is?) Yes.

(By better, do you mean well?) No.

(Will she get *much* better?) Yes.

(So as practically not to be inconvenienced?) Yes.

(Was there any special reason for Doris's coming to us?) Yes.

(And you caused it?) Yes.

(Did you have any help from your side?) Yes.

(Can you give the name of your helper?) Yes.

(Does it help any for me to put my hand on?) Yes.

(Spell the name of the helper from your side in bringing Doris to us.) W-a-l-t-e-r-

(Do you know his last name?) No.

(Do you use only first names on the other side?) Yes.

(Was there any other helper in bringing that about?) No.

(Could you in a word or two hint at the reason why she was brought to us?) T-h-e g-u-a-r-d- [717] [Long horizontal mark made, probably as a sign that she was through.]

(Something wrong?) No.

(Go on spelling?) No.

---

716. But see page 1283, which seems to contradict this.

717. Note that "Walter" had said (page 1300), "The girl was sent for that".



(That is all of the message?) Yes.

(Mean it is time to stop?) No.

(Can't we finish that somehow?) [718] Yes.

(Have you forgotten where we left off?) No.

(Shall we spell the rest?) Yes.

(Didn't you answer that question?) No. Yes.

(Was there some reason for stopping that you can't explain?)  
Yes.

(But you can explain it later when we have a proper board?)  
Yes.

(I'll call for it later. We will not spell.) s-o-m-e-o-n-e-  
w-i-s-h-e-d- t-o- c-o-m-m-u-n-i-c-a-t-e-

(That all?) Yes.

(This a part of the same sentence with the two words before  
given?) Yes.

(You mean through the guard?) Yes. [strong movement.]

(Has that one succeeded?) No.

(The one wishing is yourself?) No.

(I mean the one who first wished it.) No.

(Do you wish to now?) No.

(I mean do you desire to when it is possible?) Yes.

(Do we understand each other now?) [Horizontal line.]

(Meaning you don't know?) Yes.

(Will that one communicate through the guard?) Yes.

(The guard is willing.) [with affirmative emphasis.] No.

(The guard is unwilling?) Yes.

(Will the guard consent later?) Yes.

(Are her objections formed on a condition of things on this  
side?) Yes.

(Will her objections be removed if I come to understand her  
correctly?) Yes.

(We must stop soon. You agree?) Yes.

(Will the guard see that Margaret is not hurt by this writ-  
ing?) Yes.

---

718. By failing to understand the significance of "The guard" I may have confused the communicator. But the difficulty may have been solely that stated, the interference of another one wishing to communicate. More probably, however, the meaning is that D. was brought to us because someone wished to communicate through the guard.



(Does the guard go over on that side?) Yes.

(Can you tell when she last went over?) Yes.

(Will you spell it out?) Yes. L-a-s-t n-i-g-h-t-

(Is that all?) Yes.

(She understands that she was referred to last night?) Yes.

[That had been evident.]

(I am going to say goodnight now.) NO [very energetically.]

(Something you wish to spell out?) Yes.

(And will then stop?) Yes.

(Better to spell fast and you recall me if a mistake is made?) Yes.

(Better for her hand to rest lightly?) S-h-e- d-o-e-s- n-o-t-  
t-h-i-n-k- t-h-e- o-n-e- b-e-l-i-e-v-e-s- [719]

(That all?) [No answer.]

(That is enough for tonight?) [No answer.]

(Anyone here?) [No answer.]

*Sitting on Oct. 8, 1912, Evening.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P., present.

(Is anyone here?) Yes.

(Write your name.) Emma

(Have you some special message tonight?) No.

(Have you met Robert Hyslop yet?) No. [720]

(Did you suffer when you went out?) Yes.

(Do you write messages alone by yourself?) No.

(Do you have any help on that side?) No.

(Do you know anything about chickens?) [Suggested by Margaret.] No.

(Do you mean you have help on this side?) No. Yes.

(Any help besides from those putting their hands on the board?) Yes.

(On this side?) Yes.

(Are you here as you write?) [Horizontal line.]

(That mean that you don't know?) Yes.

---

719. The reference was probably to Mrs. P.

720. Question asked to see if the answer would consist with the former one.



(Can you name the one who helps you write on this side?)  
Yes.

(By the spelling method?) Yes.

T-h-e- g-u-a-r-d-

(The guard now helps you?) Yes. [M. broke in, "You say the garden helps you?"]

(Has she helped all the time?) Yes.

(Did she help Walter also?) Yes.

(Is she now doing all she can in this way?) No.

(Is she helping willingly?) No.

(Can you spell out why she helps if unwilling?) [Hesitation.] No.

(You know why she helps?) No.

(She is helping but you don't know why? That right?)  
Yes.

(Will she help more?) Yes.

(You have any idea when?) No.

(Does she help in the act of writing itself?) No.

(Is it possible with the present arrangement to tell in what way she helps?) No.

(Do you know where the guard is now?) Yes.

(Spell out where-?) Yes. O-n- g-u-a-r-d-

(Is she on guard only while Doris is asleep at night?) No.

(On guard when Doris is awake?) Yes.

(When awake at all times?) Yes.

(She guards at all times, day and night?) Yes.

(Do you know Margaret?) Yes.

(On guard when Margaret is here also?) Yes.

(Do you know how to get the guard to help more?) No.

(Is there anyone else waiting to communicate?) No.

(Do you know what happened after you passed out?) Yes.

(Remember exactly where the blow was?) No.

(Forgotten?) No.

(Can you explain how you don't know and yet haven't forgotten?) [No answer.]

(Still here?) [No answer.]

In taking down the answer to the question, "Do you know where the guard is now", I pronounced "On", then momentarily



mistook the following *g* for *h*. Just as I pronounced the letter, *h*, there began to issue from M.'s lips a muffled sort of a laugh, quite unlike her ordinary laugh. At the same time her face took on a puzzled expression, and she said repeatedly, "Somebody is making me laugh! Somebody is making me laugh." She slept soon after the sitting was over, and S. M. explained. "I couldn't help making her laugh. I was laughing, because I thought the board was going to write, 'O hell'." I intimated that I thought she probably knew beforehand what was going to be written, but she declared that she did not.

S. M. steadily denies that she is from "the other side" and returns there when she "goes away." To be sure, the alleged communicator through the planchette forewarned me that "the guard" would make this denial. If S. M. can be causally related to the writing, she might be supposed to be playing a very deep game, but I should not have expected her to put so much of an appearance of irritation into her playing of the part.

On October 26th I asked S. M. if it was a true characterization of her that she is "the one who guards." She replied, "Why of course that is true", but added, "just the same, what the board writes is nonsense. Presently she declared that her own coming was in response to the prayers of Doris's mother. "She used to pray that D. should be guarded from all evil. The time came when she knew that her prayers were answered, and she did not worry. (How old was D. when her mother commenced so to pray?) A wee little baby. (How do you know that she prayed? Did she tell D.? No, it was written in her Bible. (O, I see; D. saw it there.) Yes, but I knew it before D. could read. (How did you know?)" S. M. evaded this question, with a subtle something about voice and manner that seemed to betray consciousness that she was admitting too much. It had a very genuine appearance, whatever it really was. Ask her if M. produced the planchette writing—a ridiculous question enough—and S. M. answers "How can she? You know very well that she does not understand what is written. (Then *you* do it?) No indeed, I do not. I have nothing to do with it. (Then it is a spirit?) No, I think that is nonsense. (Then the board must do it?) I guess so; I don't know."



On the evening of Oct. 17, S. M. asked me what was written at Mrs. Montague's, purporting to come from my father. I said that I did not wish to tell her until more had been written through M. She asked why, and I explained that conceivably something might be written the evidentiality of which would be injured by such previous telling. This argument did not seem to impress S. M. much, who said that the writing was all nonsense anyway. I admitted that this was probably the case, but said that I proposed to give it a fair chance, anyway. S. M. became displeased by my refusal to tell, and desisted from talking except in direct answer to questions, and that in laconic fashion. Her face took on the sphinx-like calmness which is the most visible sign of S. M.'s being displeased. There was no reaction upon M., when she woke, for she was as chatty and amiable as ever. It was not until the evening of Oct. 21 that S. M. got over her mood, and yet neither M. nor R. D. showed the slightest effects from it.

*Sitting on Oct. 26, 1912, Evening.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P. present.

(Anyone here?) Let the guard try.

(That right—'let the guard try'?) Yes.

(How shall I set her at work?) [No answer.]

(I am willing for the guard to try—but how?) Is she willing? [Not read.]

(Is that 'she will try'?) No.

(Write it again, please.) Is she willing?

(She hasn't yet said that she is. I hope so—O yes, she did say that she would try. But how shall I set her at work?) She is mad at something. [Only the first two words deciphered.] mad at something.

(Any way to get her over it?) [Answer not recorded. I think it was a horizontal line.]

(You know what she is mad at?) Yes.

(Because I wouldn't answer the question she asked?) Yes.

(Should I answer?) She knows. [721]

(She knows without asking?) Yes.

(Then why does she want me to answer?) [No answer.]

---

721. If she did she never evinced the fact.



(Do you know?) No.

(Who is talking?) E.

(Will it do any good to answer the question?) No.

(How should I get the guard to try, then,—do you know?)  
No.

(I'll be very glad to get the guard to try if I can. Say something, please. [No answer was received to this or subsequent questions.]

A peculiar feature of the writing on this evening was that the first sentences were written straight down the sheet in the direction of M., that is, at right angles to the usual direction, until I suggested to the supposed communicator that she write horizontally, as I was having difficulty in reading. During two of the sentences M. was looking straight at me and talking busily.

Later in the evening S. M. denied that she was "mad", and when I asked her if she would like for me to tell, replied that she didn't care. I did not tell, and S. M. remained perfectly pleasant.

About the middle of November S. M. informed me that R. D. stumbled upon the planchette in my room and tried to see if it would write for her and it did not.

*Sitting with R. D. about Nov. 18, 1912.*

R. D., W. F. P. present.

I suggested to R. D., as a psychological experiment, that we should put our hands on the instrument, and see if it would write or not, and she agreed. I smilingly told her that the formula to begin with is, "Is anyone here?", and pronounced the words. There was a pause, then the board began to jiggle. It worked slowly and hesitatingly and made a curve or two. Two or three attempts met with no more success, except that the number of curves made at the last effort was greater. I then said, "Let an upward stroke stand for yes, and a downward for no."

(Was that intended to be a word?) No.

(Were you trying to write a word?) No.

(Were you practicing?) No.

(Will writing come later?) Yes.



(Will it make her nervous or hurt her?) No.

[Here we had to close. S. M. afterwards told me that R. D. thought at the time, and continued to believe, that I consciously moved the board.]

Two other experiments with R. D. in December were utter failures, as no movement could be elicited.

On the afternoon of January 30th, a stranger, a well-dressed young man, somewhat corpulent, with fishy eyes, came to consult me, and was met at the door and ushered into my study by myself. He told me that he was meditating suicide, but wanted to talk with me as a clergyman before deciding. He had quitted his business, he said, and could get nothing else to do. Presently he told me that he had been an agent in the white-slave traffic from his college days. He had determined two weeks before to give up the business. At the moment that I was determining to give him the best advice and help that I could, if he was genuinely repentant and determined to forsake his infamous trade, an extreme loathing for him, as one who had been engaged for years in that most damnable business on earth, rose within me, and was repressed because I felt it my duty to help even the vilest, if truly bent on reform. Mrs. Prince had caught a casual glimpse of him as he came up the steps, but had felt no conscious repulsion because of his appearance, or otherwise. Indeed, he did not look worse than thousands of young men of any large city. As she sat on the piazza presumably beyond the reach of our voices, suddenly she thought she heard my voice, a muffled sound, sounding as though I were in pain or danger—and she coupled with the impression the thought that I was in danger from that man. "Cold chills ran up and down my back", she afterwards said. The whole conversation between the stranger and me had been carried on, so far as I know, in the same quiet tones, nor can I imagine that any utterance by either of us could have carried to the spot which she occupied, at least to a greater extent than an inarticulate murmur, nor any utterance which, if it had been heard in such manner, should have suggested such a thought to her mind more than another or at all. A moment later the sound was repeated, and still it seemed my voice, and again it suggested danger from the man. She came in and listened at the closed door, heard the



murmur of our voices but nothing that we said, and went into the dining-room and told R. D. In the meantime,—it would appear to have been about the moment that Mrs. P. had her second hallucination of a voice,—Doris, who had not seen the man at all, and therefore could not have received from his looks any feeling of repulsion, had had a similar experience in the dining-room, between which and the study is a long hall. She also thought that she heard my voice, not articulate but “muffled”, felt as if I “were being murdered”, and started to go to me, but heard Mrs. P. enter, and paused. With her characteristic reticence she did not relate her experience until S. M. had told it to me and I had questioned her. Thereupon, supposing that “Phase A” had informed me, she told the story. S. M. the following evening gave as her theory that the impression, shared by Mrs. P. and R. D. simultaneously when they were in different places, was telepathic (she did not use that particular word) in its nature, and originated in the horror which I felt for the man. She announced this before I said that I had felt such horror, though I had said that there was a reason for the repulsion which R. D. felt at the sight of the man when he called again the next day. I did not tell even Mrs. P. the errand that the man came on until he had disappeared from the place, failing to keep his promise to meet me and be taken to a man who might be able to get him work. From certain expressions which he let drop I suspected that he was fleeing from some place because in danger of arrest. What became of him afterwards I do not know. It is not in the least likely that the man had thought of murdering or otherwise harming me, but he was, according to his own statement, meditating self-murder.

*Sitting on Feb. 25, 1913, Evening.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P. present.

[I induced M. to “play the game.” As she put her hands on the board, and I asked the first question, it instantly began to move. M. shouted, “It’s writin’, babo, its writin’.” She was laughing, somewhat excited by the novelty of “the game.”]

(Anyone here?) Yes.



(Who is it?) W.

(Is there something you wish to say?) Remember [Here M. removed her hand in excitement.]

(Remember what?) the gables [Not read] Remember the gables. (Is the word gables?) Yes.

(What does that mean? Give some clue.) barn

(Gables of the barn?) Yes.

(What about the gables of the barn?) [pause] W [722]

(That is who it is?) Yes.

(Write next initial.) W [and probably] M

The sitting was difficult, because M. would take her hand off before the writing was through, laugh and ejaculate, "Askin' a board!", etc., and it was hard to do any work with her. She said "You are movin' it, babo; I can feel you." She had to be coaxed to begin, ate chocolate dates during the process, and soon tired and wanted to stop. I got her to continue for a minute longer, but was suddenly compelled to catch her,—she had fallen over asleep.

*Sitting on Feb. 26, 1913, 8.55 to about 9.05 p. m.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P., present.

[M. demurred to the suggestion to "play the game", but finally consented to do so "for a little while." It was impossible to take notes at the time, since the sitting was bound to be so short, and M. was so irrepressible. But the following was written the next morning, and is substantially correct.]

[As soon as our hands were placed on the board it wrote.] W. M.

(What about the Gables?) Barn.

---

722. Note that after the reference to the gables of the barn the initial "W" is written, as if to imply that there was something about the gables of the barn familiar to me in my boyhood which would make the reference significant as to the identity of the communicator. And indeed there was! something which I suppose that I had not thought of for years, and which did not flash up into my consciousness until after the sitting was over. The later references approach the evidential kernel a little nearer, but in what way it is not judicious to explain. There may yet be a sequel. It seems unlikely that so odd a reference should have been made, and one so pertinent, merely by chance.



(Yes, what happened to the gables of the barn?) barn  
[thought to be 'burn.']

(Do you mean that they were burned?) [No answer. Subsequent examination showed that the word was written like the first 'barn.' Several questions directed to find out further about the gables elicited no answer.]

[Change of communicator.]

Rose

(What does that mean?) [No answer.]

(Is it Rose writing?) Yes.

(Write your name as in life.) [No answer. It was hard to keep M.'s hand still. She regarded the whole business, evidently, as a joke.]

(Is Rose related to any of us?) [No answer.]

Rose

(Are you related to any of us?) [No answer. M. jerking and exclaiming.]

Interrupted

(By whom?) light

(Will you some time write through a better light?) Yes  
[Upward stroke.]

(Where is that light?) [No answer.]

(Who is that light?) No name. [723]

(Where are you?) here

(Are you related to me?) [No answer.]

(Are you related to the light?) [No answer.]

(Mrs. P. Is she related to me?) L [724]

[At some point near the close of the sitting 'Rose' was written again. M. was too tired to continue.]

[S. M. afterwards commented, "Why didn't it keep on and tell something about the gables and the rest? It sounds like nonsense to me."]

*Sitting on Feb. 27, 1913, 7.40-8.05 p. m.*

Margaret, W. F. P., Mrs. P., present.

---

723. Meaning Sleeping Margaret?

724. L. was presumably for "Lelia", Mrs. P.'s first name. She had a sister Rose.



[Margaret and I put hands on the board.] Walter Rose  
 (That mean that Walter and Rose are writing?) Yes.  
 (Both writing at the same time?) Yes.  
 (How do you do that?) Rose interrupts  
 (Can W. tell any more about the gables?) Yes.  
 (Do so, please.) Rose  
 (Is it Walter that wrote about the gables?) Yes.  
 (Was the answer 'Rose' by Walter?) No.

[Communicator Rose.]

watch

(Is that 'watch'?) Yes.  
 (Is it a direction to me?) No.  
 (Whose watch?) Rose  
 (Do you mean *a* watch?) Yes.  
 (Like this?) [showing my watch] smaller.  
 (Do you mean your watch?) Yes.  
 (Say more about the watch.) where  
 (Where is the watch?) where

[Change of communicator, Walter.]

right hand gable yes [in response to reading.]  
 (Who is speaking now?) W  
 (Who was speaking about the watch?) R.  
 (Where?) barn  
 (Tell what town the barn is in.) [The name of the town  
 which W. M. P. lived in was written.]  
 (Right hand gable facing which way? Standing in barn fac-  
 ing road, or facing barn?) Yes.  
 (Facing barn?) Yes.  
 (Is it anything I know about?) Yes.  
 why sold?  
 (Gable?) No.  
 (Barn?) Yes. [I stated the reason, which I do not wish to  
 put in print, in order to guard the evidentiality of possible future  
 communications through other psychics.]

[Change of communicator, Rose.]

has L watch



(Is that L?) Yes.

(Has Lelia the watch, do you mean?) Yes

(Who is writing this?) R [Here Mrs. P. said, "She never had a watch."]

(She says you never had a watch.) Yes. [725]

(What does 'yes' mean?) [No answer.]

(Is anyone there?) [No answer. M. was evidently very tired, and the sitting closed.]

On the evening of March 7, 1913, Margaret being "out", I happened to speak of the light, meaning the electric light, when M. said, "I's a light. (What do you mean?) I's a light. (What do you mean? Who said so?) Somefin' inside of me. (When?) O that was long ago. Before you was Doris's papo. Somefin' said inside of me that I is a light. I just thought of it."

During the afternoon of March 21, 1913, I happened to think rather attentively about the automatic script executed by the hand of M., and also about the fact that she has never seemed to feel more than a languid interest in the experiments, except to the extent that I was able to interest her in them as a game, and that she has hardly ever spontaneously spoken of them. Curiously, in view of this, M. in the evening said, "Let's play the game." Was this the reading of my thoughts of the afternoon, "go in like a parade" through my subconscious mind? If so, it is probably a last flash of the dying embers, for M. has not exhibited this power for a long time. Less than ten minutes caused her to be

---

725. Rose never owned a watch. But there was another sister who had repeatedly told Mrs. P., from the latter's girlhood, that she should eventually have her watch; and this sister, while dying, wished Mrs. P. to have it, but it was taken by a relative by marriage. The facts were well known to Rose. And be it noted that there is no certainty that the word "Rose" following my question "Whose watch?" means to assert that the watch was hers. "Mine" would have been a more natural answer. Often a new communicator repeats the writing of his or her name, as if to be sure that it appears in the script. To maintain that she meant to assert by the word "Rose", that she owned the watch, would be as unfair as to say that where (page 1313) the same name appears following the question "Are you related to any of us?" she means to say that she is related to herself. And where, following my remark "She says you never had a watch" we find "Yes", the reply may be assent to my statement. Still, the question "Do you mean your watch" was answered "Yes".



tired of the "game", and during its progress she showed little of the merriment which my being so "silly as to talk to a board" formerly excited in her. The report of this sitting seems to be lost. M. was probably unable to write of her own volition at this date. She had not written a word for many weeks, and never wrote afterwards.

I do not think that she ever spontaneously referred to the "game" after this, and any mention of it by me almost made her cry, since she was so rapidly losing in energy that the thought of the exertion of keeping her hand on the board appalled her. So no attempt was ever afterwards made, with Margaret as the psychic.

*Sitting on April 15, 1914, Evening.*

Real Doris, W. F. P., Michael Haitich, present.

[Haitich's hand on alone. No result. Doris's hand and mine added. The board moved with difficulty.]

(Anyone here?) Yes. [Upward stroke.]

(Give first letter of your first name.) G [probably.]

[Haitich's hand removed from board.]

(Will you give your name by alphabet method?) Yes.

[Movement at g. Movement at t, u or v; repetition of these letters brought no response. Movement at a. I thought it had begun again to indicate the second letter, and read aloud "g-a." No movement on further repetitions of the alphabet. The board began to write.]

Guard [726]

(One I know?) [Meaning S. M.]

(Do you wish to write anything?) [Wrote, with difficulty, but increasing legibility, pausing between words until the last word was made out and read aloud.] Is there anyone you would like for me to interview?

(Do you mean, for me?) Yes.

(Yes, but I do not wish to name the person. Can't you tell whom I am thinking of?) [I was thinking of my father. In

---

726. This was the first writing by a "guard", afterward to become a familiar thing. A guard is to be carefully distinguished from *the* guard, *i. e.*, S. M.



view of the previous sittings his name was perhaps the most probable one to guess; still, I might have avoided it for that very reason.]

Walter M

[The sitting was interrupted at this point and had to close. There had been two or three other questions and answers which were not recorded, but they were of no account.]

*Sitting on April 16, 1914, 5.30 p. m.*

Real Doris, W. F. P., present.

(Anyone here?) Yes.

(Same one as last night?) No.

(Will you give your initials?) No.

(Don't you wish for us to know who you are?) [No answer.]

(Have you a message you wish to write?) No.

(Is there anything we can do?) Hard [pause.]

(You mean with the board?) to get thro

(Is that all the message?) Yes.

(Do you mean it is hard to get the message through?) Yes.

[At this point Doris was called away.]

In the evening S. M. said, "I am not the guard." I ascertained that she meant that she was not the guard professing to communicate last night. But she did not deny that she was *the* guard referred to in the sittings of October last. She knew not who the guard writing the present series was. "(Don't know?) No I don't know everything in heaven or hell"—laughing as she spoke. (Which is this from—heaven or hell?) Well it isn't from hell, anyway. (What did it mean by asking 'Is there anyone you want me to interview'?) I suppose the person talks through 'me'—'me' asks the question and writes the answer. But you are not always sure of getting the person you want, you know. (Why?) Someone else may butt in, or it looks that way to me." S. M. declared that she was not doing the writing, but that she knew what was going on.

*Sitting on April 17, 1914, 5 p. m.*

Real Doris, W. F. P.

(Anyone here?) Yes.



- (Same one as yesterday?) Yes.  
 (Is it the guard?) Yes.  
 (Same as the first day?) [Meaning the first day of resumption of sittings, April 16.] Yes.  
 (Only this one since we commenced this series?) Yes.  
 (Same guard as when we wrote last year?) Yes.  
 (That puzzles me—are you sure?) [727] Not the g  
 (Is that for 'guard'?) Yes.  
 (You are not the guard?) the the  
 (Are you emphasizing 'the'?) Yes.  
 (You mean that there is more than one guard?) Yes.  
 (You are a guard?) Yes.  
 (You were a guard last year too?) Yes.  
 (First letter of the name of the guard?) S [728]  
 (Did you ever write before this week?) No.  
 (Why do you write now?) I am nearer.  
 (Does that mean you are nearer than you were?) No.  
 (Then what?) The other one.  
 (Does it hurt her?) [Meaning Doris.] No.  
 (Where is the guard?) Out  
 (Shall I ever know more definitely?) Yes.  
 (Do you know what the proof means?) No.  
 (Do you know the guard's name?) Not her real one.  
 [Here the sitting terminated, as Doris seemed bored. She takes little interest in the experiments.]

*Sitting on April 19, 1914, 3.15 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

[No results. Doris remarked, "I don't have that lost feeling today." Therefore S. M. was not away.]

---

727. Again there was a momentary misunderstanding because of my ambiguous question, "Same guard as when we wrote last year?" I meant to inquire if she was the guard referred to in the script of the preceding year. I did not think that she could be that one, i. e., the guard, but wanted a definite statement. But the question was misunderstood and the answer meant that she was the same as one of the guards of the last year. When she perceived what I thought she meant, she hastened to add, "Not the g."

728. Evidently for the first initial of Sleeping Margaret.



*Sitting on April 20, 1914, 5.40-6.20 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

(Anyone here?) Yes. [729]

(Same one as before?) Yes.

(Are you in?) I do not know.

(Do you know what I mean by that?) No.

(Are you in, in the sense that *the* guard is in when she is not "out"?) No.

(Haven't you anything to say to me?) Of what nature?

(Something interesting or helpful.) I would be interfering.

(Interfering with what?) With the guard.

(Board work satisfactorily?) Yes.

(Is it her subliminal writing?) No.

(Do you have any idea how long Phase A will be here?) Two weeks.

(Is that your opinion, or do you profess to know?) Yes.

(It is your opinion?) No.

(You profess to know?) Yes.

(If she is here more than two weeks, how will you explain it?) I don't understand.

(Sometimes people predict and it doesn't come true, and then they have an explanation.) The guard fools you.

(Aren't you fooling me?) No. [730]

(You are willing that I shall put down your prediction and judge you by that?) Yes.

(Then *the* guard is not reliable?) Yes.

(Do you mean that she is reliable?) Yes.

(And yet fools me?) I said so.

---

729. M. came out for the last time on April 19th. But it was probably not this that made the writing with the planchette easier than ever before, but the fact that I had obtained a new one, with wheels, though even this gave trouble.

730. On Feb. 24, 1915, I spoke to S. M. of what a guard had said in the script of that day, and laughingly remarked that perhaps she had not told the truth. S. M. gravely answered, "She always tells the truth. (But you didn't always?) The other guards do. And I did except when I had a reason." I remarked that perhaps the other guards might have their reasons for deceiving me, but S. M. insisted that they always spoke truthfully. No reference had been made to the other guard's statement of the year before.



(Am I being fooled in other ways?) Not that I know.  
(Do you know why she fools me on that subject?) No.  
(Is there anyone else near you?) Yes.  
(Name of the other person?) The other guard.  
(Does that mean *the* guard?) No.  
(How many guards are there?) Three in all.  
(Those two on duty all the time?) Yes.  
(How many on duty at one time and how many at another?)  
Two alls [always?] around.  
(Including *the* guard?) No.  
(Then sometimes there are three including *the* guard?) Yes.  
(What becomes of *the* guard when she goes?) Don't you know?  
(I wanted to see if you knew?) In the second sphere.  
(How many spheres are there?) Five.  
(Do you want us to say good-bye formally, when we stop?)  
No.

*Sitting of April 21, 1914, 4.40 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.  
(Who is here?) [No answer.]  
(Anyone here?) [No answer.] We sat for ten minutes without result. [731]

*Sitting on April 21, 1914, 6.20-6.40 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.  
(Anyone here?) Yes.  
(Who is it?) Emma.  
(Something you want to say?) [No answer.]  
(Emma still here?) [No answer.]

[Change of communicator. A Guard.]

(Emma still here?) No.  
(Who is here?) The same one.

---

731. Doris was not feeling well. The effect of illness, weariness or perturbed feelings upon the results of the sittings was very marked. The more perfect her health and spirits the more likely were good results.



(The same as yesterday?) Yes.  
(Why did Emma go?) Cant get message through tonight.  
(Why can't she?) Not near.  
(Will she be near some other time?) Yes.  
(Is this as good a psychic as Margaret was?) No.  
(Will she become so?) I dont know.  
(Will she improve with practice?) [No answer.]  
(Are you here? ... Will you answer?) Ask the guard.  
(Does *the* guard know?) Yes.  
(You don't know?) No.  
(Is the other guard there?) Yes.  
(I haven't heard from her yet.) No.  
(Why don't *you* ask *the* guard?) [No answer. Tried five minutes more without result.]

*Sitting on April 23, 1914, 11.05-11.25 a. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

(Who is here?) The same guard.  
(Do you know when *the* guard will appear?) No.  
(Why did you not answer the last question the day before yesterday?) I wasn't here.  
(Why did you leave?) It is very hard to get anything through.  
(Why is it hard?) A Phase going.  
(Is it through the A Phase that you write?) No.  
(Will it be easier when the A Phase is gone?) Yes.  
(Do you know how many times A Phase will come?) If nothing happens she wont come any more. [732]  
(But she is still here though she doesn't come?) Yes.  
(Which side does she belong to? Understand?) No.  
(Is she the same sort of a being as *the* guard?) No.  
(The same as Phase B?) She could have been made the same.  
(Then aren't they the same in nature?) Yes.  
(A difference of degree?) Yes.

---

732. And she did not. Three days earlier she had predicted that Phase A would be "here" for two weeks. Perhaps M. was subliminally self-conscious for two weeks,—no one can say.



(Does this hurt Doris?) No.

(Would you let me know if it did?) Yes.

(Couldn't anyone else come through you?) Yes.

(If another came, would that one write directly or would you write for him?) Yes.

(Mean you would write?) Yes.

(Can you tell what I am thinking of?) No.

(Will someone else write this afternoon?) I told you it was too hard to get through.

(I mean write through you,—will someone do that?) No.

(After A Phase is gone can they?) Yes.

[It is noticeable that after every experiment in automatic writing Doris's palms are found sweating profusely, much as M.'s did.]

*Sitting of April 23, 1914, 5.40-6.00 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

(The same one?) Yes.

(Please say something.) [No answer.]

(Can't think of anything?) No.

(Don't you have thoughts of your own?) Yes.

(Why don't you express them?) [No answer.]

(Any answer?) No.

(Will it always be the case that I will have to do the talking?) No.

(Know what *the* guard is doing?) No.

(No idea of the nature of it?) No.

(You know who Michael is?) Yes.

(Has he any guards?) I don't know.

(Do you know about Michael?) No.

(Just know him that's all?) Yes.

(Don't know that he is different from other people?) Yes.

(Know in what way?) Yes.

(Do you know if he will become like other people?) No.

(Can we get help from the other side later on, to restore his memory?) Perhaps.

(Why is the writing poorer than this forenoon? Any reason?) Yes.

(Can you state it?) No.



(You don't know why?) Yes. I would have to write it about six times.

(Can't you make it clearer what that means?) [733] [No. further answer.]

*Sitting on April 25, 1914, 4.55-5.05 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

[No results.]

*Sitting on April 26, 1914, 5.15 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

(You here?)

(Why didn't you write yesterday?) The board.

(You mean that there was trouble with the board?) Yes.

(Couldn't even make a mark?) No.

(Are you the same one?) Yes.

[No further answers.]

*Sitting on May 30, 1914, 3.50 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

when [not read] when [not read] when do you go away?

(Whom is that addressed to, her or me?) Her.

(To Doris?) Yes.

(Going away where? I don't understand. Can you make it plainer? Going away when?) now

(I don't understand.) she was going

(You mean that Doris here was going?) [Doris here said, "Perhaps it means I was going to ride down to Urbita. I don't know what that has to do with it."]

(Is that what you mean?) Yes. [Doris: "I was going in a little while. I am not sure; I was just thinking of it then."]

(Are you her subliminal?) No.

(You heard her answer?) Yes.

(Is that what you meant?) Yes.

(Well, why did you wish to know?) She should not go.

\* 733. And yet the meaning is clear enough, that probably the matter could not be made clear without a number of attempts, considering that a long message was impracticable.



(Why?) Too crowded. [734]

(She shall not.) [Here we were interrupted for about 20 minutes, then tried without results, were interrupted another 15 minutes, tried again, but got no writing. Doris was somewhat excited by the interruptions.]

*Sitting on June 9, 1914, 3.10-3.25 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

the guard

(Is that the one writing?) Yes. Did M. leave in two weeks?

(I will say next time. I am not sure; it was about that.) [735]

It is hard for the message to get thro.

(Doesn't it get easier as time goes on?) No.

(Isn't there any way by which it may become easier?) Not on your side.

(The difficulty is on this side, isn't it?) Yes.

(Do you mean that on the other side they can improve conditions on this?) Yes.

(Are they going to do it?) Yes.

(How often should we write? Make any difference about that?) No.

(Do you think it *will* come easier?) Yes.

(Who is talking—the guard?) [No answer to this or subsequent questions.]

*Sitting on June 23, 1914, 9.30 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

[After a lady had been doing some supposed automatic writing which had no evidential credentials I had Doris put her hand on the planchette with that of the lady. There was an evi-

---

734. There was good reason for the warning, as the street was thronged by automobiles and other vehicles.

735. M. never came out after the date of the prediction, but, as already stated, there was reason to suspect that she remained for a time subliminally self-conscious.



dent attempt to write but nothing legible was produced. I then substituted my hand for that of the lady.]

Was you here? was she here?

(Who?) g

(Who is g?)

[There were no further movements while the lady was present, but after she had gone I repeated the question.] guard

(When?) this evening.

(I don't know.) the guard has gone away.

(Will she return?) [Thinking that she might mean that S. M. had taken her final departure.] Yes. did she not tell you?

(I don't remember that she told me anything in particular.) She said she would.

(What?) In your study you turned your head. [Here Doris said, "I am terribly nervous." She evidently was not enjoying herself, and the hour was late, so we stopped.]

[S. M. returned that night just after D. went to sleep. I asked] ("What did the board mean about you?) The board? What did it say? (You know, don't you?) Certainly not, what did it say? (It asked, 'Was she here?' and when I asked who, wrote the letter, g, but after the visitor had gone, wrote 'guard.') I have been gone today. Did you hear me this afternoon? You turned your head. (That's what the writer through the board said.) How did that one know? (I don't know, I am sure. But I don't remember hearing anything in particular.) While you were writing in your study I spoke to you, and you turned your head, but I guess it didn't get to your consciousness."

*Sitting on June 29, 1914, Evening.*

Doris, W. F. P., Mrs. P.

(Who is here?) guard.

(The guard?) one.

(How many are there?) Three.

(Where is the guard?) Here.

(Does 'here' mean on your side or with her?) With her.

(Is there some message you would like to give tonight?) What did you find out about the guard calling?

(Don't you know about it?) I do not know whether or not you heard.



(I did not. Did I ever hear before?) Yes, one night.

(Why did not Mrs. Prince?) It was for you.

[Doris, "What did you hear"?]

(Is it right for me to tell what I heard,—just that?) Yes.

[I told Doris about my first hearing my name called at night.]

(Will she try again?) Yes, only more.

(Does that mean that she will try harder?) Yes.

(Will I succeed in hearing?) Yes.

(Is it better for me to know when, and be expecting, or not?)

It does not make much difference.

(Might it not, if I were type-writing at the time?) No.

(Why didn't I hear that time?) She went off [736]

(Do you mean the second or third time?) Both.

(She went off both times?) Yes.

(Where the second time?) I didn't know about that. She tried twice in one half-hour.

(Yes, that is right. By second, you meant the second *date*? You understand?) Yes.

(How is it that she does not know how you know?) We are in different places. She has other work to do.

(In that case how did you know that she tried?) I know, what she does.

(When did she come back?) This evening.

(Do you know when she will try again?) No. Are you going to New York? [737]

(I don't know. Should we?) Perhaps, if you would take money she could help pay for the ranch.

(No, I am not willing. Is it likely to pay otherwise than in money to go to New York?) I do not know.

(Do you know what I mean—evidentially?) Yes.

(Do you think that your suggestion that I should make use of her as a paid psychic is a good one—do you approve of it yourself?) [738] No.

736. Meaning Doris, who went on a ride.

737. Dr. Hyslop had written, proposing that I should take Doris to New York for the purpose of having experiments made in the way of psychical research.

738. She may have referred to taking pay for her time in New York, though this had not been proposed and would not have been considered.



(Why did you ask?) It seems to be a waste of energy.

(Then you did suggest it seriously?) Yes. The guard is trying to hustle up some experiment to prove what she said.

(But that has nothing to do with the money, has it?) No.

(But you did suggest it seriously?) Yes, I happened to see the guard and told you.

(But I understood you to say that you did not approve of the suggestion?) No.

(Then why did you make it?) I don't know.

(If I had liked the idea, wouldn't you have approved?) No, not after I had thought.

(Do you know what had been going on before you began to write?) Yes.

(What do you think of Mrs. X.'s work?) [Referring to the work of the automatic writer with whom I have been having experiments.] Not much.

(Do spirits have anything to do with it?) Not any that I ever knew.

(Do you think that anything gets through from the other side in her work?) No.

(Hadn't she better stop?) Mrs. X.?

(No, Doris.) Yes.

The hands of Doris and myself were on the board during the foregoing writing, and it was produced with the greatest facility and legibility yet. Doris was not at all tired when she began, and was in most excellent spirits, a condition which always favors her work.

She never watches the words as they are being written. Tonight she was laughing and talking much of the time, during the actual writing, often looking at Mrs. P., and talking in a stream upon irrelevant topics, and the writing went on uninterruptedly. I could not detect any alteration in speed or legibility, any hesitancy whatever in the writing, when she began to talk from time to time.

Afterwards S. M. vehemently disapproved of taking pay. She said that she was watching during the writing, which was performed just after Mrs. X. had left the house.



*Sitting on July 1, 1914.*

Doris, W. F. P., Mrs. P.

There were no results. Doris was quite weary at the time of the attempt.

*Sitting on July 22, 1914, 3.30 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

(Anyone here?) Yes.

(Who?) One of the g

(Anything you would like to say?) Are you going away?

(I don't think so, this season. Perhaps later. Anything to say?) The guard is gone away for awhile.

(What for?) To try and hurry up the proofs.

(Do you think they will be given?) Yes.

(Do you know why the delay is?) It is hard to get some of the necessary things thro.

(Is the trouble on this side or the other?) The other.

(But you think it will be fixed up?) Yes.

(Has anything happened lately that you know of?) No.  
[739]

(If there has anything happened out of common, do you suppose that anyone knows about it?) Yes.

(Why doesn't the one who knows let me know?) Nothing has happened from this side.

(Do you know what I refer to?) Yes.

(Do you have any idea when *the* guard will get it fixed up?) No.

(Did *the* guard have anything to do with my name being pronounced several months ago?) Yes.

(Then if I heard anything within a week it didn't come from your side?) Not that we know of there may be lots of things we dont know.

(Will anybody but guards ever write again?) Yes.

(Do you see any way to go to New York with this chicken business on hand?) No.

---

739. I had in mind the hallucination of a voice which I had experienced on the night of July 17-18.



(Anything you would like to say?) Not now if it were me I would postpone the chicken business.

(Willing to say why?) It might be more important.

(Have you reason to suppose that all could not be done another year as well as this?) No.

(I meant Hyslop's work. Did you so understand?) Yes.

(Do you think all could be done as well?) Yes but when you get settled and your chicken business started it would not be wise to leave them.

(We had better close?) Yes. [740]

*Sitting on Oct. 8, 1914, 7 p. m.*

Doris, W. F. P.

(Anyone here?) I have not heard from you for a long time.

(Did you wish to do so?) Yes.

(Who is it?) guard.

(Don't the guards have names?) no.

(How shall I know if it is the same guard?) by what I say.

(How many guards have written for me?) two.

(How many are there?) three.

(What do you think of the girl's progress?) I dont know what you mean.

(Doesn't she seem better in health than when you last wrote?) Yes.

(What do you think of the New York plan?) [Meaning the plan for Doris to go on alone.] Fine.

(Can you help to make it a success?) Yes we guards like New York.

(Have you ever been in New York?) Yes.

(Is that the reason that you can help in the case, because it is in New York?) Yes.

(Can you tell why you will help better in New York?) [No answer.]

(Are you still there?) [No answer.]

---

740. The comparatively fluent writing of the last sittings had been invariably by the guard.



## APPENDIX A.

**Total Alternations Between Real Doris, Margaret and Sick  
Doris, and Daily Averages of Real Doris's Conscious  
Life, Month by Month.**

Year and Month	Monthly Number of Alternations	Daily Average Time of R. D.
1911. March 17-31	152	7 h. 16 m.
April	513	8 h. 15 m.
May	481	8 h. 45 m.
June	278	11 h. 01 m.
July	178	11 h. 41 m.
August	296	17 h. 13 m.
September	237	19 h. 34 m.
October	264	19 h. 15 m.
November	222	20 h. 32 m.
December	212	21 h. 04 m.
1912. January	174	19 h. 53 m.
February	126	21 h. 21 m.
March	88	22 h. 26 m.
April	116	21 h. 46 m.
May	202	21 h. 16 m.
June	138	21 h. 48 m.
July	246	20 h. 15 m.
August	168	21 h. 17 m.
September	112	21 h. 52 m.
October	154	21 h. 20 m.
November	142	21 h. 54 m.
December	164	21 h. 23 m.
1913. January	138	21 h. 59 m.
February	90	22 h. 04 m.
March	120	22 h. 17 m.
April	106	22 h. 39 m.
May	84	22 h. 50 m.
June	88	22 h. 49 m.
July	88	22 h. 30 m.
August	88	22 h. 42 m.
September	82	22 h. 45 m.
October	104	22 h. 41 m.
November	68	22 h. 58 m.
December	68	22 h. 59 m.
1914. January	92	22 h. 16 m.
February	54	23 h. 06 m.
March	40	23 h. 28 m.
To April 19	20	23 h. 32 m.
After April 19	None	24 h.











## APPENDIX B

The statements of M. and those of S. M., in the accompanying table, are, though at times incomplete, consistent with each other, with one exception, those regarding the location of S. M. This was the one case where M. professed not to be able to "see", and where she was therefore reduced to the necessity of reasoning, and according to S. M., reasoned incorrectly, because she did not take into account that her own location changed when out, as she was when she became aware that there was another personality. In addition, on October 26th, S. M. generally endorsed M.'s scheme, with the exception referred to above. I never asked questions regarding the subject after November 30th, 1911, but there were from time to time spontaneous remarks by both M. and S. M., which were always consistent. On October 27th S. M. remarked that M. could judge better than herself regarding the seats of the personalities, "because she moves about and can see better." This coincides with her statement that her own position never varied.

According to S. M. on October 9th, M. outlined the scheme to S. D., several years before, and had always believed it. S. D. never referred to it in conversation with me, but this is in harmony with her reticent character. R. D. knows nothing about it to the date of this writing (May, 1915.) Whether there can be any scientific basis for the scheme, intuitively discerned, or introspectively and directly viewed, is left to others to judge. If not, it is certainly a *tour de force* of invention and memory.

Summarizing the statements, they declare that when any personality (except S. M., who had a fixed location, which was technically neither "out" nor "in", which fact would differentiate her from the others in a manner somewhat corresponding with her differentiating psychical peculiarities and relations) was out, that is, supraliminal, it moved forward and operated through the frontal brain. When in, that is subliminal, R. D. occupied considerable space quite high and somewhat forward of the ear in the right hemisphere of the brain, and after S. D.'s departure this included the former



territory of both with a slight forward advance. S. D. had occupied a territory extensive compared with those of M. and S. M., situated in the right hemisphere, back of and below that of R. D. By analogy with M. we would suppose that she receded during her declension but this was not stated. M. was in the left hemisphere, and occupied but little space, further back than that of R. D. but forward of S. D. This was when she was in her prime, but when her declension came she gradually went farther back. She was also half above and half below the rim of the ear, a little lower down than S. D. She came forward a little when watching. S. M.'s very small fixed territory was about one-half of an inch above the ear on the left side, higher than and forward of that occupied by M. Both R. D. and S. D. were in "the true brain", but M. and S. M. were located "in the other brain, below on the left side."

The order of the personalities from the frontal lobe towards the occipital, according to the statements, was as follows: (1) R. D., (2) S. M., (3) M., (4) S. D.; the order from the superior region of the brain downwards was (1) R. D., (2) S. D., (3) S. M., (4) M.

No statement was at any time made regarding the seat of S. R. D.

In May, 1915, I asked S. M. to state the location of the personalities. As I expected, she was unable to do so, and said "I used to tell you the locations because I was describing what I saw, but all that (except my own location) has passed away, and I did not charge my memory with what was of no use any longer."



n.

e

er

er

U.

ist  
le

er  
is.







# INDEX

COMPILED BY R. H. GREAVES.

## A'-ah

A'-ah; 133.  
A-ah'; 133.  
Abdominal swelling; 92, 237, 620, 1018, 1054, 1162. through nervousness; 1221. Tantrums and; 604.  
Abnormal; 134. and normal minds; 52.  
Abou Ben Adhem; 195.  
Aboulia; 134.  
Abstract conceptions not understood by S. D.; 71.  
    *See Mentality.*  
Abstraction; Method of inducing; Boris Sidis; 340.  
Accident; R. D. banished by; 1156, 1158.  
Account book; 988.  
Acquaintances: of M. not recognized by R. D.; 737. of S. D. not recognized by R. D.; 593, 737, 762.  
Actions: Some: of R. D. characteristic of M.; 1255.  
Ada; 151, 153, 339, 387, 399, 401, 535, 536, 898. calls at rectory; 538. discusses the case; 410. K.; 390. Letter from R. D. to; 720. Letter to R. D. from; 720, 721, 723. Note from: re Mr. Fischer; 410. R. D. vanishes at sight of; 592.  
Ada's; R. D. came out at; 258.  
"Address" of M.; 868.  
Adelaide; 340, 346. seen by televoyance; 335, 336, 337, 738.  
Adeline; 630.  
Adoption; Different personalities take different views of; 454. Relative of Dr. Prince caused the; 1284. Relative of Dr. Prince caused the: that he might communicate; 1300. S. D. objects to; 454, 495, 502. S. D. b's objection to; 459.  
Advance of R. D. measured by M.'s retreat; 1029.  
Advice: given by M.; *See Margaret.* given by S. D.; 473. given by S. M.; *See Sleeping Margaret, Care,*

## Alternation Stimuli

given by Dr. Walker; 447, 612, 699, 750.  
Æsthesia; 134. Thermal; 116.  
Affairs; S. M. attending to her own; 44, 1127, 1134, 1144, 1262.  
Affectionate; M.; 38. S. D. not; 38, 39, 69, 71, 238.  
    *See Attachment.*  
Afraid; M. on porch; 979. R. D.: at night; 979.  
Africans; Pictures of; 401.  
After-image; 818.  
After-images of emotions of other personalities; 47.  
"Afternoon? What is"; 834.  
Age of M.; 240, 295, 309, 351, 354, 420.  
Agitation; brings M. out; 939. R. D. banished by; 886.  
A-ha'; 305.  
Ahem; 1052.  
Alarm-clock; S. D. and the; 451, 479.  
Alcohol; Dislike of; M.'s; 756. Fondness for; S. D. cured M. of; 756.  
"All there is; D. is"; 242.  
Allowance; M. asks for; 972. M. wants; hidden from R. D.; 1007.  
Alma; 30, 151, 153, 376, 432. Aunt; 400. calls at rectory; 543. Letter from; 491. Letter to; from M.; 548.  
Altar-cloth; 294, 328.  
Alternation; 134. Emotion and; 732, 733. of M.-asleep x, and S. M.; 463. Signs of; 46. Stimuli: Psychic; producing; 443.  
    *See Alternations, Appearances, Butted in, Disappearance, Ducking under, Go, Goes, Possession, Switching.*  
Alternation Stimuli; *See Accident, Agitation, Anxiety, Automatism, Automatism, Bell, Cat, Christmas tree, Constipation, Crying, Depressants, Disagreeable, Disappointment, Disgust, Dreams, Embarrass-*



## Alternations

*ment, Emotion, Emotional, Excitement, Exertion, Fear, Ferris waist, Fight, Grievance, Interest, Memories, Misunderstanding, Mouse, Nervousness, Noises, Overwork, Pain, Parrot, Photograph, Pin-prick, Pleasure, Present, Shocks, Shouting, Stitch, Supersensitiveness, Surprise, Sympathy, Thinking, Thunder, Toothache, Uncertainty, Worried, Worry.*

Alternations; 83, 88, 478, 511, 516, 573.  
 Differences in: S. M. on: 511.  
 Dreams cause: 531.  
 Excitement caused: 271, 1105.  
 Forty: in a day: 32.  
 Frequent: 549, 931.  
 Frequent: explained by S. M.; 991.  
 Fright; Due to: 430.  
 during funeral: 220.  
 on the hour, half hour, and quarter hour: 581.  
 Jerk of head precedes: 83.  
 M. and R. D.; 515, 931.  
 M. and S. D.; 77, 217, 309.  
 Memories cause: 531.  
 Mystifying: 250.  
 Noise causes: 444, 519, 562.  
 Number of: 32, 98.  
 Order of: 228.  
 Pain resulted in: 171, 404, 417, 418, 428, 436, 450, 456, 500, 556, 672, 687, 689, 972.  
 Rapid: 309, 456, 525, 562, 644, 647.  
 of R. D. and S. D.; 256.  
 Recorded nightly: 414, 415.  
 Reduction in number of: 98.  
 Rest through: 782.  
 S. M.'s comings are not: 1254.  
 Sudden: 1202.  
 Table of: 1330.  
 Triple: 366.  
 Worry causes: 851.  
 See *Alternation, Alternation Stimuli.*

A Margaret: 128.  
 Amnesia; 134, of M. Haitisch: 261.  
 of M.; 93, 107, 643, 751, 827. of S. D.; 225, 229, 472.  
 See *Memory.*

Amused: M.: by accent of rector: 478. by M.; R. D.: 153, 156, 158, 159. S. M.: by M.; 557. S. M.: by ideas of Dr. Prince: 335.  
 Amusement of S. D. at M.; 424.

## Anæsthetic

Anæsthesia; 134.  
 Auditory: of M.; 606.  
 Auditory: of M. outside visual angle; 955.  
 Auditory: of S. D.; 434, 456.  
 Back and thighs of S. M.; 125.  
 Cuts and bruises of S. D.; 124.  
 External: of S. D.; 491.  
 Gustatory: of M.; 38, 95, 125, 675, 679, 750, 915, 974.  
 Gustatory: of S. D.: 481.  
 Gustatory: of S. D. b; 459.  
 Internal: of M.; 491.  
 Hypnotic and hysteric: 789.  
 On left side; 1168, 1169, 1181.  
 Muscular: as M. declined; 38, 95, 125, 354, 667, 672, 673, 696, 722, 1010, 1025, 1219, 1230.  
 Muscular: of S. D.; 468.  
 Olfactory: of M.; 750.  
 Partial: of S. D.; 123.  
 of S. D.; 312, 420, 427, 452, 482, 497.  
 of S. D. deepened; 41, 82.  
 Tactile: Dexter-lateral: 1196. of M. asleep: 666, 983. as M. declined; 38, 125, 750, 927, 981, 1168, 1169. not observable in M.; 38. of S. D.; 124, 434, 456, 468, 481. of S. D. b; 459. Sinister-lateral: 1168, 1169, 1181.  
 Tests for: 480, 589.  
 Thermal: of M.; 125.  
 Thermal: of R. D.; 123.  
 Thermal: of S. D.; 41, 124.  
 Thighs of S. M.; 125.  
 See *Anæsthesias, Anæsthetic, Analgesia, Feeling, Hemianæsthesia.*

Anæsthesias; Table of: 123.  
 Anæsthetic;  
 Bladder of R. D.: 123, 820, 866, 873.  
 Hands: Backs of M.'s: become: 933. Palms of M.'s: 682.  
 Internal organs; M. not anæsthetic in: 739.  
 Margaret; 107, 108, 123. M. more anæsthetic on back of hand than on palm: 682. M. becomes wholly: 1003.  
 Sick Doris always anæsthetic; 214, 215. S. D. anæsthetic on left; 423. S. D. partially anæsthetic; 235, 237.



## Analgesia

Urino-genital tract: of R. D.: 123. of S. D.: 124.  
 See *Anæsthesia*.  
 Analgesia; 134, 240. as to internal organs of S. D.; 124.  
 See *Anæsthesia*.  
 Analytical; S. M.: 44.  
 Anger; See *Angry, Blames, Cross, Hatred, Irritation, Rages, Revenge, Subnormal, Sulky, Sullenness, Threatening, Vicious*.  
 Anger not comprehended by S. D.; 215.  
 Angry; M.: 596, 979. with Dr. Prince; 812. with R. D.; 852. with stairs; 866.  
 See *Anger*.  
 Animals distinguished between M. and S. D.; 233, 526.  
 Anise water; 605.  
 Ankle; Tuberculosis in: 145, 253. Operation on: 253.  
 Annoy; Tendency of M. to: 96.  
 "Antipodes": M. the: of S. M.; 464, 557.  
 Ants; 618.  
 Anxiety: of other personalities to have R. D. stay out would prevent it; 839. of R. D. about Mr. Fischer; 398. of R. D. to stay out banishes her; 1130.  
 Anxious; M.: 556.  
 Apathetic; S. D.: 495.  
 "A-phase going"; 1321.  
 Apparition of Mrs. Fischer seen by R. D.; 58, 59, 244, 442, 1042, 1043.  
 See *Hallucination*.  
 Appearance: Changed: of R. D.; 120.  
 Appearances of R. D.; 34. very brief; 71.  
 See *Alternation*.  
 Appetite: of M.; 201, 526, 565, 650. of M. decreasing; 590, 654. of M. enormous; 38, 526. of R. D.; 565, 654. of S. D. deficient; 38, 41, 526.  
 Apple; M. asleep ate: 1186.  
 Approves: M.: of treatment of S. D.; 488.  
 Arithmetic; Mental: 1200.  
 Arm; Stretching: 432.  
 Arms: around neck: 518. stretched out during sleep; 669.  
 Articles of Faith; Seven: 322.  
 Artist; S. D. imagined herself an: 74.  
 Asa; 133, 559, 656, 658, 746, 748, 754, 757, 775, 785, 788, 807, 813, 819, 825, 871. no; 701, 702, 708.

## Automatism

"Ashamed of me; R. D. is": M. says: 913.  
 Askew; Anne: Martyrdom of: 821.  
 Asleep; M.: See *Margaret Asleep*.  
 Asleep; M. left D. when: 376, 377. M. let go while: 542. M.: at table; 1035. R. D.: 795. S. M. never: 490. S. M. talked when M. was: 73. S. M. talked when R. D. was: 476. on street; S. D.; 357, 364, 365, 371, 385.  
 Assimilated; Dr. Walker expected S. D. to be: 447.  
 Assistance given by S. M.; 89.  
 Association: causes fright: 525. of ideas causes sore throat; 962.  
 See *Psychical Causes*.  
 Attachment: Dog-like: of S. D.; 39.  
 See *Affectionate*.  
 Attention: M.'s volume of: is small; 594, 927. S. D.'s capacity for: limited; 551, 556.  
 Auditory anæsthesia; See *Anæsthesia, Hearing*.  
 Auditory hallucination; See *Hallucination, Hearing*.  
 Auditory hallucinations; See *Hallucinations, Hearing*.  
 Auditory hyperæsthesia; See *Hearing, Hyperæsthesia*.  
 Aunt Alma; 400.  
 Aunt Maria; 161, 163, 168, 178.  
 Autobiographic testimony; 149.  
 Auto-intoxication; 54.  
 See *Psychical Causes*.  
 Automatic; 134. fabrication; 40, 260. falsehood; 148. reactions of M.; 38. speaking of S. D.; 216. speaking of S. M.; 43. voice; 876. walking; 277.  
 See *Automatism*.  
 Automatic Writing; "Emma": 1271. "Emma" in blank book: 1302. by M.; 59, 1022, 1180, 1269, 1270, 1272, 1278, 1279. M. discovers pencil during: 1269. M.-asleep: 1269, 1271. Mrs. Montague; 1273. S. M. comments on: 1271, 1307, 1308. S. M. talks while M. does: 1270.  
 See *Planchette*.  
 Automatically; S. D. continuing work: 526.  
 Automatism; 134. Motor: of R. D.; 1224. Physical: due to habit of S. R. D.; 954. S. D. banished by an: 429.  
 See *Automatic, Automatism*.



## Automatism

Automatisms; M.'s: 713. Motor: of M.; 38, 91. not negligible; 429. in pairs; 975. during sleep; M.'s: 603, 616. in response to stimuli; 589. Verbal: of M.; 38, 91, 569, 573, 586, 949, 993, 1041, 1105, 1157, 1158, 1221, 1244.

See *Automatism*.

Auto-suggestion; 101, 226, 260, 828. Deferred: 978. *re* falling down stairs; 845, 846, 852. a success in case of R. D.; 850.

See *Psychical Causes*.

Aves; Bishop: 1237.

Awareness: Four degrees of: in M.; 50.

See *Consciousness*.

Away; 129, 606, 692, 699.

Dream about running: 893.

Go: 130.

M.: 535.

M.: from D.; 305, 306, 307.

M. wants to go: till R. D. is well; 543, 877, 884.

M. not: when R. D. is out; 547.

M.: and resting; 547.

M.: twice when R. D. was out; 1037.

M.: when S. D. is out; 547.

R. D. always: when another is out; 551.

S. D. always: when another is out; 551. and sleeping; 130, 547.

S. M.: 648, 692, 975.

S. M. goes: so that Dr. Prince can watch the process; 1030.

S. M.: when M. is awake; 1040.

S. M.: when M. is out and asleep, and Dr. Prince is watching; 551, 598, 1034.

S. M. often; 1241.

S. M. begins to go: when R. D. is out; 640.

S. M.: only when R. D. is out; 1130.

S. M.: when R. D. is safe; 89, 1030.

S. M.: at signal; Goes: 1173.

S. M.: for thirty minutes; 888.

and watching; 129, 547, 699.

B.; Dan: 704.

B.; Miss: 193.

B.; S. D. signs herself: 736.

Babbling: 132, 731, 732, 790, 820. in sleep; R. D.: 729.

## Bed

Babies; Birth of: 676, 677, 712, 841. Black and white: 712. in pictures; 1127. Hideous, beautiful: 1120.

Baby "that don't know nothing": 87. M. "never" a: 354. M. wants a: in the house; 841. S. D. giggled and gurgled like a: 555. utterances of Infant Sick Doris; 86.

Back; Anæsthesia in: 125. itching during sleep; 915. massaged; 559. Sleep on: Tendency of M. to: 701, 702.

Backache; 651, 671, 674, 681, 966, 1023, 1225, 1227, 1228. for five years; 92, 559, 595, 633.

Bad; M.'s conception of meaning of the word: 295.

Baker; Mr.: 360.

Ball; Rubber: 160.

Baltimore; Battle of: 190.

Banish; S. D. difficult to: 501. S. D.; Severe measures to: 488, 527.

See *Banishment*.

Banished; S. D. sometimes: easily; 493, 510. S. D.: by placing hand over eyes; 500. S. D.: by Dr. Prince slapping his own hand; 517.

See *Banishment*.

Banishment; See *Banish*, *Banished*, *Declension*, *Disappear*, *Disappearance*, *Dissolution*, *Exorcise*, *Exorcism*, *Expulsion*, *Formula*, *Go*, *M-formula*, *Obliteration*, *P-formula*, *Possession*, *Restored*, *Retracing*, *Retrogression*.

Bank; 566. balance; R. D. worrying over: 1090.

Baptism of S. D.; 280, 281.

Barrel; Ring in: 303, 306. Vase in: 303.

Bath; cold: M. threatens to take: 794. M. comes in: 975.

Bathroom: key of: removed by Dr. Prince; 1038. M. comes in: 1017, 1029. M. and lock on door of: 1022. M. locked herself in: 1185.

Beacham; 612.

Beauchamp; 612.

Beauchamp Case; 23, 30, 61, 148.

Becky; 996, 997.

Bed clothes; S. R. D. and: 900.

Bed; Fall out of: Dream makes R. D.: 549. Fell out of: M.: 395. Fell out of: R. D.: 901. Filthy: destroyed by M.; 241. on floor; 966. moved, puzzles M.; 1068.



## Bed-time

Playing in: M.: 351. Purchase of: 231. M. stands up in: 775, 777, 779, 781. S. D. stands up in: 100, 102.  
Bed-time; 1032. M. always appeared at: 66.  
Beer and Bliss; 882.  
Belfast Address; 710, 714.  
Belinda; 183.  
Bell; M. frightened by: 955. R. D. banished by ringing of: 1047.  
Belongings; S. D. disclaims her: 470. S. D. b finds her: at Dr. Prince's; 459.  
Belt; Hidden: 796.  
Better; R. D.: if M. does not come in morning; 1088.  
Bible; 195, 460.  
Bicycle; S. M.'s warning *re*: 1257.  
Big; M. says Dr. Prince "gets awful": 555.  
Bill; 376, 1185.  
Billy offered to Dr. Hyslop; 1175.  
Bimorphosis; 30, 134.  
"Birdie; Hear the pretty": 1157, 1158.  
Birds distinguished between M. and S. D.; 526.  
"Birth" of R. D.; 61, 137.  
Biscuits and cheese; 918.  
Bishop of Mexico; 1237.  
Bladder anæsthetic; R. D.'s: 123, 820, 866, 873. Pain in: 883, 890, 894. Sensation begins in R. D.'s: 126. See *Urino-genital Tract*.  
Blames Dr. Prince; M.: 1062. R. D.: 1062.  
See *Anger*.  
Blanket "feels like spiders"; 824.  
Blend; M. will never: 447, 490, 573.  
Blind; R. D.'s sight improved when M. became: 119, 126, 1195. S. M. sees better when M. is: 1194, 1198. See *Vision*.  
Blindness; M. reduced to: 38, 108, 115, 976, 1017, 1048, 1051, 1192, 1204, 1207, 1230. Psychological: of M.: 108, 109. M. walking when: 1197.  
See *Vision*.  
Bliss; Beer and: 882.  
"Blotted out": R. D. almost: by heat: 93.  
"Blow": in forehead: Effects of the: on R. D.: 787. S. M. makes M. feel: 90, 623. on left side of head; S. M. makes M. feel: 810. See *Jolt*.

## "Brudder"

Body a burden to R. D.; 553. of Mrs. Fischer; S. D. and the: 215. lying like a log; 597. M. had relation left side of: 98. M. forgets names of parts of: 1149. recovers fastest when M. is out; 465.  
Boils; 694, 955, 958, 1016.  
Book of pictures; Blank: 77.  
Booker; Mr.: 484.  
Boone; Dr.: 1219, 1225.  
Borax; 953.  
Bored; M.: 94. S. M.: 855.  
Borrowing money from Mrs. M.; 216. "Bosh!"; 335.  
Bother; M. thinks she is a: 507. R. D. thinks she is a: 526.  
Bourne; Ansel: 30, 135.  
Box; 402.  
Brain; "corners of our": 506. M.'s location in: 441. M.'s location: occupied by R. D.; 944. mental working of the: S. M. sees the: 741. Movements registered in: S. M. sees: 786. Pain in: 209. R. D.'s: S. M. explains condition of: 936. "Seats of personalities" in the: 90, 441, 465, 720, 721, 722, 740, 741, 743, 1331. S. M. "part of" the: 768. Soul and: 54. Thoughts registered on: 793.  
See *Consciousness*.  
Brandt; Grandfather: 137. Heartlessness of: 140, 141.  
Brandt; Grandmother: Flowers from grave of: 161.  
Brandt; Leonard: 523.  
Brashear; Dr.: 199, 926, 928. "Crazy" letter from: 1032. Letters from: 1002, 1015, 1032. Letters to: 994, 1010, 1018, 1024, 1025, 1192. Plate for: 1009. S. M.'s letter to: 112, 1002. "Twisted ideas" of: 1016.  
Breathing; M. hears: of Dr. Prince; 976. Reduced: 597.  
See *Hyperæsthesia*.  
Breket; Wood for: 1216.  
Briand; Marcel: 1084.  
Bridge; High Street: 388.  
Bridget; 25, 76, 127, 201, 240, 305, 419, 459, 1284.  
Brooding; R. D.: 919, 922, 925, 1019. See *Melancholy*.  
Brow-beaten by Mr. Fischer; S. D.: 251.  
"Brudder; Aint got any": 1243.



## Bruises

Bruises; M. subnormal as to cuts and: 38, 123. S. D. anæsthetic as to cuts and: 124.

Buckets of water on a rope; 478.  
"Bug"; 1115.

Bugs; 603, 1181, 1191.

Bumped; 131.

Bun; cinnamon: 1088.

Burned finger; M.: 805.

Business Women's Club; 230.

Butcher's; Mistakes at the: 229.

"Butted in"; 924, 927.

See *Alternation*.

Buttermilk; 828.

Buttons off coat; M. pulled: 358.

By-play during sleep; M.'s: 763.

C.; Grandma: 416.

C—; "Grandmother": 387.

C—; Mr.: 190.

Cajolery; 190.

See *Shrewdness*.

Cake; 372, 398, 431, 433. M. asleep asks for: 368. Nut: 1096.

Calculations; Monetary: 328, 355, 356, 360, 404, 1141.

See *Counting*.

California; Call to: 934. Dream about going to: 938. S. M. advises re journey to: 948.

Call; R. D. makes long: 978. R. D. brought out by: 1177.

Called out by S. M.; M.: 476.

Canaries; 930. M. tried to kill: 304. and sparrow; 537.

Canary; 765. Accident to: 906. Anxiety about: 935. dead: 980.

ill; 775, 777. Killed by cat; 1006. "Squeezing" a: 304.

Cancer; Imaginary: 262.

Candy; M. eating when asleep; 763. M. loses interest in: 642, 652, 1078.

M.'s liking for: 169, 431, 492, 516, 642, 665, 967. M. brought out by handling: 831. M. brought out by present of: 474. M. makes R. D.

snatch at: 637. R. D.'s liking for: 98. 169, 642, 654, 665.

Cans on street; Rolling: 183.

Capability of M.; 241.

Car; M. tried to board: 718. M. came out on: 406, 921. M. tried to ride on: for a cent: 362.

Cards; Christmas: 169.

Care of; S. D. wants someone to take: 458.

## Change

Care of S. M. for R. D.; 67, 73, 91, 158, 490, 830, 1020, 1131, 1140, 1209.

See *Advice, Danger, Directions, Guard, Prayers, Warning, Warnings, Watched, Watching*.

Carey; Mr.: 1177, 1179, 1201, 1210, 1224, 1229.

Car-fare; 406. Fund for: S. D.'s: 480.

Carriage of R. D. and M. compared; 568.

Cartoons; 399, 400. Humor in: M. cannot appreciate: 1010. of Dr. Prince; M. makes: 267.

Cases; Similar: 1144.

Cassock; M. tore up material for: 349.

Cat; 881, 1006. R. D. banished by: 1174.

Catalepsy; 72, 82, 134, 234, 311, 334, 342, 345, 366, 367, 377, 379, 606, 678. Comatose condition following: 423. the only rest; 33.

See *Cataleptic, Staring*.

Cataleptic; slumber; 223. staring; 335, 582.

See *Catalepsy*.

Catamenia; 92, 93, 492, 553, 604, 676, 706, 709, 902, 972, 973, 989, 1007, 1008, 1022, 1023, 1024, 1036, 1070, 1087, 1102, 1124, 1134, 1149, 1164, 1175, 1188, 1218, 1236, 1251, 1254.

Important bearing of: 415, 492, 1022. Pains during: 553, 894, 1022. S. M. says M. must be expected at time of: 836. re-commence; 93. 633. and tantrums; 486, 953.

See *Menses, Pelvic, Periodical, Period*.

Cat-nap habit; 930.

Cats; seeing; M.: 880.

Cats' tails in drawer; 185.

Causation; Mental: 55.

See *Psychical Causes*.

Causes; Physical and psychical: 54. Causes; Physical: See *Alternation Stimuli, Corsets, Fall, Mr. Fischer, Shock*.

Causes; Psychical: See *Alternation, Alternation Stimuli, Association, Auto-intoxication, Auto-suggestion, Causation, Causes, Dissociation*.

Cemetery; Dream of: 744. walks to: S. D.'s: 896.

Cents; objection of M. to: 362.

Change out of window; M. threw: 362.



## Characteristics

## Co-consciousness

- Characteristics: of M.; 37, 148. of the personalities; 149. of R. D.; 68, 143, 145. of S. D.; 39.
- Cheek of S. D. slapped by Dr. Prince; 479, 482.
- Cheeks; Pink; 831.
- Cheerfulness of M. brings R. D. out; 531.
- Cheese; 1090. Biscuits and; 918. Sandwiches; 1044.
- Cheque; book; 901. duplicated by R. D. as Phase A.; 944. for Dr. Walker; M.'s; 829.
- Chest: Pressure on: produces deafness; See *Mamma*.
- Chicken; baby: Story of; 797. business; 1261. killed by Dr. Prince; 928, 929. Dr. Prince told to postpone the business; 1329.
- Chickens: dying; 1234. M. sees: in R. D.'s mind; 1015. R. D. worrying about; 1023.
- Child: Killed by train; Dream of; 1156. M. "nothing but a"; 557, 911, 1250. questions R. D.; 550, 551.
- Childhood; Dream about; 666. Stories of: told automatically by M.; 1015.
- Childish; M. becomes more; 95, 751, 1117.  
See *Mentality*.
- Childishness: of M.; 557, 723, 1019. of M.; catamenia and; 1023. of S. D.; 40, 85, 469, 479.  
See *Mentality*.
- Children: noticed difference between M. and S. D.; 233, 526. M. very fond of small; 242. Service for; 468.
- Chocolate; M. and; 920, 1183.
- Chocolates; R. D. asks for M.'s; 1056. Stolen; 159.
- "Choke Doris"; M. attempted to; 77, 313. M. threatened to; 309.
- "Choos hurt Baby"; 835.
- Chorea; 134.
- Christmas tree; Fall of; 1076. Parrot chews; 1074.
- Church; 686, 698, 854, 962, 1115, 1188. attendance harmful; 484, 535. M. in; 205, 358, 465, 482, 519, 718. M. opposed to; 592, 617, 653. M. wishes to go to; 984. Methodist; Leaves; 256. R. D. emerges in; 74. R. D. "forgot" in; 698. R. D. goes to; 451, 452, 473, 482, 574.
- R. D. and S. D. alternate in; 256. S. D. goes to; 74. S. D. in; 465, 482, 519. Societies; 770.
- Cigar; S. D. grasps lighted end of; 546. S. D. interested in smoke from; 538.
- Circus; 1184.
- Circus parade; 1018.
- Clairaudience; 134. of R. D.; 874.
- Clairvoyance; 134, 301, 302. of M.; 58, 738, 751. of R. D.; 58, 59, 244, 442. of S. D.; 58.
- Clarence; 867.
- Classification of cases; 28.
- Classifying tendency of S. D.; 70.
- Cleaning; house; M.; 212. room; S. D.; 474.
- Cleanliness; M.'s passion for; 166, 167, 241, 568.
- "Cleavage; Perpendicular"; 292.
- Cleveland; Rev. W. M.; 433, 902. M. dislikes; 905. Test by; 905.
- Cleverness of M.; 354, 417.  
See *Shrewdness*.
- Cliff; Dream of falling over; 763.
- Clock; M. counting strokes of; during sleep; 731.
- Closet; D. on shelf in; 303. M. curled up in; 694. M. hidden in; 769.
- Cloth; M. hides piece of; 778.
- Clothes; Hiding; 606. M. careful of R. D.'s; 969. S. D. says D.'s clothes are not hers; 506. Tearing; 90, 596.
- Clothing; S. D. gives away; 282. Taste in; changing; R. D.'s; 724.
- Cloudiness of R. D.'s mind; 1203, 1204.
- Clumsiness of M.; 722, 774.  
See *Feet*.
- "Cluster of thoughts"; M. called a; 349, 383, 441.  
See *Diagnosis, Dissociation*.
- Clutching; 669, 691.
- Coat; M. wants to buy; for a dollar; 773. making; reminds R. D. of S. D. days; 853.
- Co-conscious; M. remains; after her disappearance; 120. M.; when R. D. is out; 164, 165. R. D. not; when M. is out; 164. S. D.; with R. D. only; 48. S. D. ceases to be; when R. D. is out; 408.
- Co-consciousness; 882. Proof of;



## Code

876. Result of: of M. with R. D.; 1161.  
 See *Consciousness*.  
 Code used with planchette; 1279.  
 Coffee; 169, 744, 1098, 1231. in bed; M. has: 351.  
 Coin in handkerchief; 981.  
 Cold; M. becomes sensitive to: 705. M. makes S. D. feel: 312. of R. D.; 894. by "reflection"; R. D. gets a: 754, 759. Sensation of: R. D. had: in church; 575. by "suggestion"; R. D. gets a: 754.  
 Colder; M.: on left side; 451. R. D.: on right side; 451.  
 College Song; 613.  
 Colorado Avenue; 377, 727, 1008, 1064.  
 Comatose; condition following catalepsy; 423. condition of M.; 49. sleep of M.; 501.  
 See *Consciousness*.  
 Comforts Dr. Prince; M.: 483.  
 Coming: Sensations of: described by R. D.; 591. coming; S. M. knew when R. D. was: 681. Unusual ways of R. D.'s: 487.  
 Comments on dream by S. M.; 285.  
 Common-sense; 29.  
 Communion; 676.  
 Companions; S. D. could not make: 224.  
 See *Mentality*.  
 Complex; 134. M. a psychic: 407.  
 Comprehension: Dulling of: of M.; 106, 116, 117.  
 Conditions of the personalities; Diagrams of the: 499.  
 Conduct marks; 194.  
 Confidence: Winning: of M.; 79.  
 Confirmation; 281.  
 Confusion; 1135, 1137, 1161. disappearing; 114, 604, 1172. of R. D. at its height; 944. of R. D. on account of moving; 947.  
 See *Mentality*, *Perplexity*.  
 Congratulated: Dr. Prince: by S. M.; 528.  
 "Connected"; S. M. and M.: 557.  
 Conscious; M. always: at first; 181. M. nearly always: 42. M.: when R. D. was out; 416. M. not always: of what S. D. does; 440. M. once: of all that went on; 924. R. D.: less than three days in five years; 71. R. D. never: when in; 181, 393, 416, 418, 848. R. D. not:

## Coughing

for two months; 71. R. D. not: of S. R. D.; 45. S. D. no longer: of anyone but Dr. Prince; 546. S. D. not: when in; 317, 372, 385, 393, 424. S. D. not: of M.; 408. S. M. always: 42. S. M.: of R. D. when away; 1167. S. M.: of R. D.'s surroundings when away; 1252, 1253.  
 See *Consciousness*, *Mentality*.  
 Consciousness: Double: 516, 546, 808. Plane of: M. passes into another: 587. Plane of: M.'s: almost opaque to the new plane; 584. "Surface": 218. Triple: 572.  
 See *Awareness*, *Brain*, *Co-conscious*, *Comatose*, *Conscious*, *Intercognition*, *Mental*, *Mind*, *Mind-reading*, *Reactions*, *Self-consciousness*, *Sleep*, *Subconscious*, *Subliminal*, *Submerged*, *Thought*, *Thought-reading*, *Thoughts*, *Unconscious*.  
 Constipation; 430, 468, 638, 668, 671, 703, 706, 710, 714, 902, 921, 1003, 1127, 1148, 1169. a cause and an effect; 92.  
 Contempt: of M. for S. D.; 456. of S. D. for M.; 424.  
 Control: Double: 84. Motor: of S. M.; 807, 809, 1261, 1264. Motor: of S. M. in waking state: 792. Muscular: of S. M. when M. was out; 1238. of neck; M. loses: 835.  
 See *Feet*, *Hands*, *Head*, *Limbs*, *Stood*, *Twitching*, *Walked*.  
 Contusion on back of head; 538.  
 Convent; 294.  
 Convention; 1124.  
 Conversation: Sound of: lulls M.; 763.  
 Conversation recitals; 132, 246, 248, 321, 326, 330, 333, 344, 398, 400, 862. R. D. ignorant of: 790.  
 Conversations: between M. and R. D.; 47, 64, 158, 181. between M. and S. D.; 49, 420. between M. and S. D. ceased; 80, 395. Reproduction of: by S. R. D.; 45.  
 Converses: R. D.: for first time in three years and a half; 74, 257.  
 Cord; Pulling: 630, 631.  
 Corrected: Views of Dr. Prince: by S. M.; 610.  
 Corsets; 568, 807.  
 See *Physical Causes*.  
 Coughing; S. R. D.: 885.



## Counting

Counting; M.: 936, 1146.

See *Calculations*.

"Counting" pulse in sleep; 752.

Cow; The guilty: 166, 639, 640.

"Crack" made in R. D.; 73, 102, 246, 864.

See *Diagnosis*.

Cranky; M. made: by pain; 557.

Crash; Flash and: hallucination; 658.

Cricket-chirp; 132.

See *Verbal Automatism*.

Criticise; S. M. may: R. D.; but Dr.

Prince may not; 990.

Criticism by S. M.; 335.

Cross; M.: with R. D.; 651.

See *Anger*.

"Crossing the Bar"; 423.

Cruelty; of M. to S. D.; 38, 72. to S. D.; 472.

Crumbs; 466.

Crying; Alternation after: 512. Spell in church; 575. Spells; 971.

Cure; Good food assists: 264. Sleep assists: 267. S. M. advised as to:

See *Advice*. S. M. certain about:

964. spontaneous; might have

been: 67. by suggestion that there

is but one personality; Attempt to:

325. "astonishingly swift"; 32.

took three years and a half; 32.

Dr. Walker thought: impossible;

367.

Curiosity; lack of: R. D.'s: good for cure; 951. Morbid: of S. D.; 238.

See *Inquisitiveness*.

Curled up; S. D. lies: on left side; 371, 518.

Curtain; Blowing; frightens S. D.; 529.

Cutaneous itching and burning; 114.

Cuts; M. subnormal as to: and bruises; 38, 123. S. D. anæsthetic

as to: and bruises; 124.

Cwistmas; 826, 827, 832.

Cynicism; Philistine: 74.

Daddy; *Her*: 403.

Dan B.; 704.

Dances; 281.

Dancing; 188, 189, 328. lessons; 363.

Danger; S. M. communicated when D. was in: 463.

See *Care*.

"Dangling things"; 467.

Dark; M. saw in the: 98, 123, 292, 293, 743. R. D. comes in the: 507.

## Destruction

"Darn it!"; 66.

"Darned" stockings; 401.

Date on letter of M.; 1011, 1018.

Daughters; Two and a half: 434.

Day; from light; M. cannot tell: 825, 1039. from night; M. cannot tell:

1030, 1039. S. M. comes during: 1268.

Day-dreams; 195.

Dazed; S. D.: 495.

Deaconess W.; 912.

Deafness; Pressure on mammæ produces: 92, 551, 593, 606, 655.

Temporary: daily; 594.

"Dear"; 536. S. D. thinks her name is: 534.

Dears; S. D. calls eyes: 536, 556.

Death; of Mrs. Fischer; 68, 1292, 1293. of Mrs. Fischer by blow;

1288, 1291, 1292. M. knew nothing

of: 244. S. D. did not compre-

hend: 224. S. D. expecting: 282, 288.

Deceived; Dr. Prince: by S. M.; 1180.

Deception; M. explains: to S. D.; 271.

Declension of M.; 38, 82, 100, 464, 649, 705, 750, 794, 989, 1006, 1036,

1116, 1244. of M. affects R. D.;

1012. of S. D.; 82, 490, 532. of S.

D. caused mental and nervous

fatigue; 88.

See *Banishment*.

Decoration Day parade; 582.

Delusions; banished; 78. Hysterical:

74. of S. D. made known to R. D.;

80. S. M. distressed by record of

S. D.'s: 611. vanished; 78.

See *Hallucination*.

Demonstrative; M.: 38. S. D. not:

38.

Dependent; M. becomes more: 751.

Depressants; M. brought out by: 171.

See *Depression*.

Depression; 614, 1010.

See *Brooding*, *Depressants*,

*Gloomy*, *Melancholy*, *Worried*,

*Worry*, *Worrying*.

Descriptive title of the case; 31.

Desires of R. D. manifested through M.; 780, 967.

Desk; Purchase of: 232.

Destruction of property; 241, 283, 284, 291, 294, 296, 314, 324, 328, 356, 360.



## "Detachedness"

"Detachedness": Psychic: of S. M.; 784.

Detachment of S. M.; 584.

Detective story causes dream; 853.

Development of S. D.; 70.

Devil; 1089.

Diagnosis of eye-strain; 115. Incorrect: 335, 342, 345, 750, 751, 766, 888, 1219, 1225.

See *Cluster, Crack, Eye-strain, Fissures, Nature, Dr. Owen, Part, Personalities, Shamming, Split, Subconscious, Subliminal, Thoughts, Dr. Walker, Dr. X.*

Diagrams of conditions of the personalities; 499.

Dialect; Rubberneck Row; 284.

"Diaries" of M.; 314, 328.

Diary; Dr. Prince's; 1028.

"Dibble"; 113, 1093, 1097.

Dick; 458.

Dictating; S. M.: while M. stroked and smacked Dr. Prince; 738.

Die; R. D. glad when told she was to: 33. S. M. offers to make R. D.; 612.

Differences of inclination; 605, 606.

Differences between the personalities; 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 419, 449, 558, 568, 571, 604, 610, 784, 820, 830, 863, 874, 1099, 1134.

See *Abstract, Affectionate, Anæsthesia, Antipodes, Apathetic, Appetite, Arms, Asleep, Baby, Bed, Blind, Blindness, Breathing, Bruises, Characteristics, Childishness, Clutching, Clumsiness, Coffee, Cold, Colder, Comparisons, Contempt, Control, Conversation Recitals, Cuts, Dark, Day, Dazed, Demonstrative, Detachedness, Detachment, Differences, Different, Distance, Docile, Doll, Dolls, Drawer, Drawers, Dressing, Duty, Eat, Embroidery, Evasive, Exacting, Expression, Feeling, Foods, Grief, Hair, Humor, Hunger, Hyperæsthesia, Identity, Impropriety, Individuality, Infant, Iolt, Iolting, Judgment, Knowledge, Language, Laugh, Mentality, Morphine, Pictures, Pities, Pity, Reserved, Smile, Stood,*

## Dissociation

*Taciturnity, Undressing, Taste, Tastes, Voice, Walked.*

Differences: between R. D. and M.; 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 710. of taste; 605, 606.

Different: M. feels that she is: from R. D.; 417. M. and S. M. the same, but: 464.

Difficulties diminished; 286.

Dinner; R. D. goes out to: 970.

Diplomacy: Need of: in dealing with M.; 779.

Direction: Dr. Prince asks S. M. in what: she went away; 1095.

Directions: S. M.'s: for care of R. D.; 822, 998. S. M.'s: to be followed after she went; 787.

See *Care.*

"Directory"; 963.

Disagreeable tasks banish R. D.; 717.

Disappear; M. and S. M. will: 464, 573.

See *Banishment.*

Disappearance of M.; 117, 120, 126. of M.: S. M. thinks: not far off; 991. of R. D.; Sudden: 713, 917. of S. D.; 124. of S. D.: Temporary; 396. of S. R. D.; 126.

See *Alternation, Banishment.*

Disappointment; 527, 564, 1062. R. D. banished by; 998, 1110, 1113.

Discovery: of nature of the case; 286. of S. M.; 464.

Disgust; R. D. banished by: 733.

Disgusted: with M.; S. M.: 811. with Dr. Prince; M.: 313, 1067.

Dish-washing; 197.

Disobedience; M. punishes S. D. for: 76.

Disorder; M. did not mind: 241.

Disorders; Psycho-neurotic; 52.

Displacement; Internal seismic: Response of S. R. D. to: 46.

Displeasure of S. M. does not affect M. or R. D.; 1031.

Disposition of M. improving; 595.

Dissatisfied; M.: 507.

"Dissociated personality" discovered by Dr. Prince; 290.

Dissociation; 28. The first: 405. Physicians and: 29. Psychology: Subversive of: 29. Reverie promotes: 900.

See *Alternation, Alternations, Cluster of Thoughts, Confusion, Crack, Divided personality, Double consciousness, Dou-*



## Dissociation

*ble Control, Forget, Forgetting, Forgot, Formula, Fragment, Insanity, Multiple Personality, Possession, Secondary Personalities, Secondary Personality, Separated, Split, Ternary Personality, Triple Consciousness.*  
*Dissociation of a Personality*, by Morton Prince; 29.  
 Dissolution of S. D.; 41.  
     *See Banishment.*  
 Distance; Difficulty in gauging: M.'s: 976.  
 Distension; Abdominal: 92, 237.  
 Tantrums and: 604.  
 Disturbances: Emotional: caused by obliteration of S. D.; 46.  
 Disturbed; M.: 518. M.: by R. D.'s worrying: 1122.  
 Ditch; M. fell into: 855.  
 "Divided personality"; 150.  
 Do; 159.  
 "Do it again"; 1020, 1179.  
 "Doch"; 1149.  
 Docile; S. D.; 507.  
 Doctor; Woman: 366.  
 Doctor's bill; 230.  
 Doctors; Visit of three: 829, 926.  
 "Dog"; 1175.  
 Dog; Dead: 193. Story of little: 1176. Unclean: kicked by M.; 241.  
 Dogmatism; Skeleton of learned: 56.  
 "Dogs"; 1178.  
 Doll; M. goes to buy a: 555. M. called a: 349. S. D. buys: for M.; 242. S. D. wants: to talk; 556.  
 "Doll; Pretty"; 1148.  
 Doll's clothes; R. D. makes: 610.  
 Dolls; 107, 243, 553, 554, 562, 649, 709, 951, 1085, 1175, 1186, 1210, 1220, 1222. M. fond of: 242, 553. M.'s interest in: revived; 867. Names of: 867, 868. Naming of: 186. Paper: 732. Purchase of: 781, 782. S. M. refuses to be photographed with: 867.  
 Dolls'; funerals; 185. houses; 187.  
 Door; M. comes to remind Dr. Prince about: 1004. M. slammed: 356. R. D. able to close: 1036.  
 Door-step; M. on the: 356.  
 Doris;  
     Adopted by Dr. Prince; 367.  
     "All there is; Doris is:" 342.  
     Back massaged; 559.  
     Backache; 651.  
     Backache for five years; 92, 559.

## Doris

Body lying like a log; 597.  
 Brain; Pain in: when S. D. came; 209.  
 Butcher's; Strange mistakes at the: 228.  
 Calling D.; M. thinks she heard someone: 473.  
 Catamenia ceased when Mrs. Fischer died; 92.  
 Catamenia recommence; 93, 633.  
 Catamenia stopped by coming of S. D.; 92.  
 Catalepsy while sewing; 366, 367.  
 Closet; On shelf in: 303.  
 Danger; S. M. communicated when D. was in: 463.  
 External conditions registered by mind of: 971.  
 Fall in 1907; 73.  
 Father; Influence of D.'s: 63, 71.  
 Fischer; Mr.: consents to D. going to live with Dr. Prince; 391.  
 Fischer; Mr.: Influence of: 63, 71.  
 Fischer; Mr.: Thought she could not leave: 368.  
 Fischer; Mr.: tries to keep D. from leaving: 367.  
 Fischer; Mrs.: Influence of: 63.  
 God; Hunting for: 289.  
 Grooves; Tendency to run in: 985.  
 Hæmorrhoids; 649.  
 Helen; neglected by: 255.  
 Hip; Pain in: 362.  
 Ill-treatment; M. reminds D. of: 295.  
 Infection; Itching: 633.  
 Itching infection; 633.  
 Life; Recital of D.'s: 251.  
 Log; Body lying like a: 597.  
 M. away from: 305, 306, 307.  
 M. called D. by Dr. Prince; 357, 371.  
 M. attempted to "choke Doris"; 77.  
 Massage; 559.  
 Meals at rectory; 263.  
 Mental abnormality; 228.  
 Mind registers external conditions; 971.  
 Moth; Poisoned by: 633.  
 Mother; Influence of: 63.  
 Movements during sleep; 284.  
 Night life of: 172.  
 Overwork; 71.  
 Pain in brain followed by coming of S. D.; 209.  
 Pain in hip; 362.



## Doris

Palm Beach; Picture of garden at: 302.  
 Personalities; Sum of the: 128.  
 Physical states with psychical relations; 92.  
 Picture of garden at Palm Beach; 302.  
 Picture of vision; 300.  
 Poisoned by moth; 633.  
 Dr. Prince said M. was D.; 357, 371.  
 Romance regarding: M.'s: 79, 380.  
 School days; 65.  
 Sewing; Catalepsy while: 366, 367.  
 S. D. says she is: 488.  
 Sleep; Movements during: 284.  
 Sleep; Phases of: 297.  
 Sleep in study; 286.  
 Sleep by suggestion; Put to: 366.  
 S. M. warns Dr. Prince of danger to D.; 77.  
 Sneezing resumed after five years; 81, 572.  
 Strange manner attributed to death of Mrs. Fischer; 228.  
 Stretching, yawning, and sneezing resumed after five years; 81, 439, 572.  
 Sympathy of Mrs. Prince a curative agent; 74.  
 That: 76.  
 Vaccination; 162.  
 Vision; Picture of: 300.  
 Weight of: 1004.  
 Yawning resumed after five years; 81.  
 Doris; (Alma's little girl); 376.  
 "Doris los"; 1170.  
 Dorry; 159.  
 Double consciousness; 516, 546, 808.  
 Double control; 84.  
 Drama; M.'s: 553, 571, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 592.  
 Drawer; Cats' tails in: 185. M.'s: 185, 587, 590, 595, 665, 725, 726, 1235.  
 Drawers for shirt; 358. White: 174, 175.  
 Drawing; 187.  
 Dream;  
 about Alma; 415.  
 about going away; 415.  
 about going to California; 938.  
 about cemetery; 744.  
 about chickens by suggestion; 1219.  
 about child killed by train; 1156.  
 about childhood; 666.

## Dreams

about children of Alma; 733.  
 about falling over cliff; 763.  
 Comments on: by S. M.; 285.  
 Detective story causes; 853.  
 Doris's: 370.  
 about Emma; 416.  
 Fall out of bed; Dream causes R. D. to: 549.  
 about Mr. Fischer changing to Dr. Prince; 1233.  
 about flowers; Dr. Prince makes R. D.: 547.  
 about furniture; 434.  
 about Grandma; 940.  
 about breaking leg; 997.  
 M. makes R. D.: 550, 1054.  
 M.'s thoughts make R. D.: 1054.  
 about mother; Dr. Prince makes R. D.: 332.  
 about Phase A; 921.  
 that Dr. Prince is drunk; 907.  
 Dr. Prince makes R. D.: 332, 516, 547, 578, 588, 590, 615, 621.  
 Dr. Prince tries to make R. D.; 891.  
 Dr. Prince's: of S. M.; 1258.  
 about rats; 964.  
 R. D.: M. makes: 550.  
 about running away; 893.  
 about being scolded; 907.  
 about first shock; 62.  
 about sister; 417.  
 stimuli; 605.  
 about being threatened; 899.  
 Dreamed "underneath"; R. D.; 89.  
 Dreaming: M., awake, saw R. D.: beneath: 494. R. D.: 505. R. D.: while M. slept; 172. R. D.: and thinking; 1037, 1064.  
 Dreams;  
 caused by letter from Ada; 723.  
 cause alternations; 531, 1155.  
 Fischer: Mr.: About: 398, 414, 415, 423, 489, 531, 910, 1013.  
 about old home; 1013, 1154, 1156, 1254.  
 less; 987.  
 about losing little girl; 97, 674.  
 about losing things; 97, 674, 1249.  
 M.; Caused by: 550.  
 M.; Influenced by: 48, 447, 789.  
 M. never: 414, 787.  
 M. called a part of R. D.'s: 347.  
 M.; R. D.'s: of: 97, 104, 494, 733, 768, 791, 1013, 1044.  
 M. saw R. D.'s: 423, 446.  
 M. saw R. D.'s: no longer; 811.  
 M. tells of R. D.'s: 484.



## Dreams

Memories come in: 435, 456.  
 Memories of S. D. cause: 725.  
 about mother; R. D.: 323, 378, 417, 621, 685, 891, 1014, 1089, 1154, 1156.  
 caused by moving pictures; 1234.  
 becoming normal; 517.  
 Pictures of: 260, 323.  
 of Dr. Prince; 370, 1258, 1265.  
 Purchases; R. D. dreams of next day's: 492.  
 R. D.: about M.; 97, 104, 494, 733, 768, 791, 1013, 1044.  
 R. D.: about M.; Symbolic: 814.  
 R. D.: of actions of M.; 494.  
 R. D.: while M. babbles; 790.  
 R. D.'s: 517, 518, 605, 671.  
 R. D.'s: influenced by M.; 48, 447, 789.  
 R. D.'s: seen by M.; 423, 446.  
 R. D.'s: seen by M. no longer; 811.  
 R. D.'s: becoming normal; 517.  
 S. M. never: 787.  
 S. M. watches: 1037.  
 Suggestion; R. D. dreams according to: 332, 516, 547, 550, 578, 588, 590, 615, 621, 1090, 1109.  
 Thoughts which are not: 1037.  
 Underneath while M. watches and S. D. is out and awake; 499.  
 Working: 347.  
 Dress; Blue: 349. Gingham: 792. S. D. fond of: 238.  
 Dresses made of sugar-bags; 168.  
 Dressing: a nuisance to M.; 87, 491.  
 S. D.'s made of: 218.  
*See Undressing.*  
 Dress-making; 199, 278.  
*See Sewing.*  
 Drinks: M.: in sleep; 516, 740. S. D. no longer: 565.  
 Drug-store? Are you a: 820, 821.  
 Drunk; M. thought Dr. Prince was: 756.  
 Drunken man had got into Dr. Prince's body; M. thought: 756.  
 Dry; 87, 565.  
 Dubois; Paul: *The Psychological Origin of Mental Disorders*; 54, 57, on the soul; 54.  
 Duck; 916.  
 Ducking under; 130, 507, 647.  
*See Alternation.*  
 Ducks; Toy: 915.  
 Dumm; 373, 375, 927.  
 "Dummy; I'm no:" 1093.  
 "Dutchman"; 527.

## Emotional

Duty; S. D. a slave to narrow conceptions of: 39, 71, 249.  
 E.; Mrs.: 360.  
 Ear plugs; 869, 872, 873, 885, 886, 888.  
*See Hearing.*  
 Earnings of S. D. given to Trixie by M.; 231.  
 Ears; Comparison of: 98. of K. D. plugged at night; 99. S. M. hears through: of S. D.; 600.  
*See Hearing.*  
 Earth life; S. M. has no memory of: 1265.  
 "Eat: you greaser"; 358. S. D. did not know how to: 69. S. D. might: M. thinks: 440.  
 Eating: M.: again; 1147. M., Three periods in the matter of: 953. M. loses all pleasure in: 1135. R. D.: between meals; 981.  
 Eats; S. D. no longer: 565.  
 Echolalia; 134, 910.  
 Edith; 183.  
 Edna; 183.  
 Education of S. D.; 70.  
 Eggs; Attempt to hatch: 165. Nest of wooden: 930.  
 Ella; 104, 106, 186, 189, 192, 194, 281, 303, 322, 323, 328, 356, 395, 400, 416, 523, 555, 811, 819, 833, 891. Letter from: 1027. R. D. brought suddenly to see: 950. should come to see R. D.; S. M. thinks: 806.  
 Elopement of Mrs. Fischer; 140.  
 Elvira; 163.  
 Embarrassed; S. D.: 508.  
 Embarrassment; R. D. banished by: 619.  
 Embroidery; 40, 72, 226, 234, 356, 387, 446, 892.  
*See Sewing.*  
 Emergency; R. D. in: 1254.  
 Emma; 1271, 1288, 1289, 1301, 1302, 1320. "Cousin"; 276. Dream about: 416.  
 Emmanuel Church; 449.  
 Emotion and alternation; 732, 733. rectified by sleep; 1033.  
 Emotional: differences; 571. disturbances; 213, 818, 820. Emotional disturbance; R. D. banished by: 849, 899, 1108. disturbances caused by obliteration of S. D.; 46.



## Emotional

reaction affects M.; 167. storm: Effects of: 448, 817.  
 Emotions: After-images of: of other personalities; 47. and hysterical delusions; 263. of M. affect R. D.; 527, 585. Strong: of R. D. perceived by M. when supraliminal; 929.  
*See Afraid, Agitation, Anger, Anxiety, Anxious, Cheerfulness, Contempt, Crying, Demonstrative, Depressants, Disagreeable, Disgust, Dissatisfied, Disturbances, Disturbed, Emotion, Emotional, Exuberance, Fear, Freedom, Fright, Frightened, Gloomy, Grief, Happiness, Hysteria, Hysterical, Hysterical, Jealousy, Laughter, Melancholy, Neurasthenia, Nervous, Nervousness, Pathos, Perplexity, Perturbation, Pities, Pity, Pleasure, Pleasures, Resentment, Supersensitive, Supersensitiveness, Surprise, Sympathy, Worried, Worries, Worry, Worrying.*  
 Encounters with S. D.: M. and R. D. know nothing of: 477.  
 Encouraged by Dr. Prince; R. D.: 1027.  
 Energy: Severe draught on: Result of: 957. exhausted by S. M.; R. D. feels effects of: 719.  
*See Force.*  
*Enfant terrible*; M. an: 64, 241.  
 Entreaty of S. D.; 488.  
 Environment; Revolution in: 80.  
 Epileptic; Lillian the: 206.  
 Errands; 197.  
 Eruption on limbs; 1075, 1076, 1077, 1078, 1083.  
 Etchings; 261.  
 Evasive; S. D.: 469.  
 Eve; 1072.  
 Evergreen; 1070.  
 Exacting; R. D.'s worrying makes M.: 1176.  
 Excitement causes frequent alternations; 271, 1105. of M. affects R. D.; 527. R. D. banished by: 1002, 1105.  
 Exertion; R. D. banished by: 1110.  
 Exhaustion of M.; 1177.  
*See Weariness.*  
 Existence; M. objects to denial of her: 342. of S. M. made known to

## Eyes

R. D.; 1267. "Vestigial": "subliminally" of M.; 1255.  
 Exorcise M.; R. D. almost killed by suggestion intended to: 348.  
*See Banishment.*  
 Exorcism by prayer; 311, 312, 313.  
*See Banishment.*  
 Experiment; M. jubilant over her: 505. M. tries: with R. D.; 491. stopped by S. M.; 813.  
 Experiments cause anxiety in mind of S. M.; 79.  
 Explain: R. D. tries to: to mother; 182.  
 Explained the case; S. M.: 363, 653, 676.  
 Expression; Change of facial: 372. Differences of: 419. of M.; 350, 649. of M-asleep; 993. of M-asleep, x; 467. of M. twisted; 963. of Dr. Prince read by M. when blind; 109, 1020, 1050, 1051, 1198, 1213, 1226. of Dr. Prince read by M-asleep; 91, 116. of Dr. Prince sensed by M.; 116, 1020, 1050. of Dr. Prince sensed by M. at almost any distance; 1119. of S. D.; 39. of S. M.; 43, 993. of S. R. D.; 45.  
*See Hyperaesthesia.*  
 Expressions: S. D. uses: that she criticised in M.; 480.  
 Expulsion of M.; 79.  
*See Banishment.*  
 External conditions registered by D.'s mind; 971.  
 External sensations; M. had keen: 491. S. D. had but dull: 491.  
 Extremities cold; M.'s: 501.  
 Exuberance of R. D.; 114.  
*See Happiness.*  
 "Eye-strain"; 115, 408, 1219.  
*See Diagnosis.*  
 Eyelid; 902. Fluttering of: 619. picked by M.; 330.  
 Eyelids swollen; 1219.  
 Eyes; Blowing in: 681. Comparison of: 98. M. clawing at: 918. M.'s coming affects R. D.'s: 115. M.'s open in sleep; 594. M.'s trouble with: 1213. M. wakened by blowing in: 681, 738, 757, 774, 879, 887, 1085. Papo's: hurt; 116. R. D.'s: weak at first; 604. S. D. banished by placing hand over: 500. S. D. enjoys having Dr. Prince blow in her: 551. S. D. locates her personality in her: 534. S. D. sees Dr.



## Eyes

Prince's: mostly; 534. S. D. sees Dr. Prince's: and mouth only; 561. S. D.'s sensation becomes limited to her: 536, 541. Eyes of S. M. always closed; 42. S. M. sees through: of S. D.; 600.

Fabrication; Automatic: of S. D.; 40, 259, 261, 262. Hysterical: of S. D.; 40, 259, 261, 262.

Face alone belongs to her; S. D. thinks: 537.

Facts; Summary of the: 60.

Fairies; Belief in: M.'s: 37, 881.

Faith; Seven articles of: 322.

Fall: in bath-room; S. D.'s: 538, 539. out of bed; Dream makes R. D.: 549. at eighteen years of age; 27, 73. of M. in 1907; 73, 248. M. made S. D.: 295. on road; 737. S. R. D. "created" in consequence of: 45, 247. S. R. D. "strengthened" by second fall; 73, 248. down stairs; M. made S. D.: 303. from tree; 168.

See *Physical causes*.

Falling; S. M. saves M. from: 624.

Falls; M.: 517. from chair at table; 1035. down stairs; 866.

Falsehood; Automatic: 148.

Family of R. D.; 137. move next door; 226.

"Father"; see *Mr. Fischer*.

*Faux pas* by Dr. Prince; 963.

Fear: of Mr. Fischer; 63, 71, 154, 156, 158, 364, 365, 392, 401. of Dr. Prince; M.'s: 624. of Mrs. Prince overcome; S. D.'s: 538. R. D. banished by: 655, 705. R. D.'s: in sleeping-berth; 960. banished by suggestion; 1188, 1194.

Fears of S. D. affect R. D.; 535.

Features of Dr. Prince felt by M.; 359.

Feeling: in finger-tips; S. M.'s independent: 126. Lost: 1251. S. R. D. without: 924. "underneath" R. D.; 527.

See *Anaesthesia*.

Feelings: Wounded: of R. D.; 1174. Wounding: acts as a psychic poison; 1005.

Feet: Cold: 777, 794, 814, 1005. "clumped like wooden blocks"; 95, 747, 774. See *Clumsiness*. rubbed; M.'s: 777, 988. rubbed no longer;

## Fischer

1242. Signals with: 1175, 1181. sore; R. D.'s: 996. Trouble with: 1164.

See *Control*.

Felida X; 30, 1102.

"Felt that all right; I:" 467.

Ferris waist; 668, 672, 706.

Fibbing; M.: 37, 1028.

Fictions; S. D.'s: 258.

Finger; burned: M.: 805. in mouth of S. D.; M. puts: 603. S. D. gnaws: 479. tips; Independent feeling of S. M. in: 126.

Fingers: Hypersensitive: of M-asleep; 91.

Fire; 1236. alarm; 1026. Building: 1099. Foot close to: 797. Gas: 788. M. set S. D. on: 303.

Fischer; Mr.: 516.

Abuse by: Memory of: troubles R. D.; 456.

Ada: Note from: *re*: 410.

Brutality of: 251.

Callousness of: 390, 392.

Character of: 137.

Cruelty of: 251.

Cruelty of: R. D. remembers: 484.

Cruelty of: S. D. denies: 470.

Deceitfulness of: 364.

Dreams of R. D. about: 398, 414, 415, 423, 489, 531, 910, 1013.

Drunk; 356, 257.

Drunken rage of: 80.

Fear of: 63, 71, 154, 156, 158, 364, 365, 392, 401, 408, 690.

Funeral of: Dream of: 531.

Heartlessness of: 326.

History of: 139.

Influence of: on R. D.; 63, 71, 154, 156, 158, 171.

Influence of: on S. D.; 274.

Insinuations by: 392.

Kill D.; Threatens to: 370.

Leave: D. thought she could not: 368.

Leaving: Tries to stop D. from: 369.

M. awed: 251.

M. gets dinner for: 358.

M.'s dislike of: 358.

M. managing: 369.

M. took Mr. Fischer's money from sugar bowl; 362.

M. tries to remember: 1008.

M. reminded of: 890.

M-asleep, x; 475.

"Moving picture" of crime of: 854.



## Fischer

Prince; Dr.: Consents to D.'s going to live with: 391.  
 R. D. anxious about: 398.  
 R. D. dreams of: 398.  
 R. D. never called: papa; 516.  
 R. D. feels pity for: 938.  
 R. D. sees; on street; 938.  
 R. D. watches for: 919.  
 Responsible for the obsession; 25, 61.  
 S. D. worrying about: 374.  
 S. R. D. addresses: on the case; 345.  
 Stole savings of S. D.; 231.  
 Temper of: 80, 140.  
*See Physical Causes.*  
 Fischer; Mrs.: Funeral of: 220. M.'s love for: 177, 178.  
*See Mother.*  
 Fischer; Name: forgotten by M.; 1004.  
 Fish; doctor; 812, 813, 814, 991. S. D. "smells": 467.  
 "Fissures; Mental": 29, 36, 136, 156, 197.  
*See Diagnosis.*  
 Flash and crash hallucination; 658.  
 Flattering Dr. Prince; M.: 371.  
 Floor; M. had to sleep on: 173.  
*Flowers that Bloom in the Spring*; 911.  
 Flowers from grave; M. took: 161.  
 Food: Good: assists cure; 264. M. and: 107, 1019, 1150.  
 Foods; Alteration in likes and dislikes for: 265. Taste in: Differences of: 41, 44, 1019, 1150.  
 Foot: "dead"; 1224. close to fire; 797. "lost": 980, 1224. "Snakes" in: 849.  
 Footsteps in next house; R. D. frightened by: 729.  
 Force: S. M. dependent on M. for: 1064. S. M. drew: from Dr. Prince; 1064.  
*See Energy.*  
 Foreknowledge of S. M.; 1138, 1140.  
*See Predictions.*  
 Forel; *Hypnotism and Psycho-therapy*; 1084.  
 Forget; 131. R. D. forgot to: 987. S. M. begins to: 1019.  
*See Memory.*  
 Forgetfulness of R. D.; 114, 809, 900.  
*See Memory.*  
 Forgets; M.: names of parts of body;

## Furniture

1149. M.: meaning of words; 1067, 1068, 1120, 1121, 1149.  
 Forgetting; Feelings when on point of: 913. R. D. disappointed about not: 1029.  
*See Memory.*  
 "Forgot": R. D.: in church; 698.  
 Formula; M.: *See M-formula*. P.: *See P-formula*. R. D. comes before completion of: 453, 489. for bringing R. D. out; 411, 412. for waking R. D.; 402, 409. did not work when Dr. Prince thought R. D. was not "near"; 414.  
*See Banishment.*  
 Fort Potts Hotel; 197.  
 "Fragment of a psychic entity"; S. D. called a: 258.  
 Free; 131.  
 Freedom; Sense of: 641.  
 Freeman; Mrs.: 625. M. writes letter to: 1007. Visit to: 93.  
 French girl; Romance of: 706.  
 Freud; Sigmund: 791.  
 Freudian bias; Warning against; 911.  
 Friendly; other personalities: to R. D.; 71.  
 Friendship; Dog-like: of S. D.; 39.  
 Fright; 111, 160. Alternations due to: 430, 450, 522. Association causes: 525. M-asleep in: 622, 623. brings M. out; 413. M.'s: after being slapped; 941. R. D. banished by: 413, 430, 450, 522, 559. Set-back on account of: 1134. S. D.'s banishment aided by: 472, 488.  
 Frightened; M.: by bell; 955. M.: by napkin falling on chest; 1079. M. on street; 973, 979. M. by thunder; 606. R. D.: 1188. R. D.: into catalepsy; 730. R. D.: by M.; 160. R. D.: by snake; 987. R. D.: by thunder-storm; 730. S. D.: by alarm-clock; 451. S. D.: by parrot; 471.  
 Fruit; 1120.  
 Fruits; Names of: M.'s knowledge of: 939.  
*See Memory.*  
 Fun; M. makes: of Dr. Prince; 267, 383.  
 Funeral of Mrs. Fischer; 220, 226.  
 Funerals; Dolls': 185.  
 Furniture; Dream of: 434. M. playing with: 547. moved about by R. D.; 1016. having been moved about



## Furniture

by R. D. causes M. to lose bearings; 1017.  
 "Fussing"; M.: S. M. sees: 851.

G.; 1316.  
 G.; Dr.: 760.  
 Gables; 1312.  
 Gain: Temporary: of M.; 880, 882.  
 Gaining; R. D.: 515.  
 Game; Favorite: S. D.'s: 543. New: S. D.'s: 554.  
 Geranium; 531.  
 German: accent; 105, 117, 1055, 1165, 1182. construction; 1170. words; 1165.  
 See *Language*.  
 Gestures beyond vision; M. cannot see or know: 1050.  
 "Get off"; 1034.  
 Gifts; S. D. loved to make: 39. from Sunday School festival; 1075.  
 Giggling and gurgling; 555.  
 Gilliford; Dr. Jane Nye; 759.  
 Girl; young: R. D. feels like: 699.  
 Girlishness of R. D.; 143.  
 Gladness; R. D. banished by: 732, 733.  
 Gladys; 867.  
 Gland; Thyroid: 92, 1110, 1119, 1138, 1148, 1169, 1179, 1182, 1221.  
 Gloomy; R. D.: 889, 973. on account of M.'s disappointment: 999.  
 See *Depression*.  
 Glossary; 127.  
 Go; away; 130. First to: M. teasing S. D. about being first to: 331. Make it: S. D. says: 537, 556. M. willing to: 567. M. would have to: Dr. Prince told S. D. that: 331, 355. M. let: during sleep; 542. R. D., in sleep, begs M. not to: 726. S. D. comes only when M. lets: 554. S. D. will: before M.; 490. S. M. thinks she will: before M.; 1136. S. M. thinks she and M. may: together; 486, 1051.  
 See *Alternation*, *Banishment*.  
 "God was called away from his job, and got us mixed up"; 994.  
 God; Hunting for: 289. R. D. thanks: that S. D. and M. are to die; 289.  
 Goes: When M.: voluntarily, S. D. comes; 534.  
 See *Alternation*.  
 Gone; M.: 1248, 1252, 1254.

## Hallucination

Grace; 1290, 1291.  
 Graduation; 196.  
 Grammar; Bad: 586. Bad: R. D. broods over: 922. Lessons in: 586.  
 Grandfather Brandt; 138. Heartlessness of: 140, 141.  
 Grandma C.; 416. Dream about: 940.  
 "Grandmother" C—; 387.  
 Granted; S. D. takes everything for: 483.  
 Grapes; 268.  
 Grasping Dr. Prince during sleep; 501, 674.  
 Grave of mother; R. D.'s care of: 895.  
 Greaser; 358, 815, 820, 927, 1217, 1226.  
 Grief; M. mocks: of relatives; 254. S. D. a stranger to: 69.  
 Grievance; R. D. banished by: 1034.  
 Grievances; S. D. cries over: 290.  
 Grieving; Case made worse by; 879.  
 Grooves; D. always tended to run in: 985. Psychopathic mind tends to run in: 429.  
 Guard; 1316.  
 See *Care*.  
 Guard; The: 1303, 1305.  
 See *Care*.  
 Guards; Three: 1320.  
 See *Care*.  
 Guesses location of Lawrence Street; M.: 1000.  
 Guessing; M.: 1028.  
 Guild; Women's: 1186.  
 Gum for "comfort"; 1021.

H.; Mrs.: 30.  
 Habit of coming at a certain hour; S. D.'s: 514.  
 Habit of watching for 5 A. M.; 411.  
 Hemorrhoids; 363, 430, 640, 707, 710, 1003.  
 Hair: arranged differently by the different personalities; 449, 453. changed color; 145. M. abominated: 1245. ribbons; 186. torn out by M.; 72, 235.  
 Hairpins; 1078.  
 Haitisch; Michael: 69, 70, 225, 261, 550, 646, 1242, 1245.  
 Hallowe'en festivities; 167, 238, 1203.  
 Hallucination; 134. Tuberculosis: 74, 77, 315, 316, 317. Visual: of R. D.: 58.  
 See *Apparition*, *Delusions*, *Hal-*



## Hallucination

*lucinations, Hallucinatory, Hysteria, Hysteric, Hysterical, Illusions, Imaginary, Imaginations, Imagining, Man, Obsessing, Obsessions.*  
 Hallucinations; 207, 729. Auditory: 159, 874. Auditory: induced by M.; 159. caused by M.; 64, 159. caused by absence of S. M.; 113. Visual: 244, 880, 950.  
*See Hallucination.*  
 Hallucinatory figure that casts a shadow; 1044.  
*See Hallucination.*  
 Ham and harm; 1133.  
 Hamilton: Adelaide: 340, 346. seen by televoyance; 335, 336, 337.  
 Hand; Motion of right: 426.  
 Handkerchief; Experiment with: 285.  
 Handkerchiefs; 1126.  
 Hands: Backs of M.'s: become anaesthetic; 933. clinched; 426, 431, 434, 438, 518, 548, 570. held by Mrs. Prince; 74. Movements of: of S. D.; 345. Palms of M.'s: anaesthetic; 682. stiff with gripping bed; R. D.'s: 836.  
*See Control.*  
 Hanna: Thomas C.: 26, 30, 69, 148, 225, 550.  
 Happiness: of M. brings R. D. out; 532, 590. of M. rescues R. D. from worry; 732. M. strengthened by: 628. of R. D.; 405, 1235.  
*See Exuberance.*  
 Harsh treatment; R. D. has no memory of: 473.  
 Hat reminds R. D. of S. D. days; 853.  
 "Hatred" of M. for S. D.; 26, 32, 72.  
*See Anger.*  
 He; 129, 292.  
 Head; Contusion on back of: 538. erect without support; S. D. can no longer hold: 552. Jerking of: 83. Jerking of: indicates change of personality; 288. Jerking of: when M. comes; 378, 393, 401. Jerking and rolling; M.'s: 835. S. M. cannot support: 1003. Turning: to right drove M. in; 336, 342. Turning: S. M. affected by: 724. Wagging; 1082.  
*See Control.*  
 Headache: 476, 551, 571, 748, 769, 772, 871, 876, 882, 883, 884, 885, 887, 888, 889, 890, 894, 905, 997, 1034.

## Hip

1075, 1080, 1081. of M.; 838, 1075. M. affected by severe; 836, 1075. Sympathy causes: 1008. tablets; 895, 1079.  
 Headaches; Disappearance of: 895. and imagination; 896. Psychic origin of: 895, 896.  
 Health; Physical: S. D.'s presence bad for: 465.  
 Hear: M. cannot: S. M.; 88, 464, 465, 557. S. D. can no longer: M.; 395, 397.  
*See Hearing.*  
 Hearing: Comparisons and tests in: 98. with ears plugged; S. M. and M.: 758. of M.; 639. M. inhibited from: S. M.; 42. Subliminal: 1014. Tests of: 764, 768, 849, 1023.  
*See Auditory, Ear, Ears, Hear, Hears.*  
 Hears: M.; breathing of Dr. Prince; 976. M.: spoon approaching; 1193. M.: only when touched; 1026. S. M. generally: clock: 1010. S. M.: through ears of S. D.; 600.  
*See Hearing.*  
 Heat: M.; Effect of: on: 995. M. becomes sensitive to: 705. M. subnormal to: of solid bodies; 792. R. D. almost "blotted out" by: 93. R. D. suffers from: 979, 995.  
 Heaven; 630, 1116, 1144.  
 Helen; 177. avoided by M.; 255. Neglect by: 255. M. smacked by: 173.  
 Helena S.; 182.  
 "Hell fire"; 163.  
 "Hello Papa"; 327, 412.  
 Help; R. D. wishes to: 514. given by S. M.; 43.  
 Hemianæsthesia; 135.  
*See Anæsthesia.*  
 Henhouse; M. comes in: 1031.  
 Hens: "hopped" on M.; 1031. Houdan; R. D. dreams of: by suggestion; 1090.  
 Her daddy; 403.  
 "Here"; 129. S. M. always: 724.  
 Hidden belt; 796.  
 Hiding: piece of cloth; M.: 778. clothes; 606.  
 High School; 196.  
 High Street Bridge; 388.  
 Hilarious; M. asleep: 681.  
 Hilarity of M.; 688.  
 Hint to S. M.; Dr. Prince gives: 1049.  
 Hip; 397.



## Hip

Hip bone; "Pulling"; 362.  
 Hips; Pain in: 41, 317, 325, 362.  
 "Tuberculous": 77, 259, 329, 924.  
 Hirt on neuralgia and hysteria; 300.  
 History; 1217. of the bunch; 422.  
 Histrionic tendency of M.; 92.  
 "Hit"; 542, 546, 556.  
 Hit: Dr. Prince tells S. D. why he must: her; 502.  
 "Hog; Eats like a:" 1054.  
 Holding on; 131, 647. M. ceases from: while sleeping; 561.  
 "Home"; M. wants to go to old: 1041. M. goes to old: and sees Marie; 737. M. goes: and tells Dr. Prince what is going on there; 376. Old: 418, 465, 467, 504. old: Dreams about: 1013, 1154, 1156, 1254. S. D. thinks she must go: 432, 436, 456, 497. S. D. says she doesn't want to go: 501.  
 Homesick; M.: 93, 632.  
 Hotel; Fort Potts: 197.  
 Household expenses fall on S. D.; 252.  
 Housekeeping; 1202.  
 Housework; R. D. wishes to help with: 477. at rectory; 280.  
 "How was you, Papo?"; 473.  
 "Huh!"; 349.  
 Human: and non-human beings; 1141. S. M. not: 1237.  
 Humidity; R. D. suffers from: 979.  
 Humor: in cartoons; M. cannot appreciate: 1010. of M.; 431, 466, 471, 534, 584, 614, 627, 647, 649. of M.; Unconscious: 1118. Sense of: in R. D.; 40. Sense of: lacking in S. D.; 40, 71. Sense of: in S. M.; 40.  
 Humoring Dr. Prince; M.: 441.  
 Hunger; R. D. begins to experience: 98, 654. S. D. without sensation of: 215.  
 "Hunting" in R. D.'s thought; 484.  
 Hurt; S. D. thinks only of being afraid of getting: 534. Something: S. M. when M. laughed; 1272.  
 Hurting S. D.; M.: 329.  
 Husband; M. weeping for her dead: 184.  
 Hyperæsthesia; 135. Auditory: of M.; 38, 123, 363, 368, 402, 639, 686, 760, 978, 981, 1081, 1172, 1184. Auditory: of R. D.; 97, 98, 104, 125, 686. Auditory: of R. D.: subsided when M. ceased from

## Identity

watching; 840, 849. Auditory: of S. D.; 342. Olfactory: of R. D.; 686. of S. M.; 558. Tactile: of R. D.; 126. tactile: Temporary: of R. D.; 686, 687, 689, 693. Visual: of M.; 38, 123.  
 See *Breathing, Expression*.  
 Hyperæsthesia; Table of: 123.  
 Hypersensitive: fingers of M. asleep; 91. R. D. becomes less: 1170.  
 Hypnoidization experiments; 340.  
 Hypnoleptic; 135.  
 See *Suggestion*.  
 Hypnosis: excluded; 77. Teeth filled under: 92.  
 See *Suggestion*.  
 Hypnotic anæsthesia; 789.  
 See *Suggestion*.  
 Hypnotism; S. D. afraid of: 456.  
 See *Suggestion*.  
 Hyslop; James H.: 1139. anxious to experiment with R. D.; 1262. M. offers Billy to: 1175. S. M. reads letter from: 1178. Visit of: 695. Writings of: not understood by S. D. and M.; 270.  
 Hyslop; Jim: (doll) 868. Letters from: 717, 1021, 1201. Letters to: 711, 798, 858, 983, 984, 990, 991, 997, 1008. Present from: 858, 859.  
 Hyslop; Robert: 1280.  
 Hysteria; 52, 135. Hirt on: 300. and imagination; 896. Secondary personalities and: 293. Symptoms; 259.  
 See *Hallucination*.  
 Hysteric anæsthesia; 789.  
 See *Hallucination*.  
 Hysterical: delusions of S. D.; 74. delusions and: 263. fabrication of S. D.; 40.  
 See *Hallucination*.  
 I.; M.'s pronunciation of: 273.  
 Ice-cream; 517, 953, 979, 1135.  
 Ice-wagon; Money and: 791, 793.  
 Ideas; Fixed: 495. Fixed: and mental imagery; 483. Three remaining: of S. D.; 526.  
 Identity; S. D. attempts to hide her: 479. of S. M.; 1178. S. M. not at first prepared to admit her: 147. of S. M.; Dr. Prince neutral about: 1267. S. M. will give proofs of: 122, 1253. S. M. will give proofs of: Dr. Prince doubts that: 1253,



## Identity

1255. S. M. goes away to get proof of: 1261, 1328.  
 Ignorance of S. D.: 430.  
 Ignored: M.: by Dr. Prince; 367.  
 Il Trovatore; 1151.  
 Illusions; M. explains: 725. of M.; 921. of R. D.; 903. Tactual: 786.  
*See Hallucination.*  
 Imagery; Fixed ideas and mental: 483.  
 Imaginary tuberculosis; 74.  
*See Hallucination.*  
 Imagination; Headaches and: 896.  
 Hysteria and: 896. M. gets pain and pleasure from: 828.  
 Imagination; M. addresses S. D. in: 592.  
*See Hallucination.*  
 Imagining; R. D. brought out by: 619. things; 178.  
*See Hallucination.*  
 Imitating; Mother; 181. others; S. D.: 214, 219.  
 Imitation of sounds by S. D.; 70.  
 Imp; 127.  
 Impressions from M.; S. R. D. gets: 900.  
 Improprity; M. cannot understand: 719.  
 Improvement; Marked: 1121. Proofs of: 969. Slow: 806. during two months; 952.  
 Impudence: Colossal: intimated by Dr. X.; 1080.  
 In; 129, 606, 692, 699. M. driven: by turning head to right; 336, 342. M. goes: at will; 645. R. D. not conscious when: 181, 393, 416, 418, 424, 848. S. D. not conscious when: 317, 372, 385, 393, 424. and sleeping: 130, 547. and watching; 129, 547, 699.  
 Inchoate; S. R. D.: 890.  
 Inclination; Difference of: 605, 606.  
 Independence of S. M.; 1256.  
 Index; The: 60.  
 Indigestion; 675, 693, 1046, 1056.  
 Individuality of M.; 403, 404, 423, 434, 441, 968. of the personalities; 239, 268, 431, 489, 557, 584, 603. of S. D.; 408, 409.  
 Infallible; S. M. not: 647.  
 Infancy; Mental: S. D. returned to: 41, 556.  
*See Mentality.*  
 Infant: personalities; 31. person-

## Interpolation

ality; 135. personality; S. D. an: 68.  
*See Mentality.*  
 Infant Sick Doris; 86, 625.  
 Infantile action of M.; 934. S. D. becomes: 536, 559.  
*See Mentality.*  
 Infection; Itching: 633.  
 Influenced by S. M.; R. D.: 1189.  
 Inhibition of M. from hearing S. M.: 42.  
 Initiation; Mental: of S. D.; 563.  
 Ink; M. suggests drinking: 948.  
 Inquisitiveness; Dr. Prince reproved for: 1144. R. D. begins to show signs of: 931.  
*See Curiosity.*  
 "Insane"; Repetition of the word: 538.  
 Insanity; Ada feared: 538. Multiple Personality and: 25, 30. no trace of: in the family; 139.  
 Insinuations by Mr. Fischer; 392.  
 "Instink"; 1119.  
 Intellectuals; Ivory-enclosed: 57.  
 Intellectual expansion; M. reached limit of: 67.  
*See Mentality.*  
 Intellectuality: of M. that of child of five years when she disappeared: 39. of M. reached that of child of ten years: 67.  
*See Mentality.*  
 Intelligence of R. D.; 143.  
*See Mentality.*  
 Intercognition; 47, 51, 88, 90, 91, 148, 422, 513, 600. Diagrams of: 840, 841, 844.  
*See Consciousness.*  
 Interest: of M. in candy decreasing: 642, 652. of M. in life decreasing: 94, 642, 643, 650, 751. R. D. banished by strong: 1002.  
 Interests of S. M. not same as M.'s or R. D.'s; 1134.  
 Interfering with S. M.; M.: 614.  
*See Interfusion, Interpolation, Interrupted.*  
 Interfusion; 528.  
*See Interfering.*  
 Internal organs; M. not anæsthetic in: 739. Pain in: 41.  
 Internal pains; M. felt: very slightly, if at all; 38, 123, 491. S. D. felt: acutely; 38, 491.  
 Interpolation; 389. by M.; 388, 528,



## Interpolation

587, 984. by S. M. when M. was asleep; 348.  
 See *Interfering*.  
 Inter-relations of the personalities; 148.  
 Interrupted; R. D.; by M.; 758. S. M. by M.; 42, 388, 557.  
 See *Interfering*.  
 Ironing; M. and; 494, 524.  
 Irony of S. M.; 44.  
 Irritation; 734. of Dr. Prince with M.; 889.  
 Itching; and burning; Cutaneous; 114. back: during sleep; 915. infection; 633.  
 Ivory-enclosed intellects; 57.  
  
 Jealousy: of M.; 283, 591. of R. D.; 1023, 1221.  
 Jerk of head: indicates change of personality; 288. when M. comes; 378, 393, 401, 1241. when R. D. comes; 883. when S. M. returns; 1167.  
 Jerking and rolling of head; 835.  
 Jewelry: destroyed by M.; 284. from mythical father; 283.  
 "Jim; There is no:" 1035.  
 Joking; Practical: Theory of; 1261.  
 Jolt; 132.  
 See *Blow*, *Jolting*.  
 Jolting; 90, 613, 616, 623, 809.  
 See *Jolt*.  
*Journal of the Diocesan Convention*; 670.  
 Judgment: Calm: of S. M.; 599.  
 July: Fourth of; 114. made endurable by suggestion; 1152.  
  
 K.; Ada: 390.  
 Kendall; Mrs.: 1036.  
 Kern; Lizzie: 430.  
 Key; M. forgets use of; 1017, 1022.  
 Kicked out; 131, 478, 713.  
 Kicks chair; M.: 996.  
 Kidneys; R. D. could not eat; 863.  
 S. D. fond of; 863.  
 Killed; R. D. almost: by suggestion intended to exorcise M.; 348.  
 Kimono; 587.  
 Kiss; Good-night; 715.  
 Kitchen; 418.  
 Knowledge; S. D. without; 69. S. M.'s; 490, 1143. from S. M.; M. does not derive; 937.

## Leverrier

Kraepelin; 55.  
  
 L.; 1313, 1314.  
 L.; Dr.: 707.  
 L. F.; 807, 823.  
 L. K.; 363.  
 Labor; Protracted periods of; 32.  
 Lace-making; 294.  
 Lamp; S. D. broke: and tried to get M. to tell Mrs. Prince; 1157.  
 Language; M.'s peculiarities of; 411, 417, 425, 431, 433, 648, 649, 711, 873, 1085, 1104, 1137, 1138. not intelligible to S. D.; 70, 216. S. M. comments on her own; 490.  
 See *German*, *Mispronunciation*, *Phonetic*, *Pronouns*, *Pronunciation*, *Sentences*, *Slang*, *Spelling*.  
 Lapselzer's Row; 380.  
 Lard; Hot; 1226.  
 Laugh: of M.; 620, 624, 762, 766, 784. nervous: of R. D.; 701. of R. D.; 784. of S. M.; 784. S. M. makes M.: 1027, 1306.  
 Laughed; S. M.: at ideas of Dr. Prince; 335, 367, 813.  
 Laughing; M.: at R. D.; 666, 667. M.'s three ways of; 530.  
 Laughs underneath; M.: 500.  
 Laughter and tears; alternate; 1122.  
 Laundry; 198.  
 Lawrence Street; 1072. M. guesses location of; 1000.  
 Laying; M. down without her knowing it; 512. S. D. down; M. wakened by; 488.  
 Lectured; Dr. Prince: by M. and S. M.; 653, 1029.  
 Left; D. when asleep; M.: 376, 377. D. and went to house on Colorado Avenue; M.: 377. D. and went down-stairs; M.: 375. D. and went to see Dr. Prince; M.: 305, 306.  
 Left side: of D.; M. on the; 355, 371. S. D. lies curled up on the; 371.  
 Leg; Dream about breaking; 997.  
 Legs; She should not lie on our; 441. of S. D. feel like stumps; 420.  
 Lelia; 1287, 1288, 1315.  
 Lem; 153.  
 Lessons done during night; 172.  
 "Let"; 837.  
 Let go; 132.  
 Lethargy; 501, 751, 1016.  
 Leverrier; 722.



**Lewis**

"Lewis; Dr.:" 817, 823.  
 Lie; white: Dr. Prince tells R. D. a: 474.  
 Life: almost ended through suggestion; 77. M. loses interest in: 642, 643, 650. saved by S. M.; 77, 95, 308, 707.  
 Light; Electric: 1048. I's a: 1109, 1315. Red: 656. Sudden: causes sleep; 933. in Virginia; W. M. Prince; 1281.  
 Likes and dislikes; Changing: 265.  
 Lillian; 206.  
 Limbs; S. D.'s control of: 532. S. M.'s control of: 118.  
   *See Control.*  
 Linen: M. gave D. some: 361.  
   "Swipe" some: 360.  
 Lip-reading; 509, 510, 764, 1065. R. D. refuses to believe in: 987.  
 Lips moving: M. finds: but does not hear; 1241.  
 Lips; Reading: M., asleep: 59, 91, 292, 597, 610, 612, 978.  
 List: S. D.'s: of articles bought for her; 454.  
 Live; S. D. thinks she has not long to: 282.  
 Locate: M. cannot: hair, forehead, chin, or hands; 1219.  
 Locates her personality in her eyes; S. D.: 534.  
   *See Location.*  
 Location; Sense of: 1212.  
 "Locations" of personalities in the brain: 90, 441, 465, 720, 721, 722, 740, 741, 810, 823, 1331.  
   *See Locates.*  
 Locked in; M.: 507. S. D.: 482.  
 Locked out by Mr. Fischer; S. D.: 251.  
 Log; Body lying like a: 597.  
 Lohengrin; 186.  
 "Lonesome"; M says she is: 519.  
 Looks different after departure of M.; R. D.: 1253.  
 Lose time; 131.  
 Lost feeling; 1251.  
 "Losted" coming from bath-room; 1033.  
 Louise; 867.  
 "Lowest" personality; S. M. the: 738.  
 Luella; 65, 192, 409.  
 "Lumbago"; Diagnosis of: 1225.  
 Lunch: M. gets: for herself; 369.

**Margaret, Age**

Lying down nine-tenths of the time; M.: 974.  
 M.; Miss: 194.  
 M.; Mrs.: 178, 229. Fear of blindness; 307. Circles for raps; 307.  
   M. put "hand" before eyes of: 307.  
 M.; Walter: 1317.  
 McCorkle; Dr.: 958.  
 McDonough; 430.  
 McK.; Miss: 182, 216.  
 McPherson; 301, 302, 331.  
 Magazine; 1243.  
 Magnified: Objects: when near M.'s eyes; 1033, 1121.  
 Maid: Neighbour's: disliked by M.; 561.  
 Maine; Mrs.: 199, 200, 201, 382.  
   "Mamma"; 1269.  
 Mammæ: Pressure on: inhibits sound; 92, 551, 593, 606, 655. "belong to R. D."; 485.  
   *See Chest.*  
 Man in hall; M. imagines she sees: 950.  
   *See Hallucination.*  
 Manchester, N. H.; 93, 626.  
 Manicure set; 780.  
 Manner of M.; 350. Alternation in: 1016.  
 Manner: of S. D. changed; 82. of S. M.; 784.  
 Manual operations; 40.  
**Margaret;** 37, 945.  
   A Margaret; 129.  
   Abou Ben Adhem; 195.  
   Account book; Attempts to post: 988.  
   Ada; 401. 898.  
   "Address" of: 868.  
   Adelaide seen by televoyance; 346.  
   Adeline; 630.  
   Advice on the case; 133, 378, 455, 466, 488, 645, 653, 663, 667, 685, 698, 699, 962, 1164, 1197.  
   Advises Dr. Prince to smack S. D.; 477.  
   Æsthesia; Tactile: 1149.  
   Æsthesia; Thermal: 116, 1149.  
   Affectionate; 38.  
   Africans; Pictures of: 401.  
   After-image; 818.  
   "Afternoon? What is?": 834.  
   Age; Eighteen years of: 240, 295, 309, 351, 354.



## Margaret, Age

Age of: S. D.'s opinion about: 420.  
 Agitation brings: out; 939.  
 A-ha'; 305.  
 Alcohol; Dislike for: 756.  
 Alcohol; S. D. cured M. of fondness for: 756.  
 Allowance; Asks for: 972.  
 Allowance: Wants: hidden from R. D.; 1007.  
 Alma; Letter to: 548.  
 Altar-cloth destroyed by: 294, 296, 328.  
 Alternation; Emotion and: 732, 733.  
 Alternations of M. and R. D.; 515, 931.  
 Alternations of M. and S. D.; 77, 217, 219, 299, 309, 575.  
 Amnesia; 107, 643, 751, 827.  
 Amnesia begins; 93.  
 Amused R. D.; 153, 156, 158, 159.  
 Amused at: S. M.; 557.  
 Anæsthesia; 107, 108, 354, 667, 672, 673, 696, 722, 788, 805, 927, 1025, 1219, 1230. Auditory: 606. Auditory: outside visual angle; 955. Gustatory: 38, 95, 125, 675, 679, 750, 915, 974. in hands; 682, 933. on left side; 1181. Muscular: 38, 95, 125, 354, 682, 1010. Olfactory: 750. Tactile: 38, 125, 750, 981, 1168, 1169, 1196.  
 Anæsthetic: Not: in internal organs; 739. wholly: Becomes; 1003.  
 Analgesia; 240.  
 Angry; 596, 979. with Dr. Prince; 812. with R. D.; 852. with stairs; 866.  
 Anise water; 605.  
 Annoy: Tendency to: R. D.; 96.  
 "Antipodes" of S. M.; 464, 557.  
 Ants; 618.  
 Anxiety affects R. D.; 556.  
 Appearance; First: 61, 127, 151, 295.  
 Appearance; Last: 1250.  
 Appetite; 201, 526, 565, 650.  
 Appetite decreasing; 590, 654.  
 Appetite enormous; 38, 264.  
 Asa; 133, 559, 656, 746, 748, 754, 757, 775, 785, 788, 807, 813, 819, 825, 871.  
 Asa no; 701, 702, 708.  
 Asleep; 833.

## Margaret, Automatic

Anæsthesia of: 666.  
 Anæsthesia of: increased; 965, 983.  
 Ate apple; 1186.  
 Auditory hyperæsthesia; 352.  
 "Automatic" writing; 1269, 1271.  
 Automatism in response to stimuli; 589.  
 By-play of: 763.  
 asks for cake; 368.  
 "Counting" pulse; 752.  
 Different from M. awake; 292.  
 thinks she may be "D.'s dream"; 370.  
 drinking; 740.  
 drinks like a pig; 566.  
 eating candy; 763.  
 Echolalia; 461.  
 Expression of: 993.  
 feels features of Dr. Prince; 359.  
 Fell: on coming; 752.  
 in fright; 622, 623.  
 Hilarious; 681.  
 Hyperæsthesia; Auditory: 352.  
 Hypersensitive fingers of: 91.  
 reading lips and expression of Dr. Prince; 59, 91, 597, 610, 978.  
 Policy of keeping: 92.  
 Dr. Prince's head bumped by: 620.  
 Questions asked by: 586.  
 S. M. quite different from: 293.  
 S. M.: Movements of: not known by: 933.  
 heard S. M. talking; 843.  
 S. M. talked when M. was: 73.  
 and perfectly still; 1166.  
 Tactile anæsthesia of: 656, 983.  
 Talking to Dr. Prince without knowing it; 291.  
 Talking with M. when: secured more rest for the system; 78.  
 Attention: Volume of: is small; 594, 927.  
 Auditory: anæsthesia; 606. anæsthesia outside visual angle; 955. hallucinations to amuse R. D.; 159. hyperæsthesia; 38, 123, 352, 363, 368, 402, 639, 686, 760, 976, 981, 1081, 1172, 1184.  
 Aunt Maria; 161, 163, 168.  
 Aunt Maria; Hated: 178.  
 Automatic: reactions; 38. writing; 59, 1022, 1180, 1269, 1270,



**Margaret, Automatic**

1272, 1278, 1279. writing;  
 Discovers pencil during: 1269.  
 writing; S. M. talks while M.  
 does; 1270.  
 Automatisms; 713. Motor: 38,  
 91. in pairs; 975. during  
 sleep; 603, 616. in response to  
 stimuli; 589. Verbal: 38, 91,  
 569, 573, 586, 949, 993, 1041,  
 1062, 1063, 1064, 1065, 1068,  
 1079, 1086, 1100, 1105, 1157,  
 1158, 1221, 1244.  
 Auto-suggestion; 101. Deferred:  
 978. re stairs; 845, 846, 852.  
 Awake different from M. asleep;  
 292.  
 Awake two-thirds of time out;  
 1021.  
 Awareness; Four degrees of: 50.  
 Away; 535. from D.; 305, 306,  
 307. Wants to go: till D. is  
 well; 543, 877, 884. when R.  
 D. is out; M. is not: 547. when  
 R. D. was out; M. away twice:  
 1037. Sending M.: Dr. Prince  
 told S. D. he was: 355. Sent:  
 by prayers; 348. when S. D.  
 is out; M. is: 547.  
 B.; Dan: 704.  
 B.; Miss: 193.  
 Babbling; 731, 732, 820.  
 Babies; Birth of: 676, 677, 712,  
 841. Black and white: 712.  
 Babies in pictures; 1127.  
 Baby; Calls herself: 835.  
 Baby; Hideous, beautiful: 1120.  
 "Baby that don't know no-  
 thing"; 87.  
 Baby; "Never a": 354. Wants  
 a: in the house; 841.  
 "Back; M. will hate to find her-  
 self"; 787.  
 Back hurt by fall in October,  
 907; 248.  
 "Bad"; Conception of: 295.  
 Ball; Rubber: 160.  
 Baltimore; Battle of: 190.  
 Barrel; Ring in: 303, 306.  
 Barrel; Vase in: 303.  
 Bath; cold: Threatens to take:  
 794.  
 Bath; Comes in: 975.  
 Bathroom; Comes in: 1017, 1029.  
 Bathroom; Lock on: door; 1022.  
 Bathroom; Locked self in: 1185.  
 Beacham; 612.  
 Beauchamp; 612.

**Margaret, Brain**

*Becky*; 996, 997.  
 Bed; Destroys filthy: 241.  
 Bed; Fell out of: 395.  
 Bed; large: Wants: 659, 660.  
 Bed moved; 1068.  
 Bed; Playing in: 351.  
 Bed; Standing up in: 776, 777,  
 779, 781.  
 Bed-time; 1032.  
 Bed-time: Always in control at:  
 during early stages; 66.  
 Beer and Bliss; 882.  
 Belfast Address; 710, 714.  
 Belinda; 183.  
 Bell; Frightened by: 955.  
 Belt; Hidden: 796.  
 Bible; 195.  
 Big; Says Dr. Prince "gets  
 awful": 555.  
 Bill; 1185.  
 Billy; Offers: to Dr. Hyslop;  
 1175.  
 "Birdie; Hear the pretty": 1157,  
 1158.  
 Biscuits and cheese; 918.  
 Blamed for S. D.'s coming;  
 Afraid of being; 491.  
 Blames Dr. Prince; 1062.  
 Blanket "feels like spiders"; 824.  
 Blend: Will never: with R. D.;  
 447, 490, 573.  
 Blind; Vision of R. D. clearer  
 when M. becomes: 119, 126,  
 1195.  
 Blind; Vision of S. M. better  
 when M. becomes: 1194, 1198.  
 Blind; Walking when: 1197.  
 Blindness; 1204, 1207, 1230.  
 Blindness; Psychical: 108, 109.  
 Blindness; Reduced to: 38, 108,  
 115, 976, 1017, 1048, 1051, 1192.  
 Bliss; Beer and: 882.  
 Blow in face; S. M. makes M.  
 feel: 90, 623.  
 Blow on left side of head; S. M.  
 makes M. feel: 810.  
 Body; Relation to left side of:  
 98.  
 Body; No one may touch: of:  
 167.  
 Borax; 953.  
 Bored; 94.  
 Boss; 659.  
 Bother; Thinks she is a: 507.  
 Box; 402.  
 Brain; "Location" in: 441, 944.  
 Brain; "Location" of personali-



## Margaret, Brain

ties in the: 720.  
"Brain; Papo goes right into the corners of our": 506.  
Brain; space in the: "Occupies only a wee bit of": 740.  
Brashear; Dr.: 926, 928. "Crazy" letter from: 1032. Letters from: 1002, 1032. Letters to: 994, 1010, 1018, 1025, 1192. Plate for: 1009. Twisted ideas of: 1016.  
Breathing; Hears: 976.  
Breket; Wood for: 1216.  
Bridget; 25, 127, 201, 240, 305.  
Brought out by depressants; 171.  
"Brudder; Aint got any": 1243.  
Bruises; Subnormal as to: 38.  
"Bug"; 1115.  
Bugs; 603, 1181, 1191.  
Bun; Cinnamon: 1088.  
Burned finger; 805.  
Business Women's Club; 230.  
"Butted in"; 924, 927.  
Butter-milk; 828.  
Buttons off coat; Pulled: 358.  
C—; Mr.: 190.  
Cajolery; 190.  
Cake; 372, 398, 431, 433.  
Cake; Nut: 1096.  
Calculations; Monetary: 328, 355, 356, 360, 404, 1141.  
Called, but S. D. replies; 532.  
Calling of name brings: 863.  
Canaries; Tried to kill the: 304.  
Canary; 765.  
Canary; Accident to: 906.  
Canary dead; 980.  
Canary ill; 775, 777.  
Candy; 169, 431, 492, 516, 642, 665, 967.  
Candy; Loses interest in: 642, 652, 1078.  
Candy brings M. out; 474.  
Candy; Makes R. D. snatch at: 637.  
Cans; Rolling: on street; 183.  
Capability of: 241.  
Car; Tries to board: 718.  
Car; Came out on: 406, 921.  
Car; Tries to ride on: for a cent; 362.  
Cards; Christmas; Did not care for: 169.  
Carey; Mr.: 1179, 1210, 1224.  
Carfare; 406.  
Carriage of: 568.  
Cartoons; 399, 400.

## Margaret, Church

Cartoons; Humor in: 1010.  
Cartoons of Dr. Prince; 267.  
Cassock; Tore up material for: 349.  
Cat; 881.  
Catalepsy; 234, 678.  
Catalepsy; Pulse oscillating during: 607.  
Catalepsy during thunder-storm; 606.  
Cataleptic staring; 582.  
Catamenia and childishness; 1022.  
Catamenia; Pain during: 1023.  
Catamenia and tantrums; 486, 953.  
Cats; Seeing: 880.  
Cats' tails in drawer; 185.  
Cents; Objection to: 362.  
Change out of window; Threw: 362.  
Characteristics; 37, 148.  
Cheer Dr. Prince; Tries to: 1078.  
Cheerful; 531.  
Cheerfulness brings R. D.; 532.  
Cheese; 1090.  
Cheese; Biscuits and: 918.  
Cheese sandwiches; 1044.  
Cheque book; 901.  
Cheque for Dr. Walker; 829.  
Chest; Pressure on: produced deafness; 92.  
Chicken; baby; Story of: 797.  
Chickens in R. D.'s mind; Sees: 1015.  
"Child; Dr. Prince thinks M. a": 557, 911, 1250.  
Childhood; Stories of: told automatically; 1015.  
Childish; Always: 557, 723.  
Childish; Becomes more: 95, 751, 1117.  
Childishness; 773, 1019.  
Childishness; Catamenia and: 1022.  
Children; Fond of small: 242.  
Children; Service for: 468.  
Chocolate; 920, 1183.  
Chocolates; Stole box of: 169.  
Choke S. D.; M. attempts to: 77, 313.  
Choke S. D.; M. threatens to: 309.  
"Choos hurt baby": 835.  
Christmas tree; 1074, 1076.  
Church; 686.



## Margaret, Church

Church; Comes out in: 99, 358, 465, 482, 718.  
 Church; Goes to: 519.  
 Church; Opposed to: 592, 617, 653.  
 Church; Outbreaks in: 205.  
 Church; Wished to go to: 784.  
 Circus; 1184.  
 Circus parade; 1018.  
 "Clairvoyance"; 301, 738, 751.  
 Clarence; 867.  
 Cleaning house; 212.  
 Cleanliness; Passion for: 166, 167, 241, 568.  
 Cleveland; Rev. W. M.: 433, 902, 905.  
 Cleverness of: 354, 417.  
 Clock; Counting strokes of: during sleep; 731.  
 Closet; Curled up in: 694.  
 Closet; Hidden in: 769.  
 Cloth; Hides piece of: 778.  
 Clothes; Careful of R. D.'s: 969.  
 Clothes; Hiding: 606.  
 Clothes; Tearing: 90, 596.  
 Clumsiness; 722, 774.  
 "Cluster of thoughts" of R. D.; Called: 349, 353, 383, 441.  
 Coat: Wants to buy: for a dollar; 773.  
 Co-conscious after her disappearance; 120.  
 Co-conscious when R. D. was out; 164, 165.  
 Co-consciousness with R. D.; Result of: 1161.  
 Coffee; 1098.  
 Coffee in bed; 351.  
 Coffee; Fond of: 169.  
 Coffee; Brought out by smell of: 744.  
 Coin in handkerchief; 981.  
 Cold; Extremities: 501.  
 Cold; Becomes sensitive to: 705.  
 Cold; Made S. D. feel: 312.  
 Colder on left side; 451.  
 College song; 613.  
 Colorado Avenue; Leaves D. and goes to: 376. See 1064.  
 Colorado Avenue; Recognizes diagram of house on: 1008.  
 Comatose condition; 49.  
 Comatose\*sleep; 501.  
 Comes when R. D. was called; 476.  
 Comforted; Will not be: 1040.  
 Comforts Dr. Prince; 483.

## Margaret, Date

Coming: "does not hurt R. D. now"; 1023.  
 Coming purposely; Ceases from: 856.  
 Comings not always voluntary; 170.  
 Comprehension; Dulling of: 106, 116, 117.  
 Confidence of: Winning: 79.  
 "Connected" with S. M.; 557.  
 Conscious: Always: at first; 181.  
 Nearly always: 42. Not always: of what S. D. does; 440.  
 Once: of all that went on: 924.  
 When R. D. is out; 416, 418.  
 Consciousness; Double: 516, 808.  
 Plane of: almost opaque to the new plane; 584. plane of: Passes into another: 587.  
 Constipation; 703, 714.  
 Contempt for S. D.; 456.  
 Control of neck lost; 835.  
 Control; Energy required to: 754.  
 Convention; 1124.  
 Conversation: Sound of: lulls: 763.  
 Conversations: with R. D.; 158, 181. with S. D.; 49, 250, 300, 420. with S. D. ceased; 80, 395.  
 Cord; Pulling: 630, 631.  
 Corsets; 807.  
 Corsets; Dislikes: 568.  
 Counting; 936, 1146.  
 "Counting" pulse in sleep; 752.  
 Cow; The guilty: 166, 639, 640.  
 "Crack made in R. D."; 73.  
 Cranky; Made: by pain; 557.  
 Cross with R. D.; 651.  
 "Crossing the Bar"; 423.  
 Cruelty to S. D.; 38.  
 Crumbs; 466.  
 Crying spells; 971.  
 Cuts; Subnormal as to: 38, 123.  
 Cwistmas; 826, 827, 832.  
 Daddy; Her: 403.  
 Dan B.; 704.  
 Dances; 281.  
 Dancing; 189, 328.  
 Dancing lessons; 353, 363.  
 "Dangling things"; 467.  
 Dark; Sees in: 98, 123, 292, 293, 743.  
 "Darn it"; 66.  
 "Darned" stockings; 401.  
 Date on letter; 1011, 1018.



## Margaret, Daughters

Daughters; Two and a half: 434.  
Day from light; Cannot tell: 825, 1039.  
Day from night; Cannot tell: 1030, 1039.  
Deafness; Pressure on mammæ produced: 92, 593, 606, 655.  
Deafness; Temporary: daily; 594.  
Death; No knowledge of: 244.  
Deception; Explains: to S. D.; 271.  
Declension of: 38, 82, 100, 464, 649, 705, 794, 989, 1006, 1036, 1038, 1073, 1116, 1244.  
Declension of: affects R. D.'s nerves; 1012.  
Decoration Day parade; 582.  
Demonstrative; 38.  
Dependent; Becomes more: 751.  
Depressant; Brought out by: 171.  
Desires of R. D. manifested through: 780, 967.  
Destruction of property: 241, 283, 284, 291, 294, 296, 314, 324, 328, 349, 356, 358, 360.  
Devil; 1089.  
Dialect; Rubberneck Row: 284.  
"Diaries" of: 314, 328.  
Diary; Dr. Prince's: 1028.  
"Dibble"; 113.  
"Dibble" has come back; 1097.  
"Dibble"; S. M. a: 1093.  
Differences between R. D. and M.; 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 710.  
Differences between S. D. and M.; 412.  
Different from R. D.; Feels that she is: 417.  
Diplomacy; Need of: in dealing with: 779.  
"Directory"; 963.  
Disappear; Will: 464, 573.  
Disappearance; 117, 126.  
Disappearance; Co-conscious after: 120.  
Disappointment; 527, 564.  
Discovery of: 75.  
Disgusted with Dr. Walker; 1025.  
Disorder; Did not mind: 241.  
Disposition improving; 595.  
Dissatisfied; 507.  
Distance; Difficulty in gauging: 976.  
Disturbances; Emotional: 46.  
Disturbed; 518.

## Margaret, Dress

Disturbed by R. D.'s worrying; 1122.  
Ditch; Fell into: 855.  
"Do it again"; 1020, 1179.  
"Doch"; 1149.  
Docile; 557.  
Doctor; Hatred of the: 162.  
"Dog"; 1175.  
Dog; Dead: 193.  
Dog; Story of little: 1176.  
Dog; Uncleanly: Kicks at: 241.  
"Dogs"; 1178.  
Doings of: 63.  
Doll; 1085.  
Doll; Buys a: 555.  
Doll; Called: 349.  
Doll funerals; 185.  
Dolls; 107, 243, 553, 554, 562, 649, 709, 951, 978, 1175, 1186, 1210, 1220, 1222. Fond of: 242. interest in: Revived: 867. Names of: 867, 868. Naming: 186. Paper: 732. Purchase of: for: 781, 782.  
Door; Comes to remind Dr. Prince about: 1004.  
Door; Slammed: 356.  
Door-step; Sat on: 356.  
Doris; M. thinks she heard someone calling: 473.  
"Doris los'"; 1170.  
Doris; Dr. Prince said M. was: 357, 371.  
"Doris; That": 76.  
Double conscious; M. and S. M.: 516, 808.  
Drama; 553, 571, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 592.  
Drawer; 185, 587, 590, 595, 665, 725, 726, 1235.  
Drawers; Stole lace from: 175.  
Drawers used by: for shirt; 358.  
Drawers; White: 174.  
Dream; D.'s: 370. about Mr. Fischer: 423. Dr. Prince's: 370. Makes R. D.: 550. about running away; 893.  
Dreams; Never: 414, 787. Called a part of D.'s: 347. of R. D. influenced by: 48, 447. of R. D. becoming normal: 517. of R. D. seen by: 423, 446. of R. D. seen by: no longer: 811. of R. D. told by: 484. Working: 347.  
Dress; Blue: 349.  
Dress; Gingham: 792.



## Margaret, Dressing

Dressing a nuisance to: 87, 491, 660.  
Drinks in sleep; 516.  
Drinks in sleep like a pig; 566.  
Drug-store? Are you a: 820, 821.  
Drunk; Thought Dr. Prince was: 756.  
Duck; 916.  
Ducking under; 507, 622, 647.  
Dumm; 373, 375, 927.  
"Dummy; I'm no": 1093.  
"Dutchman"; 527.  
"Eat, you greaser"; 358.  
Eating again; 1147.  
Eating: Three periods in matter of: 953.  
Eating; Loses all pleasure in: 1135.  
Echolalia; 910.  
Edith; 183.  
Edna; 183.  
Eggs; Attempt to hatch: 165.  
Eighteen years of age; 295.  
Ella; 106, 192, 555.  
Ella; Brings R. D. suddenly to see: 950.  
Embroidery; 40, 72, 234, 300, 356, 446, 892.  
Emma; "Cousin"; 276.  
Emotion and alternation; 732, 733.  
Emotion rectified by sleep; 1033.  
Emotional disturbances; 46.  
Emotional reaction affects: 167.  
Emotional storm; Effects of: 447, 817.  
Emotionally not more than 10 years old; 37.  
Emotions affect R. D.'s thoughts; 527, 585.  
Emotions of R. D. perceived by M. when supra-liminal; 929.  
*Enfant terrible*; 64, 241.  
Epileptic Lillian; 206.  
Eve; 1072.  
Evergreen; 1070.  
Excitement affects R. D.; 527.  
Exhaustion; 1177.  
Existence; M. objects to denial of her: 342.  
Existence: "Vestigial"; "subliminally"; 1255.  
Exorcism by prayer; Attempt at: 311, 312, 313.  
Exorcism by suggestion: Attempt at: almost kills R. D.; 348.

## Margaret, Fischer

Experiment with R. D.; 491.  
Experiment; Success of: 505.  
Expression; 350, 649. of Dr. Prince read by M. "asleep"; 91, 116. of Dr. Prince read by M. when blind; 108, 1020, 1050, 1051, 1213, 1226. of Dr. Prince sensed by M.; 116, 1020, 1050. of Dr. Prince sensed by M. at any distance; 1119. Twisted: 963.  
Expulsion of: 79.  
External; Sensation chiefly: 491.  
Eye strain; Diagnosis of: 115.  
Eyelid; Fluttering of: 619.  
Eyelid picked by: 330.  
Eyes; Clawing at: 918. Effect on: 115. hurt; Papo's: 116. open in sleep; 594. Trouble with: 1213. Wakened by blowing in: 681, 738, 757, 774, 879, 887, 1085.  
Facial expression of Dr. Prince read by M.; 116. when blind; 109.  
Fairies; Belief in: 37, 881.  
Fall; 517. in 1907; 73, 248. from chair, asleep at table; 1035. down stairs; 101, 866. down stairs; Made S. D.: 303. from tree; Made R. D.: 168.  
Falling; S. M. saves M. from: 624.  
Fear of Dr. Prince; 624.  
Features of Dr. Prince felt by M. asleep; 359.  
Feet: cold; 777, 794, 814, 1005. clumped like wooden blocks; 95, 747, 774. not cold if she sleeps promptly; 766. rubbed; 777, 988. rubbed no longer; 1242. Trouble with: 1164.  
Fibbing; 37, 1028.  
Finger; Burned: 805.  
Finger in S. D.'s mouth; 603.  
Fire; 1236.  
Fire alarm; 1026.  
Fire; Foot close to: 797.  
Fire; Gas: 788.  
Fischer; Mr.: awed by: 251. Dinner for: Gets: 358. Dislike of: 358. Dream about: 423. Fear of: 401, 690. Man-aging: 369. Money of: taken by M.; 362. Tries to remember: 1008. Reminded of: 890.  
Fischer; Mrs.: Apparition of:



## Margaret, Fischer

1042. Loved: 177, 178. "not mother of R. D."; 352.  
Fischer: Name: forgotten by: 1004.  
Fish doctor; 812, 813, 814.  
Five A. M.; Habit of watching for: 411.  
Five years old when she went; 770.  
Floor; Slept on: 173.  
Flowers from grave; Took: 161.  
Food; 107, 1019.  
Foods; Taste in: 41, 265, 1019, 1150.  
Foot dead; Thought: 1224.  
Foot close to fire; 797.  
Foot; Thought she had lost: 980, 1224.  
Foot; "Snakes" in: 849.  
Forgets names of parts of body; 1149.  
Forgets meaning of words; 1067, 1068, 1120, 1121, 1149.  
"Forgot to forget"; 987.  
Formula; 82, 402, 628.  
Formula in use; 441, 443, 444.  
Freeman; Mrs.: Letter to: 1007.  
French girl; Romance of: 706.  
Fright brought R. D. out; 94.  
Fright after being slapped; 941.  
Frightened: by bell; 955. by napkin falling on chest; 1079. on street; 973, 979. by thunder; 606.  
Fruits; Names of: 939.  
Fun of Dr. Prince; Makes: 267, 383.  
Funeral of Mrs. Fischer; 220.  
Funerals; Doll: 185.  
Furniture: Changing about of: causes M. to lose bearings; 1017.  
Furniture; Playing with: 547.  
"Fussing"; S. M. sees M.: 851.  
Gain; Temporary: 880, 882.  
Geranium; 531.  
German accent; 105, 117, 1055, 1165, 1182.  
German construction; 1170.  
German words; 1165.  
Gestures beyond vision; cannot see or know: 1050.  
"Get off"; 1034.  
Gifts from Sunday School festival; 1075.  
Giving way to R. D.; 821.  
Gladys; 867.

## Margaret, Happiness

Go: M. lets: while asleep; 542.  
Go; Dr. Prince told S. D. that M. would have to: 331, 355.  
Go: S. D. will: before M.; 490.  
Go; Willing to: 567.  
"God was called away from his job and got us mixed up"; 994.  
Goes to house on Colorado Avenue; 376.  
Goes voluntarily; S. D. comes when M.: 534.  
Gone; 1248, 1252, 1254.  
Graduation; 196.  
Grammar; Bad: 586.  
Grammar lesson; 586.  
Grapes; 268.  
Grasping Dr. Prince as she went to sleep; 501.  
Greaser; 358, 815, 820, 927, 1217, 1226.  
Grief of relatives mocked by: 254.  
Grieving; 879.  
Grundy; Mrs.: 660.  
Guesses location of Lawrence Street; 1000.  
Guessing; 1028.  
Guild; Women's: 1186.  
Gum for "comfort"; 1021.  
Gustatory anæsthesia; 38, 95, 125, 675, 679, 750, 915, 974.  
Habit of watching for 5 A. M.; 411.  
Hair; Abominated: 1245.  
Hair arranged differently by different personalities; 453.  
Hair ribbons; 186.  
Hair torn out by: 72, 235.  
Hairpins; 1078.  
Haitsch; Michael: 1242.  
Hallowe'en festivities; 167, 1203.  
Hallucinations: Auditory: to amuse R. D.; 159.  
Hallucinations in mind of R. D. caused by M.: 64.  
Hallucinations: Visual: 880, 950.  
Ham and harm; 1133.  
Hamilton; Adelaide: seen by televoyance; 346.  
Handkerchiefs; 426.  
Hands: Backs of: become anæsthetic; 933.  
Hands: Palms of: anæsthetic; 682.  
Hands held by Mrs. Prince; 74.  
Happiness: brings R. D.; 532.



## Margaret, Happiness

590. rescues R. D. from worry; 732. strengthens; 628.  
 Hatred of S. D. by: 26, 32, 72.  
 He; 292.  
 Head: Jerk of: when M. comes; 378, 393, 401.  
 Head; Jerking and rolling of: 835.  
 Head; Wagging: 1082.  
 Headache tablets; 1079.  
 Headaches; 476, 838, 1075.  
 Headaches; Affected by *severe*: 836.  
 Hear: Can no longer: S. M.; 464, 465, 557.  
 Hearing; 639. with ears plugged; 758. Tests of: 764, 768, 1023.  
 Hears: breathing of Dr. Prince; 976. movements; 760. spoon approaching; 1193. only when touched; 1026. word spoken by S. M.; 764.  
 Heat; Effects of: 995.  
 Heat; Becomes sensitive to: 705.  
 Heat of solid bodies; Subnormal in reaction to: 792.  
 Heaven; 630, 1116.  
 Held; Asks to be: 1022.  
 Helen; Avoids: 255.  
 Helen; Smacked by: 173.  
 "Hell fire"; 163.  
 "Hello Papa": Says: by suggestion; 327.  
 Helps Dr. Prince; 133.  
 Hen-house; Came in: 1031.  
 Hens "hopped" on: 1031.  
 Her daddy; 403.  
 Hidden belt; 796.  
 Hides piece of cloth; 778.  
 Hiding clothes; 606.  
 High School; Refused to go to: 196.  
 Hilarity; 688.  
 Hip; 397.  
 Hip; Pain in: 300.  
 Hip; "Pulling": bone; 362.  
 History of the bunch; 422.  
 Histrionic tendency of: 92.  
 Holding on; 647.  
 Holding on: Ceases from: while sleeping; 561.  
 Home; Old: Wants to go to: 1041. Goes to: and sees Marie; 737. Goes to: and tells Dr. Prince what is going on there; 376.  
 Homesick; 93, 632.

## Margaret, Intercognition

"Huh!"; 349.  
 Humor; 431, 466, 471, 584, 614, 627, 647, 649.  
 Humor in cartoons; 1010.  
 Humor; Unconscious: 1118.  
 Humoring Dr. Prince; 441.  
 Hurting S. D.; 329.  
 Husband; Weeping for her dead: 184.  
 Hyperaesthesia; Auditory: 38, 123, 352, 363, 368, 402, 639, 686, 760, 976, 981, 1081, 1172, 1184.  
 Hyperaesthesia; Visual: 38, 123.  
 Hyslop; Dr.: offers Billy to: 1175.  
 Hyslop; Dr.: Visit of: 695.  
 Hyslop; Jim: (doll); 868. Letters from: 717, 1021, 1201. Letters to: 711, 798, 858, 983, 990, 991, 997, 1008. Present from: 858.  
 Ice-cream; 517, 953, 979, 1135.  
 Ignored by Dr. Prince; 367.  
 Ill-treatment; Reminds D. of: 295.  
 Illusions; 921.  
 Illusions of R. D. explained by: 725.  
 Illusions; Tactual: 786.  
 Imagination; Addresses S. D. in: 592.  
 Imagination; Pains and pleasures from: 828.  
 Imagining things; 178.  
 Imp; 127.  
 Improprity; cannot understand: 719.  
 Impudent to Aunt Maria; 168.  
 In: Driven: by turning head to right; 336, 342.  
 In: Goes: at will; 645.  
 Individuality of: 403, 404, 423, 434, 441.  
 Individuality; Pride of: 968.  
 Infantile action; 934.  
 Inhibited from hearing S. M.; 42.  
 Ink; Suggests drinking: 948.  
 "Insane"; Repeats word: 538.  
 "Instink"; 1119.  
 Intellectual expansion; Reached limit of: 67.  
 Intellectually five years old when she disappeared; 39.  
 Intellectually ten years of age; 67.  
 Intercognition; 422, 513, 520.  
 Intercognition with S. D.; 51.



## Margaret, Interest

Interest in life decreases; 94, 751.  
 Interfering with S. M.; 614.  
 Interfusion; 528.  
 Internal organs not anæsthetic; 739.  
 Internal pains felt very slightly by: 38, 123, 491.  
 Interpolation by M. in S. M.'s letter; 984.  
 Interpolation by S. M. during sleep of: 348.  
 Interrupts R. D.; 532.  
 Interrupts R. D.'s reading; 758.  
 Interrupts S. M.; 42, 528, 557.  
 Ironing; 494.  
 Ironing too long; 524.  
 Irritates Dr. Prince; 889.  
 Jealous of R. D.; 591.  
 Jealous of S. D.; 283.  
 Jerk of head when M. comes; 378, 393, 401, 1242.  
 Jewelry destroyed by: 284.  
 Jewelry: Gives to S. D.; 283.  
 "Jim; There is no": 1035.  
 Jolted by S. M.; 90, 613, 616, 623, 809.  
*Journal of the Diocesan Convention*; 670.  
 Kern; Lizzie: 430.  
 Key; Forgets use of: 1017, 1022.  
 Kicked out; 131, 478, 713.  
 Kicks chair; 996.  
 Kimono; 587.  
 Kiss; Good-night: 715.  
 Knowledge from S. M.; Does not derive; 937.  
 L. K.; 363.  
 Lace from drawers; Stole: 175.  
 Language of: 66, 411, 425, 431, 433, 648, 649, 711, 873, 1085, 1104, 1137.  
 Lapselzer's Row; 380.  
 Lard; Hot: 1226.  
 Laugh of: 620, 624, 762, 766, 784.  
 Laugh; S. M. makes M.: 1027, 1306.  
 Laughed: Something hurt S. M. when M.: 1272.  
 Laughing; Three ways of: 530.  
 Laughs at Mrs. Prince; 452. at R. D.; 666, 667.  
 Laughs at S. D.; 488.  
 Laughs underneath; 500.  
 Laughter and tears; 1122.  
 Lawrence Street; Guesses location of: 1000.  
 Lectured Dr. Prince; 653.

## Margaret, Magazine

Left D. when asleep; 376, 377.  
 Left D. and went to Colorado Avenue; 376.  
 Left D. and went down-stairs; 375.  
 Left D. asleep and went to see the Princes; 305, 306.  
 Left side of D.; On: 355, 371.  
 "Legs; She shouldn't lie on our": 441.  
 Lessons done during night; 172.  
 "Let"; 837.  
 Lethargy; 751, 1016.  
 Life; Loses interest in: 642, 643, 650.  
 Life saved by S. M.; 707.  
 Light; Electric: 1048.  
 "Light I's a": 1109, 1315.  
 Light; Red: 656. Sudden: causes sleep; 933.  
 Lillian the epileptic; 206.  
 Linen; Gave D.: 361.  
 "Linen; I will swipe some": 360.  
 "Lip reading"; 59, 91, 292, 509, 510, 597, 612, 720, 764, 1065.  
 Lips moving; Finds: but does not hear; 1241.  
 Lips of Dr. Prince read by M. when "asleep"; 59, 91, 292, 610.  
 Locate: Cannot: hair, forehead, chin or hands; 1219.  
 "Location" in brain; 441.  
 "Location" of personalities in the brain; 720, 823.  
 Location; Sense of: 1212.  
 Locked in; 507.  
 "Lonesome"; 519.  
 Losing ground; 750.  
 "Losted" coming from bathroom; 1033.  
 Louise; 867.  
 Lovable as a rule; 37.  
 "Love: You: the D., but you don't love me"; 416.  
 Luella; 65, 192.  
 Lunch; Gets: for herself; 369.  
 Lying down nine-tenths of the time; 974.  
 M.; Mrs.: 178.  
 M.; Mrs.; M. caused fear of blindness in: 307.  
 M.; Mrs.: Circles for raps; 307.  
 M.; Mrs.: M. put "hand" before eyes of: 307.  
 McDonough; 430.  
 Magazine; 1243.



**Margaret, Magnified**

Magnified: Objects: when near eyes; 1033, 1121.  
 Maid: Neighbour's: disliked by: 561.  
 Maine; Mrs.: 382.  
 "Mamma": 1269.  
 Mammæ; Pressure on: makes deaf; 92, 593, 606, 655.  
 Mammæ: belong to R. D.; 485.  
 Man in hall; Imagines she sees: 950.  
 Manicure set; 780.  
 Manner of: 350.  
 Manner; Alternation in: 1016.  
 Margaret; M. looks for another: 206.  
 Margaret; M.'s doll: 867, 868.  
 Maria; Aunt: 161, 163, 168.  
 Maria; Aunt: Hated: 178.  
 Marie S—; 377.  
 Marie; Went to old home and saw: 737.  
 Market; Going to: 355.  
 Marlboro, Mass.; 625.  
 Marshmallows; 1047, 1152.  
 Massage; 585.  
 Mattress; Burns filthy: 241.  
 Mechanism of the case; 568.  
 Medal; Gold: 872.  
 Meddling; Complains of R. D.'s: 584.  
 Medicine; 492.  
 Medicine by the bottle; 264.  
 Memories: Earlier: fade; 1015.  
     Earlier: survive longest; 751.  
     fading; 90, 93, 94, 105, 241.  
     Pains and pleasures from: 828.  
     R. D. does not share M.'s; 26.  
     recovered temporarily; 1026.  
 Memory; 148. failing: 650, 664, 1022, 1035, 1105, 1160. Tricks of: 1109. of words and actions during sleep; 742.  
 Mental discomfort; Blames Dr. Prince for her: 587.  
 Mental infancy; Did not decline to: 555.  
 Mental pictures; 634.  
 Mentality: abnormal: 95, 162, 165, 168, 185, 193, 206, 241, 243, 244, 254, 264, 265, 375, 454, 547, 582, 600, 607, 617, 618, 623, 626, 627, 628, 634, 651, 663, 666, 667, 675, 679, 684, 697, 719, 820, 948, 952, 967, 971, 980, 1022, 1105, 1108, 1110, 1112, 1117, 1118, 1120, 1127, 1138, 1148, 1149,

**Margaret, Mother**

1164, 1166, 1185, 1189, 1196, 1197, 1211, 1213, 1216, 1220, 1221, 1224, 1225, 1237, 1238, 1243, 1244. diminished as M. declined; 38, 100, 664, 973, 1105, 1107, 1127, 1132, 1141, 1163, 1166. reduced to that of child of five years; 117, 127, 770. reduced to that of child of six years; 105.  
 Mentally not more than ten years old; 37, 127, 164, 240, 519.  
 Methodist minister mimics: 205.  
*Meum and tuum*; Confusion of: 933, 1150, 1202, 1213, 1237, 1238.  
 Milk; 166, 639, 640.  
 Milk cans; 1021.  
 Milk; Condensed: 1021.  
 Mimics S. D.; 488.  
 Mind: of D. read by: 946. a "part" of a: 1103. of M. read by S. M.; 88, 629, 654. of M. studied by S. M.; 1077. of Dr. Prince read by: 745. of R. D.; Cloudiness of: 1203. of R. D.; Laughed at pictures in: 1172. of R. D. read by M.: 95, 1015, 1036, 1085, 1088. of Rev. G. B. Richards read by: 740. Subliminal: 1088.  
 Mind-reading; 745, 799, 800, 804.  
 Mispronunciation; 37.  
 Missed by R. D.; 669, 1251.  
 Mississippi; 190.  
 Mistakes in treatment of: 379.  
 Misunderstands Dr. Prince; 1034.  
 Mixed up; God got us: 994.  
 Monetary calculations; 328, 355, 356, 360, 404, 1141.  
 Money; 107, 981. Asking for: 187. Banking R. D.'s: 906.  
 Mr. Fischer's: 362. Loses interest in: 1009. Paper: Objection to: 362, 404. Threw about room; 1009. Threw: out of window; 375.  
 Moods; 563, 591, 1024. of Dr. Prince known to M. when she cannot see him; 1046. affected R. D.; 97, 928, 999. affected S. D.; 559. puzzled Dr. Prince; 264.  
 Moon put out; Wants the: 1199.  
 Morphine: Responds to: 253.  
 "Mor'r's dead"; 124.  
 "Mother; Our": 1021.



## Margaret, Mother

"Mother; Our: the D. saw": 1042.  
 Motor automatisms; 38.  
 Motor control of neck lost; 835.  
 Mouth: Finger in: of S. D.; 603.  
 Movements; Hears: 760. of S. D. caused by M.; 537. S. M. not always conscious of: of M.; 785. differ from S. M.'s; 785.  
 "Mudder"; 1243.  
 Muscular anæsthesia; 38, 125.  
 Music; Not fond of: 169.  
*My Days are Gliding Swiftly* By; 675.  
 Nails of S. D. tore out by: 72, 235.  
 Name: Calling of: brings: 863.  
 Name selected by herself; 127, 305.  
 Named by Dr. Prince; 25, 76.  
 Naughtiness; 761.  
 Neater than R. D.; 166.  
 Neatness; 1126.  
 Neck: Motor function lost in: 835.  
 Neck; Stiff: 739.  
 Necklace; 816.  
 Necklace from "Paul Schroeder"; 352, 353.  
 Negro talk; 711.  
 Nephew; 1008.  
 Nephew: D.'s: meets M.; 518.  
 Nervous; 518, 556, 877, 889, 1001.  
 Nettie's sister; Destroys letter from: 478.  
 Newspaper upside down; 1145.  
 Nickel; 739.  
*Nicodemus*; 934, 1087.  
 Night and day; Difference between: 1030.  
 Night; "Queen" at: 249.  
 Night; Work at: 72.  
 Nightgown; Goes to bed in: 771.  
 Nightgown set on fire by: 476.  
 Nightgown; Trouble with: 1174.  
 Nocturnal activities of: 172.  
 "Noise, noise"; 1231.  
 Noise brings M. out: 444.  
 Nose wiped by S. M.; 1217.  
 Notes to R. D.; 66, 160, 161, 173, 201, 230, 258, 469, 535, 668.  
 Notes exchanged with S. D.; 49, 230, 250, 528.  
 Notes to S. D.; 229, 507.  
 Notes: Wrote: after she had ceased from reading; 107.

## Margaret, Personalities

"Nuisance; A little:" 982.  
 Obedience; Method of ensuring: 594.  
 Obedient; 557.  
 Objects to Dr. Prince's idea that she does not exist; 342.  
 Obsessing notion; 892.  
 Obsessions of S. D. stimulated by: 359.  
 Offended with Dr. Prince: 985.  
 Olfactory anæsthesia; 750.  
 "One; We are going to be:" 404.  
 Opium pill; 95, 707, to 710.  
 Orders R. D.; 428.  
 Ossian; Lines from: 423.  
 Out: Brought: by handling candy: 831.  
 Out: Called: by Dr. Prince; 350, 451.  
 Out: Calling to R. D. to come: 648.  
 Out; Fails to bring R. D.: 672.  
 Out: Time: decreasing; 750.  
 Out; Tired of being: 632.  
 Out; "Unconscious" when not: 819.  
 Outbreaks in church, etc., not serious; 205.  
 Owen; Dr.; 1228.  
 P.; 190.  
 Pagan; 168, 673, 1056.  
 Page-ant; 620.  
 Pain during catamenia; 1023.  
 Made cranky by: 557. after eating; 722. Effect of: 602. in hip; 300. caused by attempts to stimulate thought; 116.  
 Pains: Internal: felt very slightly; 38, 123. from memories and imagination; 828.  
 Pelvic: 624.  
 Pajamas; 763, 766, 767, 771, 781.  
 Papo; 1041.  
 Parrot chews Christmas tree; 1074.  
 Parrot shaken by M.; 1076.  
 Partner; Conceited: 281.  
 Patch with Margaret on it; 403.  
 Pats: Playful: really painful blows; 722, 738, 889, 940.  
 Pelvic pains; 624.  
 Penitent; Never: 168.  
 "Perfoony" bottle; 919.  
 "Person"; If she were a: 630.  
 "Person"; Not a: 757.  
 Personalities: "Location" of the: 441, 720, 823.



## Margaret, Personalities

Personalities; Puzzled by Dr. Brashear's references to the: 1015.  
 Perspires more than R. D.; 573.  
 Perspires while reading letter; 1016.  
 Perspires while writing; 1011.  
 "Peter, Pumpkin-eater"; 704.  
 Phantoms; People like: 1038.  
 Phase A; 951.  
 Phonetic resemblances side-track: 963.  
 Photograph of M. when R. D. was five years old; 62, 171.  
 Photograph of R. D.; M. destroys: 283.  
 Physiology; 190.  
 Piano keys struck by M. and R. D. sang; 81, 413.  
 Pickle; 431, 433.  
 Picture book; 876.  
 Picture gallery; 569.  
 Pictures; Babies in: 1127. become a blur to: 108, 1171. destroyed by: 324. in mind of R. D.; Laughed at; 1172. R. D.'s thinking of: disturbs M.; 572. no longer understood; 1138, 1148.  
*Pilgrim's Progress*; 861, 867.  
 Pill; Opium; 95, 707 to 710.  
 Pills; 612, 703, 714.  
 Pirate; 374.  
 Pittsburgh, Pa.; 94.  
 Pity resented by: 168, 182.  
 Pitying S. D.; 298.  
 Planchette; 1180, 1282, 1294, 1312, 1316.  
 Planchette "Crazy stuff"; 1282.  
 "Planting" people; 618.  
 "Planting" Polly; 618.  
 Plate admired by R. D.; 1008.  
 Playing in bed; 351.  
 Pleasures from memories and imaginations; 828.  
 Pocket; Looks for her: 1141.  
 Policeman; Fear of: 921.  
 Policeman insulted by M.; 737.  
 Policy in dealing with Dr. Prince; 417.  
 Polly; "Planting"; 618.  
 Pollywog; O you: 675.  
 Popcorn; 852.  
 Porch; Comes on: and falls asleep; 993.  
 Porch; On: in nightdress; 788.

## Margaret, Question

Porch; Does not care to stay on: 974.  
 Potash; 948.  
 Potatoes; 402, 413.  
 "Pounds" Dr. Prince; 979.  
 Prayers; Sent away by: 348.  
 Praying; Disgusted at R. D.'s: 289.  
 Presence of; Signs of: 783.  
 Present from "Jim" Hyslop; 858, 859.  
 Present; Jubilant over small: 1073.  
 Present; Lives in the: 492.  
 Present from Dr. Walker; 829.  
 Pressure on chest produces deafness; 92, 593, 606, 655.  
 Pretending; 1018.  
 "Pretty doll"; 1148.  
 Pretzels; 1165, 1200, 1208.  
 Prince; Dr.; Afraid of: 75. clings to arm of: while walking: 492. M. tries to cheer: 1078. M. disgusted with: 313.  
 Flattering; 371. Made fun of: 267, 383. Head of: a child in her play; 582. irritated with M.; 889, 1091. Left D. asleep and went to see: 305, 306.  
 Letters to: 991, 1018. name of: Forgot: 1047. nervous and irritable; 1029. Objects to: on account of his profession; 294. Makes it hard for S. D. to go to see: 349, 350, 351. M. wants: to sing; 910.  
 Prince; Mrs.; Letter to: 1019.  
 Prince; Mrs.; Love for: 1104.  
 Pronouns; Use of: 493, 1224.  
 Pronunciation; 273, 931, 973, 1024, 1068.  
 Property; Destruction of: 241, 283, 284, 291, 294, 296, 314, 324, 328, 349, 356, 358, 360.  
 Property rights; 64, 91, 96, 100, 107, 159, 859, 892, 893, 951, 968, 972, 1111.  
 Psychic stimuli; 614.  
 Psychical tie by suggestion; 327.  
 Puddle; Came out in: 817.  
 "Pulling" hip bone; 362.  
 Pulse at 56: 878.  
 Punished; M.; 161, 698, 701, 756.  
 Purring; 645.  
 Quaint; 584.  
 Question; S. M. makes M. answer: 1154.



## Margaret, Questions

Questions; Strange: 206.  
 Quickness at work; 199.  
 R.; Mrs.: 363.  
 R. F.; 813.  
 Rages of; 37.  
 "Rats up there"; 964.  
 Reactions; Automatic: 38.  
 Read: Able to: when R. D. not well; 803, 965. Pretending to: 508, 822, 1120, 1175. Trying to: 770. unable to: Becomes: 384, 393, 1113, 1115. *You* don't really: 1120.  
 Reading; 416, 814, 1100. aloud; Objects to: 1117. Ceased from: 107. letter from Dr. Brashear causes M. to perspire; 1016. Lip; 69, 91, 292, 509, 510, 597, 610, 612, 720, 764. to Dr. Prince; 267. stopped: 751. without understanding; 670, 983, 989, 1036, 1101.  
 Real Doris.  
 Amused by M.; 153, 156, 158, 159. "is ashamed of me"; 913.  
 Better when M. talks; 361.  
 Blend with R. D.; M. will never: 447, 490.  
 Bring: M. loses power to: 428, 856.  
 M. calls the: in vain; 500.  
 Conversations with M.; 158, 181.  
 "Crack" made in: 73.  
 Differences between R. D. and M.; 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 710.  
 Dreaming; M. saw R. D.: 494.  
 Dreaming while M. slept; 172.  
 "Eats like a hog"; 1054.  
 Existence of R. D.; M. afraid of disclosing: 294.  
 Existence of R. D.; M. keeps secret: 347.  
 Mrs. Fischer "not mother of R. D."; 352.  
 M. frightened R. D.; 160.  
 Hallucinations caused by M.; 64.  
 R. D. misses M.; 669.  
 M. neater than R. D.; 166.  
 M. writes orders for R. D.; 428.  
 Out: The longer R. D. is: the stronger she gets; 404.  
 M. tells S. D. how to keep R.

## Margaret, Romance

D. out; 227.  
 Out together; M. and R. D.; 506.  
 "Real papa of R. D."; 352.  
 M. thought Dr. Prince might not like R. D.; 332.  
 Dr. Prince: M. tells: of R. D.; 399.  
 M. "part of R. D."; 652.  
 M. reveals R. D.; 385.  
 "You never saw the R. D."; 79.  
 M. makes R. D. say things; 580, 635.  
 M. nearer surface when R. D. is sick; 1009.  
 M. slapped R. D.; 181.  
 M. scratched R. D.; 160.  
 Well; M. wants R. D. to get: 897.  
 Worried lest Dr. Prince should not like R. D.; 363.  
 Reason; Does not: 961.  
 Reasoning power; Shrewd: 719.  
 Rebecca; 867.  
 Reckon; Little ability to: 355.  
 Rector; Amused at accent of: 478.  
 Red Light; 656.  
 Relatives; Forgets R. D.'s: 898.  
 Relatives; Grief of: mocked by M.; 254.  
 Reliable; Not: 241.  
 Repartee; 417.  
 Resentment; Absence of: 624, 680.  
 Resentment at neglect of her friends; 255.  
 Rested: Never; before S. D. came; 593.  
 Resting when away; Always: 547.  
 Resting for R. D.: 565, 593.  
 "Resurrectory"; 963.  
 Retracing her development; 689, 1055.  
 Revenge on S. D.; 235.  
 Revengeful; Becomes: 596.  
 Ribbon on Dr. Prince's ear; Tied: 811.  
 Richards: Rev. G. B.: Tells: he has two boys; 740.  
 Rid of; Method of getting: 779.  
 Ring; 401.  
 Ring in barrel; 303, 306.  
 "Ring that cut me; It was the:" 688.  
 Romance of French girl; 706.



## Margaret, Romance

Romance regarding R. D.; 79, 380.  
 Romancing; 359, 364.  
 Rompers; Asks for: 742.  
 "Roomers"; 1077.  
 Rose at 3.30; 175.  
 Rubberneck; 659.  
 Rubberneck Row; 380.  
 Rubberneck Row dialect; 284.  
 "Run and run"; M. feels that she must: 519.  
 S.; Mr.: Will not shake hands with: 928.  
 S.; Mrs.: 926.  
 S—; Marie: 377.  
 Sadie; 347.  
 Sally; Destruction of: 314.  
 Sally; Hated the name: 186.  
 Salts; 1021.  
 Sanitarium; Wants to go to: 875, 884.  
 Sarcasm; 347.  
 Saved: Life: by S. M.; 707.  
 Scabs; Tearing off: 628.  
 Scalded us; S. D. almost: 437.  
 Scene: Imaginary country: recognized by Dr. Prince; 927.  
 Schmeltz; Dr.: 812.  
 School days; 65, 189, 195.  
 School; Disliked: 170.  
 Schroeder; Margaret: 351, 360, 380, 395, 396, 398.  
 Schroeder; Paul: 351, 352, 353, 354, 360, 380, 420.  
 "Science"; 530, 710.  
 "Science"; Thinks that S. M. is: 864.  
 Scratched herself during sleep; 574.  
 Scratched sores; 1076.  
 Scratched R. D.; 160.  
 Scratched S. D.; 64, 72, 77, 235, 281, 306, 307, 320.  
 Scrubbing movement in sleep; 511.  
 Scrubbing window-frames; 511.  
 Second sight; 377.  
 Sees in dark; 98, 123, 292, 293.  
 Sees from R. D.'s thoughts; 982.  
 Selfishness of: 64, 91, 96, 100, 107, 159, 186, 201, 284, 375, 872, 892, 893, 985.  
 Self-willed; 177.  
 Sensation chiefly external; 491.  
 Sensitive to temperature; 95, 705.  
 Sensitiveness; 1046.

## Margaret, Sick Doris

Sensory impressions of S. D. and R. D. known by M.; 35.  
 Sentences; Specimens of: 944.  
 Sermon cases; 347.  
 Set-backs; 111.  
 Sewing; 72, 234. Catalepsy during: 234.  
 Sewing; Bad effect of: 406, 407.  
 "Shave; You need a:" 853.  
 Sheldon; 510.  
 Shoes; Tears off latches of: 972.  
 Shopping; 517, 590.  
 Shouting brings M. out; 212.  
 Shouts at Mrs. Prince; 945.  
 Shrewd; 963.  
 Shrewd reasoning; 719.  
 Shy; Became: 88, 535.  
 Siamese twins; 171.  
 Sick Doris;  
 Act like: M. trying to: 384.  
 Alternating with M.; 77.  
 Anæsthetic: More: on left; 423.  
 S. D., b.; Curiosity of M. about: 460.  
 Back; M. wants: 882.  
 "Better; S. D. thinks she is getting:" 347.  
 M. called by S. M. for first time; 476.  
 Comes at call of M.; 296.  
 Comes only when M. lets go; 554.  
 Coming of: 211.  
 Conscious: Not: of what M. does when M. is out; 385.  
 Consult: M. wishes she could: 528.  
 Contrast between S. D. and M.; 33.  
 Conversations between M. and S. D.; 49, ceased; 80.  
 Cruelty of M. to S. D.; 38.  
 Differences between M. and S. D.; 412, 526.  
 Disturbed by M.; 33.  
 Encounters with S. D. not known to M.; 477.  
 Experiences of S. D. told by M.; 216.  
 Fall; M. made S. D.: 294, 303, set on fire by M.; 303.  
 Hair of S. D. torn out by M.; 72.  
 Hated by M.; 26, 32, 72.  
 Hear: S. D. can no longer: 395, 397.



## Margaret, Sick Doris

M. hears S. M. but thinks she is talking herself; 557.  
 M. helps S. D. to find things; 229.  
 Influence of: on M.; 79.  
 "Never knew much"; 430.  
 Nails of S. D. torn out by M.; 72.  
 Older than S. D.; M. wished to appear: 240.  
 M. opposing desire of S. M.; 1151.  
 M. Pretends that she is S. D.; 471.  
 Punished by M. for disobedience; 76.  
 Responds no longer to M.; 80.  
 Scratched by M.; 64, 72, 77.  
 Sent away; M. hints how S. D. may be: 378.  
 M. makes S. D. feel sick; 363.  
 Smack S. D.; M. advises Dr. Prince to: 477.  
 M. makes S. D. speak automatically; 216.  
 Stern with S. D.; M. advises Dr. Prince to be: 466.  
 Stories of: 1042.  
 Taffy; M. says S. D. is giving: 489.  
 Taught by M.; 70, 219.  
 Will of S. D.; M. opposing: 341.  
 Work of S. D. destroyed by M.; 236.  
 M. works faster than S. D.; 294.  
 Made M. work; 72, 234.  
 Told to work by M.; 72.  
 Side-swiping R. D.; 738.  
 Silver buried in cellar; 282.  
 Singing; 107, 204, 675, 1086, 1087, 1113. Ceases from: 935. Dislikes: 477, 1118, 1151. on the stairs; 184.  
 "Sinister-lateral" tactile anæsthesia; 1168, 1169.  
 Sins; Wonders about her: 592.  
 Skidoo; 494, 897.  
 Skirt torn up; 877.  
 Slang peculiar to: 558.  
 Slangy; 37.  
 Slapped; Fear of being: 468.  
 Slapped Dr. Prince; 738.  
 Slapped by Dr. Prince; 596, 941.  
 Slapped R. D.; 181.  
 Sleep; Actions during: 879.

## Margaret, Sleeping Real Doris

Automatisms during: 603, 616. on back; Tendency to: 701, 702.  
 Comatose: 501. in daytime; 493. Eyes open in: 594. Grasping Dr. Prince as she went to: 501. Lack of: 175, 489. Lapses into: Sudden: 1035. Light: Sudden: causes: 933. Loss of: brings M. out; 1154. Memory of words and actions during: 742. Put to: by suggestion; 414, 430, 432, 434, 450, 476, 564, 655, 688, 761. Scrubbing movement in: 511. Lower strata of: 742. at table; Goes to: 587. Talks to R. D. in: 494. Troubled: 486, 493, 518, 525, 587. Went to: suddenly, while standing; 850.  
 Sleepier when she had not watched; 683.  
 Sleeping Margaret; 1094.  
 Contemporaneous mental activity; 501.  
 Different, but same; M. and S. M.: 464.  
 "S. M. is gone"; 1092, 1093.  
 M. could not hear: 88, 464, 465.  
 M. hears one word spoken by: 764.  
 Influence of S. M. at first only reached M.; 158.  
 M. did not know of S. M. till late; 50.  
 S. M. makes M. laugh; 1306.  
 M. and S. M.; 512, 516.  
 Mental activity; Contemporaneous: 501.  
 Name of S. M. from Dr. Prince; M. finds out: 799.  
 Presence of: found out by M.; 915.  
 Same, yet different; S. M. and M.: 464.  
 "Separated" from M.; 389, 557.  
 "Super-added" to R. D.; 1255.  
 Talk; M. cannot hear S. M.: 507.  
 Talked when M. was asleep; 73.  
 Sleeping Real Doris: 50.  
 Coming of: 864.  
 S. R. D. from a "little crack in R. D."; 247, 864.  
 Sleeps on back; 468.



## Margaret, Smack

Sleeps soundly when S. M. is away; 515.  
Sleepy; 888.  
Sleepy; "Damn": 1114.  
Slouchy; 568.  
Smack S. D.; Advises Dr. Prince to: 477.  
Smacked by Helen; 173.  
Smacked Dr. Prince while S. M. dictated; 738.  
Smacked by Dr. Prince; 629, 680.  
Smearcase; 794.  
Smell dulled as M. declined; 38, 95, 125.  
Smell partly revived; 126.  
Smile of: 413.  
Smile of R. D. "felt" by: 414.  
"Snakes" in foot; 849.  
Snarling; 645, 918.  
Sneezing; 572, 883, 1020.  
Sneezing: Thought her: caused by Dr. Prince; 1227.  
Sneezing in sleep; 724.  
Snoots; 116.  
Snyder; Mr.: 192.  
"So": 547.  
Soliloquizing; 777.  
Somnambulism; 316.  
Sores scratched by: 1076.  
Soul; Says she hasn't any: 834.  
Spanked by Dr. Prince; 96.  
Spat at people when angry; 177.  
Spatial relations; 555, 994.  
Speaking; Three styles of: 105.  
Spear-mint candy; 704.  
"Specimen"; Thinks Dr. Walker would like to have her as a: 1041.  
Spelling game; 1107.  
Spelling; Incorrect: 37, 444, 445, 797.  
Spelling once better than R. D.'s; 884.  
Spiteful; 420.  
"Split off" from R. D.; 1102.  
Sporty; 765, 775.  
"Squeezing" canaries; 304.  
Stairs; Angry with: 866. auto-suggestion re: 845, 846, 852.  
"called" M.; 101, 845, 846, 852.  
Fell down: 101, 866. Going down or up: 747. Slides down: 943.  
Staring; 971.  
Staring; Cataleptic; 582.  
Staring spells; 634.  
Stimuli; Psychic: 614.

## Margaret, Tactile Anæsthesia

Stimulus; Unconscious: brings M. out; 979.  
Stingy; Calls R. D.: 635.  
Stocking-ball; 818.  
Stole; 349.  
Stole chocolates; 169.  
Stole lace from drawers; 175.  
Store; M. comes out in: 511, 792, 820.  
Story; Wrote a: 198.  
Stove; Oil: 1072, 1086.  
Street; Comes out on: 714, 817, 973, 979.  
Strengthened by rousing will; 860.  
Stretching; 598.  
Stronger; Getting: 627, 628.  
Studies of R. D. opposed by: 96, 666.  
Subconscious of R. D.: 218.  
Subconscious thought-reading; 109, 116.  
"Subliminally; Vestigial existence:" 1255.  
Subnormal as to cuts and bruises; 38, 123.  
Subnormal in reaction to heat of solid bodies; 792.  
Suggestion; 78. Affected easily by: 38, 716. Says "Hello Papa" by: 327. Sent in by: 307. Sleep by: Put to: 414, 430, 432, 434, 450, 476, 564, 655, 688, 761. Psychological tie by: 327.  
Sulky; 489, 581.  
Sullenness; 37.  
Sunday School; 535, 574, 676, 686, 693, 873, 968.  
Sunday School; Objects to: 96.  
Sunflower; 881.  
Surplice; 349, 359, 360.  
Surplice; Tore: to shreds; 356.  
Surprises; Passion for: 1211, 1216.  
Sweet William; 179.  
"Swindled in your clothes"; 466.  
Swiped: M.'s money: by R. D.; 566.  
Swiped twenty dollars; 775.  
Table; Asleep at: 1035.  
Table; Stopped eating at: 272.  
Table; Goes to sleep at: 587.  
Table; Waited at: 202.  
Tactile æsthesia; 1149.  
Tactile anæsthesia; 38, 125, 750, 1149, 1168, 1169.



## Margaret, Tactile Sensations

Tactile sensations temporarily renewed; 126.  
 Tactual illusions; 786.  
 Talk; Running: 1117.  
 Talking with M. when asleep secured more rest for the organism; 78.  
 Talks to R. D. in sleep; 493.  
 Tantrums; 87, 90, 101, 110, 597, 720, 871, 877, 920, 940, 943, 1226.  
 Tantrums; Catamenia and: 486, 953.  
 Taste dulled as M. declined; 38, 95, 125.  
 Taste gone; 675.  
 Tastes abnormal; 264.  
 Tastes differed from R. D.'s; 168, 169.  
 Teacher; 493.  
 Tearing clothes; 90, 596.  
 Tearing things; 101, 360.  
 Tears and laughter; 1122.  
 Teasing Dr. Prince; 682.  
 Teasing R. D.; 181, 240, 681, 682. S. D.; 332, 354. S. D. about being first to go; 331.  
 Teeth; Brushing; 1126.  
 Teeth filled during sleep; 619.  
 "Telepathy"; 57.  
 Televoyance; 301, 377, 661. Adelaide Hamilton seen by; 346.  
 Temperature; Sensitive to; 95, 1149.  
 Ten; "What D. was at:" 490.  
 Terrorizing a mistake; 341.  
 Testing Dr. Prince; 272.  
 Tests of hearing; 764, 768, 1023.  
 Tests of vision; 805, 846, 857, 992, 1017, 1180.  
 Thanatopsis; 413.  
 Theodosia; 1026.  
 Thermæsthesia; 116.  
 Thermal æsthesia; 1149.  
 Thermanæsthetic; 123, 125, 240.  
 Thinking; Hard: affects R. D.; 717.  
 "Thinky; Pain in head to:" 1210.  
 Thought; Pain caused by attempts to stimulate 116. *tempo* reduced; 107. transfer: Dr. Prince cannot: to; 858.  
 Thought-reading; 57. Subconscious; 109, 116.  
 Thoughts; "Cluster" of: of R. D.; Called: 349, 353, 383, 441. Past: of Dr. Prince read by

## Margaret, Toes

M.; 799, 800, 804. of Dr. Prince read by; 413, 739, 937.  
 R. D. gets M.'s: 978, 1207. of R. D. affected by thoughts of M.; 792, 814, 951. of R. D.: Gets: after her departure; 946. of R. D.: Gets: directly; 839. of R. D.: Gets: as she goes in; 673. of R. D. often incomprehensible to M.; 37. of R. D. influence M.; 915, 917, 1012, 1040. of R. D. influenced by M.; 550, 587, 782, 911, 915, 949, 1098. of R. D. known to M.; 49, 397, 423, 520, 1125, 1126, 1132, 1142, 1145, 1148, 1160. of R. D. not known to M.; 82, 166, 167, 671. of R. D. misunderstood by M.; 848. of R. D. bring M. out; 931. of R. D. read by M.; 110, 111, 413, 783, 873, 899, 1095, 1184. of R. D. read by M. no longer; 1118. of R. D. enable M. to see; 982. of R. D.: Reflection of: seen by M.; 893. of R. D. seen by M.; 1159, 1216. of R. D.: Subliminal: not usually known by M.; 929. of S. D. known to M.; 49, 397, 423. of S. D.: M. could not watch: when she was in; 1027. Subliminal: of Dr. Prince read by M.; 800. Watched S. D.'s thoughts of R. D.: 838, 839.  
 Threatens R. D.; 90, 726.  
 "Throat sore" when thirsty; 850.  
 Thunder; Frightened by; 606, 655.  
 Time: All: is nine o'clock; 1038. Deceived about: 1032. Judgment of: unreliable; 243. Sense of: 291, 736, 751, 994. Sense of: lapses entirely; 822, 824. Tell: Can no longer: 1128.  
 Tired; 489, 507, 648, 816, 838, 877, 1222, 1223.  
 Tired of being out; 632. 957. when S. D. is kept away; 520. Dr. Walker blamed for her being; 834.  
 Tired by R. D.'s work; 569.  
 Toe; "Bit" R. D.'s: 871.  
 Toe; Tries to cut off: 241.  
 Toes; Cold: 812.  
 Toes close to fire; 792.  
 Toes; Sore: 792.



## Margaret, Tomatoes

Tomatoes; 691.  
 Tomatoes; Burning; 1205.  
 Tongue; Trouble with; 708.  
 Tonsils; Sore; 739.  
 Tore up material for cassock; 349.  
 Tore surplice to shreds; 356.  
 Tore waist; 360.  
 Tormenting R. D. at piano; 702, 703.  
 Tormenting S. D. 307.  
 Tortures S. D.; 236.  
 Touches part of body of which she speaks; 687.  
 Town; Goes to; 492, 556.  
 Toys; 1112.  
*Trail of the Lonesome Pine*; 656.  
 Treatment of: Mistakes in; 379.  
 Tree; Made R. D. fall from; 168.  
 Trees; Not fond of; 169.  
 Trickiness of; 362.  
 Tricks of; 65, 66, 314, 354.  
 Trixie; 167, 1154. M. caressed; 252. Death of; 254. Earnings of S. D. given by M. to; 231. Shouting of; brings M. out; 212.  
 Troche; 960.  
 Troubles to R. D.; Tries to tell; 529.  
 Twisted ideas of Dr. Brashear; 1016.  
 "Unconscious"; 878.  
 "Unconscious" when not out; 819.  
 Under; Ducking; 507, 622, 647. Keeping; 687. Put; by S. M.; 620.  
 Underneath; Watching; 535, 556.  
 Undress; Too "old" to; 1071.  
 Undressed by Dr. Prince; 588.  
 Undressing; 713, 838. See *Dressing*.  
 Union Station; Comes in; 912.  
 Untidy; 568.  
 Unwelcome; Thinks she is; 1003.  
 Vaccination; 162, 163.  
 Vacuum cleaner; 492.  
 Vase in barrel; 303.  
 Verbal automatisms; 38, 91, 569, 573, 586, 949, 993, 1041, 1062, 1063, 1064, 1065, 1068, 1079, 1086, 1100, 1105, 1157, 1158, 1221, 1244.  
 Verbal expressions; 558.  
 "Vestigial existence subliminally"; 1255.

## Margaret, Walker, Dr.

Vicinity; Leaves the; of R. D.; 641.  
 Vicious; 596.  
 Vigorous; 891.  
 Vision; "Cone" of; 847, 977, 978. failing; 976, 981, 1010. Field of; narrowed and shortened; 38, 99, 101, 108, 126, 750, 752, 861, 922, 974, 977, 995, 1001, 1017, 1020, 1119, 1181. Peculiarity of; 989. of Dr. Prince "tested" by M.; 1017. Tests of; 805, 846, 857, 992, 1017, 1180. Dr. Walker wrong with regard to; of; 751.  
 Visual hallucinations; 880, 950.  
 Visual hyperæsthesia; 38, 123.  
 Voice of; 39, 43, 350, 470, 650, 784, 830.  
 Voice heard by R. D.; 638.  
 Voice heard by S. D.; 311, 325.  
 Volition; 171.  
 Voluntarily come and go; M. loses power to; 892.  
 Voluntary; Comings not always; 170.  
 Waggle; 1224.  
 Wagging head; 1082.  
 Waist pattern; Gave D.; 361.  
 Waist; Tore up new; 360.  
 Wakened by blowing in eyes; 681, 738, 757, 774, 879, 887, 1085.  
 Wakened by laying S. D. down; 488.  
 "Waking" Doris; 79.  
 Waking; False; 868, 869.  
 Waking; Method of; 803.  
 Walk; Takes a; and goes beyond limits; 460.  
 Walker; Dr.; 345, 401, 453, 464, 487, 926, 1041.  
 Attitude towards; 97, 349.  
 "Chews the rag" with; 487.  
 Disappoints M.; 815.  
 Disgusted with; 1025.  
 Dislike of; 717, 736, 885.  
 (Doll); 868.  
 Letter from; 1006.  
 Letters to; 868, 931, 991, 1010, 1025, 1074, 1187.  
 'Phoning; 811, 929.  
 M. gives Dr. Prince's photograph to; 959.  
 Plates for; 1007.  
 Present for; 820.



## Margaret, Walker, Dr.

Tells: he wont see her again; 956.  
Talking to: Holds hand of Dr. Prince when: 394, 395.  
Walking: when blind; 1197.  
Thoughts of: bring S. D.; 532.  
Tremulous when: 553.  
"Walter; Your name is:" 835.  
Warns S. D.; 442.  
"Was you, Papo?"; 466, 993.  
Wash; Helps D. to: 362.  
Watch lost; 1125.  
Watched; Sleeper when she had not: 683. S. D.'s thoughts of R. D.; 838, 839.  
Watching; 608, 642. an active process; 783. Ceases from: 781. Constant: Ceases from: 441, 561, 573, 750. S. D.; M. always: 1027. S. D. out, and R. D. dreaming underneath; 499. Subliminal: Ceases from: 433. Underneath; 535, 556.  
Weakened by pleasurable excitement of R. D.; 1242.  
Wearied with pain and with being out long; 494.  
Week; Nine days in: 1105.  
Weeping for her "dead husband"; 184.  
"What think?"; 1007.  
Whiskey; 931, 1175.  
Wholley; Dr.: 926.  
Wicked; Told she is: 592.  
"Will" of: 101, 704, 824, 1065, 1142.  
"Will" of S. D.; 735.  
Will of: 1219.  
Will clashing with R. D.'s; 731.  
Will strengthened by rousing: 860.  
Window; Climbs out of: 517.  
Window frames; Scrubs: 511.  
Window shades; 527.  
Winsome; 629.  
Wintergreen; 716, 1070, 1150.  
Wintergreen composed of water, sugar and salt; 720.  
Wittiness of: 417.  
Wood for breket; 1216.  
Woodpecker; 639.  
Wool; Abominated: 1245.  
Words; Forgets meaning of: 1067, 1068, 1120, 1121, 1149, 1214, 1217, 1219, 1225.  
Work; Disliked; 294. liked by: progresses rapidly; 300. Night:

## Mechanism

72. Quickness at: 199, 294. S. D. made M.: 72, 234, 294, 346, 445. S. D. did not need to watch when M. was doing: 297.  
Working dreams; 347.  
Worried lest Dr. Prince be ill; 477.  
Worrying; 703. over Dr. Prince's anxiety to get R. D. out; 506. of R. D. makes M. exacting; 1176. because she is not wanted; 875.  
Write; Becomes unable to: 1113.  
Writes; 345, 351, 364.  
Writing; "Automatic": See *Automatic Writing*.  
Writing; Perspires while: 1011.  
X.; 76.  
X.; Dr.: 1079, 1080.  
X.; Miss: 690.  
X.; Miss: Beau of: 193.  
"Yanked in" by S. M.; 99, 718, 754.  
Yard; Goes to sleep in: 971.  
"You 'melled mad"; 1190.  
Younger; Getting: 486.  
**Margaret-asleep x**; 128, 461, 464.  
Appearance of: 83.  
Coming of: 467.  
Facial expression of: 461, 467.  
Fischer; Mr.: Leaving: 475.  
"He"; 461.  
"Home"; Thinks she must go: 452.  
"How was you, Papo?"; 473.  
M. has recollection of: 467.  
Meaning of: 128.  
Seats of personalities in the brain; 465.  
Time; Recognizes a lapse of: 466.  
"Was you, Papo?"; 470, 473, 475.  
"Where was you, Papo"; 478.  
Maria; Aunt: 161, 163, 168, 178.  
Marie; 737.  
Marie S—; 377.  
Market; M. going to: 355.  
Marlboro, Mass.; 93, 625, 640.  
Marry; R. D. should never: 524.  
Marshmallows; 1047, 1152.  
Massage; 559, 562, 585, 609.  
Mattress; Filthy: burned by M.; 241.  
Maturity of S. M.; 557, 783.  
See *Mentality*.  
Meal; R. D. first comes during: 573.  
Meals at rectory; 74, 263.  
Mechanics; Psychic; 90.  
Mechanism: of the case; M. on the:



## Mechanism

568. of transmission; Psychical: 839.  
 Medal; Gold: 872.  
 Meddling; M. complains of R. D.'s: 584.  
 Medical treatment; S. D. b denies having taken: 460.  
 Medicine; 492. by the bottle; M. takes: 264. Dr. Walker's: 476.  
 Melancholy; R. D.: 1019. of S. D.: 237.  
   *See Depression.*  
 Memories;  
   Cause dreams; 725.  
   Come in dreams; 435, 456.  
   Exclusive: of S. R. D.: 45.  
   Head whirl; Make: 465.  
   Individual: of the personalities; 268.  
   M.'s earlier: fade: 1015.  
   M.'s earlier: survive longest; 751.  
   M.'s: failing; 90, 93, 94, 105, 241.  
   M.'s: recovered temporarily; 1026.  
   M. gets pain and pleasure from: 828.  
   of the personalities are independent; 149.  
   R. D. banished by: 475, 500.  
   of R. D. make head whirl; 465.  
   of R. D. causing perplexity and self-reproach; 443.  
   R. D. troubled by: 438, 456.  
   Secondary: 24.  
   of S. D. affect R. D.: 845, 896.  
   of S. D. disappeared; 81, 85, 332, 396, 426, 432, 458.  
   of S. D. disappeared, to re-appear as memories of R. D.: 41, 78, 80, 210, 212, 396, 403, 405, 580.  
   of S. D. disappeared, to re-appear as memories of R. D., with exception of memories of excitement; 275, 407.  
   of S. D.; R. D. will get: 490.  
   of S. D., b: 458.  
   of being slapped; S. D.'s: 548.  
   of S. M., regarding D.'s past, fade; 112.  
   trouble R. D.; 456.  
   worry R. D.; 438.  
   *See Memory.*  
 Memory; Anniversary: 888. of M.: 148. of M. failing; 650, 1022, 1035, 1160. of R. D.: 402, 903, 907, 1162. of R. D. works backwards: 434. of R. D.; Blanks in: 430. R. D. has no: of harsh treatment; 473.

## Milk

of S. D.: Loss of: 332, 426, 469, 480, 481. S. D. came without: 69. of M.: 44. S. M. has no: of earth life; 1265. Tricks of: 1109. of work done; R. D.'s: 279.  
   *See Amnesia, Forget, Forgetfulness, Forgetting, Fruits, Memories, Words.*  
 Menses; Suppression of: 237.  
   *See Catamenia.*  
 Mental: activities of S. R. D.; 862. activity; Contemporaneous: 501. causation; 55. discomfort of M.: 587. disorders; Psychical treatment of: 54. "fissures"; 29, 36, 136, 156. functioning; S. R. D. supposed to have no: 46. imagery and fixed ideas; 483. infancy; M. did not decline to: 555. infancy; S. D. returned to: 41, 556. initiative of S. D.; 563. integrity; R. D. restored to: 119. pictures; 634. working of the brain; S. M. sees the: 741.  
   *See Consciousness.*  
 Mentality: of M.: 38, 95, 100, 105, 117, 127, 164, 240, 490, 519. of M. abnormal; *See Margaret.* of M. diminished as she declined; 38, 100, 105, 117, 770, 973, 1105, 1107, 1127, 1132, 1141, 1163, 1166. of S. D.; 68, 69, 237. of S. D. declining; 451, 533, 536, 555. of S. M.; 1103, 1255.  
   *See Abstract, Childish, Childishness, Comparisons, Comprehension, Confusion, Conscious, Infancy, Infant, Infantile, Intellectual, Intellectuality, Intelligence, Maturity, Mental, Mind, Minds.*  
 Metempsychosis; 1101, 1103, 1143. Dr. Prince does not believe in: 1103.  
 Methodist minister: A senseless: 205.  
 Meum and tuum; Confusion of: 933, 1150, 1202, 1213, 1237, 1238.  
   *See Ownership.*  
 M-Formula: 82, 133, 529, 628. S. D. banished by: 455, 493, 524. S. D. dislikes: 443, 506. in use; 441, 443, 444, 449, 452, 524.  
   *See Banishment.*  
 "Migrating" personalities; Dr. Prince does not believe in: 1103.  
 Milk; 166, 639, 640. cans; 1021. Condensed: 1021.



## Mind

Mind; Cloudiness of R. D.'s: 1203, 1204. of D. read by M.; 946. External conditions registered by: 971. of M. read by S. M.; 629, 654. of M. studied by S. M.; 1077. "Part of a": M. a: 1103. Pictures in the: 982. Pictures in the: of R. D.; M. laughs at: 1172. of R. D. read by M.; 95, 1015, 1036, 1085, 1088. R. D. straightening things out in her: 484. S. D. watched R. D.'s: 838, 839. of Rev. G. B. Richards read by M.: 740. Subliminal: 1088.

See *Consciousness, Mentality*.

Mind-reading: 88. by M.; 95, 739, 745, 797, 800, 804. S. M. finds: easier than reading; 1239.

See *Consciousness*.

Minds; Normal and abnormal: 52.

Mirror; Reflection in: 215.

Mispronunciation; 37.

See *Language*.

Missed: M.: by R. D.: 669. S. M.: by R. D.; 113, 119, 180, 1049, 1094, 1096, 1097, 1146, 1199.

Mission work; 202.

Mississippi; 190.

Mistakes: at butcher's; 228. in treatment of M.; 379.

Misunderstanding; R. D. banished by: 966.

Misunderstands: M.: Dr. Prince; 1034.

"Mixed up with another girl"; 488.

Mnemonic; 135.

Monetary calculations; M. and: 328, 355, 356, 360, 404, 1141.

Money: and ice-wagon; 791, 793. M. and: 107, 981. M. banking R. D.'s: 906. M. took Mr. Fischer's: 362. M. loses interest in: 1009. Paper: M. objected to: 362, 404. M. threw: about room; 1009. M. threw: out of window; 375. S. D. and: 230, 231. S. D.'s account of: spent for her; 455.

Monocyclical; 135. class; 30.

Montague; Mrs.: Automatic writing; 1273. Planchette; 1274.

Moods; 1024. Changing; puzzle Dr. Prince; 264. of M.; 563, 591. of M. affect R. D.; 97, 928, 999. of M. affect S. D.; 559. of M. affect S. R. D.; 876. of Dr. Prince known to M. when she cannot see him; 1046.

Moon put out; M. wants: 1199.

## Movement

Morbid curiosity of S. D.; 238.

Morphine; M. responds to: 253. only stimulates S. D.; 253.

Morris chair; 845.

"Mor'r's dead"; 1241.

Moths; Poisoned by: 633.

Mother; 139.

Apparition of: 58, 59, 244, 442, 1042, 1043, 1190.

Bravery of: 141.

Bridget; 1284.

Crying for her: R. D.; 1227.

Daughter and: 176, 333.

Dead; R. D. realizes that: is: 399.

Death; 209, 217, 243, 522, 1292, 1293.

Death by blow; 1288, 1291, 1292.

Dream about: Dr. Prince makes R. D.: 182.

Dreams of: R. D.: 323, 378, 417, 621, 685, 1014, 1089.

Explain to: R. D. tries to: 182.

Grave of: 895.

Guard; The: 1303, 1305.

Helping; 63, 66.

Imitating: 181.

Influence of: 163.

Lonely for mother; R. D.: 379.

Patience of: 64.

Planchette; 1281, 1282, 1283, 1285, 1288, 1291, 1292, 1301, 1302, 1303, 1305.

Prayers of: S. M. sent in response to: 1030, 1307.

Seen by R. D. when absent; 1043.

S. D., b "never had" a: 459.

S. M. came in response to prayers of: 1030, 1307.

S. M. says she could have talked with R. D.'s: 1190.

Understood; Never: 176.

Walter; 1302.

Worries preceding birth of R. D.; 141.

"Mother; Our:" 1021.

Motives; 1054.

Motor: activity of S. R. D.; 866. Automatism of M.; 38. control of S. M.; 807, 809. control of S. M. in waking state; 792.

Mouse; R. D. banished by: 811, 986.

Mouth; and eyes of Dr. Prince; S. D. sees only: 561. M. puts finger in: of S. D.; 603. S. D. calls her: a nose: 537.

Movement: R. D. continues: begun by S. M.; 1267. S. M. cannot com-



## Movement

plete a: unless M. is sound asleep; 608.  
 Movements; M. hears: 760. registered in the brain; 786. of S. D. caused by M.; 537. S. M. not always conscious of M.'s: 785. S. M. sees: registered in the brain; 786. S. M.'s: not known to M., asleep; 933. S. M.'s voluntary: 785.  
 Moving causes confusion; 947.  
 Moving picture of battle; 1164.  
 Moving pictures beneficial; 1011.  
 Dreams caused by: 1234.  
 M-process; 470.  
 "Mudder"; 1243.  
 Multiple Personality; 23. Insanity and: 25, 30. Physicians and: 25.  
 Secondary Personality and: 24.  
 Sidis; Boris: 26.  
*Multiple Personality*; by Sidis and Goodhart; 25, 30.  
 Muscles; Control of: 334.  
 Muscular anæsthesia as M. declined; 38, 95, 125.  
 Music; 169. Effects of: on R. D.; 685.  
*My Days Are Gliding Swiftly By*; 675.  
 "My"; S. M. does not speak of: hands, etc.; 793.  
 Myers; F. W. H.: on "Secondary Personality"; 136.  
 Nails torn out by M.; 72, 235.  
 Name: Calling her: brings M.; 863.  
 M. choosing: 305. S. D. cannot remember her: 495.  
 Names: ambiguous; 249. of personalities suggested by Dr. Prince; 76, 127. for Dr. Prince; S. D.'s: 541.  
 Nature of the case discovered; 286.  
   *See Diagnosis.*  
 Naps at rectory; 74.  
 Naughtiness of M.; 761.  
 Neatness of M.; 166, 1126.  
 Neck; M. loses control of: 835. S. D.'s sensation keen in: 123. S. D. sleeping with arms round: 437, 438, 439. Stiff: 739.  
 Necklace; 402, 816. from "Paul Schroeder"; 352, 353.  
 Needlework; 278.  
 Negro talk; 711.  
 Nephew; 518, 1008.  
 Nerves; Doctoring the: 54. of R. D.

## Obliteration

affected by M.'s declension; 1012, 1020.  
 Nervous; laugh; 701. M.: 518, 556, 877, 889, 1001. R. D.: 936, 968, 1015. S. D.: 39.  
 Nervousness; R. D. banished by: 653, 903.  
 Nettie; 479. Letter to: 477.  
 Nettie's sister; Letter from: 477, 478.  
 Neuralgia; Hirt on: 300.  
 Neurasthenia; 135.  
 Neurologist; An ignorant: 314.  
 Neuron; 135.  
 Neurotic; 135.  
 New Year's Eve uproar; 846.  
 New York; Return from: 1267. Trip to: 1263, 1266.  
 Newspaper upside down; 1145.  
 Nickel; 739.  
*Nicodemus*; 935, 1087.  
 Niece; Note from: 543.  
 Night; life of D.; 172. R. D. afraid at: 979. work; 72, 202.  
 Nightgown; M. goes to bed in: 771. set on fire by M.; 476. Trouble with: 1174.  
 "No"; 536.  
 Nocturnal activities of M.; 172.  
 "Noise, noise!"; 87, 531, 560, 611, 1231.  
 Noises: "annihilated" by suggestion; 114, 579. Psychic treatment for fear of: 564, 607. S. D. afraid of: 542, 551. R. D. banished by: 444, 519, 1106, 1108, 1110, 1111, 1121, 1122, 1130, 1145. R. D. frightened by: 555.  
 Normal and abnormal minds; 52.  
 Nose; S. M. wipes M.'s: 1217.  
 Note: book; Dr. Prince's: 1073. written by S. M. to Dr. Prince; 121.  
 Notes: M. wrote: to R. D.; 66, 160, 161, 173, 201, 230, 258, 469, 535, 668. exchanged between M. and S. D.; 49, 229, 230, 250, 507, 528. written by M. after she had ceased from reading: 107.  
 "Nuisance; a little:" 982.  
 Nun; S. D. thought of becoming a: 294.  
 Nurse-girl; 199.  
 Obedience: Ensuring: of M.; 594.  
 Obliteration of S. D. caused emotional disturbance; 46.  
   *See Banishment.*



## Observation

Observation; S. D. learned from: 226.  
Obsessing notion of M.; 892.

See *Hallucination*.

Obsession; Adults seem to be most subject to: 1144. Mr. Fischer responsible for the: 25, 61, 154, 156.

See *Possession*.

Obsessions of S. D.; 259.

See *Hallucination*.

Obstinate; S. D.: 512, 527.

Occult: experiences of R. D.; 207. incidents; 56.

Occupation; Variety of: 982.

Offended; M.: 985. R. D.: 985. S. D.: 456. S. M.: 765, 1030.

"One; We are going to be:": 404.

Opera; 186.

Opinions: of S. M.; 1143. Obtaining: 727. of Dr. Walker; 447.

Opium pill swallowed by M.; 95, 707 to 710.

Orders for R. D.; M. writes: 428.

Ossian; Lines from: 423, 424.

Osteopath; 962.

Osteopathic maltreatment; 78, 253, 310, 315, 317, 329.

Out; 129. M. brought: by handling candy; 831. M.: less than at first; 750. M. calling to R. D. to come: 648. M. fails to bring R. D.: 672. M. "unconscious" when not: 819. M. wearied by being: long; 494, 632. Keeping R. D.; 227. The longer R. D. is: the stronger she gets; 404. R. D. brought: by pleasure of M.; 614, 615, 618, 619. R. D.: twenty-four hours; 877. S. D. called: by Dr. Prince; 350. S. D.: while R. D. dreams and M. watches; 499. together; R. D. and M.: 506.

Overwork; Effect of: 71, 814.

Owen; Dr.: 1228, 1234, 1235.

Ownership; Sense of: M.'s: 64.

See also *Meum*, *Property Rights*.

P Avenue; Adelaide seen on: 738.

P.; The letter: 190.

Pagan; M. a: 168, 673, 1056.

Page-ant; 620.

Paid psychic; R. D. should not be a: 1326, 1327.

Pain; Alternations caused by: 171, 404, 417, 418, 428, 436, 450, 500, 506, 672, 687, 698, 972, 1185, 1198, 1220, 1228. in brain; 209. during

## Perpendicular

catamenia; 553, 894, 1023. after eating; M. has: 722. Effect of: on M.; 602. in hip; 41, 317, 325, 362. M. made cranky by: 557. M. wearied by: 494. R. D. gets: through reading of suffering; 1073. S. D. feels: 554, 556. cured by suggestion; 331. caused by attempts to stimulate M.'s thought; 116.

Pains; 319, 320. caused by auto-suggestion; 260. Internal: felt very slightly by M., if at all; 38, 123. Internal: felt acutely by S. D.; 38, 41. M. gets: from memories and imagination; 828. Pelvic: 624, 1149. Periodical: 554.

Paint; S. D. thought she could: 326.

Painting; 187, 226, 260, 279, 398, 1163.

Pajamas; 763, 766, 769, 771, 781.

Palm Beach; Pictures of garden at:

302.

Papo; 129, 885, 889, 909, 1041.

Parents of R. D.; 61.

Parrot: chews Christmas tree; 1074. acts differently towards different personalities; 526. M. shakes the: 1076. R. D. banished by: 525, 856, 926. R. D. bitten by: 569. R. D. frightened by: 525. S. D. frightened by: 471.

Part of herself; R. D. taught that M. is: 652.

See *Diagnosis*.

Partner; Conceited: 281.

Past; Pictures of the: R. D. banished by: 475. thoughts of Dr. Prince read by M.; 799, 800, 804.

Patch with Margaret on it; 403.

Pathos; R. D. sensitive to: 268.

Pats; M.'s playful: 722, 738, 889, 940.

Dr. Prince's cheek; S. D.: 501.

"Peach"; 350.

Pearl; 398.

Peculiarities: of M.; 265. of S. D.; 210.

Pelvic pains; 624, 1149.

See *Catamenia*.

Penitent; M. never: 168.

"Perfoony" bottle; 919.

Perfume; Dislike of: 590.

Periodical pains; 554.

See *Catamenia*.

Periods; Monthly: Effect of: 486. of S. D.; Indications of: 417. Tantrums during: 486.

Perpendicular cleavage; 292.

See *Catamenia*.



## Perplexity

Perplexity caused by memories; 443.  
 See *Confusion*.  
 "Person"; If she were a: 630. M. not a: 756. Really one: R. D. and S. D.: 442.  
 Personalities; 249.  
 "Like buckets of water on a rope"; 478.  
 Characteristics of the: 149.  
 Conditions of the: Diagrams of the: 499.  
 Developed: Fully: 1101.  
 Description of the: 28.  
 Differences between the: 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 419, 449, 558, 568, 571, 610, 784, 863, 874, 1099.  
 Differences between the: Physical: 604, 820, 830.  
 Doris the sum of the: 128.  
 Individuality of the: 239, 268, 431, 489, 557, 584, 603.  
 Infant: 31.  
 Inter-relations of the: 148.  
 "Locations" of the: in the brain; 90, 441, 465, 720, 721, 722, 810, 823, 1331.  
 M. puzzled by Dr. Brashear's references to the: 1015.  
 Memories of the: are independent; 149.  
 "Mental fissures"; Derived from: 36.  
 Order of the: 490.  
 Parrot acts differently to different personalities; 526.  
 R. D. did not directly know the other: 47.  
 Relationships of the: 593, 599.  
 Seats of: in the brain; 90, 465.  
 S. M. on the: 1096.  
 Switching of: 83.  
 "Unity" of the: 550.  
 Personality; "Divided": 150. But one: Attempt to cure by suggesting that there is: 335. See *Diagnosis*. S. M. a: 1038. S. M. not a: 1138, 1262. S. M. not a: in the sense in which S. D. and M. were; 858. The term: 147.  
 Perspiration; 432, 685.  
 Perspires: M.: while reading letter; 1016. more than R. D.; 573. while writing; 1011.  
 Perturbation: Influence of: on M.; 79. Somnambulism increased by: 79.  
 Peter, Pumpkin-eater; 704.

## Pictures

P-Formula; 133, 441, 443, 513. P-Formula; Shortened: 524. in use; 448, 450, 452, 476, 483.  
 See *Banishment*.  
 Phantoms; People like: 1038.  
 Phase A.; 951. R. D. duplicates cheque as: 944. R. D. dreams about: 921.  
 Phenomenon: Singular psychical: 718.  
 Philosophical; S. M.: 44.  
 Phonetic resemblances side-track M.; 963.  
 See *Language*.  
 'Phoning Dr. Walker; M.: 811, 929.  
 Phonograph; S. R. D.'s function that of a: 128.  
 Photograph: of Mr. Fischer: Sight of: banishes R. D.; 521. of M. when S. D. was five years of age; 62, 171. of R. D. destroyed by M.; 283.  
 Photographs; The: 60. Coloring: 255. of S. D.; 239, 591.  
 Phrases of S. D.; R. D. repeating: 1131.  
 Physical: causes; Psychical and: 54. characteristics of R. D.; 145. effects of harsh treatment; R. D. has no: 473. improvement; 506, 512. states of others; Reflection of: 755. states with psychical relations; 92. symptoms; 92.  
 Physicians: and dissociation; 29. and Multiple Personality; 25, 29.  
 Physiology; 190.  
 Piano: keys struck by M. and R. D. sang; 81, 413. M. torments R. D. at: 702, 703. S. M.'s advice about: 770.  
 Piano-player; 1029.  
 Picking; 426.  
 Pickle; 431, 433.  
 Picnic; 971.  
 Picture: book; 876. Gallery; 569, 570. of garden at Palm Beach; 302. of Dr. Prince; 357, 360.  
 Pictures; Babies in: 1127. Blank book of: 77. become a "blur" to M.: 108, 1171. on board-walk; 187. Coloring: 255, 433, 442. destroyed by M.; 324. from dreams; 260, 323. M. no longer understands: 1138. in the mind; 982. in mind of R. D.; M. laughs at: 1172. painted by R. D.; 398, 399. R. D. thinks of: and disturbs M.; 572.



## Pilgrim's Progress

*Pilgrim's Progress*; 861, 867.  
 Pill: Opium: swallowed by M.; 95, 707 to 710.  
 Pills; 612, 668, 703.  
 Pin-prick banishes S. D.; 456.  
 Pirate; 374.  
 Pistol-shot; R. D. banished by: 1121.  
 Pittsburgh, Pa.; M. suddenly came out in: 94. Dr. Prince moves to: 73. S. M. arranged time of journey to: 94.  
 Pities herself; S. D.: 285.  
 Pity: for Mr. Fischer; R. D. feels: 938. resented by M.; 168, 182.  
 Planchette; 1180, 1273, 1275 *et seq.*  
 "A-phase going"; 1321. Code used with: 1279. Death by blow; 1288, 1291, 1292. Defence of: 1275. Emma; 1288, 1301, 1320. Emma writes only when Dr. Prince and M. have hands on: 1289. Fischer; Mr.: initials of: 1286. G.; 1316. Gables; 1312. Grace; 1290, 1291. Guard; 1316. Guard; The: 1303, 1305. Guards: Three: 1320. Hyslop; Robert: 1280. Incorrect answers; 1277, 1285. L.; 1313, 1314. Lelia; 1287, 1288, 1315. Letters with: Calling: 1281. M.; Walter: 1317. M.; 1180, 1282, 1294, 1312, 1316. M. perspiring at: 1282. Mrs. Montague: 1274, 1277. Mother of R. D.; 1281, 1282, 1283, 1285, 1288, 1291, 1292, 1301, 1302, 1303, 1305. Dr. Prince expects no results from: 1274. Mrs. Prince and M.: Will not work with: 1280, 1289. W. M. Prince writes only when M.'s hands only are on: 1289. R.; 1314. R. D.; 1327. R. D. "going away"; 1323. R. D. fails with: 1309. Relative of R. D.; 1281. Rose; 1313. S. M. on: 1282. W.; 1293, 1312. Walter; 1287, 1295, 1302, 1313. Walter M.; 1317. Warning; 1324. Watch; 1314, 1315.  
 See *Automatic Writing*.  
 "Planting": people; 618. Polly; 618.  
 Plate admired by R. D.; 1008.  
 Pleasant occupation prolongs stay of R. D.; 716.  
 Pleasure; R. D. banished by: 1110. R. D. brought out by: of M.; 614, 615, 618, 619.  
 Pleasures: M. gets: from memories and imagination; 828.

## Prince

Pocket book; 918.  
 Pockets; M. looking for her: 1141.  
 Poison; Psychic: 1005.  
 Poisoned by moth; 633.  
 Policeman; M.'s fear of: 921. insulted by M.; 737.  
 Policy of M. in dealing with Dr. Prince; 417.  
 See *Shrewdness*.  
 Polly; "Planting": 618.  
 Pollywog; 675.  
 Polycyclical; 135. cases; 31.  
 Polymorphosis; 30, 135.  
 Popcorn; 852.  
 Porch; M. afraid on: 979. M. comes on: and falls asleep: 993. M. on: in night dress; 788. M. does not care to stay on: 974.  
 Possession; See *Alternation, Banishment, Dissociation, Obsession*.  
 Post-cards; R. D. puzzled by: 275.  
 Post-hypnotic; 135.  
 Potash; 948.  
 Potatoes; 402, 413.  
 "Pounds" Dr. Prince; M.: 979.  
 Prayer; Exorcism by: 311, 312, 313.  
 Prayer-book; 460. service; 592.  
 Prayers: of Mrs. Fischer; S. M. came in answer to: 1030, 1307. M. sent away by: 347. Reading during: 189.  
 See *Care*.  
 Praying; M. disgusted at R. D.'s: 289.  
 Predictions of S. M.; 43, 89, 93, 606, 633, 638, 665, 734, 1136, 1235.  
 See *Foreknowledge, Prophecy*.  
 Prejudices of Dr. Prince; 768, 1059, 1060.  
 Present: to M. from Jim Hyslop; 858, 859. M. jubilant over small: 1073. M. wants: for Dr. Walker; 820. to M. from Dr. Walker; 829. R. D. asks for M.'s: 1075.  
 Presents: S. D. loved to make: 39, 238, 281.  
 Pressure; 470. on mammæ produces deafness; 92, 551, 593, 606, 655. of hand causes smile; 438. absorbs attention of S. D.; 551.  
 Pretending; M.: 1018.  
 "Pretty doll"; 1148.  
 Pretzels; 1147, 1165, 1171, 1200, 1208.  
 Prevision of death of Mrs. Fischer; 208.  
 Primary personality; 135.  
 Prince; Doris: S. D. objects to being called: 469.



## Prince

Prince; Grandmother: R. D. heard voice of: 874.  
 Prince; Miss Margaret: Letter to: 1002.  
 Prince; Mrs.: 637, 638. Health of: suffers; 286. M. shouts at: 945. M.'s letter to: 1019. M.'s love for: 1104. S. D. afraid of: 532. S. D. in bed with: 514. S. D. fascinated by: 74. S. R. D. did not "know"; 102. Sympathy of: a curative influence; 74. Voice heard by: 1310.  
 Prince; Morton: *Dissociation of a Personality*; 29. Letter to: 804.  
 Prince; Dr. W. F.:  
 "Dissociated personality" discovered by: 290.  
 Head bumped by M. when asleep; 620.  
 M. afraid of: 75.  
 M. named by: 25.  
 Mental pictures; 634.  
 "Occult" incidents; 56.  
 "off"; A little: 485.  
 Personality; The term: 147.  
 Pittsburgh, Pa.; Removed to: 73.  
 Prejudices of: 1059, 1060.  
 Profession of: causes M. to dislike him; 294.  
 Psychic authority of: 286.  
 Sleeping Margaret; 527.  
 Somnambulism in boyhood; 900.  
 Telepathy and the gauntlet of science; 58.  
 Views of: corrected by S. M.; 610.  
 Voices heard by: 59, 1212, 1258.  
 Prince; W. M.: 1274, 1278, 1281, 1289.  
*Problems in Philosophy*; 270.  
 Problems solved in sleep; 1037.  
 Productivity more than doubled; 33.  
 Prognosis; 136.  
 Progress; arrested by headache; 887.  
 Marks of: 779. Dr. Prince "blue" about: 969. during sleep; 405, 415. S. M. certain of: 987, 1168. S. M. pleased with: 969, 1153, 1168. S. M. makes statements *re*: 985. stopped by worry; 1026.  
 Pronouns; Confusion of: 488, 493. Use of: 1224.  
 See *Language*.  
 Pronunciation; M.'s: 273, 931, 973, 1024, 1068.  
 See *Language*.  
 Property; Destruction of: See *Destruction*.

## R

Property rights; M. on: 64, 91, 96, 100, 107, 159, 859, 892, 893, 951, 968, 972, 1111.  
 See *Ownership*.  
 Prophecy; 43, 89, 93.  
 See *Predictions*.  
 Psychic; authority; Dr. Prince has: 286. "mechanics"; 90. poison; 1005. Remarkable: S. M. thinks R. D. might be a: 1228. stimuli; 614. treatment for fear of noises; 564, 607. treatment during sleep; 473.  
 Psychical; activities; S. D. limits: 234. causes; Physical and: 54. phenomenon; Singular: 718. relations; Physical states with: 92. tie by suggestion; 327. treatment of mental disorders; 54.  
*Psychological Origin of Mental Disorders*; by Paul Dubois; 54.  
 Psychology; Dissociation subversive of: 29.  
 Psychoneurotic; 136. disorders; 52.  
 Psychopathy; 136.  
 Puddle; M. came out in: 817.  
 Pull in: 132.  
 "Pulling" hip bone; 362.  
 Pulse; Alteration of: 46, 308, 423, 427, 428, 429, 437, 438, 439, 447, 501.  
 Pulse: at 54; 308, 570. Lowered: 597. of M. at 56; 878. of S. D. generally 56 or below; 282.  
 Punishing M.; 698, 701, 756.  
 Punishment; inflicted on R. D. by M.; 161. inflicted on S. D. by M.; 76.  
 Purchases; R. D. dreams of next day's: 492.  
 Purring; 645.  
 Puzzled; S. D.: 504.  
 Quaint; M.: 584.  
 Quarrel; S. M. came during the: 152.  
 Question; R. D. answers: of which she is ignorant: 469. S. M. makes M. answer: 1154.  
 Questioned; R. D.: about S. D.: 221.  
 Questions; S. D. fails to answer: 479. S. D. b; answers: 458. Strange: asked by M.; 206.  
 Quickness at work; M.'s: 199.

R.; 1314.



## R

R.; Mrs.: 363.  
 R. F.; 813.  
 R. F. and L. F.; 807, 823.  
 Rages of M.; 37.  
 Ranch; 1261.  
 Raps; 320.  
 Rathum; "Doctor": 253, 315, 316, 317, 318, 329, 361, 396, 397. R. D. does not recognize: 580.  
 Rats; Dream of: 964.  
 "Rats up there"; 964.  
 Reactions; Automatic: of M.; 38.  
   See *Consciousness*.  
 Read; M. able to: when R. D. was not well: 803, 965. M. becomes unable to: 107, 384, 393, 1113, 1115. M. pretending to: 508, 822, 1175. M. trying to: 790. S. D. loses ability to: 526. *You don't really*: 1120.  
 Readers; Classes of: 51, 59. Intelligent: 52. "Scientific": 51.  
 Reading; aloud; M. objects to: 1117. M.; 267, 416, 814, 1100. M. perspires while: 1016. M. stopped: 751. M.: without understanding: 670, 983, 989, 1036, 1101. during prayers: 189. R. D.: 416. R. D.: interrupted by M.; 758. R. D.: of suffering causes pain; 1073. S. D.: 267. S. D. puzzled in: 238. S. M.: one thing while R. D. read another; 1237.

### Real Doris; 401.

Abdomen; Swelling of: 620, 1018, 1182. through nervousness: 1221.  
 Abou Ben Adhem; 195.  
 Accident; Banished by: 1156, 1158.  
 Account book; 988.  
 Acquaintances: of M. not recognized by: 737. of S. D. not recognized by: 593, 737, 762.  
 Ada; 399, 543. Letter from: 720, 721, 723. Letter to: 720. Vanishes at sight of: 592.  
 Ada's; R. D. came out at: 258.  
 Adoption brought about by relative of Dr. Prince: 1284.  
 Advance measured by M.'s retreat: 1029.  
 After-images of emotions of other personalities; 47.  
 Afraid at night; 979.  
 Age when cure commenced: 37.  
 Agitation; Banished by: 886.  
 Ahem!; 1052.

## Real Doris, Auto-suggestion

Alma; Dream about: 415. Letter from: 491. Visit of: 543.  
 Alma's children; Dream about: 733.  
 Alternation: after crying; 512. Emotion and: 732, 733. with S. D.; 256.  
 Alternations; Excitement increases: 1105. with M.; 515, 931. Rest through: 782. Sudden: 1202.  
 Amused by M.; 153, 156, 158, 159.  
 Anæsthetic; Bladder and urino-genital tract: 123, 820, 866, 873.  
 Anise water; 605.  
 Anxiety; Banished by: to stay out; 1130. about Mr. Fischer: 398. of M. affects: 556. of other personalities to have R. D. stay out would prevent it; 839.  
 Apparition of mother; 58, 59, 244, 442, 1042, 1043, 1190.  
 Appearance changed: 120. First: to Dr. Prince; 79. Spontaneous: 498, 506.  
 Appearances of: 34. very brief; 71.  
 Appetite; 565. increases as M.'s declines; 654.  
 Arithmetic; Mental: 1200.  
 Arm; Stretching: 432.  
 Arms stretched out during sleep; 669.  
 Asa; 658.  
 Askew; Anne; Martyrdom of: 821.  
 Asleep; 795.  
 Asleep; Impressed more easily when: 498.  
 Associations cause fright; 525.  
 Auditory hallucination; 874.  
 Auditory hallucinations to amuse: 159.  
 Auditory hyperæsthesia; 97, 98, 125, 686. reduced; 104. subsided when M. ceased from watching; 840, 849.  
 Aunt Maria; 168.  
 Automatic voice; 876.  
 Automatism; Motor: 1224.  
 Automatism; Physical: due to habit of S. R. D.: 954.  
 Auto-suggestion; 828. Deferred: 978. brings R. D. out; 226. a success; 850.



## Real Doris, Away

"Away; Going;" 1323.  
 "Away" when another person-  
 ality is out; 551.  
 Babbling in sleep; 729.  
 Baby: A better: after the shock;  
 155.  
 "Back"; Happy at being; 478.  
 Back itching during sleep; 915.  
 Backache; 595, 671, 674, 681, 966,  
 1023, 1225, 1227, 1228.  
 Banished: by accident; 1156,  
 1158. by thought of Ada's  
 visit; 540. by agitation; 886.  
 by anxiety to stay out; 1130.  
 by bell; 1047. by cat; 1174.  
 by falling of Christmas tree;  
 1076. by constipation; 706. by  
 disagreeable tasks; 717. by dis-  
 appointment; 998, 1110, 1113.  
 by disgust; 733. by dreams;  
 835, 1155. by embarrassment;  
 619. by emotional disturb-  
 ance; 849, 899, 1108. by ex-  
 citement; 1002, 1105. by ex-  
 ertion; 1110. by fear; 655,  
 905. by Ferris waist; 706. by  
 fright; 413, 430, 450, 522, 559.  
 by grievance; 1034. by strong  
 interest; 1002. by memories;  
 475. by misunderstanding; 966.  
 by mouse; 811, 986. by ner-  
 vousness; 653, 903. by noise;  
 444, 519, 1106, 1108, 1110, 1111,  
 1121, 1122, 1130, 1145. by  
 overwork; 814. by pain; 404,  
 417, 418, 428, 436, 450, 456, 500,  
 556, 672, 687, 689, 972, 1185,  
 1198, 1220, 1225. by parrot;  
 525, 856, 926. by photograph  
 of Mr. Fischer; 521. by pleas-  
 ure; 1110. by touching present  
 from Dr. Hyslop; 859. by  
 slight shocks; 755, 807, 818,  
 891. by singing of Dr. Prince;  
 989. by sounds; 724, 834. by  
 stitch in side; 863. by super-  
 sensitiveness; 690, 915, 1034.  
 by surprise; 1002. by sym-  
 pathy; 654, 917. by thinking;  
 461. by thunder-storm; 593.  
 by toothache; 647, 1122. by  
 uncertainty about going to  
 California; 938. by worried  
 look of Dr. Prince; 1050. by  
 worry; 851, 988.  
 Bank; 566.

## Real Doris, Catamenia

Bank balance; Worry about;  
 1090.  
*Becky*; 996, 997.  
 Bed; Fall out of: Dream caused;  
 549.  
 Bed; Fell out of: 901.  
 Bed on floor; 966.  
 Bed-time; Always disappeared  
 at: in earlier stages; 66.  
 Bell; Banished by: 1047.  
 Betting M. does not come in  
 morning; 1088.  
 Bible; 460.  
 Bicycle; S. M.'s warning re;  
 1257.  
 Birth of: 61, 137, 146.  
 Bladder anæsthetic; 123, 820, 866,  
 873. Pain in: 883, 890, 894.  
 Sensation begins in: 126.  
 Blames Dr. Prince; 1062.  
 Blend: M. will never: with R.  
 D.; 447, 490.  
 Blows; S. M.'s: Effects of: 787.  
 Body a burden to: 553.  
 Body recovered fastest when M.  
 was out; 465.  
 Boils; 694, 955, 958, 1016.  
 Bother; Thinks she is a: 526.  
 Brandt; Leonard: 523.  
 Brashear; Dr.: 926. Letter to:  
 1024. Letters from: 1015, 1032.  
 Bringing: Process of: 542.  
 Brooding; 919, 922, 925, 1019.  
 "Bubbling up" over "Upidee-  
 idee-ida"; 477.  
 Bun; Cinnamon: 1088.  
 Burning; Cutaneous: 114.  
 Cake; 398.  
 California; Dream about going  
 to: 938.  
 Call; Makes a long: 978.  
 Call; Brought out by: 1177.  
 Canaries; 930.  
 Canary; 765. Accident to: 906.  
 Anxiety about: 935. dead;  
 980. killed by cat; 1006.  
 Candy; 98, 169, 642, 654, 665.  
 Cans: Rolling: on street; 183.  
 Cards; Christmas: Liked: 169.  
 Carriage of: 568.  
 Cat; Banished by: 1174.  
 Catalepsy; 377, 379. Frightened  
 into: 730.  
 Catamenia; 676, 706, 912, 972,  
 973, 989, 1007, 1024, 1036, 1251,  
 1254. Painful: 492. Pains in  
 back and chest during: 894.



## Real Doris, Cat-nap

Cat-nap habit; 930.  
 Cemetery; Dream about: 744.  
 Characteristics of: 68, 143.  
 Physical: 145.  
 Cheeks; Pink: 831.  
 Cheque book; 901.  
 Cheque; Duplicates: as Phase A; 944.  
 Chest: Pain in: caused by "reflection" or "suggestion"; 755.  
 Chicken business; 1261.  
 Chicken killed by Dr. Prince; 928, 929.  
 Chickens: dying; 1234. Dreams of: by suggestion; 1219. Wor-rying about: 1023.  
 Child killed by train; Dream about: 1156.  
 Child's questions trouble: 550, 551.  
 Childhood; Dream about her: 666.  
 Children of Alma; Dream about: 733.  
 Children; Service for: 468.  
 Christmas tree; Banished by fall of: 1075.  
 Church; 256, 451, 452, 473, 482, 484, 535, 574, 686, 698, 854, 962, 1115, 1188. Emerged in: 74, 256. "Forgot" in: 698, Societies; 770.  
 Circus; 1184.  
 Circus parade; 1018.  
 Clairaudience; 874.  
 Clairvoyance; 58, 59, 244, 442.  
 Cleaveland; Rev. W. M.: 433, 902.  
 Cliff; Dream of falling over: 763.  
 Clothing; Taste in: changing; 724.  
 Clutching; 691.  
 Coat: Making: reminds of S. D. days; 853.  
 Co-conscious: Not: when M. was out; 164.  
 Co-consciousness: Result of M.'s: with: 1161. with S. D. only; 48.  
 Coffee; 1231.  
 Coffee; Not fond of: 169.  
 Cold; 894. of Dr. Prince affects: by "reflection"; 754, 759. of Dr. Prince affects: by "sugges-

## Real Doris, Die

tion"; 754. Sensation of: in church; 575.  
 Colder on right side; 451.  
 Colorado Ave.; Removal to: 727.  
 Comes when S. M. is away and M. is asleep, without waking her; 515.  
 Coming; Describes sensations of: 591.  
 Coming; unusual ways of: 487.  
 Communion; 676.  
 Confirmation; 281.  
 Confusion; 1135, 1137, 1161. dis-appeared; 1172. at its height; 944. becomes less; 604. on account of moving; 947.  
 Conscious: existence denied R. D. for two months; 71. Less than three days in five years; 32, 71. Never: when in; 181, 393, 416, 418, 424.  
 Constipation; 638, 668, 671, 902, 921, 1003. Banished by: 706.  
 Conversation-recitals; Ignorant of: 790.  
 Conversations with M.; 181.  
 Conversed with M.; 158.  
 Converses for first time in three years and a half; 74, 257.  
 Corsets; 568, 807.  
 "Crack" made in: 73.  
 Crash; Flash and: hallucination; 658.  
 Crying; Alternation after: 512.  
 Crying spell in church; 575.  
 Cure; Food and: 264. S. M. cer-tain of: 964. might have been spontaneous; 67.  
 Curiosity: Lack of: good for cure; 951.  
 Cutaneous itching and burning; 114.  
 Dancing; 188, 189.  
 Dark; Comes alone in the: 507.  
 Day-dreams; 195.  
 Deafness: Temporary: daily; 594.  
 Death of mother; 209. Previs-ion of: 208.  
 Depression; 614, 1010.  
 Desk; 232.  
 Detective story; 853.  
 Die; Glad when told she was to: 33.  
 Die; S. M. offers to make R. D.: 612.



## Real Doris, Differences

Differences between R. D. and M.; 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 710.  
 Different: looks: after departure of M.; 1253.  
 Dinner; Goes out to: 970.  
 Disagreeable tasks banish; 717.  
 Disappearance; Sudden: 713, 917.  
 Disappointed about not forgetting; 1029.  
 Disappointment; 527, 1062. Banished by: 998, 1110, 1113.  
 Disgust; Banished by: 733.  
 Dish-washing; 197.  
 "Dissociation"; First: 405. Re-verie prompts: 900.  
 Disturbances: Emotional: caused by obliteration of S. D.; 46.  
 Doctor; Woman: 366.  
 Dolls; 951, 978, 1085.  
 Doll's clothes; 610.  
 Dolls' houses; 187.  
 Door; Able to close: 1036.  
 Drawer; M.'s: Takes ring from: 725.  
 Drawers; White: 174.  
 Drawing; 187.  
 Dream:  
   about Alma; 415.  
   about going away; 415.  
   Banished by: 835.  
   about going to California; 938.  
   about cemetery; 744.  
   about chickens by suggestion; 1219.  
   about child killed by train; 1156.  
   about her childhood; 666.  
   about children of Alma: 733.  
   about falling over cliff; 763.  
   Detective story causes: 853.  
   about Emma; 416.  
   causes fall out of bed; 549.  
   about Mr. Fischer changing to Dr. Prince; 1233.  
   about flowers by suggestion; 547.  
   about furniture; 434.  
   about grandma; 940.  
   about Houdan hens; 1090.  
   about old-fashioned house by suggestion; 578.  
   about breaking leg; 997.  
   brought M. out; 835.  
   M.'s thoughts made R. D.: 1054.  
   about mother; Dr. Prince makes R. D.: 332.

## Real Doris, Dreams

about Phase A; 921.  
 Picture from a: 323.  
 about pretzels; 1147.  
 about Dr. Prince by suggestion; 1098.  
 that Dr. Prince is drunk; 907.  
 Dr. Prince makes R. D.; 332, 516, 547, 578, 588, 590, 615, 621, 1098.  
 Dr. Prince tries to make R. D.; 891.  
 about rats; 964.  
 about running away; 893.  
 about being scolded; 907.  
 about first shock; 62.  
 Side: 585.  
 stimuli; 605.  
 of being threatened; 899.  
 Dreamed "underneath"; 89.  
 Dreaming; 505. while M. slept; 172. with M. watching, and S. D. awake; 499. and thinking; 1037, 1064.  
 Dreams; 605, 671.  
   caused by letter from Ada; 723.  
   cause alternations; 531, 1155.  
   about Mr. Fischer; 398, 414, 415, 423, 489, 910, 1013, 1074.  
   that Mr. Fischer is buried; 531.  
   about old home; 1013, 1154, 1156, 1254.  
   less; 987.  
   about losing little girl; 97, 674.  
   about losing things; 97, 674, 1249.  
   about M.; 97, 104, 733, 768, 791, 1013, 1044.  
   about M.: Symbolic: 814.  
   of M.'s actions; 494. while M. babbles; 790.  
   caused by M.; 550.  
   influenced by M.; 48, 447, 789.  
   seen by M.: 423, 446.  
   seen by M.: No longer: 811.  
   M. tells: of R. D.; 484.  
   Memories come in: 435, 456.  
   Memories of S. D. cause: 725.  
   about Mother; 332, 378, 417, 621, 685, 891, 1014, 1089, 1154.  
   caused by moving pictures; 1234.  
   becoming normal; 517.  
   of purchases for next day; 492.  
   Suggestion causes: 332, 516, 547, 550, 578, 588, 590, 615,



## Real Doris, Dreams

621, 1090, 1109, 1219.  
Thoughts in sleep that are not:  
1037.  
underneath, S. D. out and  
awake; 499.  
Dress-making; 199, 278.  
Ducks; Toy: 915.  
Ears plugged at night; 99.  
Eating between meals; 981.  
Ella; 104, 523. Letter from:  
1027. R. D. brought suddenly  
to see: 950. should come to  
see: S. M. thinks: 806.  
Embarrassment; Banished by:  
619.  
Embroidery; 40, 226.  
Emerged: in church; 74. in re-  
sponse to stimuli; 89.  
Emergency; 1254.  
Emma; Dream about: 416.  
Emotion and alternation; 732,  
733.  
Emotional disturbances: banish:  
849, 899, 1108. caused by ob-  
literation of S. D.; 46.  
Emotions: After-images of:  
other personalities; 47. of M.  
affect R. D.; 527, 585. of R.  
D. felt by S. D.; 409. of R. D.  
perceived by supra-liminal M.;  
929.  
Encouraged by Dr. Prince; 1027.  
Energy; Severe draught on: 957.  
exhausted by S. M.; Feels ef-  
fects of: 719.  
Errands; 197.  
Errors in copying; 1033.  
Eruption on limbs; 1075, 1078,  
1082, 1083.  
Excitement; alternations in-  
creased by: 1105. Banished  
by: 1002. of M. affects R. D.;  
527.  
Exertion; Banished by: 1110.  
Existence of: M. keeps secret  
the: 347.  
Explain: Tries to: to mother;  
182.  
Exuberance; 114.  
Eyelid; 902.  
Eyelids; Swollen: 1219.  
Eyes weak at first; 604.  
Failure in attempts to bring; 484.  
Fall on road; 737.  
Family of: 137. move next  
door; 226.  
Fear; Banished by: 655, 905.

## Real Doris, Gaining

banished by suggestion; 1188,  
1194. in sleeping berth; 960.  
Fears of S. D.: affect R. D.; 535.  
passed on to R. D.; 607.  
Feelings wounded; 1174.  
Feet sore; 996.  
Ferris waist; 668, 672. Ban-  
ished by: 706.  
Fire; Could not build: 1099.  
Fischer; Mr.: Anxiety about:  
398. Dreams about: 398, 414,  
415, 423, 489, 910, 1074. Fear  
of: 158, 171, 408, 661. In-  
fluence of: 63, 71. "Moving-  
picture" of crime of: 854.  
Photograph of: banishes R. D.;  
521. Pity for: 938. responsi-  
ble for the obsession; 61. R.  
D. sees: on street; 938. Trou-  
bled by memory of abuse by:  
456. Watches for: 919.  
"Fissure"; Second mental: 197.  
Five o'clock A. M.; Habit of  
watching for: 411.  
Flash and crash hallucination;  
658.  
*Flowers that bloom in the  
spring*; 911.  
Food; Good: 264.  
Foods; Taste in: 41.  
Footsteps in next house; Fright-  
ened by: 729.  
Forget; Forgot to: 987.  
Forgetfulness; 114, 809, 887, 900.  
Forgetting; Disappointed about  
not: 1029. Feelings when on  
point of: 913.  
Formula; 411, 412. changed;  
662. Comes before completion  
of: 453, 489. for waking: 402.  
409. Formula did not work  
when Dr. Prince thought she  
was not "near"; 414.  
Fort Potts Hotel; 197.  
Freedom; Sense of: 641.  
Fright; 111. Association causes:  
525. Banished by: 413, 430,  
450, 522, 559. Brought out by:  
94. Set-back on account of:  
1134.  
Frightened; 1188. into catalepsy;  
730. by key in lock; 555. by  
M.; 160. by snake; 987.  
Fruit; 1120.  
Furniture; Dream about: 434.  
moved about; 1016.  
Gaining; 515.



## Real Doris, Gifts

Gifts from Sunday School festival; 1075.  
 Girl; Feels like young: 699.  
 Girlish; 143.  
 Gladness; Banished by: 733.  
 Gland; Thyroid: 1110, 1119, 1138, 1221.  
 Gloomy; 889, 973. on account of M.'s disappointment; 999.  
 God: Thanks: that S. D. and M. are to die; 289.  
 Graduation; 196.  
 Grammar; Brooding over bad: 922. Lesson in: 586.  
 Grandma; Dream about: 940.  
 Grapes; 268.  
 Grasped Dr. Prince during sleep; 674.  
 Grave; Mother's: Care of: 895.  
 Grievance; Banished by: 1034.  
 Habit of watching for 5 A. M.; 411.  
 Hæmorrhoids; 707, 1003.  
 Hair: changed color; 145. ribbons; 186.  
 Haitsch; Michael: 1245.  
 Hallucination; 207. Auditory: 874. Flash and crash: 658. Visual: 58.  
 Hallucinations; 729. caused by M.; 64. caused by absence of S. M.; 113.  
 Handkerchiefs; M.'s: 1126.  
 Hands stiff with gripping bed; 836.  
 Happiness of: 405, 1235.  
 Harsh treatment; No memory of: 473. No physical effects of: 473.  
 Hat reminds R. D. of S. D. days; 853.  
 Headache; 571, 748, 769, 772, 871, 876, 882, 883, 884, 885, 887, 888, 889, 890, 894, 905, 997, 1034, 1075, 1080, 1081. arrests progress; 887. tablets; 895, 1079.  
 Headaches; Disappearance of: 895. Sympathy causes: 1008.  
 Hearing; Hyperæsthetic in: 97, 98. Tests of: 849.  
 Heat; Effect of: 995. Suffers from: 979.  
 "Hello Papa!"; 412.  
 Help: Wishes to: 514.  
 Hens: Houdan: Dreams about: by suggestion; 1090.

## Real Doris, Jerk

History; 1217.  
 Home; Dreams about old: 1013, 1154, 1156, 1254. Never in kitchen in old: 418. Memory of rooms in old: 418.  
 Hotel; Fort Potts: 197.  
 Housekeeping; 1202.  
 Housework; Wishes to help with: 477.  
 Humidity; Suffers from: 979.  
 Humor; Sense of: 40.  
 Hunger; 98, 654.  
 "Hunting" in her thought; 484.  
 Hyperæsthesia; Auditory: 97, 98, 125, 686. Auditory: reduced; 104. Auditory: subsided when M. ceased from watching; 840, 849. Olfactory: 686. Tactile: 126. tactile: Temporary: 686, 687, 689, 693.  
 Hypersensitive; Becoming less: 1170.  
 Hyslop; Dr.: Visit of: 695.  
 Ice-cream; 953.  
 Ice-wagon; 791, 793.  
 Illusions; 903. explained by M.; 725.  
 Imagining; Brought out by: 619.  
 Imitating mother; 181.  
 Improved when Mr. Fischer was in hospital; 171.  
 Improving; Thinks she is not: 969.  
 Improvement; Marked: 1121.  
 Proofs of: 969. Slow: 806. during two months; 952.  
 In; Not conscious when: 181, 393, 416, 418, 424, 848.  
 Indigestion; 675, 693, 1046, 1256.  
 Individuality; 408, 409.  
 Injuries; Did not connect M. with her bodily: 236.  
 Inquisitive about contents of package; 931.  
 Insane; Dr. X. says she is: 1078, 1080.  
 Intelligence of: 143.  
 Intercognition; 520.  
 Interest; Banished by strong: 1002.  
 Interpolation; 587.  
 Interrupted by M.; 532.  
 Irritation; 734.  
 Itching; Cutaneous: 114.  
 Jealous of M.; 1023, 1221.  
 Jerk; Comes with: 883.



## Real Doris, Joking

Joking; Practical: Incapable of: 1261.  
 July 4th; 114. Suggestion made: endurable; 1152.  
 Kendall; Mrs.: 1036.  
 Kern; Lizzie: 430.  
 Key in lock; Frightened by sound of: 555.  
 Kidneys; Could not eat: 863.  
 Killed: Almost: by suggestion intended to exorcise M.; 348.  
 "Kimono; Make that:" 587.  
 Kitchen in old house; Never in: 418.  
 Laugh of: 701, 784.  
 Laundry; 198.  
 Leg; Dream about breaking: 997.  
 Lie: White: told by Dr. Prince to: 474.  
 Life saved by S. M.; 77, 95, 308.  
 Lip-reading: Does not believe: possible; 987.  
 Lohengrin; 186.  
 Losing: Dreams of: little girl; 97, 674. Dreams of: things; 97, 674, 1249.  
 Lost feeling; 1251.  
 "Lumbago"; 1225.  
 McDonough; 430.  
 Maine; Mrs.: 199, 200.  
 Margaret:  
     Actions: Some: characteristic of: 1255.  
     Amused R. D.; 153, 156, 158, 159.  
     Attitude of R. D. towards M.; 665.  
     Auditory hallucinations to amuse R. D.; 159.  
     Blend with R. D.; M. will never: 447, 490.  
     Bring R. D.; M. loses power to: 428.  
     M. calls the R. D. in vain; 500.  
     Conversed orally with R. D.; 47, 158, 181.  
     Differences between M. and R. D.; 104, 168, 169, 170, 418, 710.  
     Dreams about M.; 97, 104, 733, 768, 791, 1013, 1044.  
     Dreams of R. D.; M. called a part of the: 347.  
     Dreams of R. D. influenced by M.; 48.  
     R. D. begs M. not to go, in her sleep; 726.

## Real Doris, Methodist

Hallucinations caused by M.; 64.  
 R. D. had no memories of M.; 26.  
 M. missed by R. D.; 669, 1251.  
 M. neater than R. D.; 166.  
 Notes written by M. to R. D.; 66, 160, 161, 173.  
 Orders for R. D.; M. writes: 428.  
 Out together; M. and R. D.: 506.  
 part of herself; Taught that M. is: 652.  
 Dr. Prince: M. tells: of R. D.; 399.  
 Romance regarding R. D.; 79.  
 M. makes R. D. say things; 580, 635.  
 R. D. slapped by M.; 181.  
 Thoughts of R. D. known to M.; 49.  
 Maria; Aunt: 168.  
 Marlboro, Mass.; 625.  
 Marry; S. M. says: should never: 524.  
 Marshmallows; 1049.  
 Massage; 562, 585, 609.  
 Meal; First comes during: 573.  
 Meals at the rectory; 74.  
 Medal; Gold: 872.  
 Melancholy; 1019.  
 Memories: work backwards: 434.  
     banish R. D.; 475, 500. come in dreams; 435. make head whirl; 465. cause perplexity; 443. cause self-reproach; 443. of S. D. affect R. D.; 845, 896. of S. D. come to R. D.; 41, 78, 80, 210, 212, 396, 403, 405. of S. D. come to R. D. in dreams; 81, 456. of S. D. come to R. D., except memories of extreme excitement; 275, 407. of S. D. will come to R. D.; 490. of S. D. cause bad dreams; 725. worry: 438, 456.  
 Memory: Blanks in: of: 430. of mother's death: No: 244. of the past; 402, 484, 1162. poor; 903, 907. of first meeting with Dr. Prince; 412. of work done; 279.  
 Mental integrity restored; 119.  
 M-formula; 452, 524.  
 Methodist minister mimics M. to R. D.; 205.



## Real Doris, Mind

Mind: clearer; 1204. Cloudiness of: 1203. read by M.; 95, 1015, 1036, 1085, 1088. "Straightening things out" in her: 484.  
Mission work; 202.  
Misunderstanding; Banished by: 966.  
Money and ice-wagon; 791, 793.  
Moods; 1024. of M. affect R. D.; 97, 928, 999.  
Morris chair; 845.  
Mother; Apparition of: 58, 59, 244, 442, 1042, 1043, 1190.  
Crying for her: 1227. is dead; Realizes that: 399. Death of: 208, 209, 217, 243, 522. Dream of: Dr. Prince makes R. D.: 332. Dreams of: 323, 378, 417, 621, 685, 1014, 1089, 1154, 1156.  
Tries to explain to: 182. Helping: 63, 66. Imitating: 181.  
Influence of: 63. Lonely for: 379. Saw: when absent; 1043.  
Subjective vision of: 58. Visual hallucination of: 58.  
Motives of: 1054.  
Motor automatism; 1224.  
Mouse; Banished by: 811, 986.  
Movement: Continues: begun by S. M.; 1267.  
"Moving-picture": of battle; 1164. of Mr. Fischer's crime; 854.  
Moving pictures: beneficial to: 1011. Dreams caused by: 1234.  
M-process; 470.  
Music; Effect of: 685. Fond of: 169.  
Naps at rectory; 74.  
Neater: M.: than R. D.; 166.  
Necklace; 402.  
Nephew meets M.; 518.  
Nerves affected by M.'s declension; 1012, 1020.  
Nervous; 936, 968, 1015. laugh of: 701.  
Nervousness; Banished by: 653, 903.  
Nettie; Letter to: 477.  
New York; Return from: 1267. Trip to: 1263, 1266.  
*Nicodemus*; 935.  
Niece; Note from: 543.  
Night; Afraid at: 979. work; 202.  
Noise; Banished by: 444, 519, 1106, 1108, 1110, 1111, 1121,

## Real Doris, Personalities

1122, 1130, 1145, Frightened by: 555.  
Noises; Psychic treatment for fear of: 564, 607.  
Note from niece; 543. from S. M. to Dr. Prince found by R. D.; 121.  
Notes from M. to R. D.; 66, 160, 161, 173, 201, 230, 258, 469, 668.  
Nurse girl; 199.  
Occult experiences; 207.  
Occupation: Variety of: good for: 982.  
Offended with Dr. Prince; 985.  
Olfactory hyperæsthesia; 686.  
Opera; 186.  
Ossiam; Lines from: 423.  
Osteopath; 962.  
Out; Bringing R. D.: 542. The longer R. D. is: the stronger she gets; 404. M. fails to bring: 672. by pleasure of M.; Brought: 614, 615, 618, 619. at Dr. Prince's; 333, 393. M. tells S. D. how to keep R. D.: 227. three minutes; 385. twenty-four hours: 877.  
Overwork; 71. banishes: 814. P.; 190.  
Paid psychic; Should not be a: 1326, 1327.  
Pain: in bladder; 883, 890, 894. in chest caused by "reflection" or "suggestion"; 755. caused by reading of suffering; 1073.  
Sent in by: 404, 417, 418, 428, 436, 450, 456, 500, 556, 672, 687, 689, 972, 1185, 1198, 1220, 1225.  
Pains; Pelvic: 1149.  
Painting; 187, 226, 279, 398, 399, 1163.  
Papo; Never said: 909.  
Parents; 61.  
Parrot; Banished by: 525, 856, 926. bites: 569. frightens: away; 525.  
Past; Knowledge of the: 402, 482, 1162. Pictures of the: 475.  
Pathos; Sensitive to: 268.  
Pelvic pains; 1149.  
Perfume; Dislike of: 590.  
Perplexity; 443.  
Personalities: all friendly to: 71. not directly known to: 47, 48. Thoughts of: cause R. D. to utter words; 469.



## Real Doris, Personality

Personality suppressed for all but three days in five years; 32.  
 Perspiration; 685.  
 Perspires less than M.; 573.  
 P-formula; 452, 476, 483, 524.  
 Phase A: As: duplicates cheque; 944.  
 Photograph of: destroyed by M.; 283.  
 Photographs colored by: 255.  
 Phrases of S. D.; Repeating: 1131.  
 Physical: characteristics; 145. improvement; 506, 512.  
 Piano player; 1029.  
 Picnic; 971.  
 Picture: from a dream; 232. gallery; 569, 570. painted by: 398, 399.  
 Pictures: on board-walk; 187. Thinking of: disturbs M.; 572.  
 Pills; 668.  
 Pistol-shot; Banished by: 1121.  
 Planchette; 1309, 1327.  
 Plate admired by: 1008.  
 Pleasant occupation prolongs stay; 716.  
 Pleasurable excitement of: weakens M.; 1242.  
 Pleasure; Banished by: 1110. of M.; Brought out by: 614, 615, 618, 619.  
 Post-cards; Puzzled by: 275.  
 Prayer-book; 460. services; 592.  
 Prayers; Reading during: 189.  
 Praying disgusts M.; 289.  
 Present: Wants: given to M.; 1075.  
 Pressure; 470.  
 Pretzels; 1171, 1200. Dream about: 1147.  
 Prevision of mother's death; 208.  
 Prince; Dr.: Clings to arm of: while walking; 492. Dreams of: by suggestion; 1098. First appearance of R. D. to: 79, 257. grasped by R. D. as soon as she slept; 97. will not retire till R. D. comes; 471. R. D. sent to: that he might communicate; 1300.  
 Prince; Grandmother: Heard voice of: 874.  
 Problems in sleep: Solves: 1037.  
 Progress: arrested by headache; 887. during sleep; Most: 405, 414. stopped by worry; 1026.

## Real Doris, Self-reproach

Psychic; Remarkable: S. M. thinks R. D. might be a: 1228. treatment for fear of noises; 564. treatment during sleep; 473.  
 Punished by M.; 161.  
 Question: Answers: of which she is ignorant; 469.  
 Rathum; "Doctor": R. D. does not recognize: 580.  
 Rats; Dream about: 964.  
 Reading; 416. interrupted by M.; 758. Pain caused by: of suffering; 1073. during prayers; 189. Reading one thing while S. M. reads another; 1237.  
 Recognize: Did not: people well known before 1906; 580, 581. Did not: Mrs. Prince, Dr. Prince, or the house; 365.  
 "Reflection"; Cold of Dr. Prince affects R. D. by: 754, 759. Pain in the chest caused by: 755. of physical states of others; 755.  
 Reflex caused by M.'s reading; 1005.  
 Religion of: 203.  
 Religious; 168, 1056.  
 "Reminiscencing"; 890.  
 Rest through alternations; 782.  
 Rest from the burden of living; Needed: 474.  
 Resting: M.; for R. D.; 565.  
 Restless night; 720, 1020.  
 Restored; 127.  
 Return of: 1194.  
 Revelation of: 79.  
 Reverie promotes dissociation; 900.  
 Richards; Rev. G. B.: Would not see: 739.  
 Rinehart; Mrs.: 737.  
 Ring: Takes: from M.'s drawer; 725.  
 Rings; 402.  
 Road; Fall on: 737.  
 Romance of M. regarding: 79. S.; Mrs.: 926.  
 Sang when M. struck piano keys; 81.  
 School; 189, 195.  
 Scratched by M.; 64, 160.  
 Scrubs window sills; 513.  
 Self-depreciation; 584.  
 Self-reproach; 443.



## Real Doris, Selfishness

Selfishness; 985, 1056, 1075, 1221.  
 Sensitive to temperature; 125.  
 Sensitiveness; 426, 622, 907.  
 Sensory impressions of other personalities not known by: 35.  
 Service; Prayer-book: 592.  
 Set-back; 1147. on account of fright; 1134.  
 Severe measures to banish: 488.  
 Sewing; Effect of: 662, 1256.  
 Sex instinct deficient; 143.  
 Shaking S. D. does not hurt R. D.; 470.  
 Shock; Dream of first: 62, 155.  
 First: not remembered by: 155.  
 Third: 73.  
 Shocks; 127. Banished by slight: 755, 807, 808, 891.  
 Shot; Revolver: 114.  
 Sick Doris; co-conscious with R. D.; 48. Coming of: 210. Encounters with S. D. not known to R. D.; 477. Memories of: 210. one "person" with R. D.; 441, 573. Phrases of: 1131. was "separated" from R. D.; 573.  
 Side-dream; 585.  
 Singing; 450.  
 Singing; Banished by: of Dr. Prince; 989. Brought out by: 477. on the stairs; 184.  
 Sings; for first time in five years; 413.  
 Sings; M. strikes piano keys and R. D.; 413.  
 Sister-in-law; 696.  
 Skirt; Forgets torn: 887.  
 Slang; 164, 165.  
 Slapped by M.; 181.  
 Slapped by mistake, by Dr. Prince; 511.  
 Sleep; Arms stretched out during: 669. attitude during: 986. Disturbed: 965, 1040. less disturbed; 906. Flops on right side during: 468, 1248. Good: 729, 981, 1232. Grasped Dr. Prince during: 674. Long: tired: 782. Nineteen years without: 429. Normal: restored; 145. Peculiarities of: 1050. Problems in: Solves: 1037. Progress during: 405, 414. Recognizes Dr. and Mrs. Prince in: 534. Suggestion during: 608, 909, 940, 986, 1104,

## Real Doris, Smell

1180, 1194. Put to: by suggestion; 790, 802, 881, 887, 999, 1205. Treatment during: Psychic: 473. Troubled: cured by suggestion; 114.  
 Sleeping in own personality increased expenditure of energy; 81.  
 Sleeping Margaret;  
 Absence of S. M. distressed R. D.; 90.  
 Cared for R. D.; 67, 73, 91, 158, 490, 830, 1020, 1131, 1140, 1209, 1252.  
 R. D. cannot "come" from S. M.; 473.  
 Existence of S. M. made known to R. D.; 27.  
 Expression of R. D. changes when S. M. goes away; 1049.  
 Influence of S. M. could not reach R. D. at first; 158.  
 R. D. influenced by S. M.; 1189.  
 Life of R. D. saved by: 77, 95, 308.  
 Manner of R. D. changes when S. M. goes away; 1049.  
 Missed by R. D. when away; 113, 119, 120, 1049, 1094, 1096, 1097, 1146, 1195, 1199, 1240.  
 R. D. and S. M.; 527.  
 Spoke to R. D. for first time; 103.  
 Spoke to R. D. during sleep; 875.  
 Talks when R. D. is present, conscious and asleep; 1254, 1255.  
 Warned R. D.; 67.  
 Sleeping Real Doris;  
 R. D. and: 869.  
 R. D. not conscious of S. R. D.; 45.  
 Nothing comes from: to R. D.; 925.  
 Appeared only in sleep of R. D.; 45.  
 Sleeps; for first time in 19 years; 405. S. M. comes only when R. D.; 786. more soundly; 986. more soundly with M. not watching; 715.  
 Slept all night; 411.  
 Smell; improves; 125. subnormal; 123.



## Real Doris, Smile

Smile; 413, 498, 874. by hand-pressure; 438.  
 Smiles; and disappears; 376. in sleep; 492.  
 Snake; Frightened by; 987.  
 "Snubbed"; 918.  
 Soliloquies; Ignorant of; 790.  
 Somnambulism; 685.  
 Sores on legs; 1076.  
 Sounds; Banished by slight; 724, 834. obliterated by suggestion; 114, 1077.  
 Staring; spell in church; 575. spells; 604.  
 Stimuli caused R. D. to emerge; 89.  
 Stimulus; Comes without external; 477, 487.  
 Stitch in side; Banished by; 863.  
 Store; comes out in; 555.  
 Street; First comes on; 512. Never on; for five years; 728. not seen for four years; 258.  
 Studies; Ceased on S. M.'s advice; 785. opposed by M.; 96.  
 Study; Anxious to; 586.  
 Studying; 1163.  
 Subnormal; Smell; 123. Taste; 123.  
 Suggestion; cold said to affect R. D. by; Dr. Prince's; 754. Danger through; 77. Dreams by; 332, 526, 547, 550, 578, 588, 590, 615, 621, 1090, 1109, 1219. Fear banished by; 1188, 1194. "Hello Papa!"; 412. Pain in chest said to be caused by; 755. during sleep; 608, 909, 940, 986, 1104, 1180, 1194. Put to sleep by; 796, 802, 881, 887, 999, 1207. Troubled sleep cured by; 114. Sounds obliterated by; 114. Sore throat cured by; 1128. Waking in response to; 954. Whistles not heard on account of; 114. Worry counteracted by; 1004.  
 Sunday school; 452, 519, 686, 693, 865, 874, 882, 888, 891, 902, 968, 986. bad for; 860. work; 202.  
 Supersensitive; 690, 1034, 1040, 1053, 1057, 1098, 1174, 1227.  
 Supersensitiveness; Banished by; 690, 915, 1034. vanishes; 1182.  
 Support; Worrying about cost of; 672.  
 Supraliminal time of; 83.

## Real Doris, Throat

Surplice; 732.  
 Surprise; Banished by; 1002.  
 Sweet William; 180.  
 Swiped M.'s money; 566.  
 Sympathy; Banished by; 654, 917. causes headache; 1008.  
 Symptoms; Dr. Walker says R. D. thinks too much about; 766.  
 Table; Disliked waiting at; 202.  
 Tactile hyperæsthesia; 126. Temporary; 686, 687, 689, 693.  
 Taste in clothing changing; 724. improves; 125. subnormal; 123.  
 Tastes differed from M.'s; 168, 169.  
 Teased by M.; 181, 240, 681, 682.  
 Teeth filled during sleep; 619.  
 Televoyance; 1043.  
 Temperature; Sensitive to; 125.  
 Term; The; 421.  
 Tests of hearing; 849.  
 Thankfulness of; 402.  
 Thank-offering; 1013.  
 Theodosia; 1026.  
 Thermanæsthetic; 123.  
 Thinking banishes; 461. and dreaming; 1037, 1064. Hard; of M. affects R. D.; 717.  
 Thought; "Hunting" in her; 484.  
 Thoughts of M. affect R. D.; 792, 814, 951. of M.; R. D. gets; 978, 1207. influence M.; 915, 917, 1012. influenced by M.; 550, 587, 782, 911, 915, 949, 1098.  
 Thoughts known to M.; 49, 397, 423, 520, 1125, 1126, 1132, 1142, 1145, 1148, 1160. cease to be known to M.; 82, 166, 167. misunderstood by M.; 848. bring M. out; 931. read by M.; 110, 111, 413, 783, 873, 899, 1095, 1184. read by M. no longer; 1118. of M. not recognized as such by; 550. seen by M.; 1159, 1216. in sleep that are not dreams; 1037. Subliminal; not usually known by M.; 929.  
 Threatened; Dreams of being; 899.  
 Threatened by M.; 90.  
 Throat; Contraction of; 213. Sore; 1145. Sore; due to association of ideas; 962. Sore;



## Real Doris, Throat

cured by suggestion; 1128.  
 Thunder; 593, 655, 670, 684, 730.  
 Time: Sense of: Little; when in; 989.  
 Tired; 1031, 1251.  
 Tires easily; 968.  
 Tomatoes; 691.  
 Tooth: Ulcerated: cured by S. M.; 1265, 1266.  
 Toothache; Banished by: 647, 1122.  
 Tossing in sleep; 729.  
 Touches part of body of which she speaks; 687.  
 Train: Wakened in time to catch: by S. M.; 121, 1266.  
 Treatment: Psychic: during sleep; 473.  
 Tree; Fall from: 168.  
 Trees; Fond of: 169.  
 Trembling; 553, 569.  
 Trixie; Death of: 73.  
 Troubled: by memory of abuse by Mr. Fischer; 456. by pictures of the past; 475.  
 Trousers; Pressing: 197.  
 Truthful; 147, 207, 810, 1001, 1261.  
 Twitching; 968.  
 Umbrella lost; 820.  
 Uncertainty: Banished by: 938.  
 Uncle; 523.  
 Upidee-idee-ida; 477.  
 Urino-genital tract; 906. anæsthetic; 123. Sensation begins in: 126.  
 Useless; Worried about being: 1023.  
 Vaccination; 162.  
 Varioloid; 146.  
 Verbal expressions; 558.  
 Vibrations that hurt; 759.  
 Vision: clearer as M. became blind; 119, 126, 1195. Subjective of mother; 58. Testing: of: 741, 805.  
 Visiting; District: 204.  
 Visual hallucination; 58.  
 Voice: of: 39, 43, 558, 784. Automatic: 876. heard by: 1310. heard by: in night; 1263. of M. heard by: 638. of Grandmother Prince heard by R. D.; 874. Wakened by: of S. M.; 120, 121.  
 W.; Mrs.: 1131.

## Record

Waist made by S. D.; Recognizes: 884.  
 Wakened: by new method; 1046. by P-formula; 443. by suggestion; 886. by voice of S. M.; 120, 121, 1266.  
 Waking; False; 903, 908. Formula for: 402, 409. in response to suggestion; 954.  
 Walker; Dr.: 405, 453, 895, 926, 930. R. D. calls on: 929. Dislike of: 717, 748. Letter from: 1073. Letters to: 994, 1024, 1094.  
 Walking; Tremulous when: 553.  
 Warned by S. M.; 67.  
 "We"; 269.  
 Weariness; 1178.  
 Whistles not heard on account of suggestion; 114, 1077.  
 Wholley; Dr.: 926.  
 Will clashing with M.'s; 731.  
 Window-sills; Scrubs: 513.  
 Woodpecker; 639.  
 Work; Night: 202.  
 Working: makes M. tired; 569. for wages; 197.  
 Worm; Swallowed a: 733.  
 Worried; because Dr. Prince is out in storm; 939. by illness of Mrs. Prince; 964, 970.  
 Worries preceding birth of: 141.  
 Worry; Banished by: 851, 988.  
 Dr. Prince's look of: banishes: 1050. Progress stopped by: 1026. Rescued from: by happiness of M.; 732. Suggestion to counteract: 1004.  
 Worrying; 438, 443, 654, 731, 903, 914, 1081. bad for: 951. about bank balance; 1090. about chickens; 1023. about cost of support; 672. makes M. exacting; 1176. Memories: 438. about being useless; 1023.  
 Wrists; Brought out by grasping S. D.'s: 429, 438.  
 X.; Dr.: 1078, 1079, 1080.  
 Yanking in: Effects of: on: 787.  
 Reason: M. does not: 960.  
 "Reason; I never: I know"; 490.  
 Reasoning power: Shrewd: of M.; 719.  
 Rebecca; 867.  
 Recital of events in life of D.; 251.  
 Reckon; M.'s inability to: 355.  
 Record; Daily: 75. Daily: began



## Record

January 18th, 1911; 286. Daily: ended; 1252. S. D. kept: of things she could not understand; 273.  
 Records: Earlier: less precise; 287. in original language; 287. read to S. M.; 287, 406. Publication of: S. M. asks about: 1138.  
 Rector; M. amused by accent of: 478.  
 Rectory; Meals and naps at: 74, 256, 265. Sleeping at: 327.  
 Red light; 656.  
 Reflected; 131.  
 Reflection in mirror; 215.  
 "Reflection": cold by: R. D. gets a: 754, 759. Pain in chest caused by: 755. of physical states of others; 755. of thoughts seen by M.; 893.  
 Reflex caused by M.'s reading; 1005.  
 Relations: S. M.'s: to R. D. and M. differ; 786. Terror at thought of: 411.  
 Relative: of Dr. Prince caused adoption of R. D.; 1284. of R. D. communicating: 1281.  
 Relatives; M. forgets: 898. M. mocks grief of: 254. not recognized by S. D.; 254.  
 Reliable; M. not: 241.  
 Religion "dumm stuff" to M.; 38. of R. D.; 203. S. M. on; 1056.  
 Religious; M. not: 38, 40, 168, 1056. R. D.; 38, 168, 1056. S. D.; 38, 40.  
 "Reminiscencing"; R. D.; 890.  
 Repartee of M.; 417.  
 Report: S. D. threatened to: Dr. Prince to himself; 475.  
 Reproduction: of past conversations by S. R. D.; 45. See *Conversation Recitals*. of soliloquies by S. R. D.; 46. See *Soliloquies*.  
 Reproved: Dr. Prince: by S. M.; 564, 923, 1144, 1159, 1226, 1247.  
 Resentment: Absence of: in M.; 624, 680. of M. at neglect of her friends; 255.  
 Reserved; S. D.: 39.  
 Response to external sensory stimuli, of S. R. D.; 46.  
 Rest: through alternations; 782. Need of: R. D.'s; 474. Talking with M. asleep secures more: for the system; 78.  
 Rested: M. never: before S. D. came; 593.  
 Resting: when away; M. always: 547. M.: for R. D.; 565, 593.  
 Restless night; 498, 1020.

## Sanitarium

Restored; R. D.: 127.  
 See *Banishment*.  
 "Resurrectory"; 963.  
 Reticence: of S. D.; 209, 226. of S. M.; 1180, 1262.  
 Retracing her development; M.: 689, 1055.  
 See *Banishment*.  
 Retrogression of S. D.; 480.  
 See *Banishment*.  
 Return: of R. D.; 1194. of S. M.; 1095.  
 Revelation of R. D.; 79.  
 Revenge; 235, 596.  
 See *Anger*.  
 Reverie promotes dissociation; 900.  
 Revolver-shot; 114.  
 Ribbon tied to Dr. Prince's ear by M.; 811.  
 Richards; Rev. G. B.; 739, 740, 899.  
 Rid of M.; Getting: 779.  
 Rinehart; Mrs.: 737.  
 Ring; 401. in barrel; 303, 306. that cut me; It was the: 688. R. D. takes M.'s: 725. S. D. gives: to Mrs. Prince; 282.  
 Rings; 402.  
 "Roberts: Dr.: and Dr. Lewis"; 817, 823.  
 Rolling and jerking of head; 835.  
 Romance; M.'s: 79, 380. of French girl; 706.  
 Romancing; 359, 364.  
 Rompers; M. asks for: 742.  
 "Roomers too? Have you got:" 1077.  
 Rose; 1313.  
 Rose at 3.30; 175.  
 Rubberneck Row; 156, 380. dialect; 284.  
 "Run and run"; M. feels that she must: 519.  
 S.; Helena: 182.  
 S.; Miss: 315, 318.  
 S.; Mr.: 927, 928.  
 S.; Mrs.: 920, 926.  
 S—; Marie: 377.  
 Sadie; 347.  
 Sally; Destruction of: 314. M. hated the name: 186.  
 Salts: 1021. and suggestion; 907.  
 Same but different; M. and S. M.: 464.  
 Sang: R. D.: when M. struck piano keys; 81.  
 Sanitarium; M. wants to go to: 875,



## Sanitarium

884. Dr. Prince threatens to send S. D. to: 466.  
 Sarcasm of M.; 347.  
 "Say that; I made her:" 580.  
 Say things; M. makes R. D.: 580, 635.  
 Scabs; Tearing off: 628.  
 Scalded: S. D. almost: D.; 437.  
 Scar on arm; 480.  
 Scene; M.'s imaginary country: recognized by Dr. Prince; 927.  
 Schmeltz; Dr.: 588, 589, 812.  
 School: days; 65, 189, 195, 196.  
 High: M. refused to go to: 65, 196.  
 M.'s dislike for: 65, 170.  
 Schroeder; Margaret: 351, 360, 380, 395, 396, 398.  
 Schroeder; Paul: 351, 352, 353, 354, 360, 380, 420, 424.  
 "Science"; 530, 710, 864.  
 Scientific readers; 51.  
 Scientists; Limited knowledge of: 1143.  
 Scolded; R. D. dreams of being: 907.  
 Scolds Dr. Prince; S. M.: 1131.  
 Scratched: R. D.: by M.; 160. S. D.: herself to bring R. D. out; 420. S. D.: by M.; 64, 72, 77, 235, 281, 306, 307, 320.  
 Scrub window frames; M. and S. D.: 511.  
 Scrubbing movement in sleep; 511.  
 Seasons; Change of: 225.  
 Seclusion necessary for best work; 235.  
 Second sight; 301, 302, 335, 336, 337, 346, 377.  
 Secondary: memories; 24. personalities and hysteria; 293.  
 Secondary Personality; 23, 136.  
 Content and function of: 24.  
 Criterion of: 24.  
 Function and content of: 24.  
 Multiple Personality and: 24.  
 Myers; F. W. H.: on: 136.  
 Subconscious mental states and: 24.  
 Secret; M. and S. D. wish Dr. Prince to discover their: 274.  
 See: R. D. used to: her mother when absent; 1043. S. D. cannot: on account of pain; 556.  
 See *Vision*.  
 Seeing thoughts; S. M. on: 1191.  
 See *Vision*.  
 Sees: M.: from R. D.'s thoughts; 982.  
 R. D.: better when M. is blind; 119, 126, 1195. S. M.: when M. is

## Set-back

blind; 1194. S. M.: better when M. is blind; 1198. S. M.: before R. D. does; 988. S. M. generally: clock; 1010. S. M.: through eyes of D.; 600, 982.  
 See *Vision*.  
 Seismic displacement; Response of S. R. D. to: 46.  
 Self-consciousness: of S. M. constant; 843. of S. R. D. doubtful; 45. S. R. D. could have been educated into: 46.  
 See *Consciousness*.  
 Self-depreciation of R. D.; 584.  
 Selfishness: of M.; 64, 91, 96, 100, 107, 159, 186, 201, 284, 375, 872, 892, 893, 985. of R. D.; 985, 1056, 1075, 1221.  
 Self-reproach of R. D.; 443.  
 Self-willed; M.: 177.  
 Sensation; Lines of: 125.  
 Sensation: of S. D. becomes limited to her eyes; 536, 541. of S. D. reduced in area; 540.  
 Sensations of S. M.; First independent: 125.  
 Senses; See *Anæsthesia, Analgesia, Auditory, Breathing, Colder, Comatose, Ears, Expression, Eyes, Foods, Hear, Hearing, Hunger, Hyperæsthesia, Hypersensitive, Muscular, Pains, Sensation, Sensitiveness, Sensory, Smell, Stimuli, Subnormal, Tactile, Tactual, Taste, Temperature, Thermoæsthesia, Thermal, Thermanæsthesia, Thermanæsthetic, Thirst, Vision, Visual, Weariness*.  
 Sensitiveness: of M.; 1046. of R. D.; 426, 622, 907. to temperature of M.; 95. to temperature of R. D.; 125.  
 Sensory Impressions; M. knew of: of S. D. and R. D.; 35. R. D. did not know: of other personalities; 35. S. D. knew: of R. D.; 35.  
 Sensory stimuli; S. R. D. responds to: 46, 803.  
 Sentences; Specimens of M.'s: 944.  
 See *Language*.  
 "Separated": S. D. was: from R. D.; but M. was not; 573. S. M.: from M.; 389.  
 Sermon cases; 347.  
 Servant: S. D. b willing to be: but not daughter; 459.  
 Service; Prayer-book: 592.  
 Set-back on account of fright; 1134.



## Set-backs

Set-backs; 111, 1147.  
Severe measures to banish S. D.; 488.  
Sew: S. D. promises not to: and breaks promise; 460.  
    *See Sewing.*  
Sewing; 72, 202, 234. Catalepsy during: 72, 82, 234, 366, 367. Effects of: 406, 407, 445, 448, 453, 1256. machine; 231. Mrs. Prince prevents S. D. from: 460.  
    *See Dress-making, Embroidery, Sew.*  
Sex instinct: deficient in R. D.; 143. lacking in S. D.; 343.  
Shadow: seen with apparitions of Mrs. Fischer; 59, 1044. Hallucinatory figure that casts a: 1044.  
Shaking S. D.; 470, 472, 497.  
Shamming; Dr. X.'s verdict of: 1080.  
    *See Diagnosis.*  
"Shave; You need a:" 853.  
Sheldon; 510.  
Shirt-waists; making: 252.  
Shock; First: 147, 153, 248. First: Dream of the: 62, 155. First: psycho-physical; 248. First: not remembered by R. D.; 155. in later stages worse than in earlier stages; 1135. Second: physical; 248. Third: 73. Third: physical; 248.  
    *See Physical Causes.*  
Shocks; 127. R. D. banished by: 755, 807, 818, 891. S. M. warns against: 854.  
Shoes; M. tears off latches of R. D.'s: 972.  
Shopping; M.: 517, 590.  
Shouting; S. D.: in imitation of Trixie; 215. brings M. out: 212.  
Shouts; M.: at Mrs. Prince; 945.  
Shrewdness of M.; 719, 963.  
    *See Cajolery, Cleverness, Policy.*  
Shrinks from Dr. Prince; S. D.: 479.  
Shy; M. becomes: 88, 535.  
Shyness of S. D.; 469, 479.  
Siamese twins; 171.  
Sick; when R. D. is: M. is nearer surface; 1009. M. makes S. D. feel: 363.

## Sick Doris;

A.; 128.  
Abdominal distension; 237.  
Absence of six days; 419.  
Abstract thoughts puzzle: 40, 71.  
Abstraction; Sidis method of inducing: 340.

## Sick Doris, Auditory hyperæsthesia

Acquaintances of: not recognized by R. D.; 593.  
Ada; 538.  
Adelaide (Hamilton); 340. seen by televoyance; 335, 336, 337, 738.  
Adoption repugnant to: 454, 495, 503.  
Advice on the case; 473.  
Affection; Lacking in: 38, 39, 69, 71, 238.  
Afraid to cross bridge; 388.  
Age of M.; 420.  
Alarm-clock; 451, 479.  
Alcohol; Cured M. of fondness for: 756.  
Alma; 432.  
Altar-cloth; 294, 296.  
Alternation of M. with S. D.; 77, 217, 219, 299, 309, 575. of R. D. with S. D.; 256.  
Amnesia; 225, 229, 472.  
Anæsthesia; 214, 215, 312, 420, 427, 452, 482, 496, 497. Auditory: 434. Cuts and bruises; 124. deepened during "dissolution"; 41, 82. External: 237. Gustatory: 481. on left; 423. Muscular: 468. Partial: 123, 235. Tactile: 124, 434, 468, 481. Tests for: 480. Thermal: 41. Urino-genital tract; 123, 124.  
Analgesia as to internal organs; 124.  
Anger not comprehended by: 215.  
Ankle; Operation on: 253.  
Ankle; Tuberculosis in: 145, 253.  
Apathetic; 495.  
Apparition of Mrs. Fischer; 244.  
Appearance; First: 39, 68, 209. Last: 93, 626. Prevent: Dr. Prince watches to: 455. Transitory: 438.  
Appetite deficient; 38, 41, 526.  
Arms around neck; 518.  
Artist; Imagined herself to be an: 74.  
Asleep; Hiding things when: 297.  
Asleep; Walked on street when: 357, 364, 365, 371, 385.  
Attachment; Dog-like: 39.  
Attention very limited; 551, 556.  
Attention; Pressure absorbed: 551.  
Auditory hyperæsthesia; 342.



## Sick Doris, Automatic

Automatic: fabrication; 40, 260.  
falsehood; 148. walking; 277.  
work; 526.  
Automatism; Banished by an:  
429.  
Auto-suggestion; Pains the re-  
sult of: 260.  
"Away" when another person-  
ality is out; 551.  
b.; See *Sick Doris*, b.  
B.; Signed herself: 736.  
Baby; Giggled and gurgled like  
a: 555.  
Backache; 633.  
Banish; Difficult to: 501.  
Banished: easily: 493, 510. by  
placing hand over eyes; 500.  
by M-formula; 455, 493. after  
siege of five minutes; 474. by  
slapping cheek; 479, 482. by  
slapping of own hand by Dr.  
Prince; 517.  
Baptized; 280.  
Battle with: 84.  
Bed; Purchase of: 231.  
Belongings; Disclaims her: 470.  
Better when M. talks; 361.  
Better; Thinks she is getting;  
347.  
Bible; 461.  
Book of pictures; Blank: 77.  
Booker; Mr.: 484, 485.  
Borrows money from Mrs. M.;  
216.  
Brain; "Occupied a lot of space"  
in the: 741.  
Bridge; High Street: Afraid to  
cross: 388.  
Bridget; 240, 419.  
Bruises; Anæsthetic to: 124.  
Canaries and sparrow; 537.  
Cancer; Imaginary: 262.  
Car-fare; Fund for: 480.  
Care of: Wants someone to take:  
458.  
Catalepsy; 311, 334, 342, 345.  
while sewing; 72, 82, 234.  
Cataleptic slumber; 223.  
Cemetery; Walks to: 896.  
Characteristics of: 39.  
Cheated; Easily: 230.  
Cheek slapped by Dr. Prince:  
479.  
Chest; Pressure on: produced  
deafness: 92.  
Childish; Becomes more: 85.  
Childishness of: 40.

## Sick Doris, Dazed

Childlike; 469, 479.  
Choke; M. attempted to: S. D.;  
77, 313. M. threatened to: S.  
D.; 309.  
Church; Comes out in: 465, 482,  
519. Goes to: 74. Leaves  
Methodist: 256.  
Cigar; Grasps lighted end of:  
546.  
Clairvoyance; 58.  
Classifying tendency of: 70.  
Cleaning rooms: 474.  
Cleaveland; Rev. W. M.: 433.  
Clothes; Says D.'s: are not hers;  
506.  
Clothing; Gives away: expecting  
death: 282.  
Co-conscious: Ceases to be: when  
R. D. is out; 408. with R. D.  
only: 48.  
Coffee; 214.  
Cold; M. made S. D. feel: 312.  
Comes at call of M.; 296.  
Comes only when M. lets go; 554.  
Coming of: 26, 209, 210, 211, 408.  
Comparisons; Could not make:  
224.  
Complex; A psychic: 407.  
Condition; Dr. Prince impresses  
her: on S. D.; 503.  
Confirmation; 281.  
Conscious: Not: of what M.  
does when M. is out; 385.  
Not: when in: 317, 372, 385,  
393. Not: of M.; 408. only  
of Dr. Prince; Becomes: 546.  
Consciousness; Double: 546.  
"Surface": 218.  
Constipation: 430. diminished:  
468.  
Contusion on back of head; 538.  
Convent; 294.  
Conversations with M.; 49, 250,  
300, 420. ceased; 80, 395.  
Cruelty of Mr. Fischer; 274, 298.  
of Mr. Fischer denied by: 470.  
to S. D.; Dr. Prince's health  
undermined by necessity of:  
472.  
Curiosity; Morbid: 238.  
Curled up on left side; 371, 518.  
Cuts; Anæsthetic to: 124.  
Dance; Refuses to: after bap-  
tism; 281.  
Dances; 281.  
Dazed; 495.



## Sick Doris, Deafness

Deafness; Pressure on chest produced: 92.  
 Dear; Thinks her name is: 534.  
 Dear; Calls Dr. Prince: 502.  
 Dears; Called eyes: 536, 556.  
 Death: not comprehended by: 224. of Mrs. Fischer caused appearance of: 39. Speaks of her approaching: 288.  
 Deception; M. explains: 271.  
 Decline of: 82, 490, 532. caused fatigue: 88.  
 Defence never made by: 40.  
 Delusion; Hysterical: 74.  
 Delusions: made known to R. D.; 80. vanished: 78.  
 Description of: 33.  
 Desire causes hysterical delusions: 263.  
 Desk; Purchase of: for R. D.; 232.  
 Development of: 70.  
 Differences between M. and: 412.  
 Difficult to banish: 501.  
 Disappearance of: 124.  
 Disappears for a time; 396.  
 Displacement; Internal seismic: 46.  
 Disturbances: Emotional: caused by "obliteration" of: 46.  
 Docile; 507.  
 Doctor's bill; Refuses to pay: 230.  
 Doll to M.; Gave: 242.  
 Doll to talk; Wants: 556.  
 Dominant for nearly five years: 127.  
 Doris; Says she is: 488.  
 Double consciousness; 546.  
 Dream; Pictures of: 260.  
 Dresses over her nightgown; 218.  
 Dress-making; 278.  
 Drinks; No longer: 565.  
 "Dry!"; 87, 565.  
 Duty; Slave to narrow conceptions of: 39, 71, 249.  
 Earnings of: given by M. to Trixie; 231.  
 Eat; Did not know how to: 69.  
 Eat; M. says S. D. might: "for our sakes"; 440.  
 Eats; No longer: 565.  
 Education of: 70.  
 Ella; 281.  
 Embarrassed at holding reception in bed; 508.

## Sick Doris, Fischer

Embroidery: 40, 72, 234, 300, 446, 892.  
 Emotional disturbances; 237.  
 Emotional disturbances caused by obliteration of: 46.  
 Emotions of R. D. felt by: 409.  
 Employers; Submission to: 238.  
 Encounters with: not known to M. or R. D.; 477.  
 Entreaty; 488.  
 Etchings claimed as her own work; 261.  
 Evasive; 469.  
 Expenses; Household: 252.  
 Experiences of S. D. told by M.; 216.  
 Expression of: 39.  
 Expressions: Uses: that she criticised in M.; 480.  
 External sensation dull; 491.  
 "Extinguished" June, 1911; 41.  
 Eye-strain; 408.  
 Eyes; Enjoys having Dr. Prince blow in her: 551. Called: dears; 536, 556. Sees Dr. Prince's: mostly; 534. Sees Dr. Prince's: and mouth only; 561. Sensation becomes limited to: 536.  
 Fabrication; Automatic: 40, 259.  
 Hysterical: 40, 259.  
 Face only belongs to her; Thinks: 537.  
 Fall; M. made S. D.: 294, 303.  
 Falsehood; Automatic: 148.  
 Fate-driven; 249.  
 Fear causes hysterical delusions; 263.  
 Fears of S. D.: affect R. D.; 535. passed on to R. D.; 607.  
 Feelings of: 214.  
 Fell in bath-room; 538, 539.  
 "Felt that all right; S.:" 467.  
 Fictions; 258.  
 Figurative language puzzles: 40.  
 Finger; Gnaws: 479.  
 Fire; Could build: 1079.  
 Fire; Set on: by M.; 303.  
 Fischer; Mr.: browbeating S. D.; 251. Cruelty of: 274, 298. Cruelty of: denied by S. D.; 470. Dreams of: 298. Fear of: 408. Worrying about: 374.  
 Fischer; Mrs.: Apparition of: 244. Body of: Tries to make: stand; 215. Death of: caused appearance of S. D.; 39.



## Sick Doris, Foods

Foods; Taste in: 41.  
 "Fragment" of psychical entity; 258.  
 Friendship; Dog-like: 39.  
 Fright; 488. aided in banishing; 472.  
 Frightened by blowing curtain; 529. by noises; 542, 551. by parrot; 471. by Dr. Prince; 85.  
 Funeral of Mrs. Fischer; 220.  
 Game; Favorite: 543. New: 554.  
 Gifts; Loved to make: 39.  
 Giggled; 555.  
 "Go; Make it;" 537, 556.  
 Go before M.; S. D. will: 490.  
 Go; Told by Dr. Prince that M. would have to: 331, 355.  
 Go; Meaning of: 567.  
 Grammar; Bad: 586.  
 Granted; Takes everything for: 483.  
 Grapes; 268.  
 Grief; Without feeling of: 69.  
 Grievances; Cries over: 290.  
 Gurgled; 555.  
 Habit of coming out at certain hours: 514.  
 Hemorrhoids; 430.  
 Hair torn out by M.; 72, 235.  
 Hallowe'en parade; 238.  
 Hallucination; Tuberculosis: 74, 315, 316, 317. Visual: 244.  
 Hamilton; Adelaide: 340. seen by televoyance; 335, 336, 337.  
 Hands tightly clenched; 426, 438, 518, 548, 570.  
 Hated by M.; 26, 32, 72.  
 Head; Contusion on back of: 538.  
 Head erect without support; Can no longer hold: 552.  
 Headache; 551.  
 Health; Presence of: bad for: 465.  
 Hear M.; Can no longer: 395, 397.  
 Hiding things when asleep; 297.  
 Hip; Pain in: 41, 300, 317, 325.  
 Hip; "Tuberculous": 77, 259, 329, 924.  
 "Hit"; 542, 546, 556.  
 Hit; Dr. Prince tells: why he must: her; 503.  
 "Home": is closed; Cannot believe that her old: 504. Thinks she must go: 432, 436, 457, 497.  
 "We don't want to go:" 501.

## Sick Doris, Left Side

Housework at rectory; 280.  
 Humor; Sense of: lacking; 39, 71.  
 Hungry; Never: 215.  
 Hurt by M.; 329.  
 Hurt; Thinks only of being afraid of being: 534.  
 Hyperæsthesia; Auditory: 342.  
 "Hypnoidization" experiments; 340.  
 Hypnotism; Afraid of: 456.  
 Hysteria symptoms; 259.  
 Hysterical; delusion; 74. fabrication; 40.  
 Ideas; Fixed: 495. Fixed: and mental imagery; 483. Three remaining: 526.  
 Identity; Attempts to hide her: 479.  
 Ignorance of: 430.  
 Imagery; Mental: Fixed ideas and: 483.  
 Imaginary tuberculosis; 74.  
 Imitates others; 214, 215, 219.  
 In; Not conscious when: 317, 372, 385, 393.  
 Individual personality of: 239.  
 Infancy; mental: Returned to: 41.  
 Infant; Like an: at first; 39. personality; 68.  
 Infantile; Becomes: 536, 559.  
 Influence on M.; 79.  
 Initiative; Mental: 563.  
 "Insane": Repeats word: in sleep; 538.  
 Instructed by M.; 229.  
 Intercognitive powers of M. and S. D.; 51.  
 Internal; organs; Analgesia as to: 124. Sensation chiefly: 491. sensation dulled; 491.  
 Jewelry from mythical father; 283.  
 Journey; last: 449.  
 Kidneys; Fond of: 863.  
 Knowledge; Without: at first; 69.  
 Lace-making; 294.  
 Lamp; Broke: and tried to get M. to tell Mrs. Prince; 1157.  
 Language not intelligible to: 70, 216.  
 Last appearance of: 93, 626.  
 Laying S. D. down; M. wakened by: 488.  
 Left side; Lay curled up on: 371.



## Sick Doris, Legs

Legs feel like stumps; 420.  
 Life saved by S. M.; 77, 95, 308.  
 Limbs; Little power over: 532.  
 List of articles bought for: 454.  
 Live; Decides she has not long to: 282.  
 Locked in; 482.  
 Locked out by Mr. Fischer; 251.  
 Luella; 409.  
 M.; Mrs.: 229. Borrows money from: 216.  
 McPherson; 331.  
 Mammæ: Pressure on: inhibits sound; 551.  
 Margaret;  
   Act like S. D.; Trying to: 384.  
   Age of: 420.  
   Amusement at: 424.  
   M. not always conscious of what S. D. does; 440.  
   S. D. not conscious of M.; 408.  
   Consult S. D.; M. wishes she could: 528.  
   Contempt for: 424.  
   M.'s contempt for S. D.; 456.  
   Contrast between M. and S. D.; 33.  
   Conversations between M. and S. D.; 49.  
   Conversations between M. and S. D. ceased; 80.  
   Destruction of property by M.; 291.  
   Differences between S. D. and: 412, 526.  
   Disturbed by M.; 33.  
   Dr. Prince told S. D. that M. would have to go; 331, 355.  
   Hair of S. D. torn out by M.; 72.  
   S. D. hated by M.; 26, 32, 72.  
   M. helps S. D. to find things; 229.  
   Influence of S. D. on M.; 79.  
   Know who: is; S. D. does not: 507.  
   M. jealous of S. D.; 283.  
   Nails of S. D. torn out by M.; 72.  
   Notes between S. D. and M.; 49.  
   M. pitying: 298.  
   M. punished S. D. for disobedience; 76.  
   M. tells S. D. how to keep R. D. out; 227.

## Sick Doris, Money

S. D. no longer responds to M.; 80.  
 Revenge of M. on S. D.; 235.  
 S. D. scratched by M.; 64, 72, 77.  
 S. D. taught by M.; 70.  
 S. D. teased by M. about being the first to go; 331.  
 Thoughts of S. D. known to M.; 49.  
 M. tormenting S. D.; 307.  
 Voice of M. heard by S. D.; 311.  
 M. opposing will of S. D.; 341.  
 M. made to work by S. D.; 72, 234, 294.  
 M. works faster than S. D.; 294.  
 Manner changed; 82.  
 Manual operations; 40.  
 Melancholy; 237.  
 Memories: disappeared; 81, 85, 396, 432, 458, 468. disappeared and reappeared as those of R. D.; 41, 78, 80, 210, 213, 396, 403, 405. affect R. D.; 845, 896. coming to R. D. in dreams; 80. R. D. will get S. D.'s: 490. Some: did not reappear in R. D.; 407.  
 Memory; Loss of: 332, 426, 469, 481. of rectory; 480. of sternness of Dr. Prince gone; 467. Without: at first; 69.  
 Menses; 237.  
 Mental imagery; Fixed ideas and: 483.  
 Mental infancy; Returned to: 41, 556.  
 Mental initiative; 563.  
 Mentality of: 68, 69, 237. Abnormal: 215, 218, 224, 225, 230, 231. declining; 451, 533, 536, 555.  
 M-Formula; 133, 529. Banished by: 455, 493, 524. Dislike of: 443, 506.  
 Mind; Watched R. D.'s: 838, 839.  
 Mirror; Reflection in: 215.  
 Misunderstanding M.'s motions; 230.  
 "Mixed up with another girl"; 488.  
 Money; Borrows: from Mrs. M.; 216. Care of: 231. Difficulties in use of: 230. Saved for M. and R. D. by S. D.; 231.



## Sick Doris, Money

Spent for: Pathetic account of: 455.  
 Moods of M. affect S. D.; 559.  
 Moods puzzled Dr. Prince; 264.  
 Morphine only stimulates: 253.  
 Mouth: Calls her: a nose; 537.  
 Mouth and eyes of Dr. Prince; S. D. sees only: 561.  
 Movements caused by M.; 537.  
 Muscles; Control of: 334.  
 Nails torn out by M.; 72, 235.  
 Name; Did not know her own: 216, 495, 503.  
 Neck; Sleeping with arms around: 437, 438, 439.  
 Neck and spine; Sensation keen in: 123.  
 Needle-work; Excelled the others in: 278.  
 Nervous; 39.  
 Nettie W.; Remembers: 479.  
 Night; Sits up all: 218.  
 Night; Worked at: 235, 252.  
 "No"; 536.  
 "Noise, noise"; 87, 331, 560, 611.  
 Noises; Frightened by: 542, 551.  
 Nose; Calls mouth a: 537.  
 Notes exchanged with M.; 49, 230, 250, 528.  
 Notes from M. to: 229.  
 Nun; Thought of becoming a: 294.  
 "Obliteration" of S. D. caused emotional disturbances; 46.  
 Observation; Learns by: 226.  
 Obsessions of: stimulated by M.; 259.  
 Obstinate; 512, 527.  
 Offended; 456.  
 Osteopathic maltreatment; 78, 253, 310, 315, 317, 329.  
 Out while R. D. dreams underneath, and M. watches; 499.  
 Pain; Banished by: 557. Comes on account of: 456, 506. Feels: 554. in hip: 300, 317, 325. Suggestion cures: 331.  
 Pains; 319, 320, 556. in hip and internal organs; 41. the result of auto-suggestion; 260.  
 Paint; Thought she could: 260, 326.  
 Painting; 279, 1163. presented to Dr. Prince; 260.  
 Parrot; Frightened by: 471.  
 "Peach; You are not a:" 350.

## Sick Doris, Raps

Peculiarities; 210.  
 Periods: Monthly: indicated by pain, lassitude, and psychic disturbances: 417.  
 Personalities; Order of the: 490.  
 Perspiration; 432.  
 Perturbation increased somnambulism; 79.  
 Photographs; 239, 591.  
 Picture of Dr. Prince; 357, 360.  
 Pictures; Blank book of: 77.  
 Coloring: 255, 433, 442. of dream; 260.  
 Pities herself; 285.  
 Prayer-book; 461.  
 Presence of S. D. during sleep; Indications of: 82.  
 Presents; loved to make: 39, 238, 281.  
 Pressure absorbed attention of: 551.  
 Prince; Dr.:  
 S. D. afraid of: 75.  
 forgotten by S. D.; 85, 475, 481, 505.  
 a funny man; 495.  
 Identity of: 496.  
 M. makes it hard for S. D. to go to see: 349, 350, 351.  
 Names applied by S. D. to: 541.  
 a little "off"; 485.  
 Picture of: 357, 360.  
 investments; S. D. recognizes: 502, 508.  
 Prince; Doris: Objects to being called: 469.  
 Prince; Mrs.: Afraid of: 532.  
 Finds herself in bed with: 514.  
 in blue suit; S. D. recognizes: 508. Fascinated by: 74. Fear of: overcome; 538.  
*Problems in Philosophy*; 270.  
 Pronouns; 488.  
 Protest never made by: 40.  
 Psychical activities limited by: 234.  
 Pulse; 427, 428, 429, 437, 438. at 54; 308, 570, generally 56 or below; 282.  
 Punished by M. for disobedience; 76.  
 Puzzled: by the abstract and figurative; 40. in reading; 238. by mention of another room; 504.  
 Questions; Cannot answer: 479.  
 Raps; 320.



## Sick Doris, Ratbun

Ratbun; "Doctor": 253, 271.  
 Read; Loses ability to: 526.  
 Reading to Dr. Prince; 267.  
 Reading; Puzzled in: 238.  
 Real Doris: come; Dr. Prince  
 compels S. D. to let: 468, 472.  
 "one person" with S. D.; 441.  
 Thought Dr. Prince might not  
 like: 332.  
 "Who is the R. D?"; 485.  
 Reassured by Dr. Prince; 504.  
 Recognizes Dr. Prince; 502.  
 S. D. co-conscious with: 48.  
 The term: 420.  
 Worried lest Dr. Prince should  
 not like: 363.  
 Record of things not understood;  
 273.  
 Rectory; Sleeping at the: 265,  
 327. Visits to the: 256.  
 Reflection in mirror; 215.  
 Relations; Terror at thought of:  
 411.  
 Religious; 40.  
 Replies when M. is called; 532.  
 Report treatment of Dr. Prince  
 to himself; Threatens to: 475.  
 Reserved; 39.  
 Restless night; 498.  
 Reticent; 210, 226.  
 Retrogression; 480.  
 Ring: Gives to: Mrs. Prince;  
 282.  
 Sanitarium; Dr. Prince threatens  
 to send: to: 466.  
 Savings stolen by Mr. Fischer;  
 231.  
 Scalding; 437.  
 Scar on arm; 480.  
 Schroeder; Paul: 420, 424.  
 Scratched: herself to bring R. D.  
 out; 420. by M.; 64, 72, 77,  
 235, 281, 306, 320.  
 Scrubbing window-frames; 511.  
 Seasons: Change of: not known  
 to S. D.; 225.  
 Secret; Wished Dr. Prince to  
 discover: 274.  
 See: Cannot: on account of  
 pain; 556.  
 Sensation: Areas of: reduced;  
 540. becomes limited to eyes;  
 536, 541. chiefly internal; 491.  
 Tactile: subnormal; 123.  
 Sensory impressions: of: known  
 by M.; 35. of R. D. known  
 by S. D.; 35.

## Sick Doris, Sleeping

Sent away; M. hints how S. D.  
 may be: 378.  
 Separated from R. D.; Was: 573.  
 Severe treatment necessary to  
 send S. D. away; 527.  
 Sew; Promises not to: and  
 breaks promise; 460.  
 Sewing; 72, 202, 234. Catalepsy  
 during: 72, 82, 234. Effects  
 of: 445, 448, 453. machine;  
 Purchase of: 231. Mrs. Prince  
 prevents S. D. from: 460. S.  
 D. brought back by: 407.  
 Sex-instinct lacking; 343.  
 Shaken by Dr. Prince; 471, 475,  
 497.  
 Shaking does not hurt R. D.;  
 470.  
 Shirt-waists; Making: 252.  
 Shouts in imitation of Trixie;  
 215.  
 Shrinks from Dr. Prince; 479.  
 Shy; 469, 479.  
 Sick; M. makes S. D. feel: 363.  
 Sick; "we are not": 496.  
 Sick Doris, b interval; S. D. had  
 no recollections of: 460.  
 Sidis method of inducing ab-  
 straction; 340.  
 Silent; 479.  
 Simulation; 259.  
 Singing pleased: 540.  
 Singing; Thinks she is: when Dr.  
 Prince sings; 540.  
 Sit up; Can no longer: without  
 help; 551.  
 Sketches; Pen: 314, 315.  
 Skin peels off twice a year; 350.  
 Slapped: Fear of being: 488.  
 Memories of being: 548. Dr.  
 Prince: cheek of: 479, 482.  
 Dr. Prince explained why he:  
 503. Dr. Prince: his own  
 hands; 501, 517.  
 Sleep; Acts performed in: Tells  
 of: 274. Attitude during: 986.  
 Cataleptic: 223. assists in  
 cure; 267. Curled up during:  
 445, 446. Flops on left side  
 during: 468. improved; 78.  
 Lack of: Condition showed:  
 479. Put to: by suggestion;  
 530. Refuses to: while Dr.  
 Prince is present; 471. Sug-  
 gestion fails to put: to: 531.  
 Talking in: 265.  
 Sleeping: out of bed; 250. in-



## Sick Doris, Sleeping Margaret

jurious to D.; 82, 85, 472. on left side; 438. prevented: 495.  
 Sleeping Margaret saves life of: 77, 95, 308.  
 Sleeping Real Doris; S. D. a damper to: 248.  
 Sleeps: under compulsion; 472. while walking on street; 267.  
 Smack: M. advises Dr. Prince to: 477.  
 Smell: dull; 41. nearly gone; 440, 445. Tests of: 440, 445.  
 Smells fish after having lost sense of smell; 467.  
 Smoke; Interest in cigar: 538.  
 Sneezing; 883.  
 Snuggling; 542.  
 "So"; 536.  
 Somnambulism; 266, 304. Alteration during: 364, 365. increased by perturbation 79.  
 Sorrow; Without sense of: 224.  
 Sounds imitated by: 70.  
 Spank: Dr. Prince threatens to: 496.  
 Spanked; 496, 522.  
 Sparrow; Canaries and: 537.  
 Spatial relations: Sense of: lost; 555.  
 Speaks automatically; 216.  
 Spine; Sensation keen in: 123.  
 "Split off" from R. D.; 1102.  
 Staring spells; 348, 351, 358, 364, 365, 378.  
 Street; Asleep on: 364, 365, 371, 385.  
 Street; Forgets: on which old home was; 467.  
 Stupid; 527.  
 Submerged experiences; 340.  
 Subnormal; Tactile sensation: 41, 123.  
 Suggestion; 78. fails to put: to sleep; 531. Pain cured by: 331. Put to sleep by: 530.  
 Sulky; 482.  
 Sunday School; 256.  
 "Surface consciousness" of R. D.; 218.  
 Surprise: Shows no: when shaken; 497.  
 Table; Stopped eating at: 272.  
 Tactile anæsthesia; 124. sensations subnormal; 41, 123.  
 Taffy; Giving; 489.  
 Talking in sleep; 265.  
 Taste: disappears; 124. dull; 41.

## Sick Doris, Wakened

nearly gone; 440, 445. No sense of: at first; 237. Tests of: 440, 445.  
 Taught by M.; 70, 219.  
 Teased by M.; 331, 332, 354.  
 Telephone bell brought S. D. out; 479.  
 Televoyance; 335, 336, 337.  
 Terror at thought of relations; 411.  
 Testing Dr. Prince; 272.  
 Thermal anæsthesia; 41.  
 Thermanæsthesia; 415, 437. except in mouth; 124.  
 Thirst; No sensation of: 215.  
 Thought-reading; A barrier in the way of: 839.  
 Thoughts: literal and concrete; 40. M. knew: of S. D.; 49. of R. D. known by: 423. thin and shadowy; 532.  
 Threw away things; 225.  
 Tonsillitis; 145.  
 Tortured by M.; 236.  
 Trembling; 553.  
 Trixie; 70, 252. Body of: 215. Death of: 252. Imitates: 215. Slaved for: 252. Tuberculosis from: 253.  
 Tuberculosis: in ankle; 145, 253. Imaginary; 74, 315, 316, 317. from Trixie; 253.  
 "Tuberculous" hip; 77, 259, 329, 924.  
 Understand: Cannot: what Dr. Prince says unless she sees him; 539.  
 Understood more than she admitted; 296.  
 Urino-genital tract anæsthetic; 124.  
 Vanity; Twitted for: 239.  
 Vestments; Dr. Prince's "brother's"; 511. Recognized Dr. Prince when in: 502, 508.  
 Vision narrowed and shortened; 41, 87, 124, 539, 556, 562, 611.  
 Visiting the sick; 281.  
 Vital forces at low ebb; 282.  
 Vocabulary; 536, 544, 545, 552, 553.  
 Voice of: 39. of M. heard by: 311, 325. becomes weaker; 532.  
 Voices; 320.  
 Wake; Difficult to: 298, 511.  
 Wakened: by blowing on eyelids; 518. by suggestion; 322.



## Sick Doris, Walking

Waking: M.; S. D.; 342.  
 Waking process; 266.  
 Walked on street when asleep; 364, 365.  
 Walker; Dr.; 409, 453.  
 Walking; Automatic; 277.  
 Walks; Long; 274.  
 Warned by M.; 442.  
 Washing; 390.  
 Watched: R. D.'s mind; 838, 839. when R. D. was out; 838.  
 "Watching us; That man is always;" 504.  
 "Waz zat?"; 87, 592.  
 Weakens; Psychic power; 514.  
 Weaker; S. M. says S. D. will become; 486.  
 Weariness; No sensation of; 215.  
 "Where is Mamma?": Made to say; by suggestion; 330.  
 Whistling disliked by; 560.  
 Will gone; 86, 529.  
 "Will" of; 84, 704, 735.  
 Window: Raises: in night; 494.  
 Window-frames; Scrubs; 511.  
 Wondered; Never; 237.  
 Words: Familiar: no longer understood; 551.  
 Work: automatically continued by; 526. destroyed by M.; 236. Thinks she should go to; 437, 482, 497. Never initiates; 526. M. made to: by S. D.; 72, 234, 294, 346, 445. at night; M. told S. D. to; 72. Rapidity of: increased the longer she worked; 296. Need not watch: when M. was doing it; 297.  
 Worked day and night; 235, 252.  
 Works: M.; faster than S. D.; 294.  
 Worrying about Mr. Fischer; 374.  
 Wrists; R. D. brought out by grasping; 429, 438.  
 Write; Learning to; 228.  
**Sick Doris a**; 244. Meaning of; 128.  
**Sick Doris b**; 128, 457.  
 Adoption; Objection to; 459.  
 Anæsthesia; Gustatory; 459.  
 Anæsthesia; Tactile; 459.  
 Answers questions consistently; 458.  
 Appearance of; 83.  
 Belongings; Surprised to find her; 459.

## Skidoo

Birds are different; Discovers that the; 458.  
 Bridget; 459.  
 Coming not a coincidence; 460.  
 Daughter; Willing to be servant but not; 459.  
 Dick; 458.  
 M.; Does not know; 458.  
 M.'s help; Remembers: five years before; 459.  
 Meaning of; 128.  
 Medical treatment; Denies having taken; 460.  
 Memories going; 458.  
 Memories of; 458, 459.  
 Memories stop; 458.  
 Mother; Never had a; 459.  
 Old: Too: to be adopted; 459.  
 Prince; Dr.; Does not believe she is living with; 458.  
 Questions consistently answered by; 458.  
 R. D.; A "part" of; 459.  
 Servant but not daughter; Willing to be; 459.  
 Sporty; 458.  
 Side-dreams; 585.  
 Side-swiping; 738.  
 Sidis; Boris; Abstraction: Method of inducing; 340. *Multiple Personality*; 26, 30. Subconscious recognition of pricking; 118.  
 Signal; S. M. goes away at; 1173.  
 Signals between S. M. and Dr. Prince; 42, 103, 850, 1175, 1181, 1197.  
 Silence of S. D.; 479.  
 Silver buried in cellar; 282.  
 Similar cases; 1144.  
 Simulation; S. D.; 259.  
 Sing; M. wants Dr. Prince to; 910.  
 Singing; M.; 107, 204, 675, 1086, 1087, 1113. M. ceases from; 935. M. dislikes; 477, 1118, 1151. M.: on the stairs; 184. R. D.; 413, 450. R. D. banished by: of Dr. Prince; 989. R. D. comes out at; 477. S. D. pleased by; 540. S. D. thought she was: when Dr. Prince sang; 540.  
 Sister; R. D. dreams about her; 417.  
 Sister-in-law; 696.  
 Sit up without help; S. D. can no longer; 551.  
 Skeleton of learned dogmatism; 56.  
 Sketches; Pen; 314, 315.  
 Skidoo; 494, 897.



## Skin

Skin of S. D. peels off twice a year; 350.  
Skirt torn up; 877. R. D. forgets; 887.  
Slang; 37, 164, 165, 558.  
See *Language*.  
Slapped: M.: by Dr. Prince; 596, 941. memories of being: S. D.'s: 548. R. D.: by M.; 181. R. D.: by Dr. Prince; 511. S. D.: by Dr. Prince; 479, 482.  
Slaps own hands; Dr. Prince: 501. and banishes S. D.; 517.  
Sleep;  
Acts performed during: 274, 879.  
Arms stretched out during: 669.  
Automatisms during: 603, 616.  
Away from bed; 250.  
Candy during: Eating: 763.  
Cataleptic: 223.  
Clock: Counting strokes of: during sleep; 731.  
Comatose; 501.  
Cure assisted by: 267.  
Curled up during: S. D.: 445, 446.  
Disastrous: Tendency to: 85.  
Disturbed: 965, 1040.  
Drinks in; M.: 516.  
Emotion of M. rectified by: 1033.  
Grasping Dr. Prince during: 501.  
Improved; 78, 1232.  
Itching: Back: during: 915.  
Lack of: 175, 489.  
Lack of: Condition of S. D. shows: 479.  
Lapses into: M.'s sudden: 1035.  
Light: Sudden: causes: 933.  
Loss of: brings M. out; 1154.  
Lower strata of: 742.  
M. asking questions in: 541.  
M. suddenly went to: while standing; 850.  
Movements during: 284.  
Normal: restored; 145.  
Normal: almost unknown; 32.  
Phenomena during: 246.  
Problems in: R. D. solves: 1037.  
Progress during: 405, 415.  
R. D.: attitude of: during: 986.  
R. D. disturbed less in: 906.  
R. D. flops on right side during: 468, 1248.  
R. D.: Impressions more easily made on: during sleep; 498.  
R. D.: Peculiarities of sleep of: 1050.

## Sleeping Margaret, Advice

R. D. recognizes Dr. and Mrs. Prince in sleep; 534.  
R. D. tired by long: 782.  
R. D. tossing, turning, and babbling during: 729.  
Scrubbing movement during: 511.  
S. D.: Attitude of: during: 986.  
S. D. curled up during: 445, 446.  
S. D. flops on left side during: 468.  
S. D. refuses to: while Dr. Prince is present; 471.  
S. M. spoke to R. D. during: 875.  
S. R. D. appeared only during: 45.  
Strata of: Lower: 742.  
Suggestion during sleep; 608, 909, 940, 986, 1104, 1180, 1194.  
Suggestion fails to send S. D. to sleep; 531.  
Suggestion; Sent to sleep by: 365, 414, 430, 432, 434, 450, 476, 530, 564, 655, 688, 761, 796, 802, 881, 887, 999, 1205.  
Suggestion cured troubled: 114.  
Table; M. goes to sleep at: 587.  
Talking in: 265, 494.  
Troubled: M. has: 486, 493, 518, 525, 587.  
Words and actions during: Memory of: 742.  
See *Consciousness*.  
Sleeping; 130, 699. Away and; 130, 547. on back; M.: 701, 702. berth; R. D. frightened in: 960. in daytime; M.: 493. In and; 130, 547. on left side; S. D.: 438. in own personality increased expenditure of energy; 81. R. D.: all night; 411, 981. R. D.: for first time in 19 years; 405, 429. of S. D. injurious to D.; 82, 85, 472. in study; 286.  
**Sleeping Margaret;** 127, 1059, 1060, 1094.  
Absence of: distressed R. D.; 90.  
Active; Becomes: 67.  
Advice on the case: 27, 43, 67, 88, 89, 96, 308, 348, 377, 389, 470, 476, 506, 518, 523, 528, 535, 559, 602, 606, 609, 610, 613, 615, 623, 624, 628, 629, 634, 641, 643, 647, 653, 654, 655, 656, 658, 662, 680, 681, 682, 683, 685, 688, 691, 692, 701, 706, 707, 726, 734, 749, 770, 785, 805, 831, 833, 836, 857, 860, 864, 869, 880, 887, 891, 906, 914, 923, 929, 942, 948, 951, 960, 961, 962, 965, 971, 1027, 1068, 1072, 1085,



## Sleeping Margaret, Advice

1115, 1119, 1134, 1135, 1137, 1151, 1179, 1183, 1231, 1234, 1245, 1267.  
 Affairs; Attending to own: 44, 1127, 1134, 1144, 1262.  
 Age of: 43.  
 Alternates with M-asleep, x; 463.  
 Alternations; Comings of: are not: 1254.  
 Alternations; Differences in: 511.  
 Alternations; Frequent: explained by: 991.  
 Amused by M.; 557.  
 Amused by ideas of Dr. Prince; 335.  
 Anæsthesia in back and thigh; 125.  
 Analytical and philosophical: 44.  
 Angry with Dr. Prince; 1092.  
 "Antipodes" of M.; 464, 557.  
 Apparition of Mrs. Fischer; 1190.  
 Appearance; First: 61, 152.  
 Appears only when R. D. sleeps; 27.  
 Arithmetic; Mental: 1200.  
 Asleep; Never: 490.  
 Assistance of: 89.  
   *See Advice.*  
 Automatic speaking; 43.  
 Automatic writing; comments on: 1271.  
 Automatic writing called nonsense by: 1307, 1308.  
 Automatic writing; Talks while M. does: 1270.  
 Away; 648, 692, 975. Conscious of R. D. when: 1167. Conscious of R. D.'s surroundings when: 1252. Begins to go: when R. D. is out; 640. generally, after departure of M.; 90. when M. is asleep and Dr. Prince is watching; 551, 598, 1034. when M. is awake; 1040. M. sleeps soundly when S. M. is: and R. D. can come without waking her: 515. Meaning of: 606, 692, 699. often; 1241. only when R. D. was out; 1130. only when R. D. was safe; 89, 1030. Dr. Prince thought M.'s sound sleep sent S. M.: 1093. Says R. D. and S. D. are always away when another personality is out; 551. at signal; Goes: 1173. thirty minutes; 888. watching; 699. for a week; Hoped to be: 1248. Went: because of Dr. Prince's anger; 1092.  
 Back; Anæsthesia in: 125.

## Sleeping Margaret, Criticise R. D.

*Becky*; 996.  
 Bicycle; Warning *re*: 1257.  
 Blow on M.'s forehead; 90, 623.  
 Blow on left side of M.'s head; 810.  
 Body; Does not regard the: as hers; 793.  
 Bored; 855.  
 "Bosh!"; 335.  
 Brain; Mental working of the: seen by: 741. "Part of the": 768. R. D.'s: Explains condition of: 936. "Seats of personalities" in the: 90, 721, 740, 741. Thoughts registered on: 793.  
 Brashear; Dr.: 926.  
 Brashear; Dr.: Letter to: 112.  
 California; Advice *re* journey to: 948.  
 Calls R. D. in night; 1263, 1264.  
 Cared for R. D.; 67, 73, 91, 158, 490, 830, 1020, 1131, 1140, 1209, 1252.  
 Catamenia; Says M. must be expected at time of: 836.  
 "Chicken business; Postpone the:": 1329.  
 Co-consciousness; 876, 882.  
 Coffee; Advice *re*: 1231.  
 Colorado Avenue; Goes to home on: 1064. *See* 376.  
 Come: Can: at will; 1051.  
 Comes every evening; 121, 1252.  
 Coming of: 26, 1030, 1060.  
 Command; Takes: 308.  
 Comments on dream; 285.  
 Communicated before, when D. was in danger; 463.  
 Communications; First: 43, 463.  
 Communicative as an oyster; 1006.  
 Congratulates Dr. Prince; 528.  
 "Connected" with M.; 557.  
 Conscious; Always: 42.  
 Conscious of R. D. when away; 1167.  
 Conscious of R. D.'s surroundings when away; 1252, 1253.  
 Consciousness; Double: 516, 808.  
 Control of M.; Energy required for: 754.  
 Control; Motor: 807, 809, 1261, 1264.  
 Control; Motor: in waking state; 792.  
 Control of muscles when M. was out; 1238.  
 Criticise R. D.: S. M. may; but Dr. Prince may not; 990.



## Sleeping Margaret, Criticism

Criticism; 335.  
 Criticism of M.; 489.  
 Cue word; 1043.  
 Cure; Certain about: 964.  
 Daily visits of: 121, 1252.  
 Day; Comes during: 1268.  
 Deceives Dr. Prince; 1180.  
 Dependent on M. for force; 1064.  
 Described; First: 388.  
 "Detachedness"; Psychic: 784.  
 Detachment of: 584.  
 "Dibble"; 113.  
 Dictating while M. stroked and  
 smacked Dr. Prince: 738.  
 Die; Offers to make R. D.: 612.  
 Direction: Dr. Prince asks in what  
 she went away; 1095.  
 Directions for care of R. D.; 822,  
 998.  
 Directions to be followed after she  
 had gone; 787.  
 Disappear; Will: 464.  
 "Discovery" of: 463.  
 Discussion of the case; 363, 486,  
 506, 514, 515, 553, 571, 572, 585,  
 706, 766, 947, 972, 976, 985, 996,  
 1012, 1082, 1101, 1102, 1111, 1126,  
 1130, 1136, 1218, 1230, 1252.  
 Disgusted with M.; 811.  
 Disgusted with Dr. Prince; 1067.  
 Displeasure does not affect M. or  
 R. D.; 1031.  
 Distressed by record of S. D.'s de-  
 lusions; 611.  
 Doll; Suggests giving: to M.; 553.  
 Dolls; Refuses to be photographed  
 with: 867.  
 Double consciousness; 516, 808.  
 Doubts removed; 388.  
 Drama; Describes M.'s: 553.  
 Dream; Comments on: 285.  
 Dream; Relates R. D.'s: 505.  
 Dreams; Never: 787.  
 Dreams watched by: 1037.  
 Earth life; no memory of: 1265.  
 Ella should come to see R. D.; 806.  
 Emotional differences between the  
 personalities; 571.  
 Evasion; 464.  
 Existence of: made known to R.  
 D.; 1267.  
 Experiment stopped by: 813.  
 Experiments of Dr. Prince; Fear-  
 ful of results of: 79.  
 Explains the case; 363, 653, 676.  
 Expression of: 43, 993.  
 Eyes always closed; 42.

## Sleeping Margaret, Independence

Eyes of D.; Sees through: 600, 982.  
 Feeling; Independent: in finger-  
 tips; 125.  
 "Feeling underneath of R. D.;  
 The:" 527.  
 Feet; Signals with: 1175, 1181.  
 Fischer; Mrs.: Apparition of: 1190.  
 Foods; Taste in: 44, 1019.  
 Force; Dependent on M. for: 1064.  
 Force; Drew: from Dr. Prince;  
 1064.  
 Foreknowledge; 1138, 1140, 1167.  
 Forget; Begins to: 1019.  
 Forty years of age; Apparently: 43.  
 Frightened her first hearer; 36.  
 "Fussing"; "Sees" M.: 851.  
 Go; Thinks she will: before M.;  
 1136.  
 Go; Thinks she will: when M.  
 does; 486, 1051.  
 Go; Willing to: 122.  
 Goes away so that Dr. Prince can  
 watch the process; 1030.  
 Head; On left side of: 810.  
 Head; Affected by turning of M.'s:  
 724.  
 Head; Cannot support: 1003.  
 Hears clock; Generally: 1010.  
 Hears with ears plugged; 758.  
 Hears through ears of S. D.; 600.  
 Heaven; 1144.  
 "Here"; Always: 724.  
 Human and non-human beings;  
 1141.  
 Human; Not: 1237.  
 Humor; 40.  
 Hurt; Something: when M.  
 laughed; 1272.  
 Hyperæsthesia; 558.  
 Hyslop; Dr.: 1139.  
 Hyslop; Dr.: Read letter from:  
 1178.  
 Identity; 1178.  
 Identity; Not prepared to admit  
 her true: 147.  
 Identity; Dr. Prince neutral about  
 her: 1267.  
 Identity; Will give proof of: 122,  
 1253.  
 Identity; Will give proof of: Dr.  
 Prince doubts that: 1253, 1255.  
 Identity; Goes away to get proof  
 of: 1261, 1328.  
 Improvement; Proofs of: 969.  
 In; Meaning of: 606, 692, 699.  
 In watching; 699.  
 Independence of: 1256.



## Sleeping Margaret, Infallible

Infallible; Not: 647.  
Influence only over M. at first; 158.  
Intercognition; 90.  
Interests not same as M.'s or R. D.'s; 1134.  
Interfering: M.: with S. M.; 614.  
Interfusion; 528.  
Interpolation; 348, 362.  
Interrupted by M. asleep; 42, 388, 557.  
Irony; 44.  
Jerk of head at return of: 1167.  
Jolting M.; 90, 613, 616, 623, 809.  
Judgment; Calm: 599.  
Knew things not noticed by R. D.; 1252.  
Knowledge of: 1143.  
Knowledge of: not attained by reasoning; 490.  
Known: Made: to Dr. Prince; 463.  
L. F.; 807.  
Language; Comments on own: 490.  
Laughed at Dr. Prince's ideas; 335, 365, 813.  
Lectured Dr. Prince; 653, 1029.  
Letter to Dr. Brashear; 112.  
Lewis; Dr.: 817.  
Laugh; of: 784.  
Laugh; S. M. makes M.: 1027.  
Laughs at M.; 489.  
Letter to Dr. Walker; 984.  
Life of M. saved by: 707.  
Life of R. D. saved by S. M.; 77, 95.  
Limbs; Control of: 118.  
Location of personalities in the brain; 90, 721, 740, 741, 823.  
"Lowest" personality; The: 738.  
"Mamma": 1269.  
Manifest: Could not: when M. suddenly went away; 130.  
Manifestations "always simultaneous with supraliminal consciousness of another personality"; 128.  
Manner of: 784.  
Margaret;  
M. asleep; S. M. quite different from: 293.  
M. asleep when S. M. talked; 73, 501.  
M-asleep, x; 463.  
"back: M. will hate to find herself:" 787.  
Called by S. M.; 602.  
Called by S. M. for first time; 476.

## Sleeping Margaret, Mind-reading

"Nothing but a child"; 557.  
Contemporaneous mental activity; 501.  
Criticised by S. M.; 489.  
Dependent on M. for force; S. M.: 1064.  
Different, but the same; M. and S. M.: 464.  
Disappearance of: not far off; 991.  
Gone; S. M. thought M. had: 1248, 1252.  
M. hears S. M., but thinks she is talking herself; 557.  
M. cannot hear S. M.; 42, 557.  
M. inhibited from hearing S. M.; 42.  
M. interrupts S. M.; 528.  
M. unconsciously interrupts S. M.; 42.  
M. did not know of S. M. till late; 50.  
Laugh; S. M. makes M.: 1306.  
Life of M. saved by S. M.: 707.  
Mental activity; Contemporaneous: 501.  
Mentality of M.; 519.  
Mind; M. a "part" of a: 1103.  
Out suddenly: To force: might have ruined R. D.; 1102.  
Relations to M. and R. D. differ; 786.  
Same, but different; M. and S. M.: 464.  
S. M. and M.; 512, 516, 557.  
Marry; Says R. D. should never: 524.  
Maturity of: 557.  
Maturity of: Psychic: 783.  
Mechanics: Psychic: of the case; 90.  
Mechanism of transmission; Psychological: 839.  
Memory of: 44.  
Memory of D.'s past fading; 112.  
Memory of earth life; No.: 1265.  
Memory of past; No: 767.  
Mental working of the brain seen by: 741.  
Mentality of: 1103, 1255.  
Metempsychosis; 1101, 1103, 1143.  
Mind of M. read by; 629, 654.  
Mind; Part of a: M. a: 1103.  
Mind; Pictures in the: Sees: 982.  
Mind-reading; 88, 629.  
Mind-reading easier than reading; 1239.



## Sleeping Margaret, Misleads

Misleads Dr. Prince by evasive answers; 464.  
 Missed by R. D. when away; 113, 119, 120, 1049, 1094, 1096, 1097, 1146, 1195, 1199, 1240.  
 Moods; 1024.  
 "Mother; I could have talked with her;" 1190.  
 Motives of R. D.; 1054.  
 Motor control; 807, 809.  
 Motor control in waking state; 792.  
 Movement: Cannot complete a: unless M. is sound asleep; 608.  
 Movements; M.'s: Not always conscious of; 785.  
 Movements differ from M.'s; 785.  
 Movements: Sees: registered in brain; 786.  
 Movements; Voluntary; 785.  
 "My": Does not speak of: hand, etc.; 793.  
 Named herself; 84.  
 Nightly; Comes: 121, 1252.  
 Nose; Wipes M.'s: 1217.  
 Note to Dr. Prince found by R. D.; 121.  
 Obsession generally shown in adults; 1144.  
 Offended; 113, 765, 1030.  
 Opinions of; 1143.  
 Opinions of; Method of obtaining; 727.  
 Out only when asked; 91.  
 Own affairs; Attending to; 112.  
 Past; No memory of; 767.  
 "Person; If she (M.) were a"; 630.  
 Personalities; Fully developed; 1101. Emotional differences between the: 571. Location of the: 90, 721, 740, 741, 823. Relationships of the: 593, 599, 1096.  
 Personality; A.; 1038. Not a: 1138, 1262. Not a: in the sense in which S. D. and M. were; 858.  
 Philosophical; 44.  
 Piano; Advice *re*; 770.  
 Pictures in the mind; 982.  
*Pilgrim's Progress*; 861, 867.  
 Pittsburgh, Pa.; Arranged time for visit to; 94.  
 Plan defeated unconsciously by R. D.; 1257.  
 Planchette; 1282.  
 Prayers of Mrs. Fischer; Came in answer to; 1030, 1307.

## Sleeping Margaret, Real Doris

Prediction; 43, 89, 93, 606, 633, 638, 665, 734, 1136, 1235.  
 Prescience of; 1138, 1140, 1167.  
 Prince; Dr.: dreams of S. M.; 1258. S. M. drew force from: 1064. gives hint to S. M.; 1049. S. M. laughs at ideas of; 335, 365, 813. S. M. loves: 1255. on S. M.; 527. S. M. corrects views of; 610. S. M. feared that: would not have sufficient patience; 571. S. M. reproves: 564, 923, 1144, 1159, 1226, 1247. S. M. spoke to: while alone; 1325. S. M. thinks: stupid; 1246. loses temper with S. M.; 1091. not ready to receive the truth; 1299, 1300.  
 Progress; Certain of; 969, 987, 1168.  
 Progress; Pleased with; 969, 1153, 1168.  
 Progress; Statements *re*; 985.  
 Proof of her own nature; 119.  
 Question; makes M. answer: 1154, R. F.; 807.  
 Reading; M.'s: 965.  
 Reading one thing while R. D. read another; 1237.  
 Real Doris;  
 S. M. cared for R. D.; 67, 73, 91, 158, 490, 830, 1021, 1131, 1140, 1209, 1252.  
 R. D. cannot "come from S. M."; 473.  
 R. D. was coming; Knew when: 681.  
 Existence of; R. D. learns of; 1267.  
 R. D. influenced by S. M.; 1189.  
 S. M. saved life of R. D.; 77, 95.  
 S. M. not anxious to have R. D. live; 1141.  
 Motives of R. D. are all right; Says: 1054.  
 Present, conscious, and asleep when S. M. talks; 1254, 1255.  
 Relations to R. D. and M. differ; 786.  
 Sleeps; S. M. comes only when; 786.  
 S. M. and R. D.; 527.  
 S. M. first spoke to M., January, 1912; 103.  
 S. M. spoke to R. D. during sleep; 875.



## Sleeping Margaret, Real Doris

S. M. "super-added" to R. D.; 1255.  
 R. D. wakened by voice of S. M.; 120, 121, 1266.  
 R. D. warned by S. M.; 67.  
 Reasons; Never; 490.  
 Reassures Dr. Prince; 935.  
 Records; Publication of the: 1138.  
 Records read to S. M.; 287, 406.  
 "Reflection"; 754, 755.  
 Relations to R. D. and M. differ; 786.  
 Religion; 1056.  
 Reproves Dr. Prince; 564, 923, 1144, 1159, 1226, 1247.  
 Reproves Dr. Prince for inquisitiveness; 1144.  
 Reticence; 1180, 1262.  
 Returns; 1095.  
 Roberts; Dr.; 817.  
 S.; Mrs.: 926.  
 S.; Mrs.: Disapproves of; 920.  
 Saved life of D.; 77, 95.  
 Saved life of M.; 707.  
 "Science"; M. thinks S. M. is; 864.  
 Scientists; Limited knowledge of; 1143.  
 Scolds Dr. Prince; 1131.  
 Seeing thoughts; 1191.  
 Sees clock; Generally; 1010.  
   through eyes of D.; 600, 982.  
   when M. is blind; 1194. when M. is blind, further than before; 1198. outside M.'s angle of vision; 847, 1051. things before R. D.; 988. things not seen by R. D.; 908.  
 Self; Information about; 1143.  
 Self-conscious; Always; 843.  
 Self-revelation of; 83.  
 Sensation; Lines of; 125.  
 Sensations; First independent; 125.  
 "Separated" from M.; 389, 557.  
 Shaking S. D. does not hurt R. D.; 470.  
 Shock; Story of the first; 147.  
 Shocks; Warns against; 854, 1135.  
 Sick Doris; anæsthetic; 214. Experiences of; 1057. Feelings of; 214. Pain brings; 506. Peculiarities of; 210.  
 Signal; Goes away at; 1173.  
 Signals with feet; 1175, 1181.  
 Signals; Systems of; 42, 103, 850, 1197.  
 Similar cases; 1144.  
 Sleeping Real Doris;

## Sleeping Margaret, Tired

S. M.'s knowledge of; 864.  
 Strengthened by second fall; 73.  
 Speaking; Automatic; 43.  
 Spirit; 118, 1299.  
 Spirit; Not a; 767, 1101, 1307.  
 Spirit; Dr. Prince warned that S. M. would say she was not a; 1307.  
 Split off from R. D.; Personalities; 1102.  
 Spoke to Dr. Prince when alone; 1325.  
 Stairs; Warned Dr. Prince of danger of falling down; 845.  
 Staring spells; Tells how to stop; 348.  
 Statement about herself; 1264.  
 Status of; 42.  
 Stood; Never; 43.  
 Studies of R. D. stopped by advice of; 785.  
 "Subliminal"; S. M. teases Dr. Prince about R. D.'s; 1267.  
 Suggestion; Not susceptible to; 44, 727, 767, 1044.  
 "Super-added" to R. D.; 1255.  
 Symptoms; 766.  
 Taciturnity; 1031.  
 Talked when M. was asleep; 73, 128, 484.  
 Talked when R. D. was out or asleep; 118, 476, 1239.  
 Talking does not harm R. D.; 476.  
 Talking during automatic writing; 1270.  
 Taste independently; Begins to; 925.  
 Teases Dr. Prince about subliminal; 1267.  
 Teeth filled under care of; 92.  
 Thighs; Anæsthesia in; 125.  
 Think; Does not necessarily; when watching; 1037.  
 Thought; Transmission of; 599.  
 Thoughts; registered on brain; 793. of M.; Cannot always fathom; 994. of M.; Difficulty in following; 1039. of M. read by; 706. of M. seen by; 851. like moving pictures; 716. of all personalities known to; 50, 88, 91, 600, 699. of all personalities watched by; 838, 839. of all the personalities watched by; at same time; 848. of R. D. seen by; like moving pictures; 716. Seeing; 1191.  
 Tired; Never; 816.



## Sleeping Margaret, Tone

Tone and manner of: 784.  
 Tooth: Ulcerated: cured by: 1265, 1266.  
 Transmigration of personalities: 1101, 1103, 1143.  
 Transmission; mechanism of: Psychological: 839.  
 Transmission of thought; 599.  
 Trap; Attempts to: 1057.  
 Truth; Dr. Prince not ready to receive the: 1299, 1300.  
 Truthful; Not always: 810.  
 Truthful, except when she "had a reason"; 1319.  
 Unconscious; Never: 916.  
 Under; S. M. put M.; 620.  
 "Underneath of R. D.; S. M. the:" 527.  
 Verbal expressions; 558.  
 Vibrations that hurt; 759.  
 Vision of: 117, 118.  
 Vision; M.'s angle of: Sees outside: 847.  
 Voice of: 43, 470, 558, 784, 830.  
 Voice of: did not reach Dr. Prince when R. D. was not with him; 1257.  
 Walked; Never: 43.  
 Walker; Dr.: 926. corrected by S. M.; 928. Letter to: 984. Talked to: 476. "wrong about M.": 750.  
 Walking while R. D. slept; 739.  
 "Walter"; 1214.  
 Warned Dr. Prince; 88.  
 Warning against R. D.'s family; Comments on: 1270.  
 Warnings; 43, 67, 77, 88, 979, 1257.  
 Warns Dr. Prince of danger: to D.; 77, 1257. of falling downstairs; 845. of shocks; 854.  
 Watch: At first used to: always; 551.  
 Watches; all; 499. always when R. D. or S. D. are out, and when M. is out and awake; 551. thoughts of all personalities; 838, 839. thoughts of all personalities at same time; 848.  
 Watching; Away and: 699. but helpless; 569. In and: 699.  
 Wholly; Dr.: 926.  
 Words; M. thought S. M.'s were her own; 389.  
 Work; Method of: "in combination with M.": 723.  
 Worrying of: affects R. D.; 990.  
 Writing by: First: 112, 984.

## Sleeping Real Doris, Memories

Writing interrupted by M.; 998.  
 Yankee Doodle; 876.  
**Sleeping Real Doris;** 27, 148, 392, 825, 851, 860, 881, 887, 888, 891, 893, 898, 908, 922.  
 Active; Unusually: 901.  
 Alma; Aunt: 400.  
 Anæsthesia; Auditory: 456.  
 Anæsthesia; Tactile: 456.  
 Appearance of; First: 45, 73, 248, 249, 864.  
 Appearance of; Last: 102, 933.  
 Appeared only in sleep of R. D.; 45.  
 Aunt Alma; 400.  
 Bed clothes; 900.  
 Clutching; 669.  
 Conversation recitals; 45, 246, 248, 321, 326, 330, 333, 344, 398, 400, 862.  
 Conversations; Reproduction of: 45.  
 Coughing; 885.  
 "Crack" in R. D.; Made a: 102, 247.  
 "Crack" in R. D. making a S. R. D.; 864.  
 Created in consequence of a fall; 45.  
 Development slow; 249.  
 Disappearance of: 126.  
 Drinks; 921.  
 Ear plugs; 869, 872, 873, 885, 886, 888.  
 Ella; 400.  
 Expression of: 45.  
 Fall resulted in appearance of: 45, 247.  
 Fall; Second: strengthened S. R. D.; 73, 248.  
 Feeling; Without: 924.  
 Fischer; Mr.: Addresses: on the case; 345.  
 Function that of a phonograph; 128.  
 Hands; Movement of: 345.  
 "Here; I don't want to be:" 889.  
 Hip; Tuberculous: 924.  
 Impressions from M.; Gets: 900.  
 Inchoate; 890.  
 Known; Better: to M. than to S. M.; 901.  
 Last appearance of: 103.  
 Laughed; 910.  
 M. and: 50.  
 M.; Never reflected thought or speech of: 729.  
 Memories; Exclusive: of: 45.



## Sleeping Real Doris, Memory

Memory of previous states of consciousness; Has no: 869.  
 Mental activities; 862.  
 Mental functioning doubtful; 46.  
 Moods of M. affect: 876.  
 Motor activity of: 866.  
 Papo; 885, 889.  
 Pearl; 398.  
 Phonograph; Function that of a: 128.  
 Pin-prick banishes: 456.  
 Pocket-book; 918.  
 Presence made known; 102.  
 Presence noted; 790.  
 Prince; Mrs.: Afraid of: 925.  
 Prince; Mrs.: Did not know: 102.  
 Ratbun; "Doctor": 397.  
 R. D. and S. R. D.; 869.  
 R. D. not conscious of: 45.  
 See; Does not: 923.  
 Self-consciousness: of: doubtful; 45.  
 Self-consciousness; Could have been educated into: 46.  
 Sensory stimuli; Response to: 46, 803.  
 S. D. a damper to: 248.  
 S. M.'s knowledge of: 864.  
 Smile of: 865, 874, 916, 919.  
 Soliloquies; Reproduction of: 46, 99, 102, 397, 456, 727, 862.  
 "Somnambulant personality;" 791.  
 Somnambulant; Purely: 36, 128, 246.  
 Somnambulism; 886, 900, 918.  
 Spoke; 910.  
 Stages of: Three: 45.  
 Standing up in bed; 101, 102.  
 Steele; Mrs.: 331.  
 Stimuli; Response to external sensory: 46, 803.  
 Strengthened by second fall; 73.  
 Thoughts; 901.  
 Thoughts; No active: 670.  
 "Tuberculous" hip; 924.  
 Unintelligible words; 885.  
 Vague; 890.  
 Voice of: 45, 885.  
 Walk; Does not: 248.  
 Walking; 102.  
 Walks after S. D. goes; 248, 924.  
 Sleeps: M.: soundly when S. M. is away; 515. R. D.: more soundly with M. not watching; 715. S. D.: under compulsion; 472.  
 Sleepy; M.: 888. M. "damn": 1114.  
 Slouchy; M.: 568.

## Spatial Relations

Smack S. D.; M. advises Dr. Prince to: 477.  
 Smacked: M.: by Dr. Prince; 629, 680.  
 Smearcase; 794.  
 Smell; disappears in S. D.; 440, 445. dull in case of S. D.; 41. dulled as M. declined; 38, 95, 125. improved in R. D.; 125. revived temporarily in M.; 126. subnormal; R. D.'s: 123. Tests of: 440. M. "feels" R. D.'s: 414.  
 "Smells" fish; S. D.: 467.  
 Smile: of M.: 413. Pressure of hand causes: 438. of R. D.; 413, 498, 874. of R. D. during sleep; 492. of S. R. D.; 865, 874, 916, 919.  
 Smoke; Cigar: S. D. interested in: 538.  
 Snake; R. D. frightened by: 987.  
 "Snakes" in foot: 849.  
 Snarling; 645, 918.  
 Sneezing; M.: 724, 883, 1020. M. thought her: caused by Dr. Prince; 1227. resumed after five years; 81, 572. S. D.: 883.  
 Snoots; 1198.  
 "Snubbed"; R. D.: 918.  
 Snuggling; S. D.: 542.  
 Snyder; Mr.: 192.  
 "So", meaning "stop"; 536, 547.  
 Soliloquies; R. D. ignorant of: 790. reproduced by S. R. D.; 46, 99, 102, 397, 456, 727, 862.  
 Soliloquizing; M.: 777.  
 Soliloquy; 132.  
 Somatic; 136.  
 Somnambulant personality; S. R. D. a: 36, 128, 246, 791.  
 Somnambulism; Alternations during: 364, 365. of M.; 316. of Dr. Prince in boyhood: 900. of R. D.: 685. of S. D.; 266, 267, 304. of S. R. D.; 886, 900, 918.  
 Soul; Brain and: 54. Dr. Paul Dubois on the: 54. M. says she hasn't any: 834.  
 Sounds imitated by S. D.; 70. R. D. banished by: 724, 834. "obliterated" by suggestion; 114, 1077.  
 Space; M.'s sense of: 994.  
 Spanked: M.: by Dr. Prince: 96. S. D.: by Dr. Prince; 496, 522.  
 Sparrow and canaries; 537.  
 Spat at people when angry; M.: 177.  
 Spatial relations; M. not oblivious to: 555. S. D.'s sense of: lost; 555.



## Speaking

Speaking; Automatic: of S. M.; 42.  
 Three styles of: M.'s: 105.  
 Spearmint candy; 704.  
 "Specimen"; M. as a: 1041.  
 Spelling: game; 1107. Incorrect: of M.; 37, 444, 445, 797. M.'s: once better than R. D.'s; 884.  
*See Language.*  
 Spine; S. D.'s sensations keen in: 123.  
 Spirit; Dr. Prince warned that S. M. would say she was not a: 1307. S. M. a: 118, 768, 1299. S. M. not a: 767, 1101, 1307.  
 Spiritistic: claims; "Refuting": 24. hypothesis; 1282. theory; Dr. Prince not partial to: 768.  
 Spiteful; M.: 420.  
 Split off from R. D.; Personalities: 1102.  
*See Diagnosis.*  
 Spontaneous appearance of R. D.; 498, 506.  
 Sporty; 458, 765, 775.  
 Stages of S. R. D.; Three: 45.  
 Stairs: "called" M.; 101, 845, 846, 852. M. angry with: 866. M. fell down: 101, 866. M. going up or down: 747. M. slides down: 943. S. M. warned Dr. Prince of danger of falling down: 845.  
 Stands up in bed; S. D.: 100, 102.  
 Staring; 971. Cataleptic; 335, 582. Cataleptic: S. M. tells how to stop; 348. spells; 348, 351, 358, 364, 365, 378, 423, 575, 604.  
*See Catalepsy.*  
 Statuette; 168.  
 Steele; Mrs.: 331.  
 Stern; M. advises Dr. Prince to be: with S. D.; 466.  
 Stimuli; Automatism in response to: 589. causing R. D. to emerge; 89. External sensory: Response of S. R. D. to: 46, 803. Psychic: 614. Psychic: producing alternation; 443.  
 Stimulus; External: R. D. comes without: 477, 487. Unconscious: brings M.; 979.  
 Stingy; M. calls R. D.: 635.  
 Stitch in side; 863.  
 Stocking-ball; 818.  
 Stole; 349.  
 Stood; S. M. never: 43.  
*See Control.*

## Suggestion

Store; M. comes out in: 511, 792, 820. R. D. comes out in: 555.  
 Story-writing; 198.  
 Stove; Oil: 1072, 1086.  
 Straightening things out in her mind; R. D.: 484.  
 Strange manner attributed to Mrs. Fischer's death; 228.  
 Street; M. comes out on: 714, 817, 973, 979. R. D. never on: for five years; 728. R. D. comes out on: 512. S. D. asleep on: 357, 364, 365, 371, 385. not seen by R. D. for four years; 258.  
 Stretching; 598. arm; 432. resumed after five years; 81, 439, 572.  
 Studies: ceased on advice of S. M.; 785. opposed by M.; 96, 666.  
 Study; R. D. anxious to: 586. Sleeping in: 286.  
 Studying; 1163.  
 Stupid; Dr. Prince is: S. M. thinks: 1246. S. D.: 527.  
 Subconscious: M. the: of R. D.; 218. recognition of pricking; 118. Secondary personality and: mental states; 24. Thought-reading by M.; 116.  
*See Consciousness, Diagnosis.*  
 Subliminal; 136. Hearing; 1014. "Machinery grinds out its own material"; 1273. "Mechanism the vehicle for communication"; 1273. Mind of M.; 1088. S. M. teases Dr. Prince about the: 1267. The terms "supraliminal" and: 27. Thought-transference; 550. Thoughts of Dr. Prince read by M.; 800, 802. Thoughts of R. D. not usually known by M.; 929. "Vestigial existence" of M.; 1255. Watching; M. ceases from: 433.  
*See Consciousness, Diagnosis.*  
 Submerged experiences; Attempt to bring: to the surface; 340.  
*See Consciousness.*  
 Submission of S. D. to employers; 238.  
 Subnormal: as to cuts and bruises; M.: 38, 123. Smell: in R. D.; 123. Tactile sensation: in S. D.; 123. Taste: in R. D.; 123.  
*See Anesthesia.*  
 Sugar-bags; Dresses made of: 168.  
 Suggestion; 136.  
 Briand; Marcel: 1084.



## Suggestion

Cold by: R. D. said to have got: from Dr. Prince by: 754.  
 Cure: Attempt to: by suggesting that there is only one personality: 335.  
 Dangerous: 308, 348.  
 Death almost induced by suggestion intended to exorcise M.: 348.  
 Dream: Dr. Prince makes R. D.: by: 332, 547, 578, 588, 615, 621, 1098.  
 Dreams; Suggestion caused: 332, 516, 547, 550, 578, 588, 590, 615, 621, 1098, 1109, 1219.  
 Employed on S. D. and M.: 78.  
 Fear banished by: 1188, 1194.  
 "Hello Papa": 327, 412.  
 Made July 4th endurable; 1152.  
 Life almost ended by: 77.  
 Margaret sent in by: 307. M. influenced by: 716. M. most responsive to: 38.  
 Noises "annihilated" by suggestion; 114, 579.  
 Pain in chest: R. D. said to have: by: 755.  
 Pain cured by: 331.  
 Psychical tie through: 327.  
 Salts and: 907.  
 Sick Doris made to say "Where is mamma?" by: 330.  
 Sleep: during: 608, 909, 940, 986, 1104, 1180, 1194.  
 Sleep: Put to: by: 366, 414, 430, 432, 434, 450, 476, 530, 564, 655, 688, 761, 796, 802, 881, 999, 1205.  
 Sleep: Troubled: cured by: 114.  
 Sleeping Margaret not susceptible to: 44, 727, 767, 1044.  
 Sounds "obliterated" by: 114, 1077.  
 Teeth filled during sleep induced by: 619.  
 Throat: Sore: cured by: 1128.  
 Wakened by: R. D.: 886.  
 Wakened by: S. D.: 322.  
 Waking in response to: 954.  
 Wetterstrand; 1084.  
 Whistles not heard on account of: 114, 1077.  
 Worry counteracted by: 1004.  
 See *Hypnotic, Hypnosis, Hypnotic, Hypnotism*.  
 Suicide: Man who intended to commit: 1310.  
 Sulk; M.: 489. S. D.: 482.  
 See *Anger*.

## Symptoms

Sullenness of M.; 37.  
 See *Anger*.  
 Summary of the facts; 60.  
 Sunday School; 256, 452, 519, 574, 676, 686, 693, 865, 873, 874, 882, 888, 891, 902, 968, 986. bad for R. D.; 860. M. explains why she did not go to: 535. M. objects to: 96. work; 202.  
 Sunflower; 881.  
 Supernormal: illusions; 56. incidents; 56.  
 Supersensitive; R. D.: 690, 915, 1040, 1053, 1057, 1098, 1174, 1227.  
 Supersensitiveness; R. D. banished by: 690, 915, 1034. R. D.'s: vanishes; 1182.  
 Supraliminal; 136. Prince; W. F.: Use of the term: 28. Terms "subliminal" and: 27.  
 Surface; 132. consciousness; 218.  
 Surplice; 349, 359, 360, 732. torn to shreds; 356.  
 Surprise; R. D. banished by: 1002. S. D. shows no: 497.  
 Surprises; M.'s passion for: 1211, 1216.  
 Sweet William; 179, 180.  
 Swelling of thyroid gland; 92.  
 "Swindled in your clothes"; 466.  
 "Swipe some linen"; 360.  
 Swiped: M.'s money: by R. D.; 566. twenty dollars; M.: 775.  
 Switching of personalities; 83.  
 See *Alternation*.  
 Symbolic dreams; 814.  
 Sympathy; 1073. a curative influence; 74. causes headache; 1008. R. D. banished by: 654, 917.  
 Symptoms; Physical: 92.  
 See *Body, Bruises, Clumsiness, Clutching, Cold, Constipation, Crying, Curled, Cutaneous, Deafness, Distension, Ears, Eat, Eating, Eruption, Eye Strain, Feet, Hands, Headaches, Hunger, Jerk, Jerking, Lethargy, Limbs, Lips, Log, Magnified, Mamma, Motor, Muscular Anesthesia, Neck, Nerves, Pain, Pains, Perspiration, Perspires, Pulse, Reaction, Rolling, Senses, Sensory, Stood, Taste, Tearing, Thermal, Tired, Twitching, Verbal, Automatism, Vital forces, Voice, Walked, Weariness*.



## Symptoms

Symptoms; Psychical:

See *Anæsthesia*, *Apathetic*, *Clair-audience*, *Clairvoyance*, *Comatose*, *Conversations*, *Hyperæsthesia*, *Hysteria*, *Hysteric*, *Hysterical*, *Illusions*, *Imagination*, *Lethargy*, *Lip*, *Lips*, *Lost*, *Mind*, *Mind-reading*, *Moods*, *Reaction*, *Senses*, *Spatial*, *Spelling*, *Subconscious*, *Subliminal*, *Subnormal*, *Supernormal*, *Tuberculosis*, *Tuberculous*, *Verbal Automatism*s.

Symptoms; S. M. tells about: 766.  
Dr. Walker says R. D. thinks too much about: 766.

Table; Asleep at: M.: 1035. Eating: S. D. and M. stop: 272. Waiting at: 202.

Taciturnity of S. M.: 1031.

Tactile: *anæsthesia*; See *Anæsthesia*. *hyperæsthesia*; See *Hyperæsthesia*. sensations of M. temporarily renewed; 126. sensations of S. D. subnormal; 41, 123.

Tactual illusions; 786.

Taffy; S. D. giving: 489.

Talk; Running: 1117.

Talking by S. M. does not harm R. D.; 476.

Tantrums; 87, 90, 101, 110, 597, 720, 871, 877, 920, 940, 943, 1226. Catamenia and: 486, 953. and abdominal distension; 604.

Taste: in clothing changes; R. D.'s: 724. Differences of: 605, 606. disappears; S. D.'s: 124, 440, 445. dull; S. D.'s: 41, 237. dulled as M. declined; 38, 95, 125. gone; M.'s: 675, 679. improved in R. D.; 125. subnormal in R. D.; 123. S. M. begins to: independently; 925. Tests of: 440.

Tastes: Differing: of the personalities; 34, 168, 169.

Teacher: M.'s: "How many do you think you are?"; 493.

Tearing: clothes; 90, 596. things: 101.

Tears and laughter: Alternate: 1122.

Teasing: M.: Dr. Prince: 682. M.: R. D.; 181, 240, 354, 681, 682. M.: S. D.; 332. M.: S. D., about being first to go: 331.

Teeth; Brushing: M.: 1126. filled

## Thoughts

under hypnosis; 92. filled during sleep; 619. filled under care of S. M.; 92.

Telepathy; 136. M. and: 57. Science and: 58. Visual: 58.

Telephone bell; S. D. and: 479.

Televoyance; 301, 302, 335, 336, 337, 346, 377, 1043.

Temper; Dr. Prince loses: 1091.

Temperature; Sensitiveness: of M. to: 95, 1149. of R. D. to: 125.

Ternary Personality; 23.

Terror at thought of relations; 411.

Terrorizing M. a mistake; 341.

Test Dr. Prince; S. D. and M.: 272.

Tests: of hearing; 764, 768, 849, 1023. of vision; 741, 805, 846, 857, 992, 1017, 1180.

Thanatopsis; 413.

Thank-offering; 1013.

Theodosia; 1026.

Therapeutic; 136.

Thermæsthesia of M.; 116.

Thermal *anæsthesia* of S. D.; 41, 124.

Thermanæsthesia; 136. of M.; 123, 125, 240.

Thermanæsthetic; R. D.: 123. S. D.: 415, 437.

Thighs; *Anæsthesia* in: 125.

Thinking: and dreaming; 1037, 1064.

Hard: of M. affects R. D.; 717.

"Thinking; Pain in head to:" 1210.

Thirst; S. D. without sensation of: 215.

Thought;

Pain caused by attempts to stimulate: in M.; 116.

Tempo of M. reduced; 107.

Transfer: Dr. Prince cannot: to M.; 858.

Transference; 550, 599.

See *Consciousness*.

Thought-reading; 57, 88. S. D. a barrier in the way of: 839. Subconscious: 109, 116.

See *Consciousness*.

Thoughts;

Brain; Registered on the: 793.

Cluster of: 349, 383, 441.

Dreams of R. D. affected by thoughts of M.; 48, 789.

Dreams; Thoughts which are not: 1037.

Margaret: reads thoughts of Dr. Prince; 413, 739. did not follow all R. D.'s thoughts: 166, 167. got R. D.'s thoughts directly at



## Thoughts

times; 839. influenced R. D.'s thoughts; 550, 782, 792, 814, 911, 915, 949. influenced by R. D.'s thoughts; 915, 917, 1012. brought out by R. D.'s thoughts; 931. S. M. cannot always fathom: of M.; 974. S. M. has difficulty in following: of M.; 1039. watched S. D.'s thoughts of R. D.; 838, 839. Margaret's: affecting R. D.; 792, 814, 951, 1098. make R. D. dream; 1054. received by R. D.; 521, 792, 978, 1207. not recognized as hers by R. D.; 550. known to S. M.; 600. seen by S. M.; 851.  
Past: of Dr. Prince read by M.; 799, 800, 804.  
Of all personalities known to S. M.; 50, 91, 600, 699. of other personalities cause utterance of words by R. D.; 469. like moving pictures; 716. of Dr. Prince read by M.; 413, 739, 937. of Dr. Prince: Past: read by M.; 799, 800, 804. of Dr. Prince: Subliminal: read by M.; 800, 802.  
R. D. gets M.'s: 521, 792, 978, 1207.  
R. D.'s: M. gets: after her departure; 946. M. gets: as she goes in; 673. M. ceases from getting: 671. influenced M.; 915, 917, 1012, 1098. influenced by M.; 550, 782, 792, 814, 911, 915, 949, 951. known by M.; 49, 397, 423, 520, 1125, 1126, 1132, 1160. known by M. no longer; 82. misunderstood by M.; 848. read by M.; 110, 111, 783, 873, 899, 1095, 1184. read by M. no longer; 1118. Reflection of: seen by M.; 893. seen by M.; 1159, 1216. known by S. D.; 423. known by S. M.; 91, 600. registered on the brain; 793.  
Seeing: S. M. on: 1191. S. D.'s: literal and concrete; 40. known by M.; 49, 397, 423. M. could not watch: when she was in; 1027. thin and shadowy; 532.  
S. M. cannot always fathom: of M.; 994.  
S. M. watched: of all personalities; 838, 839.  
S. M. watched: of all personalities at same time; 848.  
of S. R. D.; 901.

## Trail of the Lonesome Pine

S. R. D. had no active: 670.  
Subliminal: of Dr. Prince read by M.; 800, 802.  
Subliminal: of R. D. not usually known by M.; 929.  
See *Consciousness, Diagnosis*.  
Threatened; Dream of being: 899.  
Threatening: M.: R. D.; 90, 726.  
See *Anger*.  
Throat; Contraction of: 213. Sore: 1145. Sore: due to association of ideas; 962. "Sore" when thirsty; M.'s: 850. Sore: cured by suggestion; 1128.  
Thrown away by S. D.; Things: 225.  
Thunder; 593, 606, 655, 670, 684.  
Thyroid gland; Swelling of: 92, 1110, 1119, 1138, 1148, 1169, 1179, 1182, 1221.  
Time: All: becomes nine o'clock to M.; 1038. Deceived about: M.: 1032. Duration of: M. has little sense of: 291, 736, 751, 994. M.'s judgment of: not reliable; 243. M.'s sense of: lapses entirely; 822, 824. M. can no longer tell: 1128. R. D. has little sense of: when in; 989.  
Tired; M.: 489, 507, 648, 816, 877, 1222, 1223. M.: by being out long; 494, 632, 957. R. D.: 1031, 1251. R. D. easily; 968. S. M. never: 816. Dr. Walker blamed by M. for her being: 834. by R. D.'s work; M.: 569.  
See *Weariness*.  
Toe; M. "bit" R. D.'s: 871. M. tries to cut off: 241.  
Toes: close to fire; M.'s: 792. Cold: 812. Sore: 792.  
Tomatoes; 691. Burning: 1205.  
Tongue; trouble with: M.'s: 708.  
Tonsillitis; 145.  
Tonsils; Sore: 739.  
Tooth; Ulcerated: cured by S. M.; 1265, 1266.  
Toothache; R. D. banished by: 647, 1122.  
Tormenting: R. D.; M.: 702, 703. S. D.; M.: 307.  
Tortures inflicted by M.: 236.  
Tossing in sleep; R. D.: 729.  
Touching part of body mentioned: 687.  
Town; M. goes to: 492, 556.  
Toxic; 136.  
Toys; 1112.  
*Trail of the Lonesome Pine*; 656.



## Train

Train; R. D. awakened by S. M. in time to catch: 120, 121, 1266.  
 Transference; Thought: 550, 599.  
 Transmigration of personalities; 1101, 1103, 1143. Dr. Prince does not believe in: 1103.  
 Transmission; Psychical mechanism of: 839.  
 Trap; Attempt to: S. M.; 1057.  
 Treatment; Harsh: R. D. has no memory of: 473. Harsh: R. D. has no physical effects of: 473. of M.; Best method of: 379. of M.; Mistakes in: 379. Psychic: when asleep; 473. Psychic: for fear of noises; 564. Psychical: of mental disorders; 54.  
 Treatment; Physical: See *Advice, Cure, Diagnosis, Food, Help, Hypnosis, Medical, Medicine, Nerves*.  
 Treatment; Psychical: See *Advice, Auto-suggestion, Cure, Diagnosis, Explained, Hypnosis, Psychic, Suggestion*.  
 Tree; Fall from: 168.  
 Trees; 169.  
 Trembling; 553, 569.  
 Trickiness of M.; 362.  
 Tricks of M.; 65, 66, 314, 354.  
 Triple consciousness; 572.  
 Trixie; 70, 153, 167, 212, 215, 224, 231, 251, 252, 253, 390, 1154, 1292, 1301. Death of: 254.  
 Troche; 960.  
 Troubles; M. tries to tell: to R. D.; 529.  
 Trousers; Pressing: 197.  
 Truth; Dr. Prince not ready to receive the: 1299, 1300.  
 Truthful; S. M. not always: 810. S. M.: except when she "had a reason"; 1319.  
 Truthfulness of R. D.; 147, 207, 810, 1001.  
 Tuberculosis in ankle: 145, 253. Imaginary: 74, 77, 315, 316, 317. from Trixie; 253.  
 "Tuberculous" hip; 77, 259, 329, 924.  
 "Twisted; ideas" of Dr. Brashear; 1016.  
 Twitching; 426, 968.  
     See *Control*.  
 Umbrella; Loss of: 820.  
 Uncertainty; R. D. banished by: 938.  
 Uncle; 523.

## Vision

Unconscious; M.: 878. M.: when not out; 819. S. M. never: 916.  
     See *Consciousness*.  
 Under; Ducking: 130, 507, 622, 647. Keeping: 687. M. put: by S. M.; 620.  
 "Underneath R. D.; The feeling:" 527.  
 Understand; S. D. cannot: what Dr. Prince says until she sees him; 539.  
 Undress; M. too "old" to: 1071.  
     See *Undressing*.  
 Undressed by Dr. Prince; M.: 588.  
     See *Undressing*.  
 Undressing; M.'s trouble with: 713, 838.  
     See *Dressing, Undress, Undressed*.  
 Unintelligible words of S. R. D.; 885.  
 Union Station; M. comes in: 912.  
 Unique; The case: 31.  
 Unity of the personalities; "Hypothetical": 550.  
 Untidy; M.: 568.  
 Unwelcome; M. thinks she is: 1003.  
 Upidee-idee-ida; 477.  
 Urino-genital tract; 906. anæsthetic; R. D.'s: 123. anæsthetic; S. D.'s: 124. Sensation begins in R. D.'s: 126.  
     See *Bladder*.  
 Vaccination; 163.  
 Vacuum cleaner; 492.  
 Vague; S. R. D.: 890.  
 Vase in barrel; 303.  
 Verbal automatisms of M.; 38, 91, 569, 573, 586, 949, 993, 1041, 1062, 1063, 1064, 1065, 1068, 1079, 1086, 1100, 1105, 1157, 1158, 1221, 1244.  
 Verbal expressions differ; 558.  
 Verdict; Time for: not yet; 55.  
 "Vestigial existence subliminally"; 1255.  
 Vestments; 502, 508. Dr. Prince's "brother's": 511.  
 Vibrations that hurt; 759.  
 Vicinity of R. D.; M. leaves the: 641.  
 Vicious; M. becomes: 596.  
     See *Anger*.  
 Views of Dr. Prince corrected by S. M.; 610.  
 Vigorous; M.: 891.  
 Vision; Comparisons and tests in: 98. cone of: M.'s: 847, 977, 978. failing; M.'s: 976, 981, 1010. Field of:



## Vision

narrowed and shortened as M. declined; 38, 99, 101, 126, 750, 752, 861, 922, 974, 977, 995, 1001, 1017, 1020, 1119, 1181. Field of: narrowed and shortened as S. D. declined; 41, 87, 124, 539, 556, 562, 611. Peculiarities of: M.'s: 989. of Dr. Prince "tested" by M.; 1017. of R. D. improves when M. becomes blind; 119, 126, 1195. of R. D. tested; 741. of S. M.; 117, 118, 847, 1051, 1194, 1198, 1257. of S. M. when R. D. is asleep and awake; 1248. S. R. D. without: 923. Tests of: 741, 805, 846, 857, 992, 1017, 1180.

See *See, Seeing, Sees, Visual*.

Visiting; District: 204, 281. the sick; 281.

Visual: hallucination of R. D.; 58. hyperæsthesia of M.; 38, 123. "telepathy"; 58.

See *Vision*.

Vital forces at low ebb; S. D.'s: 282. Vive; Louis: Case of: 292.

Vocabulary of S. D.; 536, 544, 552, 553.

Voice; Automatic: 876. of M.; 39, 350, 470, 650, 784, 830. of M. heard by R. D.; 638. of M. heard by S. D.; 311, 325. of Grandmother Prince heard by R. D.; 874. heard by Mrs. Prince; 1310. of R. D.; 39, 43, 558, 784. heard by R. D.; 1310. of S. D.; 39, 43. of S. D.; becomes weaker; 532. of S. M.; 43, 470, 558, 784, 830. of S. M. heard by Dr. Prince when alone; 1325. of S. M. heard by R. D. in night; 1263, 1264. of S. R. D.; 45, 885.

Voices: 320. heard by Dr. Prince; 59, 1214, 1259, 1260, 1261, 1325. heard by Dr. Prince; Theories about: 1259, 1260.

Voluntarily coming and going; M. loses power of: 892.

W.; 1293, 1312.

W.; Deaconess: 912.

W.; Dr.: (Woman); 608.

W.; Mrs.: 1131.

W.; Nettie: 479.

W.; Reverend: 601.

Wages; Working for: 197.

Waggle; 1224.

## Walker

Waist; Constriction of: 1197. pattern; 362. made by S. D.; R. D. recognizes: 884. Tore up new: M.: 360.

Wakened: M.: by blowing in eyes; 681, 738, 774, 879, 887, 1085. M.: by laying S. D. down; 488. R. D.: by new method; 1046. R. D.: by S. M. in time to catch train; 120, 121, 1266. R. D.: by suggestion; 886. S. D.: by suggestion; 322.

Waking; False: 868, 869, 903, 908. M.; Method of: 803. R. D.; Formula for: 402, 409. S. D.; Difficulty in: 298, 511. process of S. D.; 266. in response to suggestion; 954.

Walk: M. takes a: and goes beyond limits; 460.

Walked; S. M. never: 43. S. R. D.: only after S. D. went; 248. on street when asleep; S. D.: 364.

See *Control*.

Walker; Professor W. K.: 315, 322, 343, 345, 361, 366, 367, 394, 401, 405, 409, 472, 567, 588, 608, 622, 698, 747, 770, 895, 897, 926, 930, 958.

Advice: 447, 612, 699.

Anæsthesia; Tests for: 589.

"Assimilated"; Expected S. D. to be: 447.

Blamed by M. when she was tired; 834.

Cheque for: M.'s: 829.

Co-operation of: 78.

Corrected by S. M.; 928.

Cured; Thought the case could not be: 367.

Diagnosis of hysteria: 315.

Diagnosis; Wrong: 750, 751, 766, 888.

Dislike of: Temporary: M.'s: 917, 736, 885.

Dislike of: Temporary: R. D.'s: 717, 748.

Doll; 868.

"Double personality in formative stage"; 315.

Dumm; 927.

Greaser; 815, 927.

Headache "due to anniversary memory"; 888.

Headache tablets; 895.

Letters from: 933, 1006.

Letters to: 868, 931, 984, 991, 994, 1010, 1024, 1025, 1094, 1187.

Margaret; 345, 401, 453, 464, 487.



## Walker

M. "chews the rag" with: 487.  
 M. disappointed by: 815.  
 M. disgusted with: 1025.  
 Gets M. mixed with R. D.; 1025.  
 M. 'phoning: 811, 929.  
 M. holds Dr. Prince's hand while talking to: 394.  
 M. tells: he wont see her again; 956.  
 M.'s attitude towards: 97, 349, 717, 736, 884.  
 Medicine; 476.  
 Memory; Anniversary: 888.  
 Opinions of: 33, 367, 447.  
 Photograph of Dr. Prince given by M. to: 959.  
 Plate for: 1009.  
 Present for: M. wants to get: 820.  
 Present to M.; 829.  
 Real Doris; 405, 453. R. D. calls on: 929.  
 Seven Articles of Faith; 322.  
 Sick Doris; 405, 453.  
 S. M. corrects: 928.  
 S. M. writes letter to: 984.  
 S. M. talked to: 476.  
 Symptoms; Says R. D. thinks too much about: 766.  
 Tests for anæsthesia, etc.; 589.  
 Thyroid gland; 1148.  
 Vision; Wrong regarding: 751.  
 Waking; Suggestion for: a failure; 335.  
 Walking; Automatic: 277. M.: alone; 518. M. clings to Dr. Prince while out: 492. M.'s thoughts of: brings S. D. out; 532. M. tremulous when: 553. R. D. clings to Dr. Prince while out: 492. R. D. tremulous when: 553. S. M.: while R. D. slept: 739. S. R. D.: 102, 924.  
 Walks; Cruelty of Mr. Fischer causes S. D. to take long: 274.  
 Walter; 1287, 1295, 1302, 1313. M.: 1317. Dr. Prince heard name: when sleeping; 1214, 1259.  
 "Walter; Your name is:" 835.  
 Warning: given by M. to S. D.; 442. against R. D.'s family; 1270. by planchette; 1324.  
 See *Care*.  
 Warnings given by S. M.: to Dr. Prince: 77, 88, 845, 854, 979, 1257, to R. D.; 43, 67.  
 See *Care*.  
 "Was you, Papo?"; 466, 470, 473, 475, 993.

## "Will"

Wash; M. helped D. to: 362.  
 Washing; 390.  
 Watch; 1314, 1315. lost; 1125.  
 Watched: M. sleeper when she had not: 683. S. D.: R. D.'s mind; 838, 839. S. D.: when R. D. was out; 838. S. M.: all; 499.  
 See *Care*.  
 Watching; 129.  
 An active process; 783.  
 Away and: 129, 547.  
 Constant: M. ceases from: 441, 561, 573, 750.  
 In and: 129, 547.  
 M.: 608, 642.  
 M. ceases from: 781.  
 M. ceases from constant: 441.  
 M. is not: R. D. sleeps more soundly when: 715.  
 M. always: S. D.; 1027.  
 M.: while S. D. is out, and R. D. dreams underneath; 499.  
 M. ceases from subliminal: 433, 561, 573.  
 M.: underneath; 535.  
 S. M. always: at first; 551.  
 S. M. always: when R. D. or S. D. is out, and when M. is out and awake; 551.  
 Subliminal: M. ceases from: 433.  
 Underneath; 535, 556.  
 See *Care*.  
 Waterman's Cañon; 1179.  
 "Waz zat?"; 87, 592.  
 We; 132, 269, 290.  
 Weakens; Psychic power of S. D.: 514.  
 Weariness; of R. D.; 1178. S. D. without sensation of: 215.  
 See *Exhaustion*, *Tired*.  
 Week; Nine days in: 1105.  
 Weeping for her dead husband; M.: 184.  
 Weight; 1004.  
 Wellington; Jay: 1203, 1204.  
 Wetterstrand, Gangrenous vesicles by suggestion; 1084.  
 "What think?"; 1007.  
 "Where is Mamma?"; 330.  
 "Where was you, Papo?"; 478.  
 Whiskey; 931, 1175.  
 Whistles not heard after suggestion; 114, 1077.  
 Whistling; S. D. dislikes: 560.  
 Wholly; Dr.: 926.  
 "Will": of M.: 110, 704, 824, 1065, 1142. of S. D.; 84, 704, 735.



# Will

# Z

Will: of M.: 1219. of M.; Opposing the: 341. M. strengthened by rousing: 860. of S. D. gone; 86, 529.

Wills of M. and R. D. clashing; 731.

Window; M. climbs out of: 517. frames; M. scrubs: 511. frames; S. D. scrubs; 511. shades; 527. S. D. raises: during night; 494. sills; R. D. scrubs: 513.

Wintergreen; 716, 721, 761, 1070, 1150.

Wit of M.; 417.

Wood for "breket"; 1216.

Woodpecker; 639.

Wool; M. abominated: 1245.

Words: M. forgets meaning of: 1067, 1068, 1120, 1121, 1214, 1217, 1219, 1225. Familiar: no longer intelligible to S. D.; 551.

See *Memory*.

Work: Method of: "in combination with M."; S. M. explains: 723.

Night: 72, 202, 235. R. D.'s: makes M. tired; 569. S. D. automatically continues: 526. S. D. never imitates: 526. S. D. made M.: 72, 234, 294, 346, 445. S. D.'s: destroyed by M.; 236. S. D. thinks she should go to; 437, 482, 497.

Worked: M.: faster than S. D.; 294.

Working: dreams; 347. for wages; 197.

Worm; R. D. swallows a: 733.

Worried: R. D.: because Dr. Prince is out in storm; 939. by illness of Mrs. Prince; 964, 970. look of Dr. Prince banishes R. D.; 1050. R. D.: by questions of neighbour's child; 550, 551.

See *Depression*.

Worries preceding birth of R. D.; 141.

Worry: causes alternations; 851. Happiness of M. rescues R. D. from: 732. Memories: R. D.; 438. Progress stopped by: 1026. R. D. banished by: 851, 988. Suggestion to counteract: 1004.

See *Depression*.

Worrying: bad for R. D.; 951. M.: 476, 506, 703, 875. M. disturbed by R. D.'s: 1122. R. D.; 443, 654, 731, 903, 914, 1081. R. D.: about bank balance; 1090. R. D.: about chickens; 1023. R. D.: about cost of her support; 672. R. D.'s: makes M. exacting; 1176. R. D.: about being useless; 1023. S. D.: about Mr. Fischer; 374. of S. M. affects R. D.; 990.

See *Depression*.

Wrist; Curving at: 426.

Wrists; R. D. brought out by grasping: 429, 438.

Write; M. teaches S. D. to: 228. M. becomes unable to: 1113.

Writes; M.: 345, 351, 364.

Writing; Automatic: See *Automatic Writing*.

Writing; M. perspires while: 1011. by S. M.; First: 112, 984. by S. M. interrupted by M.; 998.

X.; 76.

X.; Dr.: Attitude of R. D., M., and S. M. towards: 1079, 1080. Eruption: Salve for: 1078. Impudence of a layman; Wonders at: 1080. Insane; Hints that R. D. is: 1078, 1080. Questions Dr. Prince critically; 1080. Shamming; Says R. D. is: 1080.

X.; Felida: 30, 1102.

X.; Miss: 690.

X.; Miss: Beau of: 193.

X.; Mrs.: 614, 1327.

Yank in; 132.

"Yanked in": M.: by S. M.; 100, 718, 754. Effect of M.'s being: on R. D.; 787.

Yankee Doodle; 876.

Yard; M. goes to sleep in: 971.

Yawning resumed after five years; 81.

"You 'melled mad"; 1190.

Z.: Alma: 30.







# Proceedings of the Old American Society for Psychical Research

1885-89. Price \$2.50 (prepaid)

Contain important articles by Prof. Pierce, Prof. Pickering, Prof. Minot, Prof. Royce, and Prof. James, with a collection of experiments on Telepathy and cases of spontaneous apparitions, premonitions, clairvoyance, etc.

## Proceedings of the American Society for Psychical Research Section "B" of the American Institute for Psychical Research

Vol. I, Part 1, 1907. 220 octavo pages, \$2.50.

HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN INSTITUTE FOR SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH.  
LETTER ON ANIMAL MAGNETISM. By William L. Stone.  
AN EXAMINATION OF MONS. AKSAKOF'S "CASE OF PARTIAL DEMATERIALIZATION OF A MEDIUM'S BODY." By Hereward Carrington.  
PARALLELISM AND MATERIALISM. By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. I, Part 2, 1907. 304 octavo pages, \$2.00.

A CASE OF CLAIRVOYANCE. By Prof. William James.  
A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES. By G. A. T.  
THE McCaffrey Case. By James H. Hyslop.  
A CASE OF THE ALLEGED MOVEMENT OF PHYSICAL OBJECTS WITHOUT CONTACT. By James H. Hyslop and Hereward Carrington.  
BOOK REVIEW.

Vol. I, Part 3, 1907. 204 octavo pages and 24 full page plates, \$2.00.

PRELIMINARY REPORT ON THE TRANCE PHENOMENA OF MRS. SMEAD.  
By James H. Hyslop, Ph. D., LL.D., etc.  
DETAILED RECORD.  
Explanation of the Automatic Writing.  
Cuts Illustrating the Automatic Writing.

Vol. II, Part 1, 1908. 120 octavo pages, \$1.50.

LILY DALE:  
Introduction. By James H. Hyslop.  
REPORT OF A TWO-WEEKS' INVESTIGATION INTO ALLEGED SPIRITUALISTIC PHENOMENA. WITNESSED AT LILY DALE, NEW YORK. By Hereward Carrington.

Vol. II, Part 2, Sept., 1908. 260 octavo pages, \$2.50.

### RECORDS OF EXPERIMENTS.

- I. REPORT ON THE CASE OF MISS EDITH WRIGHT. By Rev. Willis M. Cleveland.
- II. CLAIRVOYANT DIAGNOSIS AND OTHER EXPERIMENTS. By James H. Hyslop.
- III. EXPERIMENTS WITH THE PLANCHETTE. By "Egbert L. Monson".
- IV. A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES IN PLANCHETTE WRITING. By Charles Morris.
- V. A RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS. By Helen Lambert.

Vol. II, Part 3, Dec., 1908. 296 octavo pages, \$2.50.

- I. A FURTHER RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS. By Helen Lambert.
- II. A RECORD OF DREAMS AND OTHER COINCIDENTAL EXPERIENCES. By Marie F. Shipley.
- III. A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES.



## Proceedings of the American Society for Psychical Research

Vol. III, Part 1, July, 1909. 592 octavo pages, Illustrated, \$6.00.

- I. A CASE OF VERIDICAL HALLUCINATIONS. (The Thompson Case.) By James H. Hyslop.
- II. REPORT ON MRS. PIPER'S HODGSON-CONTROL. By William James.

Vol. III, Part 2, Dec., 1909. 120 octavo pages, \$1.00.

- I. OBSERVATIONS ON THE MEDIUMISTIC RECORDS IN THE THOMPSON CASE. By James H. Hyslop.
- II. THE SUBCONSCIOUS IN THE LIGHT OF DREAM IMAGERY AND IMAGINATIVE EXPRESSION: WITH INTROSPECTIVE DATA. By Hartley Burr Alexander.

Vol. IV, May, 1910. 812 octavo pages, \$6.00.

- A RECORD AND DISCUSSION OF MEDIUMISTIC EXPERIMENTS. By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. V, Part 1. 672 octavo pages, Illustrated, \$6.00. Postage Prepaid.  
A CASE OF HYSTERIA. (The Burton Case.) By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. V, Part 2, Dec., 1911. 114 octavo pages, Illustrated, \$2.00.  
EXPERIMENTS AND EXPERIENCES IN TELEPATHY. By Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden, and Miss Statkowski.

Vol. VI, May, 1912. 976 octavo pages, \$8.00

- A RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS. By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VII, Part 1, Febr., 1913. 192 octavo pages, \$1.50.  
THE SUBCONSCIOUS AND ITS FUNCTIONS. By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VII, Part 2, July, 1913. 236 octavo pages, \$2.00.  
A CASE OF POLTERGEIST. By James H. Hyslop. (The Clarke Case.)

Vol. VII, Part 3, Dec., 1913. 392 octavo pages, \$2.00.  
A CASE OF MUSICAL CONTROL. By James H. Hyslop.  
THE CASE OF MRS. BLAKE. By James H. Hyslop.  
THE HISTORY OF A STRANGE CASE. By David P. Abbott.

Vol. VIII, Part 1, July, 1914. 200 octavo pages, \$2.00.  
EXPERIMENTS WITH MRS. CATON. By Henry A. Burr.  
TELEPATHIC EXPERIMENTS. By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VIII, Part 2, August, 1914. 180 pages, \$2.00.  
INVESTIGATION WITH A "TRUMPET" MEDIUM. By John E. Coover.  
F. W. H. MYERS, SWEDENBORG, AND BUDDHA. By Albert J. Edmunds.  
ANALYSIS AND DISCUSSION OF 225 PERSONAL DREAMS. By George Hall Hyslop.  
AN ANALYSIS OF SOME PERSONAL DREAMS. By "John Watson."  
NOTE ON PHILOSOPHIES AND REVELATIONS FROM THE SPIRITUAL WORLD. By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VIII, Part 3, September, 1914. 430 pages, Illustrated, \$4.00.  
ON SOME EXPERIMENTS WITH THE OUIJA BOARD AND BLINDFOLDED SITTERS. By Sir W. F. Barrett.  
SOME UNUSUAL PHENOMENA IN PHOTOGRAPHY. By James H. Hyslop.  
RECENT EXPERIENCE IN HYPNOTIC PRACTICE. By S. Wilkinson, M. R. C. E., L. R. C. P.  
EXPERIMENTS IN NON-EVIDENTIAL PHENOMENA. By James H. Hyslop.

Current or back numbers of the Proceedings may be ordered from the Secretary, Dr. James H. Hyslop, 44 East 23rd Street, New York City.